



ZHANXIAN

BOOK 03

Ren Yuan

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Immortal Executioner

(斩仙)

by

Ren Yuan

(任怨)

Synopsis

In his previous life, Yang Chen was benevolent, but he was bullied all his life.

Reborn, Yang Chen chose to become an Executioner, settling all gratitude and grudges with the executioner's blade, beheading the common people on the Immortal Executioner Stage.

Behead men in the world of men!

Behead demons in the world of demons!

Behead devils in the world of devils!

Behead immortals in the world of immortals!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by weletranslations @ [weletranslations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201 - Black Tiger's Injury Is Cured

The people of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard were very fortunate. Not only did they get to cultivate in the best environment, but now they also had the opportunity to experience and observe the lightening tribulation of a JieDan expert who had formed his Ying. This was basically getting educated through observation, What learning opportunity could be better compared to this?

As for the part of Second Fierce Yang Courtyard which had been destroyed, there was nothing to worry about. Only Yang Chen, Gao Yue, some of Yang Chen's senior apprentice brothers, and their servants had participated in the construction of the initial Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. Presently, Palace Master Zhong Jiao simply waved his hand and assigned the sect's builders, using natural resources, to repair the entire courtyard properly. Compared to initial one, the courtyard this time will be constructed more spectacularly.

All the elders were happy, Palace Master Zhong Jiao was also happy, and all the other disciples were happy. Under such extreme happiness, Palace Master Zhong Jiao decided to celebrate Hall Master Zhu becoming a YuanYing stage expert by giving every disciple an additional allotment of their monthly elixir allowance, regardless if they were an inner or outer sect disciple.

Once the information began to spread, a great celebration began in Pure Yang Palace. Everyone realized the benefits of an increase in the number of YuanYing stage experts, especially the addition of a YuanYing stage pill concocting expert. This also implied that, in the future, even more higher grade elixirs could be provided to the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace.

Even in this celebratory atmosphere, there were a few unhappy people. The gloomiest among them was Song Hang! He was also at the peak of the JieDan stage and was also confronting a bottleneck.

Zhu Chentao had gained enlightenment from Yang Chen and stepped into the YuanYing stage without any warning. Moreover, Song Hang felt even more despair thinking that Yang Chen knew the way of crossing the bottleneck, but he wouldn't tell him no matter what. There was great hatred between both sides, so how could the good fortune of these others not make Song Hang extremely depressed?

Similarly, another unhappy person was the Luminous Moon Hall's Hall Master Liang Shaoming. He was both at the JieDan stage and a Hall Master. In fact, his cultivation could be considered better than Zhu Chentao's before Zhu Chentao entered seclusion to concoct pills. Now, Zhu Chentao had apparently easily stepped into the YuanYing stage, whereas he was still hovering at the peak JieDan stage even after ten years of closed door training. How could Liang Shaoming, who had always bragged about his cultivation, endure this?

Regardless of whatever was said, Liang Shaoming and Song Hang could only bite their tongues, swallow their resentment, and congratulate Zhu Chentao on forming his Ying and passing the lightning tribulation.

Pure Yang Palace's upper echelon, including Palace Master Zhong Jiao and the other elders, were well aware of Zhu Chentao's previous circumstances. They knew that he previously had no hope of forming his Ying and had therefore delved into pill concocting. Now, after concocting elixirs with Yang Chen for more than a dozen years, he had surprisingly stepped into YuanYing stage. This was simply a pleasant surprise.

Logically speaking, in the years that this foundation stage disciple Yang Chen had been at Pure Yang Palace, he had already produced a Da Cheng stage expert, two YuanYing stage eccentrics and now a YuanYing stage pill concocting master for the sect. No need to mention the fact that, under his influence, the cultivation of his great master Wang Yong had advanced by leaps and bounds.

Seemingly, as long as someone was on Yang Chen's side, his cultivation will increase at an incredible speed.

Speaking of Yang Chen's achievements, they were not only limited to those previously mentioned. Regarding the recently refined black tiger spirit supporting pill, when the senior black tiger of Beast Taming Sect uses this elixir and his injury gets cured, the Pure Yang Palace will gain a second rate sect as an ally. Moreover, if Yang Chen consents to becoming dao companions with the beautiful Fairy Shi, Pure Yang Palace can further gain Green Jade Immortal Islands as another ally.

Strictly speaking, the accomplishments of some Hall Masters or even the Palace Master paled in comparison to those of Yang Chen. Just with one comparison, the difference was clear. Truly said, the true value of person can only be determined through comparison.

While the Pure Yang Palace was engulfed in celebration, the higher ups of Beast Taming Sect were also endlessly excited. Originally, they believed it would have taken ten years to complete the refining, but they hadn't expected that after Yang Chen had fused the three flames, his cultivation would increase greatly and the refining time would be cut down by one and a half years. Within a brief eight and a half years, they were notified that the black tiger spirit suppressing pill was complete.

Fan Shan, who received the news, used his fastest speed to hurry to the Pure Yang Palace and meet with Yang Chen to confirm the news. After verifying the good news, Fan Shan immediately started pressing Yang Chen to go to Yang Liang Mountain. Due to excessive anxiousness, he even forgot to follow through with the proper etiquettes. Presently, there were a lot of concerns that Fan Shan refused to attend to. He even apologised forthrightly in front of Palace Master Zhong Jiao that all the other matters would have to wait until his sect master comes personally to congratulate Zhu Chentao on successfully reaching YuanYing stage.

Naturally, when the sect master personally comes, he would also

discuss the matter of additional future cooperation with Pure Yang Palace. However, Palace Master Zhong Jiao wasn't the slightest bit displeased. Instead, he also urged Yang Chen to hurry on the journey.

This time, there were no twists and turns on the journey. Without any distractions, Yang Chen and Fan Shan hurried rapidly to Yang Liang Mountain. Once they reached Yang Liang Mountain, Fan Shan immediately led Yang Chen to the rear of the mountain towards senior black tiger's residence without saying anything.

Senior black tiger had already changed his residence and didn't live in that crude cave anymore. Rather than living in a crude cave, he used that cave as a foundation and directly transformed it into a palace within the belly of the mountain. Although it wasn't very lavish, compared to that crude cave, it was many times more comfortable.

After the condition of the injury had been stabilized, senior black tiger was not depressed anymore and had begun to ponder things which he hadn't considered before. The transformation of the cave was just one of those things.

The sect master and several elders of the Beast Taming Sect had already been waiting for some time. Upon seeing Yang Chen, they immediately expressed their gratitude first before saying anything else. Regardless of whether this elixir failed or succeeded, just the fact that Yang Chen had spent fourteen years on refining this pill for senior black tiger was deserving of their gratitude.

Once senior black tiger saw the black tiger spirit supporting pill, he immediately felt a sensation as if he was seeing his own blood and flesh. He was very clear that inside the pill the powder from his inner dan was present. This detection of his own inner dan was why the pill gave him this sensation.

Looking at this round and smooth pill, which had a clear pill mark of a black tiger, senior black tiger wasn't willing to gulp it

down immediately. Waves of memories began to surge inside his brain. During these past several hundred years, he had no other alternative other than to endure his injury that flared up again and again. The memories of the pain of his constituent spirit dissipating once again returned to his mind.

After sighing once, under the anxious gazes of the upper echelon of the Beast Taming Sect, senior black tiger swallowed that pill.

This time, the effect wasn't like the previous time where there was no reaction in beginning. As soon as the pill entered his stomach, everyone sensed a kind of refreshing spirit power that began to quickly spread around. Senior black tiger issued a satisfying hum as if enjoying a pleasurable sensation.

Senior black tiger was indeed enjoying the present moment, and that refreshing spirit power filled his whole body after a short time. The internal organs which had sustained injuries several years ago because of the Yin Fire Tribulation were surrounded by this refreshing spirit power. Those ashes of Yin Fire, which hadn't stopped burning, seemed to have been extinguished by this refreshing spirit power. While at the same time, this refreshing spirit power also nourished the area of injuries which now started to recover slowly.

Within a moment, senior black tiger sensed that his injuries had been restored by more than half and were recovering stably. Because of that comfortable sensation in his whole body, he was unable to control his emotions and issued a low croon while lying on his stomach.

The situation was both alarming and exciting for the higher ups of the Beast Taming Sect. After senior black tiger had recovered completely, the morale of the entire Beast Taming Sect would reach the sky.

The medicine continued to take effect for three days and three nights. The people standing near him didn't even need to ask about

his situation. Just by looking at his power and presence rising endlessly, anyone could tell the situation in his body.

The dissipated constituent spirit also began to return little by little. This result also implied Yang Chen's elixir had been completely effective.

After four days had passed, senior black tiger finally stood up. He stretched his several meters long body comfortably before slowly shrinking, soon reducing to half his original size.

All the people present on the scene were experienced and knew that the size of senior black tiger's body reducing also meant that his cultivation had also increased. Seeing this, the group of higher ups of Beast Taming Sect were greatly exalted. Yang Chen's pill not only cured senior black tiger's injury, but surprisingly also allowed his cultivation to increase. It really was very effective.

"Good! Originally, I was only waiting to close my eyes and die, but now my cultivation has increased instead."

Senior black tiger himself was also endlessly grateful to Yang Chen:

"Fellow daoist Yang, many thanks! If you have any difficulties in the future, just inform me. Even if I have to tread on fire or go through water, I will not refuse!"

Previously, he used to call Yang Chen as junior, but now had already corrected himself to fellow daoist Yang.

"This is senior's own accumulation and has nothing to do with this junior."

Although Yang Chen would accept the reward for curing senior black tiger's injuries, Yang Chen wouldn't take the credit for the increase in senior black tiger's cultivation:

"If senior wants to thank someone, then senior should thank himself!"

Yang Chen's one line was to the point. Everyone also realized the reason behind senior black tiger's increase in cultivation. All of them were experts, so they could also comprehend the reason. During the several hundred years senior black tiger was injured, he had been suppressing the injury from the beginning, year in and year out. If it was not for the burden of his injury, his cultivation certainly wouldn't have stopped or declined.

Now, the injury had been completely recovered, and senior black tiger's hard work for years all those hadn't gone to waste. The results of his hard work were automatically reflected in his increased cultivation. Moreover, previously his mental state was depressed, thinking that he would certainly die, but now it was different, and his confidence had increased so his realm also upgraded as a result.

"However, senior, let your injuries heal first and do not use spirit power lightly."

After saving him, Yang Chen also didn't forget to remind everyone:

"The weakness accumulated in several hundred years needs to be healed slowly. If it is suitable for you, it would be better to let it consolidate for ten years, allowing it to be thoroughly healed."

Everyone present were cultivators, so they all knew whether Yang Chen's words were true or not. Seeing Yang Chen's concern for senior black tiger made everyone in the Beast Taming Sect feel even more gratitude and everyone successively expressed their thanks.

Everyone in the Beast Taming Sect rejoiced greatly. They couldn't control their happiness. A trifling twenty thousand books and the qualification for an auction, in addition to catching He Lianyun, whose reputation had already turned into trash, in exchange for a curing a Da Cheng stage senior black tiger. This deal was indeed extremely profitable.

On that day, the sect master of the Beast Taming Sect announced this news. Once this information was released, all the disciples and friends of the Beast Taming Sect all became aware that senior black tiger had recovered from his injury completely and had regained the strength of the Da Cheng stage. Each and everyone of them was jubilant. The more a sect's strength increases, the more helpful it becomes for the disciples. When they go out traveling to gain experiences, the more reputation it gains for them.

Because of refining the pill and hooking another Da Cheng stage expert, Yang Chen's fame spread again. According to cultivators talking between themselves, presently Yang Chen had already been considered as a high grade pill concocting master just after Deng Yi and Zhu Peng. Although his cultivation was low, no one dared have contempt for him.

Not to mention other things, but it could even be said he had already helped many others as a pill concocting master. Elder Wu's Heaven Seizing Pill, Subduing the Blood Phantom Vine for elder Hua Wanting, senior black tiger's black tiger suppressing pill, and the black tiger spirit supporting pill, all these three occurrences had some relation with a Da Cheng stage expert. Even Deng Yi also hadn't been that formidable.

Especially when Pure Yang Palace released the information that during the refining process, Medicine Hall Master Zhu Chentao had a flash of enlightenment and successfully formed his Ying and Pure Yang Palace had gained another YuanYing stage expert. This additional news surprised people to no end.

Many people had known about Zhu Chentao's reputation, and they also knew how much innate talent he had. If it was said that Zhu Chentao achieved YuanYing stage by his own strength, then eight out of ten people will not believe it. He had been concocting a pill in seclusion with Yang Chen for fourteen years and surprisingly made the breakthrough. It clearly had some unspeakable relation with Yang Chen.

A foundation stage pill concocting master who had been concocting pills one after another for Da Cheng stage experts. Moreover, Yang Chen also helped his own sect's Medicine Hall Master to upgrade a realm. What kind of formidable pill concocting master was this?

Now, no one mentioned the incident between Yang Chen and that clan regarding Heaven Seizing Pill's pill recipe. Can the Heaven Seizing Pill cure senior black tiger's injury? Or can it resolve the entanglement of Blood Phantom Vine? Everyone would rather believe that Yang Chen was getting inspiration from some random book, or perhaps he had discovered the some rare cheat pill scripture.

Regarding the beheading of He Lianyun and that clan at the Pure Yang Palace, no one spread any rumors. Even if someone mentioned it, he would only be laughing at them, who had overestimated their abilities. Being much too greedy and insatiable, seeking Yang Chen's own recipe, however, they had angered the Pure Yang Palace and death only served them right.

Many pill concocting masters had already begun to follow Yang Chen's method of learning, by reading random books extensively and attempting to increase their own experience and knowledge to broaden their horizons. Unfortunately, they didn't have Yang Chen's formidable memory, so they couldn't remember too much.

Naturally, even more people, intentionally or otherwise, began to slowly get pulled towards Yang Chen. It was clear that even the heavens had something they required from this pill concocting master. Having good relations with the Pure Yang Palace was absolutely necessary.

Moreover, those disciples of the Pure Yang Palace who were travelling outside to gain experience also clearly discovered that apparently other people were much more polite towards Pure Yang Palace now. After the successive major events that were associated with Yang Chen, everyone was both pleasantly surprised and

frightened towards their own sect's disciple Yang Chen. They were also grateful towards him from the bottom of their hearts.

On the return journey to Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen was joined by the Beast Taming Sect's sect master and senior black tiger. They jointly followed Yang Chen to the Pure Yang Palace. First, in order to express their gratitude towards the Pure Yang Palace, and second to discuss the next step of cooperation with the Pure Yang Palace.

When the guests arrived, Palace Master Zhong Jiao and other elders also became busy while receiving the guests. During this time, Yang Chen asked to be excused and returned to Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

Throughout this pill concocting event, he hadn't seen his master for more than ten years, last time he could only catch a glimpse of her when Zhu Chentao passed his lightning tribulation. At that time, his master Gao Yue was immersed in observing Zhu Chentao's tribulation, so Yang Chen didn't disturb her. Now, Yang Chen wished to chat with her for three days and nights without any disturbance.

The part of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard that was destroyed by Zhu Chentao had been constructed during the time that Yang Chen had been away. It looked even more imposing as compared to before. With the sect exerting itself, the constructed buildings were more lavish. Even their layout had changed. Yang Chen had no option other than to look for Shangguan Feng first to know about his master's location.

However, before he could see Gao Yue, Shangguan Feng gave Yang Chen news. Senior Scarface, whom they met last time, when Gao Yue was injured, had come to Pure Yang Palace half a month ago, wanting to see Yang Chen. But Yang Chen was at the Beast Taming Sect at that time. Therefore, the sect had arranged for him to stay at a guest room in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, so if Yang Chen had the time, he should go and meet senior Scarface

first.

Chapter 202 - Scarface's Big Business

Yang Chen didn't listen to Shangguan Feng's proposal and went to his master's place first. Upon seeing his master again, he was happy.

Gao Yue had already reached foundation stage in water attributed cultivation. This had also put Gao Yue at a loss, even if she had elixirs and her JieDan stage spiritual awareness to help, reaching foundation stage after a short nine years. This speed could astonish anyone.

Even Gongsun Ling who was known as a cultivation genius inside the sect and had a nearly full earth attributed spirit root, had taken a full ten years to reach foundation stage from qi layer. But Gao Yue knew very well that she clearly had fire attribute spirit root, so how could she cultivate water attributed cultivation methods so quickly?

“why is it like this?”

Gao Yue, who had already reached second layer of foundation stage, asked Yang Chen, feeling very confused. Since Yang Chen had been insisting from the beginning for her to cultivate water attributed cultivation methods, so he must most probably know the reason.

“For the time being, let us just say that I guessed it. Allow me be completely sure before I give master a proper explanation.”

Yang Chen naturally would not explain it to her right now. Presently, the time hasn't come.

“Are you making your master become a test subject for your experiment?”

Seeing Gao Yue's slightly angry expression, Yang Chen was enchanted. When Gao Yue saw him not paying attention, she pushed him a little which made Yang Chen snap out of his daze.

“Is your master beautiful?”

Gao Yue suddenly asked Yang Chen curiously. As soon as she said this, Gao Yue also sensed that the question was inappropriate and her whole face turned red.

“Beautiful!”

Yang Chen replied immediately.

“Compared to the cool and calm Fairy Shi?”

Seeing Yang Chen answer immediately, Gao Yue suddenly didn’t know what demon had possessed her as she asked again.

“Master is more beautiful!”

Yang Chen answered immediately again. In his mind, there was no place for Shi Shanshan from the beginning, so there was no need to think about anything else.

Hearing Yang Chen’s reply, Gao Yue felt sweetness spread through her heart, but at the same time, she also felt shy. How could she ask such a strange question. This was certainly not the way a master should behave with her disciple.

“Master, Scarface has come, let’s go meet him together!”

Yang Chen appeared to not have sensed his master’s peculiarity and calmly said. But in his heart, there were already big waves surging around, only, he didn’t know how to express his emotions.

Regarding Yang Chen’s suggestion, Gao Yue didn’t have any intention of declining at all. Both of them jointly arrived at Second Fierce Yang Hall’s guest room and met with Scarface whom they hadn’t seen for almost twenty years.

Although such a long time had passed, Scarface almost didn’t change. In any case, YuanYing stage expert’s appearances don’t change greatly. Only now, Scarface was completely different from before when he didn’t know what to do after his hatred had been satisfied. Seemingly, he had found a new direction again, he

seemed to be full of energy.

“Senior!”

Regarding YuanYing stage, they have to be regarded as senior, so Yang Chen and Gao Yue also addressed him as senior:

“Long time no see, senior, you seem safe and sound!”

“Thanks to your lucky influence!”

After getting his revenge, Scarface seemed very polite, however that scar on his face destroyed all peace, even his smile made him seem more sinister.

“This is the promised face changing pill, kindly accept it senior!”

Yang Chen didn’t need to follow fake niceties with Scarface, he took out the bottle containing a face changing pill which he had already refined and gave it to Scarface.

Scarface also wasn’t polite and directly accepted it. Feeling it with his hand, he suddenly smiled:

“Yang Chen, in the past few days, your reputation has spread greatly!”

After returning from the Demon Beast Plains, throughout the whole journey, Scarface kept hearing about Yang Chen’s matters. Moreover, all of them were apparently related to Da Cheng stage experts, Scarface could not help but be astonished. But once he remembered how Yang Chen had convinced old tree demon to take his advice, all these matters didn’t seem so hard to understand.

“A few trivial matters, not worth mentioning!”

Yang Chen casually waved his hand and courteously said, then asked:

“Senior, what were the harvests this time?”

Without the face changing pill, Scarface didn’t go to the Hundred Thousand Mountains. Rather, he had to go to Demon Beast Plain

which he was not so familiar with. Also fortunately, he himself was a formidable YuanYing stage expert so he didn't have any losses at the Demon Beast Plains.

Demon Beast Plains really were enriched with natural resources, otherwise, it wouldn't have produced so many demon beasts. Scarface holding large amounts of spirit stones as well as some of the products of dao sects, were all exchanged for many good things he had obtained from Demon Beast Plain.

Although his qiankun pouch had already been filled from before and he could have returned in three years, Scarface was fortunate enough to have found a good place in the Demon Beast Plain. However, after he had collected some good things, he discovered that twenty years had already passed, so he hastily rushed back.

“What kind of treasure was worth senior spending twenty years time to collect?”

Yang Chen's eyes immediately shone, he asked curiously. On the other side, Gao Yue also had a curious expression on her face, waiting for Scarface's reply.

“A bottle of seventh metal true qi.”

Scarface calmly replied, completely unaware of the shock his reply had produced in Yang Chen.

“Seventh metal true qi?”

Yang Chen almost cried out in shock. Trying to repress the surprise in his voice, he asked with ecstasy:

“Senior, is this seventh metal true qi useful to you?”

“For me, it is useless.”

Scarface shook his head and said with a smile on his face:

“However, for those who cultivate metal attribute, this is a treasure which could only be found by luck. Alas, why are you and I speaking of this, you certainly know of this better than me.”

Speaking till here, Scarface suddenly remembered Yang Chen's reputation about being a great reader and shook his head.

"If senior is not going to use for himself, could you exchange it with this junior?"

Repressing his emotions, Yang Chen asked in a discussing tone:

"What does senior require, don't hesitate to tell me."

"Exchange with you?"

Scarface was startled, he believed that Yang Chen was a fire attributed cultivator, so hadn't expected that Yang Chen would require this seventh metal true qi. He asked curiously:

"What will you use it for?"

"Junior requires it for a sect's cultivation method."

Yang Chen also didn't hide anything.

"I don't have any use for it, so might as well exchange it to you."

Regarding this, Scarface didn't have any conflict, in any case, this would fetch him spirit stones or perhaps a magic weapon, it didn't matter who he exchanges it with, but he again asked just to clarify:

"What do you intend to exchange it for?"

"Senior what do you want? Spirit stones? Magic weapons? Elixir? Cultivation method?"

Yang Chen spread his hands, asking Scarface his price. This seventh metal true qi was incomparably precious to Yang Chen as it was essential for the cultivation of «Seventh Metal True Secrets» and thus was necessary for completing the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets, so Yang Chen must have it.

Seeing Yang Chen so intent on asking Scarface's price, Gao Yue also became anxious, but she could not do anything to help. Suddenly thinking of something, she said:

"If senior does this for Yang Chen, then the three requests that

senior had promised to me can all be forgotten.”

Because Scarface had injured Gao Yue, Scarface had promised three requests to Gao Yue, this was before they came to an agreement. Presently, Gao Yue was raising this issue to help fight for Yang Chen.

“Since it is like this, then this could only be considered as one of the requests to fellow daoist Gao.”

Scarface also wasn't a shameless and greedy person and immediately took out the jade bottle that was densely packed with sealing talisman and gave it to Yang Chen:

“So, now I only owe two requests to fellow daoist Gao.”

“This is not appropriate!”

Although Yang Chen extended his hand to take the bottle, he shook his head and refused:

“This seventh metal true qi is too precious, master's one request is not enough to exchange for this.”

“Then let's also add in your face changing pill.”

Scarface lightly added. Apparently, he was rejoicing over the fact that he could settle one request:

“You only promised me the face changing pill, do not say anything else, this is just perfect for our exchange.”

“Not appropriate, not appropriate!”

Yang Chen again shook his head, face changing pill was too easy for him and couldn't be compared to the value of seventh metal true qi. Moreover, he was sincerely determined to rope in Scarface and even a little push could push him thousand miles away.

“Then I will reserve a good elixir from you in advance.”

Scarface was greatly generous, after taking his revenge, he neither had the desire nor need for anything, at this moment also

he didn't want any disputes with Yang Chen:

“This ought to do for you, shouldn't it?”

Although his words were light, in his heart, Scarface was greatly appreciative of Yang Chen's big hearted personality. At least when dealing with him, he needn't be anxious that Yang Chen would cheat him or would use him lightly.

“What kind of elixir?”

Yang Chen nodded his head, also in addition, this wasn't something that could not be accepted.

“I haven't thought about it yet.”

Scarface smiled shaking his head:

“Perhaps, in the future, I may need a unique elixir, when I require it, I will tell you. As long as, you remember that you owe me an elixir, that'll do.”

“Then, we have a deal!”

Yang Chen loosely said, as if gaining the most important treasure, he immediately put the seventh metal true qi within his Achievement Ring. After holding the seventh metal true qi in his hand, he was no longer anxious and could rest in peace.

Gao Yue standing on the other side was also very happy, although she had used up one of her requests, Yang Chen had finally gotten what he wanted. Although she didn't knew what Yang Chen wanted to do with this, Gao Yue was absolutely satisfied.

“How did senior collect this seventh metal true qi?”

Although he had accepted it, Yang Chen was still curious about how Scarface had collected it. He wasn't a demon beast neither was he metal attributed, he really must have had some trouble.

“It was not easy.”

Hearing Yang Chen ask about this matter, Scarface also started

feeling proud, thinking about it, he could not help but began to explain non stop about it.

Scarface himself was a fire attributed cultivator. Moreover, Nanming fire already belonged to him personally. Since fire restrains metal, after he had discovered the Seventh Metal True Qi, Scarface used Nanming fire and tried to force the Seventh Metal True Qi to a certain place, but even though he had spent tremendous amounts of strength, he could only collect that bottle of Seventh Metal True Qi.

Although it was simple logic of five phases subduing each other, Scarface used it to the point of perfection. Inevitably, Scarface was proud of himself at the end:

“Although it wasted twenty years of time, but my cultivation had increased again because of the hard work that went to collecting this Seventh Metal True Qi, so it was worth it!”

Apparently, Scarface’s goal of changing his mental state was fulfilled, his cultivation had also increased because of the increase in confidence. No wonder, Yang Chen had felt a sensation that was full of vitality coming from him when he saw him. So this had been the reason.

“Congratulations, senior!”

Yang Chen also smiled and congratulated Scarface, with this kind of start, in the future, Scarface will be someone who will certainly excel, which would possibly lead to even better cooperation.

“This time, I have obtained many great things at Demon Beast Plains, what do you intend to purchase?”

Yang Chen and Scarface, both began to talk about normal business matters, Scarface naturally didn’t forget to talk about it. If he doesn’t get spirit stones by selling the objects he had brought back, then his trips would just be a waste. Moreover, those big sects and schools would just try to lower the prices forcefully, so

naturally he found Yang Chen as most suitable person to sell to.

“If senior is willing then we can deepen our cooperation.”

Yang Chen directly mentioned his intent to deepen their cooperation. At the same time, he would also talk to Shangguan Feng on the side. He was thinking of discussing about expanding his business outside the Pure Yang Palace.

This would establish a stable market, at the same time, it would also signify the establishment of stable means of supply of goods from dao sect, how could Scarface be unwilling? Not only limited to these, Yang Chen’s business, by using Yang Chen’s great fame which Scarface had just recently heard about, Pure Yang Palace will certainly not be ignored. At least it will provide for security and Pure Yang Palace itself will be a formidable patron compared to individuals and the earnings will also be higher.

The more both sides discussed, the more optimistic they became. Gao Yue hearing all this was dumbstruck, she hadn’t even thought that Yang Chen surprisingly was so proficient about business dealings. While chatting with Scarface, he had never been in a disadvantageous position.

Scarface was even more astonished regarding Yang Chen’s familiarity with everything produced in Demon Beast Plains. Yang Chen seemed even more knowledgeable compared to himself, who personally went there. Even compared to him, Yang Chen’s thinking was even more comprehensive, what price to mention, at what price should the negotiation end, he already had the basic idea about everything. Also compared to his ad hoc scheme, Yang Chen also had specialized knowledge about which things would earn him spirit stones and how much profit would he make.

The more they spoke about this, the more Yang Chen was aroused, so much that he even called Shangguan Feng. Shangguan Feng’s interest regarding business far surpassed his interest in business, but the strange thing was that the better business he did,

the more his cultivation seemed to increase. During the years Yang Chen was busy with pill refining, Shangguan Feng surprisingly entered mid foundation stage and soon was going to break through into later foundation stage.

Yang Chen also clicked his tongue in wonder, apparently Shangguan Feng was talented as supervisor and also didn't neglect his cultivation. Regarding how to run this business efficiently, Shangguan Feng had much more knowledge, he opened a huge world of business in front of Yang Chen, Scarface and Gao Yue, making all of them dumbstruck.

“Seemingly, this business wouldn't be a loss!”

Scarface said deeply moved, even without needing look at the result of this opportunity, just hearing Shangguan Feng's words gave him a sensation as if he was looking at a tall mountain. Even though he was a YuanYing stage expert, he couldn't help but look in awe at the foundation stage Shangguan Feng's ability to do business.

Scarface felt greatly refreshed, he immediately opened his qiankun pouch and began to take out all the good objects he had obtained at Demon Beast Plains. On the other side, Shangguan Feng began to value all of them, the sound of metal objects being put on table was very pleasant to hear.

While four of them were immersed in counting their riches, several days passed. Scarface's harvest was quite abundant this time, even his biggest qiankun pouch was filled squeezed to the top, just sorting them out took several days and it took even more time to calculate their exact value. Shangguan Feng also couldn't help but envy Scarface, just with this trip alone, Scarface would reap several hundred thousand catties of low grade spirit stones.

Shangguan Feng was also not negligent and immediately took out several tens of high grade spirit stones to pay. Inside Pure Yang Palace, perhaps apart from Yang Chen, only he had so many spirit

stones.

Chapter 203 - Settle It Yourself

Both sides were completely satisfied, especially Scarface. After receiving the face changing pill, he could return to Hundred Thousand Mountains without having to worry about being discovered by the people there. The region Scarface was most familiar with was still Hundred Thousand Mountains. Compared to Demon Beast Plains, Scarface clearly knew which regions in the Hundred Thousand Mountains had specific kinds of materials.

Of the two, Yang Chen was the happiest. Who would have thought there would be such a coincidental opportunity? That he would surprisingly obtain something he had yearned for day and night, the Seventh Metal True Qi, was certainly an unexpected surprise. With the Seventh Metal True Qi, Yang Chen's Seventh Metal True Secrets would certainly transform his seventh metal spirit power to the purest seventh metal true qi. His Great Yin and Yang secrets would advance by one more step.

“Senior, remaining alone isn't always convenient, is it?”

While everyone was at last stage of discussion, Yang Chen suddenly asked.

“You mean?”

Scarface asked in confusion. He instinctively felt that Yang Chen was thinking of arranging some helpers to be at his side.

“What I mean is that senior's first priority should be to find some suitable juniors or perhaps begin to slowly find some helpers.”

Yang Chen only wanted to give him a reminder:

“Sometimes, having many people is not only a convenience, but it can also help a lot. Other people also would not dare to casually attack you at Hundred Thousand Mountains and Demon Beast Plains.’

This was actually true, at least in Hundred Thousand Mountains.

A lone cultivator was the easiest target. Generally speaking, regardless of how high one's cultivation was, in cases where there were many people attacking, they would all jointly attack from all sides. Previously, Scarface had only gone to look for wealth, but it was not like he hadn't fought with others to the death. If he had the help of a small group, it would be much safer and would also simplify matters a lot.

“If there is an opportunity, I will try to get some helpers.”

Scarface contemplated for a moment and nodded his head in agreement.

Yang Chen had already mentioned his point about what Scarface should do, so now Scarface had to deal with his own matters himself. Ever since Shangguan Feng had been in control of these things, Pure Yang Palace had become more and more prosperous, now it was almost time to allow him to start business outside.

The negotiation between the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace and the Sect Master of the Beast Taming Sect regarding future cooperation turned out great, so the Palace Master's mood was good. When Yang Chen mentioned this small matter, without any hesitation, Palace Master Zhong Jiao replied:

“Go find the shopkeeper of the Thousand Autumn Pavilion and ask him to arrange a shop front for you all. You all need not trouble yourself to worry about this.”

Shangguan Feng accepted the order and rushed out excitedly. Palace Master Zhong Jiao, however, had asked Yang Chen to remain behind. The Palace Master didn't say anything at first. He only kept on hesitating. Finally, clenching his teeth, he asked Yang Chen:

“Yang Chen, you know where Song Hang is stuck, could you guide him a little?”

Palace Master had only asked this after hesitating for a good

moment. He knew Yang Chen's temperament, but the good news of Zhu Chentao becoming YuanYing stage had provoked him, making him think that if Pure Yang Palace had one more YuanYing stage expert, then it would be even better for Pure Yang Palace. Therefore, he still hesitated a long while before asking this question.

Yang Chen didn't reply directly. He only shook his head silently. Palace Master Zhong Jiao's question was indeed logical, but for Yang Chen, only this couldn't be the only reason. Song Hang, who had tried to target Yang Chen, now wanted Yang Chen to help him? How could Yang Chen be expected to give charity like this? Moreover, even if someone were to request this of him, it should have been Song Hang asking. Why is Palace Master and Yang Chen talking about this?

“Alas!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao faintly sighed. He had also been aware that this would be result, only, he wasn't willing to accept without trying once. A YuanYing stage expert, ah, what a pity. Why did Song Hang have to be so stupid to allow his brain to be poisoned by Liang Shaoming when he had been the substituting hall master and go cause trouble for Yang Chen? Now, the method of breaking through was in Yang Chen's hands. What an irony indeed!

“Palace Master!”

Yang Chen suddenly addressed him, which again gave rise to a trace of hope within Palace Master. Raising his head to look at Yang Chen, he was expectedly waiting for Yang Chen to say something which would benefit them all.

“A YuanYing stage expert wouldn't increase the strength of my sect.”

Yang Chen's first words once again extinguished the little trace of hope that Palace Master Zhong Jiao had, but his next words made the Palace Master turn pale with fright:

“If in near future, when Palace Master isn’t busy, then maybe you should think about attacking Da Cheng stage.”

Attacking Da Cheng stage? Palace Master Zhong Jiao hadn’t had this thought for a long time. Presently, he was at the mid YuanYing stage, not to mention Da Cheng stage, and even reaching the peak the YuanYing stage seemed like an extravagant hope. Yang Chen’s words about him attacking Da Cheng stage, how was it possible?

“If Palace Master is willing, then you should find a suitable dao companion. Disciple actually knows a metal attribute dual cultivation method which can allow your strength to increase greatly.”

Ever since Yang Chen returned from Immortal Falling Well, Palace Master Zhong Jiao had shown great consideration for Yang Chen. So naturally, Yang Chen also wanted to return the favour by allowing Palace Master Zhong Jiao to advance one step further.

“Dao companion?”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao was so startled that he was rooted in his original place. He hadn’t thought about this question.

Firstly, the Pure Yang Palace didn’t have any great dual cultivation methods. Secondly, finding a suitable dao companion was really extremely difficult. Palace Master Zhong Jiao’s status was special, so how can he casually take a disciple of another sect as his dao companion?

But Yang Chen’s reminder gave some hope to Palace Master Zhong Jiao, especially Yang Chen’s performance in these last few years. As long as someone was on Yang Chen’s side, he would certainly show consideration to them and all of them had an increase in cultivation. There had been many examples, so clearly Yang Chen was not just speaking big words. Since he had said that he will help Palace Master attack the Da Cheng stage, then maybe Palace Master would be able to reach Da Cheng stage.

Yang Chen also wanted the surrounding people to feel this. As long as they have good relationship with him, there will be many benefits, but if they oppose him, the losses will be disastrous and maybe they will have to worry about their life. This way, the people of the sect will easily make the correct choice.

“Are you certain?”

After pondering for a moment, Palace Master Zhong Jiao lifted his head and asked.

“Sixty percent certain!”

Yang Chen also wasn't a hundred percent sure about this, so he only answered that there was a relatively high possibility. In reality, sixty percent assurance was enough to tempt Palace Master Zhong Jiao, even thirty percent certainty was sufficient to stake his life on it.

This scene was very weird, if someone saw it, their first impression would certainly be that Yang Chen was asking Palace Master Zhong Jiao for advice, but who would have thought that the truth was the complete opposite?

One option was to remain a YuanYing stage expert, another was to turn himself into Da Cheng stage expert. Between these two choices, how could Palace Master Zhong Jiao not know which to pick? But once he thought that Yang Chen would rather his spend time and energy training a Da Cheng stage, but he wasn't willing to even say a single line of advice to Song Hang, who had offended him, Zhong Jiao really didn't know how to describe Yang Chen.

“Regarding the matter of a dao companion.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao suddenly mentioned another topic, and said while looking at Yang Chen:

“While you were in seclusion, I personally went to Green Jade Immortal Islands.”

Yang Chen couldn't help but throw a look at him, this matter

concerned him and he couldn't avoid it, so could only ask angrily:

“Could Disciple know what was the result?”

“In my opinion, you have obtained a beautiful flower, her cultivation is high, her innate talent is also outstanding and exceptionally good for dao companion. In addition, my Pure Yang Palace will obtain the support of Green Jade Immortals Island. This would just be having your cake and eating it too.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao looked at Yang Chen and said with a smile.

“Palace Master, will you answer me or not?”

Yang Chen became anxious, without caring for the etiquette between senior and junior, he hastily asked.

“You are afraid of that girl, Shi Shanshan?”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao looked at him teasingly and could not help but make fun of him.

“I am not afraid!”

Yang Chen shook his head, then earnestly stood up, within his mind, his master's determined face of previous life again flashed through, formally said:

“Only, I cannot accept her.”

“The matter is between you two, so you have to resolve it yourself!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao seemed to sigh faintly and continued to speak:

“I have already spoken to the Island Master of Green Jade Immortal Islands. You two are still young. Perhaps if you know each other more, you will understand. As for whether it will succeed or not, since you both started this matter, you will have to resolve it!”

“Many thanks Palace Master!”

Yang Chen had heard that faint sigh from Palace Master Zhong Jiao’s mouth. Palace Master had already fought for him to this stage, this certainly wouldn’t have been easy. Yang Chen paid his respects and thanked him.

“You need not be so courteous with me.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao shook his head, then said optimistically:

“I have already agreed with Green Jade Immortal Islands, that after your pill concocting had ended, regardless of whatever you do, you will do it together with Shi Shanshan. You will both gain experience together in these next several years. Perhaps that will enhance your understanding.”

“What?”

Yang Chen was stunned. What did this mean? Why was he still required to accompany Shi Shanshan to gain experience? To promote understanding between them?

“You don’t need to be so stunned.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao said in commanding tone:

“This is for your own good. What do you intend to do next?”

He had barely asked this when he directly instructed, without waiting for Yang Chen’s answer:

“Regardless of what you do, you are to first go to Green Jade Immortal Islands and pay formal visit to Shi Shanshan. Then, you are to travel together afterwards.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao’s command was the result of discussions between him and the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Yang Chen knew that this matter couldn’t be changed and could only scowl miserably and ask to be excused.

“I am allowing an exquisite woman like Shi Shanshan to travel

with you and you still want to complain? Quickly get lost!”

Seeing Yang Chen’s expression, Palace Master Zhong Jiao understood what he was thinking and berated him before driving him out.

Yang Chen was incessantly complaining within his heart, what is this? Initially, he had intended to go and find that blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog for his Heavenly Roar to use as a supplement together with his master, but now, he had no option but to bring along Shi Shanshan. How could this have happened?

While complaining in his heart, he could only return back to his master’s courtyard and tell her about Palace Master’s instruction, while anxiously waiting for Gao Yue to say something.

“Since these are Palace Master’s instructions, then go with her, what harm can be there?”

When Gao Yue saw Yang Chen being so anxious, she couldn’t help but laugh:

“You don’t have confidence in yourself? Or still.....”

Saying until here, Gao Yue suddenly bit her lip and continued:

“Or you don’t have faith in your master?”

“Master!”

Yang Chen lifted up his head and looked at Gao Yue in complete astonishment. Seeing the red shade on Gao Yue’s face, as well as her limpid eyes, he suddenly thought that him protecting her for so long was finally showing some result.

With an ecstatic sound, Yang Chen suddenly recovered his vigorous fighting spirit and laughed for a long time. He then said high spiritedly:

“Disciple understands master’s intention clearly! Disciple will go to Green Jade Immortal Islands and invite Fairy Shi to journey together.”

In any case, Palace Master Zhong Jiao said they should resolve their problems themselves. If worst came to worst, he could just speak clearly with Fairy Shi. Yang Chen's only worry previously was that he feared his master would misunderstand. Now that his master had full confidence in him, why should he be afraid of anything?

While Yang Chen was involved with pill concocting, Gongsun Ling had already studied that maze thoroughly. Moreover, she had returned in time to see Zhu Chentao form his Ying successfully and had observed the entire process of lightning tribulation in close range. She had comprehended something at the end and was now in closed door training.

Yang Chen wanted to pay her a visit, but that had been in vain. He could only ask the servants of Gao Yue to pass on a message to her, saying that he was going outside to travel and would return in two to three years.

After handing over the business matters to Shangguan Feng, Yang Chen congratulated Zhu Chentao, and then left the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. He called out his Flying Shuttle and directly headed towards Green Jade Immortal Islands.

When there was still some distance left to reach Green Jade Immortal Islands, Yang Chen commanded his Flying Shuttle to fall in ocean. He changed it into a big boat and rushed towards Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Regardless of what is said, he had maintained all etiquettes properly, so even if there were some indifferences, other people wouldn't be able to pick faults with these trivial things. This was Yang Chen's intention.

After stopping his boat on the shore, he paid his respects as per the islands' rules and announced his name. Then, he requested to meet with Fairy Shi.

The entire Green Jade Immortal Islands had heard of Yang

Chen's famous name, moreover, the upper echelons of Green Jade Immortal Islands had also let out the news confirming that Yang Chen was Shi Shanshan's dao companion. So when he announced his name this time, the treatment he received was completely different.

When the disciple guarding the island gate heard Yang Chen's name, he enthusiastically led him to the guest room, delivered fine refreshment, and didn't forget to inform him:

"Fellow daoist Yang, this time, ask senior apprentice sister Shi to show you around the islands. Next time when you come, just announce your name and directly go find senior apprentice sister Shi."

Shi Shanshan was extremely talented and had entered the JieDan stage quite early. The fellow disciples of the same generation as her were still here looking after guests and were still only in the foundation stage, so calling her 'senior apprentice sister Shi' was normal.

Through his journey to the island, Yang Chen had already considered this carefully. This matter regarding Shi Shanshan had to be solved as early as possible. As for what Shi Shanshan was thinking, she could do whatever was convenient for herself. In all likelihood, Green Jade Immortal Islands had considered his innate talent in pill concocting, and because of that, had generously agreed to make Shi Shanshan his dao companion at that time. In any case, as long as the matter was appropriately dealt with, no one would be greatly offended and probably there wouldn't be much effect.

Upon receiving the news that Yang Chen had come to see her, Shi Shanshan also wasn't neglectful and quickly flew towards the guest room. On seeing Yang Chen, she exchanged conventional greetings with him, but apart from that cold expression as before, she didn't show any other expression which would astonish people.

Shi Shanshan indeed invited Yang Chen to take a walk around Green Jade Immortal Islands. He didn't refuse, as per Palace Master Zhong Jiao's instructions. Yang Chen followed behind Shi Shanshan, looked around Green Jade Immortal Islands, then also rested in Shi Shanshan's room for a while. Only when both of them were sipping tea did Yang Chen speak about his intentions.

"You intend to go to Ming Qi Mountain to gain experience and are inviting me to journey together with you?"

Shi Shanshan was startled, apparently she hadn't expected that Yang Chen would invite her to travel together. However, she wasn't that conflicted towards Yang Chen's request as she had already acknowledged Yang Chen as her dao companion publicly, so naturally, she would not refuse:

"That is also good, I haven't gone out to gain experience in a long time. So let's go and see."

Shi Shanshan was a firm person, she just sent one of her servants to notify her master and she followed Yang Chen without any hesitation.

Chapter 204 - Common Interests

The Meng Qi Mountains were quite far from Green Jade Immortal Islands and close to the Demon Beast Plains. Although the region didn't penetrate the territory of demon beasts deeply, there were still many demon beasts. However, this blood essence hadn't been found until now.

Regardless of what is said, Yang Chen had to go and take a look. That one drop of blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog could possibly activate some unique ancient beast's bloodline. His Heavenly Roar himself is a unique beast and this blood essence would be a great supplement for him. Taking a trip there wouldn't waste anything, but if he found that blood essence, there would be great benefits.

Since Guan Yueying already knew that Yang Chen had a flying shuttle which was very fast, Yang Chen didn't hide it from Shi Shanshan and called out his Flying Shuttle, inviting her onboard. He then controlled it to move towards the Meng Qi Mountain's direction.

Although Shi Shanshan was slightly surprised, she wasn't that astonished. However, sensing the high speed of Flying Shuttle, she couldn't help but steal glances at Yan Chen. Seeing from her reaction, it could be assumed that Guan Yueying had spoken with her about this matter.

“Is this the magic weapon you had to used to escape from elder Guan when she was chasing you?”

After sitting in the Flying Shuttle, no one said anything for a long time, so Shi Shanshan found a topic and asked.

“Yes!”

Yang Chen nodded affirmatively. He was thinking about Seventh Metal True Qi, so he didn't speak much.

Although he had already obtained the Seventh Metal True Qi, Yang Chen wasn't anxious to refine it immediately. His fire attribute spirit power had already reached late foundation stage. After successive upgrade in layers, it required some time for consolidation. Right now, forcefully absorbing the Seventh Metal True Qi to cultivate the Seventh Metal True Secrets would certainly not do him any good.

However, when he thought of Seventh Metal True Qi and Seventh Metal True Secrets, Yang Chen suddenly remembered that Shi Shanshan was metal attributed. If Shi Shanshan and he became dao companions, then with her full metal spirit root and Yang Chen's postnatal full metal spirit root, their cultivation would increase at an astonishing speed.

However, with the image of his master in his heart, Yang Chen didn't feel anything towards Shi Shanshan. Perhaps this was also destiny, in his previous life, Yang Chen had coveted Fairy Shi passionately, but in this life, he didn't have that kind of feeling.

"Then what blade did you use to kill Li Qingchen at that time?"

During the time of Yang Chen's life and death challenge with Li Qingchen, Shi Shanshan was also present at the scene, but she also couldn't see clearly how Yang Chen dealt the final blow. Just one blade slashed down and as a result, countless chins fell down.

Shi Shanshan was also one among one of those. At that time, she also wasn't that optimistic about Yang Chen winning, therefore, she had said that she would remaining faithful to Yang Chen. And now, with Yang Chen sitting by her side, she couldn't help but ask about this to clarify her thoughts.

"My Immortal Executing Blade is a high grade magic weapon."

Yang Chen also didn't hide and stated the reason:

"My strength was very high and was holding the blade with two hands, so it was much more advantageous for me compared to

him, who was protecting himself by controlling his flying sword with spiritual awareness.”

Shi Shanshan was also an expert, so immediately understood the crux. One side was slashing with physical strength and power of spiritual awareness, moreover, also had a high grade magic weapon, while the other side was careless and didn't have a high grade magic weapon, so this outcome was completely normal.

“Thank you!”

Shi Shanshan earnestly thanked Yang Chen.

“Because I killed Li Qingchen?”

Yang Chen was slightly confused, even if Li Qingchen nagged Shi Shanshan, it should not have gone so far as to give birth to killing intent in Shi Shanshan. And even if she wanted to kill Li Qingchen, Shi Shanshan could have casually led to him to a place where there wouldn't be any witnesses and have gotten rid of him easily, so why thank him for doing anything?

“Because you have saved me a lot of trouble.”

Shi Shanshan earnestly replied:

“After your life and death duel, elder Li hadn't come to look for trouble with me, so I was able to remain in peace, therefore, thank you!”

Because of Fairy Shi's words about remaining faithful to Yang Chen for no cause or reason, Yang Chen had become the best shield for Shi Shanshan. Moreover, with elder Guan Yueying's consent and elder Min Huafeng's agreement later on, there was no opposition within Green Jade Immortal Islands.

Naturally, outsiders also got this news. Those that were chasing after Shi Shanshan couldn't do anything except rack their brains, loathe and curse Yang Chen as they couldn't chase after Shi Shanshan anymore. They had already become dao companion, so going after her wouldn't be admirable, moreover, it will also be

disrespectful.

Surprisingly, he had once again saved much trouble for Shi Shanshan without any intention, Yang Chen didn't know what to say in this situation and could only force a bitter laugh:

“You need not be so formal!”

After that there was silence again, Shi Shanshan also saw that both of them were bored and fished out a beautiful tea set from her qiankun pouch and set it on the table. Then using the teapot and tea leaves, she began to boil tea within the Flying Shuttle.

It had to be said, Shi Shanshan herself was a beautiful woman, matchless, cool, and elegant. At this moment, this remarkably beautiful woman was earnestly boiling tea in front of him. Seeing her earnest expressions, Yang Chen also couldn't help but admire.

After a series of tricks, Shi Shanshan placed a mug of aromatic tea in front of Yang Chen. Yang Chen very naturally, picked up the aromatic mug and poured it in the cup and sniffed it once. Then brought the tea cup to his mouth and began to sip slowly, closing his eyes to attentively enjoy the aftertaste.

“How is the taste?”

Shi Shanshan looked at Yang Chen with an expectant expression, wanting to hear the assessment from his mouth.

“This water, is it taken from the spring at the ocean floor after removing the salt?”

After sampling for a moment, Yang Chen opened his eyes and asked.

“You're really knowledgeable!”

Shi Shanshan was slightly amazed, but when she remembered that Yang Chen had read many random books and his reputation of being extensively knowledgeable, she wasn't greatly baffled.

“Good water, however the tea leaves aren't properly matured.”

Yang Chen slightly shook his head, then continued with his evaluation:

“Boiling also wasn’t enough, but getting it to this stage also wasn’t easy for you!”

This unrestrained criticism made Shi Shanshan slightly enraged, following which she said coldly:

“In that case, today let’s taste your skills.”

Yang Chen also wasn’t that polite and nodded his head. Taking out tender leaves of tea trees he had long ago planted in Medicine Garden, he began to roast them in front of Shi Shanshan.

Suddenly, the Profound Spirit Furnace appeared in front of them, the Cold Ice Fire flashed and began to dry the moisture content from the green tea leaves. After waiting for some time, he changed the flame to the Profound Wood Fire, a tiny flame began to bake the tea leaves. Yang Chen, using the Profound Spirit Furnace as a ware for sauteing tea leaves, began to stir fry them.

With his fire controlling technique, Yang Chen didn’t even need to touch tea leaves and completed all the work. By the time, he placed the well fried tea leaves in a jade cup on the table, Shi Shanshan’s face had turned sluggish, apparently not daring to believe everything she was seeing.

“Using the pill concocting furnace to saute the tree leaves, you would be the first one to do so?”

After remaining expressionless for a while, she suddenly smiled. When she smiled, it was like cold ice had been defrosted, so beautiful, that nothing more beautiful could be imagined.

But only after one smile, Shi Shanshan quickly restored her cold expression from before. She grasped the jade cup with her lily white hand and brought it towards herself. First, she marvelled at the plump tea leaves, afterwards, bringing it closer, she slightly sniffed it.

With this one sniff, Shi Shanshan's ice cold expression transformed again, changing to an expression of not daring to believe the sight in front of her.

Yang Chen's tea leaves were planted in the Medicine Garden. Although they were planted only twenty years ago, the several times transformation in the clean bottle had lead to all the herbs within the Medicine Garden to increase their maturity by hundred years for no special reason. This tea tree was also no exception.

They had reached sufficient maturity themselves. Moreover, with the nourishment of fifth earth soil within the Medicine Garden and the medicinal power distributed by countless herbs, this combination made the harvested tea leaves even more unique.

Up to here, everything was still normal, but surprisingly Yang Chen had used pill refining technique to fry the tea leaves. Speaking of frying, it is inferior to refining. Even then, he used two different flames and a portion the strong medicinal power of Profound Spirit Furnace had also permeated within it. These were not simple tea leaves, rather, they were clearly tea pill.

These kind of tea leaves were completely different compared to ordinary tea leaves. Even if Shi Shanshan's tea leaves were grown in the region of Green Jade Immortal Islands with plentiful spirit power and fried with utmost care, how could they compare to Yang Chen's special tea leaves?

Just these tea leaves were enough to make Shi Shanshan forget her unwillingness to accept criticism from a moment ago. Furthermore, when she saw that Yang Chen had surprisingly used Nanming Fire within the pill concocting furnace to boil water, she immediately realized what Yang Chen meant by saying that the heat was not enough.

Shi Shanshan had a metal spirit root and was not proficient in everything like Yang Chen. Presently, she could only shockingly look at Yang Chen adding water to the tea leaves in a way that was

more proficient than her. She didn't dare to believe what she was seeing. Where did Yang Chen learn such a traditional method of making tea?

After a series of techniques, a cup of tea that was even more aromatic compared to previous one was placed before Shi Shanshan, Yang Chen then extended his hand and made an inviting gesture:

“Please!”

Shi Shanshan gracefully picked up her fragrant cup in her lily white hands and deeply sniffed. Immediately, she sensed a sweet fragrance together with spirit power which comforted her entire body and rush into her nostrils. Just this one sniff had made her unable to control her gasp.

Only after the tea entered her mouth did Shi Shanshan genuinely taste what is known as the high quality tea. That refreshing flavour penetrated deeply through her body, making her whole body loiter within that feeling she got after sniffing the tea. Even without speaking about the refreshing spirit power that passed along with aroma of tea, it was not very dense and neither was it too weak. It was just perfect to cleanse the body once, from her lip directly to the sole of her feet, giving the sensation of rushing to become an immortal.

After drinking a mouthful, even the Cold Plum Fairy Shi, exposed an expression of admiration and was unable to hide it. After reflecting on the aftertaste for a good while, Shi Shanshan issued a faint sigh.

“Such delicacy, at which year, which month, would I be able to enjoy it next!”

Shi Shanshan couldn't help but feel regret, Yang Chen's current behaviour towards her didn't resemble one of a dao companion. Shi Shanshan could see that he just didn't care about her. If this continues, then there would be no fixed time when these two

would see each other again, much less talk about drinking Yang Chen's tea.

All her life, Shi Shanshan never had other hobbies except one. Apart from cultivation, she was only fond of tea making techniques. She didn't spare any effort and even went to the underground spring at the bottom of the ocean to collect water from the core of earth. The tea leaves were also personally grown and fried by her.

Initially, she had believed that her tea was already very high quality, however, she hadn't expected that within one short hour, Yang Chen would manage to produce something which was many folds better compared to the tea produced by her with utmost care for several years. If Yang Chen had also prepared it meticulously, spending several years to take care of it, what kind of delicacy would he produce?

"Whenever you wish you drink, just find me!"

Yang Chen subconsciously considered Shi Shanshan as an ally, after the words came out he felt a sense of regret, but couldn't take back his words.

Speaking frankly, Shi Shanshan was someone who understood tea and also understood how to appreciate it. Yang Chen's effort a moment ago, although it seemed simple, was quite dazzling. Showing off in front of the famous Cold Plum Fairy of previous life, Yang Chen also couldn't help but feel some excitement.

When Shi Shanshan drank the tea, Yang Chen also felt some longing. When Yang Chen saw the intoxicated expression on Shi Shanshan, he felt even more complacent. As the maker, the genuine delight for Yang Chen was someone who knew how to appreciate his tea. Therefore, he had started talking without thinking.

However, just after he had opened his mouth, Yang Chen immediately regretted it, but this was only a faint regret. Didn't he

not want to become estranged with Shi Shanshan? How could he reply to her like this?

Shi Shanshan was greatly exalted. She surprisingly revealed a smile again and thanked Yang Chen.

“No need to be polite!”

Since he had already said so, Yang Chen wouldn't be petty. How could he insist on such a trivial matter? He only nodded:

“Sometimes, freshly prepared things are far more delicious compared to things which are prepared a long time ago with utmost care. If you like it, then you can come and drink the fresh tea!”

Two people, each one holding a cup, were silently sipping tea. Shi Shanshan was immersed within the beautiful taste. After taking a sip, Yang Chen again slightly shook his head:

“Unfortunately, the tea is still not the best. Only sometimes do I find some wild tea. Compared to them, these spirit plants are much worse. Although the water is pretty good, but it is only in the sunflower water category and it is not as good as natural ninth water.”

The ocean water was precisely sunflower water, having large amounts of salt, even if it is from an underwater spring from the bed of the ocean. It was also the same. Although salt was removed from it, some amount of salt still remained, making it lose its natural flavor. This was the reason of Yang Chen's resentfulness.

While sipping the tea, Shi Shanshan committed Yang Chen's words to memory. Next time, when she traveled out, if she would find some good type of water and then would surely collect it. She knew she must try what this heavenly ninth water tastes like.

As for the tea plant, that could only be encountered by chance and not purposefully found. If she encountered it, she would surely pluck a branch or two and grow them. Using the pill

concocting method to refine and further raise the quality, it would probably increase the taste even more.

Although not many words were spoken, both of them seemed to have found a common pleasure, each of them sipping their aromatic tea slowly, which took an incense stick burning time to finish. After the tea was finished, the atmosphere between seemed to have become harmonious.

“What are you going to do at Meng Qi Mountain?”

This time, Shi Shanshan asked Yang Chen’s real goal:

“There are many demon beasts there, if it is just for getting experience, isn’t that dangerous?”

“In near future, I intend to raise a spirit pet. There are many treasures at that place which can substantially increase the strength of my spirit pet, thus I am going there to try my luck.”

Yang Chen didn’t conceal anything. In any case, she would be travelling with him through the whole journey. Sooner or later, she would become aware of Yang Chen’s aim. So concealing anything would be of no use, and he told her everything forthrightly.

“Spirit pet?”

Shi Shanshan glanced at Yang Chen and was somewhat surprised:

“You should spend more time on cultivation. Refining pills is already difficult enough, but you still want to raise a spirit pet? You must absolutely not become greedy. I remember that during the last ‘great calamity of devil cultivation’, Pure Yang Palace suffered the least loss. Did your master allow you to do this to distract you?”

“This is my own matter.”

Yang Chen slightly smiled, hinting her not to bother:

“Moreover, my spirit pet will be unique and won’t require me to spend much time on it.”

Chapter 205 - Searching Heavenly Roar

Dog's Blood Essence

Hearing Yang Chen's words, Shi Shanshan couldn't help but curiously ask:

“What kind of spirit beast is so easy to breed? Is it possible for me to take a look?”

Since the two people were publicly acknowledged to be dao companions, so naturally will not call each other as senior apprentice brother or senior apprentice sister or fellow daoist and just addressed each other informally.

Yang Chen also sensed that travelling without speaking would be too difficult, Cold Plum Fairy Shi rarely took the initiative to speak, so Yang Chen also didn't intend to brush her away and directly took out Heavenly Roar from Medicine Garden and released him within the Flying Shuttle.

Heavenly Roar was greedily licking the low grade flying sword when he was pulled out from Medicine Garden. When he suddenly discovered he was in an unfamiliar location, he subconsciously bit the flying sword and looked vigilantly at the two people. Seeing Yang Chen, he delightedly ran towards him and started intimately rubbing himself against Yang Chen's leg.

Shi Shanshan was stunned. Initially, she had believed that the spirit pet of someone like Yang Chen would certainly be an unique and formidable beast, but she didn't expect that it would be such a cute little puppy. She couldn't endure it any longer and started giggling. Once a smile bloomed on her snow white face, the sensation she exuded was indescribably breathtaking.

Heavenly Roar seemed to sense that Shi Shanshan was laughing at him. He started whimpering at her, opening his small beady eyes. He then angrily growled at Shi Shanshan. Once Yang Chen

held him to his bosom and caressed him gently, he started to calm down and make crooning sounds; he then began to lick his flying sword again.

“Sorry!”

After Shi Shanshan laughed, she immediately sensed that it was inappropriate of her. As her control over her mental state was good, she quickly composed herself and returned to normal.

“No problem.”

Yang Chen shrugged his shoulders with an indifferent expression. When he had informed Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling about Heavenly Roar, they had also laughed, so he didn't think that Shi Shanshan laughing at this moment was inappropriate.

“Forgive me for speaking bluntly.”

After observing Heavenly Roar for a long time, Shi Shanshan couldn't find anything extraordinary about him and earnestly said:

“But your spirit pet doesn't seem very outstanding. You spent your only chance to select a spirit beast companion to be its master, isn't it a waste?”

“If he had been that outstanding, then he would already have been discovered by others before being discovered by me.”

Yang Chen smiled but didn't dispute her, he hadn't found Heavenly Roar based on previous life's memories. Rather, Heavenly Roar was treasure he had found using his insight, like an antique lover that had picked up a great antique, so he couldn't help but feel proud of himself:

“If you knew his origin, you would certainly not be thinking like that.”

“Then I request you to enlighten me.”

Shi Shanshan's eyes shone brightly. She was a cultivator and also knew that Yang Chen had extensive knowledge and experience,

after taking a good look at Heavenly Roar again, she was puzzled and asked him.

“For the time being, you should not ask about this. Even if I told you, you wouldn’t believe.”

Yang Chen shook his head while smiling and returned Heavenly Roar back to the Medicine Garden. In reality, Heavenly Roar had already started revealing some characteristics from Yang Chen’s memories, but his outward appearance was still ordinary, making people unable to believe his origins.

Seeing that Yang Chen didn’t intend to speak no matter what, Shi Shanshan also didn’t insist and changed the topic:

“What kind of thing can allow a spirit pet to upgrade?”

“It’s nothing great. Just the Heavenly Roar Dog of the Immortal World had left behind a drop of blood essence in the mortal world.”

Yang Chen said nonchalantly, without caring for how shocking the answer was.

“Heavenly Roar Dog’s blood essence?”

Shi Shanshan said with great alarm. Although she didn’t know much, she had definitely heard about Yang Erlang’s Heavenly Roar Dog. There were many legends about him. When Yang Chen unexpectedly mentioned that there was a drop of Heavenly Roar Dog’s blood essence here, Shi Shanshan immediately thought of the little pup from a moment ago:

“How is it possible? Could it be that your spirit pet is a descendent of a Heavenly Roar Dog?”

“No!”

Yang Chen shook his head to refute and immediately continued:

“However, you can think about it as you like, and I will also not refute you for the time being, and in any case, you should treat him

as he is!”

What kind of reply is this? Shi Shanshan was bewildered. He would not refute and treat him like he is? Then in the end is he or is he not a descendent of a Heavenly Roar Dog?

“Believe me, you are an orthodox dao sect cultivator, you most certainly do not want to know what it is.”

Looking at Shi Shanshan’s confused face, Yang Chen couldn’t help but remind her:

“You need not indulge in flights of fancy.”

Even though he said these things, Shi Shanshan still wrinkled her brows, trying to guess what Heavenly Roar was. But regardless of how much she racked her brain, she couldn’t imagine what kind of ferocious spirit pet he was. After observing him and pondering for a long time, with his appearance, only Heavenly Roar Dog came to her mind.

As for why Yang Chen knew that Heavenly Roar Dog’s blood essence was there, Shi Shanshan didn’t ask much. Yang Chen had a reputation of reading many random books, so it didn’t need to be said that he must have found it within some book by chance.

Yang Chen also hadn’t expected that this reputation, which he had let out casually, had saved him many misunderstandings. Even when he did something strange, other people wouldn’t doubt him and would rather take the initiative to find the reasons and sources.

Meng Qi Mountain was still very far away. Even using the Flying Shuttle, it still would take one full month of travel to reach. During this long time, the two people riding in the Flying Shuttle exchanged some words from time to time, but for most of the time, they cultivated silently. Occasionally, they would taste Yang Chen’s fresh tea prepared on the spot.

However, every time the tea was cooked, Shi Shanshan tactfully

took charge. Moreover, with each time, Shi Shanshan began to resemble a virtuous wife more and more; carrying the tea water respectfully with both hands for Yang Chen. In the beginning, Yang Chen was unused to this, but Shi Shanshan insisted that this was woman's work. Yang Chen couldn't change her mind, so he could only slowly adapt.

With Meng Qi Mountain within sight, Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan also did some preparation. After finding a suitable region, Yang Chen put away the Flying Shuttle and landed.

After observing the surroundings for a good while, Shi Shanshan turned to Yang Chen and asked:

“Where should we go now? Where did you say that blood essence was?”

The information about Heavenly Roar Dog leaving behind something was only a few words. It was clearly at some hidden valley at the Meng Qi, but there is no clear sign of where the hidden valley is.

“It must be at some hidden valley, but there is no specific location. We would have to spend time to search.”

Holding the Bright Ray Sword in one hand, Yang Chen released his spiritual awareness and began to investigate everything.

“If only you had a better solution!”

Shi Shanshan wasn't in favor of Yang Chen's plan of searching region by region, but she had already followed Yang Chen, so it wouldn't be appropriate to return. She could only follow after Yang Chen, taking one step and checking.

Not waiting for Yang Chen to remind her, Shi Shanshan had already taken out her flying sword. However, she didn't clench her flying sword in her hand; rather, it spun around her body rapidly. Together with it, a faintly discernible armour also appeared. With this, her battle preparation was done.

Looking at Shi Shanshan naturally get into a fighting stance, Yang Chen recalled that in his previous life, Shi Shanshan hadn't gotten the fame of Cold Plum Fairy just because of her cold face. Rather, she earned her reputation because of her real world battle experience. Having such a companion would save him the worry of needing to show any consideration for her during battle.

Both of them had completed their preparations in a timely and proper manner. Just when they had started walking after being fully armed, not far away, they saw a demon beast suddenly incline its head to look at them. Seeing two people, the spirit beast loudly roared, and its saliva was immediately thrown towards the two people.

Sou Sou Sou

With three successive sounds, Shi Shanshan's flying sword flickered three times continuously on the body of the demon beast in the sky. As the body of the demon beast fell in front of Yang Chen from the sky, with one ferocious slash, Yang Chen chopped the already seriously injured demon beast into two pieces.

Even though they were cooperating for the first time, their mutual understanding seemed to be perfect. There were no unnecessary movements, and the demon beast was taken care of very efficiently. Both of them hadn't expected this. Neither of them had previously seen the other person fight, but now, after seeing for the first time, both were full of praise in their hearts for the other.

Although this place was close to the Demon Beast Plains, the demon beasts here were not very formidable. With Shi Shanshan's JieDan stage strength, they advanced forward effortlessly. Furthermore with Yang Chen, the killing god, things were even easier.

Within less than two hours, the two of them had already killed three demon beasts. Each beast seemed to be at foundation stage.

Their inner dan still hadn't solidified. Yang Chen would always conveniently remove the most useful part, but for Shi Shanshan, she refused to do so.

Fairy Shi was clear as ice and clean as jade. She was more or less obsessed with cleanliness. Seeing the blood dripping from the parts cut off from the demon beasts disgusted her.

Yang Chen also recalled this habit of Shi Shanshan from his previous life, so he also didn't insist on her doing it. Rather, he did it himself. Moreover, when they reached a place near water and rested, he took these things out and washed them clean when she was not near.

Although the Meng Qi mountain was not very huge, it still had a radius of several hundred miles. There were several hundred valleys, so finding the valley where Heavenly Roar Dog's blood essence was located was not an easy task. Yang Chen had already planned ahead. It would take at least three to five years, since they would have to search all the valleys one by one. Thus, he was not very anxious.

There were many demon beasts, always jumping out when least expected, so the both of them remained extremely alert, especially Yang Chen. He was sensitive towards killing intent, and the demon beasts here didn't know how to conceal their presence. They were always discovered by Yang Chen in advance.

While they had searched three or four valleys, both of them had already killed more than ten demon beasts. Both of them gained even deeper understanding towards the other person's cultivation and techniques, further increasing their coordination.

Shi Shanshan was a pretty good fighting partner for Yang Chen. She was an expert who had matured through fighting and was different from an academic like Gongsun Ling. She had ample experience and knew what kind of techniques should be used against which enemy. She also understood when to attack and

when to defend. She wasn't hesitant and soft hearted when dealing the final blow and was therefore extremely compatible.

Both of them were extremely well coordinated and attacked one after the other in full swing. From start to end, those demon beasts didn't have the slightest chance to retaliate under the unending successive attacks of the both of them and were killed immediately.

While killing so many demon beasts, both of them felt that it was too easy. Their attacks were incisive, dodging was also prompt, not in the least obstructing the attack line of the other companion. After killing the demon beast, when they beheaded it, they would always give each other a knowing smile.

He had a few memories of Shi Shanshan smiling, from his past life. After Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan had come here this time, he had already seen her smile several times. Thinking about it, Shi Shanshan also did not have it easy. She was such a beautiful woman, but she always wore an ice cold expression. Smiling several times was also an effective means of releasing pressure.

Yang Chen checked all the valleys one by one carefully. The blood essence left behind by Heavenly Roar before ascending was certainly not anything ordinary. There would certainly be formidable spirit power fluctuations. He found nothing extraordinary in these valleys which he had already inspected.

Luckily, Yang Chen had already discussed his intentions with Shi Shanshan, so neither of them were anxious and rather kept searching one valley after another trying to find it.

Continuously searching more than a hundred valleys consumed fully three months. During this time, they had killed several hundred demon beasts, but they couldn't find a single sign of Heavenly Roar Dog's blood essence.

"Could it be that you have made a mistake?"

Shi Shanshan also became doubtful, even after searching for so long, they couldn't find any sign of it.

“No, certainly not!”

Yang Chen thought about it. Heavenly Roar Dog shouldn't have lied under those circumstances, so he firmly shook his head and said:

“Hidden valley, where could it be?”

“Hidden valley?”

When Shi Shanshan heard these words, a light suddenly passed her eyes and she immediately asked:

“The valleys that we searched, were they hidden?”

Being reminded by Shi Shanshan, Yang Chen suddenly realized. Indeed, all the valleys these two had searched all clearly stood out. How can they be said to be hidden?

Seemingly, even a person like Yang Chen could also be negligent and hadn't carefully given thought about the region. Yang Chen was extremely grateful towards Shi Shanshan's warning. Following this, both of them began to search for valleys which couldn't be seen easily.

There were many hidden valleys, with probably several kinds of circumstances. One of the possibilities was that the entrance to the valley was hidden. After several thousand years, it was also not possible for them to be discovered by the demon beasts roaming here. Another possibility was that an expert may have hidden the valley from view using spell formations or some magic tools. Regarding the valley where Heavenly Roar Dog's blood essence was present, this was the most likely case.

With this new line of reasoning, their goal became even clearer. With just one glance at a valley, they could determine which ones could be ignored. They were specially searching for a region with a large scale spell formation.

Regardless of how hidden a spell formation was, under the probing of Yang Chen's formidable spiritual awareness threads, as long as it was within a range of several feet, Yang Chen would definitely discover some clues. Shi Shanshan didn't have such formidable spiritual awareness, so she could only follow after Yang Chen, searching through the whole journey.

Hard work indeed pays off, after changing their goal this time, in less than two months, Yang Chen discovered marks of a spirit formation hidden extremely well. There were spirit power fluctuations in a crack between a large stone and mountain rock. The crack was not very large, and its insiders were covered with thorn and bushes. Even the demon beasts couldn't squeeze in so easily.

After approaching it, Yang Che carefully checked it and even used some things to inspect it properly. Only after confirming that it was an illusion spell did he take the lead and enter the hidden illusion formation.

Just as he entered, Yang Chen saw a huge valley. It really was a hidden valley in accordance with Heavenly Roar Dog's words. Before he could express his astonishment, Shi Shanshan followed behind him, seeing the huge valley, she was endlessly surprised.

The inside of the valley was quite warm. All kind of trees and flowers grew luxuriously inside it. Just one thing was odd. There were no large animals inside and only had some small insects.

The most astonishing thing was not this fact but rather the plants growing inside. With just one glance, Yang Chen surprisingly discovered several unique legendary herbs. Moreover, from their shapes, it was clear that their maturity had reached at least ten thousand years.

Chapter 206 - Unexpected Harvest And Collecting The Blood Essence

Ten thousand years was just Yang Chen's initial estimate, but their real maturity may not just be limited to ten thousand years. He knew that it had already been over ten thousand years since Yang Erlang and Heavenly Roar Dog had ascended and these were left behind when Heavenly Roar Dog had ascended so it certainly could surpass that limit.

“Half belongs to both of you, you can choose first!”

Suddenly Yang Chen had some slight regret, if he had known earlier about this, he wouldn't have led Shi Shanshan here, he had given a huge favour to Green Jade Immortal Islands for no reason. But he also wasn't a cheap person who would hog everything to himself, so he generously extended his hand and indicated for Shi Shanshan to choose first.

Shi Shanshan was also a knowledgeable person, even though she didn't specialize in pill concocting, she could still make out the maturity of these rare herbs. Great astonished, she didn't expect to see Yang Chen being so generous and sighed.

“Aren't you afraid that after seeing these herbs, I would kill you to silence you and take everything for myself?”

Shi Shanshan didn't immediately start to collect the herbs, but rather, turned to Yang Chen and coldly asked.

“I only asked you to take your portion, why is there a need to speak so much rubbish?”

Yang Chen said resentfully, in fact, he wasn't afraid of becoming hostile with Shi Shanshan; that would be the perfect excuse to break off with her.

Whether it was the shock of seeing these precious ingredients or Yang Chen using an aggressive tone, the coldness on Shi

Shanshan's face immediately weakened by much, she gave a little smile to Yang Chen and agreed:

“Good!”

“Wait a moment!”

Just as Shi Shanshan was about to move, Yang Chen suddenly shouted at her.

“Regretting it now?”

Just as she was hesitating, thinking about which herbs she should pick first, she heard Yang Chen's voice and immediately turned around. Looking at Yang Chen suddenly take out his flying sword, she asked, ridiculing him.

“First investigate the surroundings and check whether there is any danger or not.”

However, Yang Chen didn't pay any attention to Shi Shanshan's words, rather, he alertly scanned the surroundings first:

“With heavenly treasures in the vicinity, maybe there will be a guardian spirit beast, so being a little careful wouldn't harm you.”

This logic was applicable for most of the treasures, Shi Shanshan also understood it clearly. Thinking about how she had misunderstood Yang Chen, her face turned bright red with embarrassment, unable to say anything. Only following his words, she took her flying sword and began to look all around.

Inside the valley, there were no traces of any large demon beast moving about, these plants also didn't seem to have suffered any damage while growing. Both of them were carefully flying around on their flying swords. On one hand, they had to make sure that they don't ruin the medicinal ingredients, while on the other hand, they were afraid of what might be lying therein.

This hidden valley also wasn't small, both people flew on their flying sword for the time it took for an incense stick to burn, only

then did they reach the end. At the end point of the valley, there was a large stretch of empty land. A spell formation could be clearly seen on that empty land. Lines that were about ten meters in radius filled the land and the lines of the spell formation were still flickering faintly.

At the core of the spell formation, a ball of blood coloured liquid of the size of a person's head was floating, incessantly changing shapes. But regardless of how it changed shape, it was always unable to leave the core of the spell formation.

“Isn't this the blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog that you've been trying to find?”

Looking at that blood coloured liquid that was still completely full of energy, Shi Shanshan was slightly astonished, her tone was also slightly unconvinced.

“Should be!”

No spirit power seemed to penetrate through the spell formation's cover, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness also didn't seem to be able to pass through it, so he couldn't confirm whether it really was the blood essence or not. But since it was here, moreover it also fitted with Heavenly Roar Dog's description, it should be correct.

“This is.....one drop?”

Shi Shanshan was even more dumbfounded. In any case, how could the concept of a drop of blood be linked this human head sized lump of liquid.

“Perhaps!”

Yang Chen also didn't know what to say, Heavenly Roar Dog's idea of a drop of blood was perhaps different from a human.

“Then what do we do now?”

Shi Shanshan seemed to be completely following Yang Chen, so

she asked, waiting for his next command.

After looking all around the surroundings once, he pointed to the vacant land at the edge of the spell formation and said:

“There doesn’t seem to have the slightest trace of demon beasts, so there shouldn’t be any here.”

The soil on the side of the spell formation was obviously not solid. The thing inside the spell formation was the most precious, if there had been demon beasts there, with so many legendary herbs growing nearby, they would have awakened their spirit wisdom by now. Demon beasts with spirit wisdom would certainly not leave the thing inside the spell formation alone, even if they could not break the spell formation, they would have certainly tried to. But since there were no marks here, it clearly meant that there weren’t any demon beasts around.

“Go pick the ingredients that you want!”

Presently Yang Chen only had the blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog in his eyes, but suddenly, after he thought about something, he turned around and told her:

“If there is something you can’t determine or perhaps you don’t know how to harvest it, then wait for me to get there and I will get it for you, by all means don’t ruin it.”

“En!”

Shi Shanshan agreed and began to slowly look around the valley. There was no need to be hasty, she could decide later after looking around properly.

However, Yang Chen remain seated at the edge of the spell formation and began to carefully analyze its mysteries. Since the lines of the spell formation could be easily seen, it saved Yang Chen a lot of trouble.

He kept on searching through all the high grade spell formations in his mind, but couldn’t find anything identical to this. Having no

other option, he could only use the most basic spell formation principles to analyze it.

Although the spell formation could be broken forcefully, it would easily destroy the blood essence inside it, so he could only keep on analysing as the gains did not make up for the losses here. Sitting at the edge of the spell formation, Yang Chen began to determine the principles behind the spell formation and also began to determine the function of the spell formation.

Just this one analysis had taken full two months. For some reason, Shi Shanshan had unexpectedly not pluck even a single legendary herbs. After taking a look around the valley, she returned. Seeing Yang Chen focused on analyzing the spell formation, she didn't say anything and sat down at one side and began to meditate, acting as a protector for Yang Chen.

“So it was like this!”

Yang Chen who had been attentively observing the spell formation, revealed a hint of a smile suddenly and blurted out these few words.

“Have you figured it out?”

Suddenly, a voice came from one side, it was Shi Shanshan. Yang Chen was startled, hadn't Shi Shanshan gone to collect the legendary herbs?

“Clearly!”

Yang Chen slowly stood up and chuckled:

“There is a sealing spell formation, a defensive spell formation, one is a preserving spell formation, another is a floating spell formation, and the last one is a spirit collecting spell formation, these few spell formations are just joined together, it will not be too troublesome.

“Yang Chen!”

Shi Shanshan suddenly called Yang Chen, Yang Chen also turned his head.

“You are so audaciously analyzing the spell formation here, don’t tell me that you aren’t a little bit afraid that I would kill you for this treasure?”

Shi Shanshan had her customary ice cold expression on his face, but her gaze contained slight hopelessness.

“Although Fairy Shi has killed a lot to exterminate the devil and defend the dao.”

Yang Chen blurted out without any hesitation:

“But I still haven’t heard Fairy Shi killing people to take their riches or silence them.”

These words weren’t from this life, rather heard in his previous life.

“If I killed people to silence them, then naturally you won’t hear about it.”

A slight light passed through Shi Shanshan’s eyes, but she continued with a stiff face:

“If you haven’t heard that doesn’t mean I haven’t done so.”

While speaking, she turned around her head to take a look at the valley and asked Yang Chen again:

“Do you know, if Green Jade Immortals Island obtained all this legendary herbs, how big of an advantage that will be?”

As a disciple of Green Jade Immortal Islands, she naturally would think about her sect.

“Even if you get more of them, then it also won’t matter to me!”

When Yang Chen said these words, Shi Shanshan almost tumbled on the spot. Does Yang Chen really not know value of these legendary herbs?

How is this possible, Yang Chen was a somewhat famous pill concocting master, how can he not know the value of these ingredients. If he really meant this then he certainly considers Shi Shanshan as an ally. Thinking of this, Shi Shanshan felt a little warmth in her heart, this is the first time she had such sensation towards a male.

Yang Chen was totally oblivious to the misunderstanding created in Shi Shanshan's mind by the words he had blurted out. His goal was simple, to get the blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog, as for other things, they were just an added bonus, regardless of whatever he got, he was totally indifferent. He was only slightly astonished to discover the ten thousand years matured herbs but didn't attach much importance to them.

Yang Chen remembered many locations having such legendary herbs, some had more than here, some had less, so the herbs here couldn't stir up his greed.

However, Yang Chen's behaviour had a completely different meaning in Shi Shanshan's mind. Not tempted even when facing riches, this was a true cultivator who wasn't affected by external factors. No wonder, within the brief thirty or so years, Yang Chen's reputation had increased so much, he indeed deserved it.

At this instant, Shi Shanshan had a sudden insight, her mental state had once again improved and she unconsciously entered the state of meditation.

However, Yang Chen hadn't discovered Shi Shanshan's peculiar situation. Besides discovering the logic behind the spell formations, he had also found the way to enter it at the same time. So he took out Heavenly Roar from Medicine Garden, seized the flying sword he had in his mouth and carried him into the spell formation.

Since his flying sword had been snatched, Heavenly Roar was barking furiously. Seeing this, Yang Chen gently caressed him and

said:

“I have something good for you, after eating this, you can start licking high grade flying sword.”

It was not clear whether Heavenly Roar understood him or not, but once he saw the blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog, his gaze was hooked on it, saliva kept dripping from his mouth. It could be assumed that he had also discovered the unusualness about the blood essence.

The radius of the spell formation was only ten or so meters, but it took Yang Chen fully two incense burning time to reach the middle. Yang Chen didn't wanted to break the order of the spell formation and risk wasting even a drop of blood essence, that's why he had chosen such a complicated method.

If the spell cultivators saw this action of Yang Chen, they would astonished to the point of their chin dropping to the ground. He had easily entered inside the spell formation without the least bit of problem which was formed by combining several spell formations and was arranged by a Da Cheng stage expert more than a thousand years ago. Those so called experts who had been researching spell formations for their entire lifetime would be ashamed to death upon seeing this.

When he came in front of the blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog, without damaging the spell formation, only then did he discover the ferociousness of that blood essence. The spirit power contained inside the blood essence seemed to be earth shattering. Surprisingly, Yang Chen was sensing an oppressive pressure standing in front of it.

If Heavenly Roar swallows this formidable blood essence, the outcome was certain, his body would explode into pieces. But collecting it wasn't extremely difficult for Yang Chen. He used a bucket sized piece of jade stone and quickly carved out a jade bottle from it using flying sword.

Soon after he engraved the floating spell formation and preserving spell formation on that jade bottle by referring to those two portions in the spell formation. Then he stretched his hand and collected the blood essence within the jade bottle.

Speaking of jade bottle, it would be more suitable to call it jade bucket. Once the blood essence entered the jade bottle, then similar to the spell formation, it remained suspended within air without coming in contact with the four walls.

Carefully using spirit power to take roughly one tablespoon of blood essence, he fed it to Heavenly Roar whose mouth was already dripping with saliva. Heavenly Roar excitedly drank that mouthful of blood. Immediately, red coloured light glittered from his entire body, after continuing for an instant, Heavenly Roar was unable to support himself and lost consciousness.

Yang Chen understood that this was the effect of blood essence and carefully placed him within the Medicine Garden. Then following the spell formation's pace, he slowly came out.

After coming out, he noticed Shi Shanshan's situation, she seemed to be comprehending something. Yang Chen couldn't resist passing a bitter smile, the talented were indeed talented, they could gain enlightenment from even the slightest things that any ordinary person wouldn't pay any attention to.

Without saying anything, he stood at some distance from Shi Shanshan as her protector. He also felt strange within his heart, from when did he start to not bothered by Shi Shanshan at his side, surprisingly, not even a least bit afraid that she would catch him off guard and attack?

Although within his memories, Cold Plum Fairy was a person of extreme importance, but, himself and Shi Shanshan shouldn't have that kind of friendship where they don't need to put up any defenses towards each other, right? But Yang Chen himself, didn't understand this clearly, even the two months while he was

analyzing, he never felt that Shi Shanshan would attack him for even a single moment.

Moreover, even more strange was Shi Shanshan's current situation. She had casually entered meditation not feeling the least bit afraid that Yang Chen may have ill intentions.

This kind of mutual trust had appeared between them at some point in time. Yang Chen also felt quite baffled, didn't he draw a clear dividing line between himself and Shi Shanshan? So how had this happened?

Confused, Yang Chen could only keep on protecting Shi Shanshan while observing Heavenly Roar's circumstances in Medicine Garden.

At this moment, Heavenly Roar was still unconscious, but blood veins had appeared around his body, becoming more and more dense, like a cocoon that binded around Heavenly Roar. Moreover, wave after wave of spirit power began to bubble forth from Heavenly Roar's body. Compared to previous state when he didn't have even the least bit of spirit, it was simply sky and earth turning upside down.

"Hmm, this blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog is indeed a great supplement!"

Yang Chen felt sincere admiration, then said concluding:

"Perhaps, after you consume this entire blood essence and arouse your blood vessels, you will turn into a Yazi!"

Sure enough, this little pup Heavenly Roar surprisingly had a faint blood vessel. When Yang Chen had incidentally discovered this, he didn't dare to believe his eyes.

However, this blood vessel wasn't clear, but Heavenly Roar had already started showing a traces of a Yazi's characteristics. His head had started to resemble that of a jackal, also he was fond of holding sharp blades in his mouth, but the spirit power in his body

was very weak, thus people would easily mistake it for an ordinary pup.

Yazi was one of the nine sons of the Dragon King. Yang Chen hadn't even thought of meeting him in the mortal world. Perhaps, after Heavenly Roar's blood vessels had been properly awakened, Yang Chen could think about going to the Dragon King's Palace and collecting the other magic weapons. Previously, he could only collect the Flying Shuttle so there must be many remaining.

However, it was unclear whether the dragon qi on this Yazi's body would allow Yang Chen to collect all the magic weapons concealed inside the Dragon Palace. If he really could, then it would be awesome as that was a genuine daoist immortal abode.

Chapter 207 - Troubles Of Sharing

Yazi, Dragon King's second son, with a body of dragon and head of a dog, upright and resolute in nature, excellent warrior, fond of war and would always be holding a sword in his mouth and use it to increase his strength.

Presently, Heavenly Roar still hadn't aroused Yazi's bloodline, so although his head seemed to resemble a dog, his body still resembled that of a dog since he was very young, thus other people only considered him as a little pup. Hence not being discovered by others was normal.

Yang Chen had countless links to Yazi, not to mention other things, even the chief demon blade used by him at the execution ground, that so called chief demon was precisely Yazi. Normal people believe that engraving Yazi on knife's end and sword's hilt would increase the strength of their weapons, making it formidable.

These beliefs were based off legends, which may have had some effect, but Yang Chen was certain about one thing. That certainty was that only when a genuine Yazi would become close to a weapon, that weapon would become greatly formidable.

A weapon's spirit, made from cleaving, destroying evil, and beheading all living things or engulfing another weapon's spirit could elevate and transform the weapon into a godly and ferocious instrument of death. Yang Chen knew that if he could, at some point in the future, get the mature Yazi to become close to his flying sword, then even if all the enemies of Yang Chen joined all their magic weapons together, they would be powerless against his weapon.

Because Yang Chen could already sense Heavenly Roar's rising killing and attacking intent, he knew that Heavenly Roar's Yazi bloodline had already started to be aroused. After some

consideration, Yang Chen placed the Bright Ray Sword near the Yazi's body. This was Yang Chen's most precious flying sword. It might not be the most formidable one, but Yang Chen would still protect it with his life.

On one side, Shi Shanshan was still meditating and comprehending, while on the other side, Heavenly Roar continued to sleep for one full month. After waking up, Heavenly Roar immediately took the Bright Ray Sword Yang Chen had placed near him and began to madly lick it. After licking for a moment, he seemed to sense that someone was spying on him and quickly went to a concealed corner, taking the Bright Ray Sword with him. He then continued to enjoy it as if this flying sword was something delicious.

Yang Chen knew that this was the Yazi's instinct as he was quite fond of weapons. Heavenly Roar not only enjoyed licking swords, but this act could also greatly increase a weapon's strength. Even though this Yazi's bloodline weren't completely aroused, it wasn't a difficult task for him to use his ability to increase the sharpness of the Bright Ray Sword.

Yang Chen only fed a tablespoon sized portion of Heavenly Roar Dog's human head sized blood essence to Heavenly Roar. He didn't want to feed Heavenly Roar any more than that for now. Spirit pets were the same as human cultivators in that after reaching certain stage, it was always better to consolidate the realm. Otherwise, his later cultivation speed would decrease when reaching higher levels. Moreover, the cultivation will also be unsteady.

Shi Shanshan's meditation lasted for full two months. During those two months, Yang Chen attended to Heavenly Roar while calmly guarding Shi Shanshan. A few days after that two month period, Shi Shanshan suddenly opened her eyes.

“Congratulations!”

One look at Shi Shanshan and Yang Chen immediately knew that Shi Shanshan had once again gained some insight and her cultivation had again increased.

“You were guarding me all this time?”

Shi Shanshan didn't smile as she responded. Rather, she asked with her customary cold expression.

“If I had not guarded you, then what would have happened if something had disturbed you?”

Yang Chen lazily replied, then standing up, he properly stretched his body.

Shi Shanshan's cultivation had indeed increased, causing her mental state to become more stable. Looking at Yang Chen stretching out, Shi Shanshan also suddenly had an impulse to follow Yang Chen without caring about her image, but her conscientiousness restrained her to not show a lack of manners.

When her gaze swept through the valley and saw the intact ingredients, she was stunned as this was completely out of her expectations. If he had been some greedy and vile person, he would have already swept everything clean. Moreover, he also would have attacked her while she was meditating.

Thinking of how vulnerable she had been, Shi Shanshan was frightened while at the same also surprised at how she had not bothered to set defenses against Yang Chen? She was aware that while she had been in meditation, if there had been even a little disturbance, the backlash could have seriously injured and maybe killed her. Until she found a safe region, she basically shouldn't have experimented. How could she be so bold?

After pondering these things, she reached a conclusion toward Yang Chen. Surprisingly, she had somehow developed trust towards Yang Chen without being conscious of the fact. Could it be because she had agreed to become Yang Chen's dao companion and

the feelings had developed automatically?

Shi Shanshan also didn't understand this other fact clearly, but after running into Yang Chen, she had already gained insight two times. First was because of his words at the execution ground when he still hadn't began his own cultivation. The second was seeing Yang Chen's indifferent attitude towards herbs. Although she didn't understand Yang Chen greatly, Shi Shanshan felt that becoming Yang Chen's dao companion wasn't anything unbearable.

“Have you chosen the ingredients you want?”

While stretching and looking happy, Yang Chen pointed towards the great pile of legendary herbs and asked.

Shi Shanshan looked at the surroundings and then suddenly asked Yang Chen:

“Are you really sure that I should take away some?”

“Both of us get half. This is the rule.”

Yang Chen smiled and casually asked:

“Why, haven't you chosen yet? Do you want me to give some suggestions?”

“Yes!”

Shi Shanshan nodded her head, agreeing with Yang Chen. But within her heart, she was a little surprised.

“Then let's start from here!”

Yang Chen had really intended to introduce Shi Shanshan to some good things. Since he had already agreed to give her half, why not do the job perfectly?

“This herb is comparatively ugly but also the most attractive.”

Yang Chen pointed to an herb having six leaves and explained:

“Ginseng, after its maturity reaches ten thousand years. It

doesn't even need refining and can be directly consumed. Even YuanYing stage experts have a chance of reaching the Da Cheng stage after consuming it."

"This is Nine Leaf Profound Ginseng."

Yang Chen again pointed to other one:

"As long as its maturity passes ten thousand years, it is basically the best mid grade ingredient. Any elixir refined with it has at least a third grade efficiency."

.....

Yang Chen quickly introduced a series of items, speaking very quickly without any hesitation. As one item after another was mentioned, Shi Shanshan could only force a smile while listening.

All the ingredients Yang Chen mentioned were indeed genuine. Shi Shanshan understood this clearly. But what she couldn't understand was that all the ingredients Yang Chen mentioned were of comparatively higher value. Left over all were ordinary goods. Is this also Yang Chen's kindness?

Yang Chen who was introducing items one by one, didn't have the faintest idea that his act had caused a stir in Shi Shanshan's mind. In any case, now that he had obtained the Heavenly Roar Dog's blood essence, all these things didn't even enter his eyes. What could be more precious compared to a spirit pet like a Yazi? Other people might not know, but how could Yang Chen not realize this?

When ten more sword spirits had been added to the Immortal Executing Blade, with Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets to propel it, with the Yazi possessing it, let alone within the Mortal World, even in the Spiritual World or the Immortal World, what wouldn't the Immortal Beheading Blade be able to cleave?

When compared between ten thousand years matured legendary herbs and a Yazi, even if ten times more of these herbs were

present, Yang Chen would still choose the Yazi without any hesitation.

Yang Chen's behaviour was quite casual, but Shi Shanshan wasn't able to relax. Although she could sense that Yang Chen didn't consider her an outsider, when she saw his generosity while deciding her share, she was completely surprised.

Shi Shanshan felt quite conflicted. There were so many several thousand years matured legendary herbs. If she could bring them back, then regardless of either herself or the Green Jade Immortal Islands, both of them would gain immense wealth.

But the problem was that such wealth would give rise to evil intentions of some elders with ulterior motives within the sect. One such elder was elder Li Yunyu who belonged to the same clan as that Li Qingchen.

So at that time, these herbs would certainly create disputes. Yang Chen and her had both set out on a journey together and had collected these legendary herbs, but to divide them evenly? Why? Shi Shanshan's cultivation was of the JieDan stage, so she certainly must have done more work. Moreover, Yang Chen was only a foundation stage youngster, so he certainly must have attached himself to Shi Shanshan for her help to get his work done.

Then, what would follow would be the rise of a dispute between the Pure Yang Palace and the Green Jade Immortal Islands. This was not Shi Shanshan's baseless assumption, rather such matters had happened in the past. There were many examples of big sects doing such things.

Next, there would be certainly some argument which would cause both sides to go to war. The two sect which had originally been harmonious would turn into enemies. Shi Shanshan was absolutely unwilling to see such circumstances.

It was not that Shi Shanshan wasn't thinking of the sect, rather

sometimes when the benefits were too big, they can break the balance. The saying that people would appreciate you when you help them but will hate you once you stop helping them was quite true.

Only Shi Shanshan herself knew that her contribution was not that great in obtaining these things. Rather Yang Chen had already planned this trip out long ago. He went to find Shi Shanshan to go on a journey only because the elders from both sides had requested this, and he had no other choice. What surprised her even more was that during this process, both sects had good mutual understanding and confidence in one another. What an irony!

If all these events were just in Shi Shanshan's imagination, then she also didn't know how to face Yang Chen's confidence in her. Especially since she hadn't done much work, she still had obtained the benefits for no reason.

After pondering over these thoughts, Shi Shanshan only could think that she should not accept this share, but even after asking few times, Yang Chen seemed to have already decided resolutely that she must have her share.

Looking at Yang Chen still explaining non-stop, Shi Shanshan took a deep breath and made her decision.

"Yang Chen, I don't have anything like a medicine garden or similar with me. It would be better for you keep them first!"

When she said these words with indifferent expressions to Yang Chen, Shi Shanshan felt calmness return to her heart:

"If I collect them just like that it would just be a great waste, when I want something, I will ask you!"

"En?"

Yang Chen's eyes opened widely, what did this mean? Making him collect everything? Yang Chen clearly understood Shi Shanshan's intention and asked her mockingly:

“Aren’t you afraid that seeing these riches could provoke my evil intentions and I will hog everything for myself?”

“How about you, weren’t you afraid that I will keep everything for myself when you were researching spell formation?”

Shi Shanshan finally smiled and looked in Yang Chen’s eyes with a slight hint of provocation.

“Speak frankly, I don’t understand!”

Yang Chen shook his head. Naturally, he could collect all these herbs within his Medicine Garden, but he could not understand how a core disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Islands, Shi Shanshan, could renounce these riches so easily. Could it be that she didn’t think the Green Jade Immortal Islands needed them?

“Many people on the island don’t think highly of you.”

Shi Shanshan also didn’t hide anything and directly spoke the reason:

“If these things were to appear on the island, many people will target you and Pure Yang Palace.”

Yang Chen was delighted. For the moment, he hadn’t thought this through. With Shi Shanshan’s one warning, Yang Chen immediately realized the problem. For an innocent man, treasuring a jade ring could also become a crime. In his previous life, a ten thousand year matured vermilion fruit caused the young master of the Greatest Heaven Sect to be tempted. What to say of the matured legendary herbs in this valley, all of which had reached ten thousand years maturity?

After understanding this one point, Yang Chen saw Shi Shanshan in a new light. Previously obtaining Heavenly Roar Dog’s blood essence and the thought of arousing the Yazi bloodline had excited him so much that he had forgotten about other matters. Fortunately, Shi Shanshan reminded him.

He felt a little happy. This cool and elegant beautiful woman

hadn't betrayed his confidence. Rather, she took the initiative to propose this method. But Yang Chen couldn't help but get another headache. How could he refuse Shi Shanshan in this case?

Shi Shanshan's method was quite legit. It was the best method to preserve the efficacy of these herbs for maximum time. But the premise is that both parties should have absolute confidence on each other.

Presently, Shi Shanshan had already shown her absolute confidence on Yang Chen. If Yang Chen was argumentative as a male, then her trust would not be justified. Immediately Yang Chen also made his decision and nodded his head:

"Ok, then let's work together, you successively take out the root. I will transplant them."

This work was also not easy. If these legendary herbs, which had reached the maturity of ten thousand years, were even spoiled a little bit, then just simple regret wouldn't be enough. Shi Shanshan used a large tree to make a wooden sword and then carefully used it to dig the roots one by one. She then handed them over to Yang Chen for transplantation.

Sometimes, a few legendary medicines grew together, so it was better to not separate them and just dig the entire piece of land and plant it as one unit within the Medicine Garden.

Yang Chen's work was contrarily much easier, since the environment inside the Medicine Garden was as better than the outside environment. Moreover, the spirit power was also abundant. Furthermore, with fifth earth soil as the foundation, these legendary herbs would easily take root in the Medicine Garden.

With those two working together, they quickly rooted out all the herbs from the valley. It still took them a full two months. Regarding time, it had already been a full one year since Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan had left together on their journey.

“Where do we go next?”

On this journey, Shi Shanshan had gained great harvests. Her cultivation had also improved. Furthermore, she had also obtained so many legendary herbs. Thus, she didn't have even the least bit of hesitation on travelling further together with Yang Chen. After completing this, there was no meaning of remaining at Meng Qi Mountain for Yang Chen, therefore Shi Shanshan asked for Yang Chen's next plans.

“Initially I was thinking of going to ocean together with you, but now that we have found these legendary herbs, I am thinking of returning and refining some elixirs first.”

Yang Chen also didn't hide anything, presently he was feeling very conflicted. Initially he hadn't thought that he would have this kind of contact with Shi Shanshan, so he could only use pill concocting as an excuse to avoid her.

“That is also good!”

Shi Shanshan also didn't want to pester him, so nodded her head in agreement:

“Just perfect, I have also gained some enlightenment so must go and consolidate my realm first.

After the work had been finished, naturally Yang Chen wanted Shi Shanshan to return to the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Shi Shanshan also didn't decline, and having no qualms, she tasted the tea prepared by Yang Chen several times on Flying Shuttle. Afterwards, she also bluntly asked for some reserves before sending Yang Chen off from the Green Jade Immortal Islands.

After returning back to the mountain by himself, Yang Chen began to ponder. Returning this time, what should he do? Speaking of pill concocting, earlier he had just said that he would concoct pills to give an explanation to Shi Shanshan. However, since he had those legendary herbs, pill concocting really wasn't a

bad choice. Great Master was presently stuck at the bottleneck of the peak of the YuanYing stage. Having these legendary herbs, maybe he could overcome the bottleneck and enter the Da Cheng stage?

Naturally, this still required to be thought over, Yang Chen had already followed Palace Master's instruction and returned first to see master.

Chapter 208 - Blessed Distress

Yang Chen had reaped great harvests on this trip to Meng Qi mountain. But apart from the legendary herbs in the hidden valley, everything else was under Yang Chen's expectation.

The only headache Yang Chen had now was that he hadn't cleared everything with Shi Shanshan. In the future, this will become another troublesome matter.

However that hidden valley where he found the blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog was also a reminder to him. The owner of Positive Yang Mountain's Medicine Garden, that is the owner of Yang Chen's current Medicine Garden in clean bottle had already ascended to Immortal World from Mortal World, three to four thousand years ago.

The maturity of the herbs in the Medicine Garden seems to have some problems. As his talent was exceptional and he did not delay during his cultivation journey, it had only taken him a short amount of time to retrieve the Medicine Garden.

However, when Yang Chen observed those ingredients, they seemed to be a thousand year matured at most. Could it be possible that the herbs in the Medicine Garden had already been taken by someone a thousand years ago? But why were the herbs replanted? This made no sense.

The only logical explanation could be that within the Medicine Garden in the clean bottle, there exists some secret which he had yet to discover. Perhaps his cultivation was insufficient or perhaps he hadn't gotten right the opportunity yet.

In any case, at that time, the senior had only informed him of the method to enter the Medicine Garden, as for the things inside, perhaps he wanted Yang Chen to slowly discover them by himself.

Throughout the whole journey, he kept thinking about a way to

handle Shi Shanshan's matter. After returning to Pure Yang Palace, he immediately went to see his master before meeting anyone else.

Ever since Yang Chen had gone out with the Fairy Shi of Green Jade Immortal Islands, Gao Yue's wasn't in a very good mood, her cultivation also wasn't progressing smoothly. When she suddenly saw Yang Chen, a smile bloomed on her face, all her previous worries seemed to have vanished.

Yang Chen naturally reported everything that had happened at the Meng Qi mountain one by one to her, including the matter of Heavenly Roar Dog's blood essence and the matter of legendary herbs too. Apart from the origin of Heavenly Roar, he revealed everything. Yang Chen had absolute trust towards Gao Yue.

Hearing about the immense harvests, moreover, that Shi Shanshan had unexpectedly thought about the possibility that Yang Chen treasuring a jade ring may become a crime and thus left all of the legendary herbs in Yang Chen's safe keeping, Gao Yue couldn't help but be astonished.

What did this mean? Did she really consider Yang Chen as her husband so she had full confidence in him? Gao Yue couldn't guess what Shi Shanshan was thinking, however, after seeing her complete confidence in Yang Chen, Gao Yue was rendered speechless.

Naturally, obtaining the legendary herbs was an exciting affair. However, Yang Chen returning back safely was much more important than anything else to her. Gao Yue treated Yang Chen very nicely without saying anything else. Finally, she gave Yang Chen an astonishing news.

Clear Sky Sect's genius Sun Qingxue had appeared at Pure Yang Palace several months ago requesting to meet Yang Chen. After hearing that Yang Chen had yet to return, she had surprisingly chosen to stay at visitor's residence of Pure Yang Palace to wait for

him rather than going back. Gao Yue didn't know what kind of relation Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue had so she informed him of the news, asking him to go see Sun Qingxue.

Upon hearing Sun Qingxue's name, the image of the little girl from execution ground immediately appeared in Yang Chen's mind. With Yang Chen's assistance, the future Snow Dance Fairy was not only saved from Great Calamity of Devil Cultivation, she had also entered the patronage of elder Hua Wanting, so she should have reached the foundation stage?

The first time Yang Chen saved her life was pure coincidence, but after he helped her the second time, she surely would have wanted to repay the favor. In any case, becoming friends with Snow Dance Fairy was far better compared to offending her. Furthermore, Yang Chen hadn't made any extravagant demands. He was just slightly surprised, why has Sun Qingxue come to meet him?

Very quickly, Yang Chen saw Sun Qingxue within the guest's residence. Sun Qingxue, who was wearing green colored clothes, even after so many years, still had the appearance of that pure little girl. Seeing Yang Chen, a smile blossomed on Sun Qingxue's face as she sweetly called Yang Chen:

“Big brother Yang, you have returned!”

“How are you?”

Yang Chen was quite glad seeing this little girl after a long time.

“After I built my foundation, my master asked me to travel and gain experience.”

Sun Qingxue made a spin in front of Yang Chen, showing her youthful appearance, then suddenly blinked her big eyes and asked:

“Big brother Yang, am I pretty?”

“Very!”

Yang Chen replied honestly. He could already see that Sun Qingxue had reached the foundation stage some time ago, the pure wood attributed spirit power in her body, full of PengLai Divine Wood's presence, was possibly the effect of the foundation stage pill given by Yang Chen.

"Then you must not become dao companions with elder sister Shi, ok?"

Suddenly, an expression, which was completely different from her personality, could be seen in Sun Qingxue's eyes, surprising Yang Chen.

"What did you say?"

Yang Chen just didn't dare to believe that Sun Qingxue had said this right after meeting with Yang Chen after so long, so he couldn't help but ask with bewilderment.

"I will be your dao companion, so you must not become dao companions with elder sister Shi, ok?"

This time, Shi Shanshan said these words even more clearly. After saying this, she felt little bashful and sat down on one side with a red face, playing with the hem of her clothes, not daring to raise her head and look at Yang Chen.

Sun Qingxue had quite a favorable opinion of Yang Chen, this does not need to be said. When Yang Chen left the Clear Sky Sect, Sun Qingxue immediately entered seclusion with her master Hua Wanting and started to cultivate from the beginning after destroying her previous cultivation.

Sun Qingxue, who had full wood spirit root, was indeed worthy of being called a cultivation genius. Within less than ten years, she had already reached the foundation stage. Moreover, when she built her foundation, she hadn't used the foundation stage pill given by Yang Chen. Afterwards, under the advice of the knowledgeable Hua Wanting, she used the third grade foundation

stage pill given by Yang Chen after reaching foundation stage, transforming the first wood spirit power into PengLai Diving Wood's spirit power.

While under Hua Wanting's guidance, her seclusion had already passed twenty years. After coming out, Sun Qingxue immediately heard of Shi Shanshan being betrothed to Yang Chen. Moreover, Green Jade Immortals Island was also in favor of Yang Chen becoming Shi Shanshan's dao companion.

Although this little girl considered Yang Chen has her elder brother in her heart, after hearing this news, she felt quite uncomfortable. Even after cultivating for several years, she couldn't make any progress because of her unstable mental state. Elder Hua Wanting seemed to have sensed this rancor in her disciple and allowed her to travel outside and gain experience.

Who could have thought that Sun Qingxue would directly come to Pure Yang Palace and after hearing that Yang Chen had gone on an outing with Shi Shanshan, would simply wait here for one year to for Yang Chen. And once he returned, this would be the first question she asked.

Yang Chen's eyes almost seemed to come out, looking at the little girl standing in front of him, he was dumbfounded for a long time. What could he say? First, the Cold Plum Fairy wanted to become his dao companion and now even Snow Dance Fairy had come? Moreover, she even wanted to compete with Cold Plum Fairy?

Before he could even cast off the trouble named Shi Shanshan, why has a Sun Qingxue suddenly appeared?

"I know that elder sister Shi has a full metal attributed spirit root."

Seeing Yang Chen's stupefied expression, Sun Qingxue looked up and continued to speak:

"I have a full wood attributed spirit root, wood gives birth to fire,

so wouldn't I be a more suitable dao companion than elder sister Shi? You are fire attributed, fire subdues metal so you both will just hold each other back.

“This.....”

Yang Chen didn't know how to respond to Sun Qingxue and could only mumble the reply:

“This is really sudden, let me think for some time!”

After thinking of something, Yang Chen immediately asked:

“Does Elder Hua know about this?”

“Master knows!”

Sun Qingxue quickly replied like a good assistant.

Yang Chen completely believed that this was Sun Qingxue's decision and that Hua Wanting and Clear Sky Sect didn't know about this so he could use this as an excuse, but he never thought that Hua Wanting knew about this.

“Elder Hua knows?”

Yang Chen's eyes opened widely, what's going on here?

“Elder Hua knows, even the sect master knows!”

Sun Qingxue gladly reported, she was greatly excited about this, master supports her, even the sect master also supports her:

“They all said that I have to fight my own fight with my own method, so here I am.”

Yang Chen didn't know what kind of expression he had any more, however, one thing was certain that it wasn't very good looking. But seeing Sun Qingxue looking at him anxiously, Yang Chen had no other option other than to give an answer to stall.

“Let me think about it properly!”

Yang Chen forced a smile:

“I... I will consider it carefully!”

“Ok, I’ll wait!”

Sun Qingxue’s excitement didn’t lessen even a little bit as she replied with a smile, then she stopped and held Yang Chen’s arm and asked in an earnest tone:

“Elder brother Yang, I still haven’t seen MeiQing mountain properly, you must accompany me, ok?”

How could Yang Chen say no? As a host, accompanying the guest to stroll in his territory was completely normal. However, compared to Sun Qingxue’s delightful mood, Yang Chen clearly wasn’t himself somehow.

Sun Qingxue was in high spirits and seemed to be completely interested, almost as if all that happened just now was not real. Together with Yang Chen, they flew on their flying swords to Thousand Autumn Pavilion and looked at some things, enjoying herself to her heart’s desire, she followed after Yang Chen and returned to Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

After arranging a good place for Sun Qingxue to settle down, Yang Chen returned back to Gao Yue’s room miserably and simply repeated everything that happened with Sun Qingxue, sighing:

“What is all this?”

When Yang Chen was in the mortal world in his previous life, most of the time, he was being hunted down by people so where did he have the time to think about these matters. Regardless of whether it was the Cold Plum Fairy or the Snow Dance Fairy, how can Yang Chen have any extravagant hope of getting into the good grace of both of them? With so many cultivation geniuses, why would these two have look at him? But in this life, he hadn’t expected that he would have form a connection with both of them.

“Two beautiful women have shown their appreciation for you and you still aren’t satisfied?”

It was not clear what Gao Yue was thinking at this moment, she began to make fun of Yang Chen.

“Ai, I will go and see Palace Master Zhong Jiao!”

Having found no solution at Gao Yue’s place, Yang Chen could only leave dejectedly. He went to Palace Master Zhong Jiao’s place hoping to find some guidance.

“This is great!”

Hearing that Yang Chen wanted to meet him, Palace Master Zhong Jiao immediately allowed him to come in. After hearing everything Yang Chen narrated, he couldn’t help but burst out laughing:

“Two exquisite cultivation geniuses want to become your dao companion, this clearly illustrates the excellence of my Pure Yang Palace’s disciple! Why don’t you accept both of them? In any case, you already have more than one type of spirit power on your body.”

Yang Chen had the spirit power of both phases of all five attributes, Palace Master Zhong Jiao clearly knew about this and thus asked him. But Yang Chen became more and more depressed, why is this Palace Master so unreliable?

“Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky Sect, surprisingly, both of these first grade sects are supporting their disciples to become your dao companion.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao stroked his beard light and muttered:

“Could it be that they have taken fancy to your potential?”

Yang Chen had already thought about this. From the angle of the upper echelons of Clear Sky Sect and Green Jade Immortal Islands, they would certainly not allow their sect’s geniuses to become other people’s dao companion that easily. The only explanation could be because of the elixir he had refined for senior black tiger.

Naturally, ordinary cultivators will not be accepted by these big sects, but a genius pill concocting expert was another story, especially the one who had refined elixirs that were used by Da Cheng stage experts when he himself was just at foundation stage, this made their acceptance easier.

The only thing a sect considers is, its own benefits. But the behavior of the two females towards him gave Yang Chen another headache.

Because she exploited Yang Chen for her own benefit, Shi Shanshan felt ashamed as she thought that Yang Chen would certainly die in the life and death duel, hence the reason why she said that she remain as his widow.

But Yang Chen's victory came as a complete surprise for her and using the reason of keeping true to her words, Shi Shanshan unilaterally decided to be Yang Chen's dao companion.

Admittedly, she had thought that she would be troubled by Yang Chen, but after coming in contact with Yang Chen, Shi Shanshan herself didn't seem to have any conflicts with him.

As for Sun Qingxue, her reason was even simpler. Yang Chen had saved her twice. Furthermore, he had also found a Da Cheng stage master for her. Feeling both grateful and having blind faith in Yang Chen, affected the little girl's heart and Sun Qingxue became extremely fond of Yang Chen and could only think of having Yang Chen as her dao companion.

However, Yang Chen's heart was completely filled with thoughts of his master. He was caught completely unprepared by the appreciation shown by these two fairies. Especially Sun Qingxue, before the matter of Shi Shanshan could be resolved, Sun Qingxue had jumped in. What a headache!

"This is a lucky opportunity which only comes by chance, such an enormous chance has come to you, but you are making all sorts of excuses to drive it away."

Seeing Yang Chen's frown, Palace Master Zhong Jiao couldn't help but snort:

"If the admirers of those two knew about this, in the future, even your going out of MeiQing mountain would be a problem."

"Palace Master, then what should this disciple do?"

Yang Chen didn't have any experience dealing with this kind of matters, even his memories of the ten thousand years from his previous life couldn't help him, even if he had sufficient intent to kill, could he kill Shi fairy and Sun Qingxue? With no way out, he could only seek the help of Palace Master Zhong Jiao.

"Since the Clear Sky Sect has also personally stepped in, then you can only drag and stall it as much as possible."

Knowing Yang Chen's dilemma, Palace Master Zhong Jiao could only offer him this way out:

"Finally, it will still have to be resolved by yourself, others also cannot help you much. Only...."

After speaking to this point, Palace Master Zhong Jiao took a deep sigh:

"If you still refuse them firmly, maybe you will offend both Clear Sky Sect and Green Jade Immortal Islands. Hopefully this will settle the matter regarding dao companions, otherwise, maybe if you found any dao companion in future, both of the sects may be prepared to kill her."

If big sects are denied face, sometimes they can only use this method to redeem it. Yang Chen understood this point more clearly compared to Palace Master Zhong Jiao. Although Yang Chen didn't have the slightest hesitation in killing people, facing such matters, he couldn't accomplish anything by beheading anyone, so he could only dejectedly nod his head.

With no solution in mind, he could only drag this matter on for now and think about it later. As for how long to drag this matter,

Yang Chen himself also wasn't sure. Who could have thought that Pure Yang Palace's miraculous disciple Yang Chen will unexpectedly have to face this kind of blessed distress?

Chapter 209 - Cultivating Seventh Metal True Qi

Apparently, Sun Qingxue had only come to express her feelings towards Yang Chen. She also wanted to fight with Fairy Shi, who had previously shown her kindness, to become his dao companion. Feeling shy, she decided to wait for Yang Chen. Although she couldn't get any clear answer from Yang Chen, she still felt relieved and returned back to her sect, saying that she was returning to concentrate on cultivation.

After sending off Sun Qingxue, Yang Chen had finally gotten rid of this big headache for the time being. After pondering for some time, he decided to not go out and stayed in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard to cultivate properly.

Senior apprentice sister Gongsun Ling had come out of closed door training some time ago, so Yang Chen went to pay her a visit. Like Gao Yue, she also teased him for having such great luck with women. But fortunately, she didn't say much about it and asked him to recommend to her some secret books for spell formations which she could obtain and use. After which, she began her research again.

Yang Chen also paid a visit to senior disciples Wang Yuan and Du Qian. He also visited everyone who had a relationship with him and not only provided them with cultivation guidance but also offered them legendary herbs. Needless to say, these few senior disciples were extremely grateful to him.

On the other side, Palace Master Zhong Jiao wasn't very worried regarding Yang Chen's so called 'troubles', and he still faintly hoped that his plan would be successful. Yang Chen also didn't dare to speak more about this matter with the Palace Master. As for his great master Wang Yong, he was still refining the qilin's horn into his destined flying sword and hadn't come out of

seclusion. So for the time being, Yang Chen couldn't get any good guidance.

After talking properly with his master once more, Yang Chen entered closed door training in his room and began to cultivate.

The Seventh Metal True Qi which he had obtained from Scarface, came in handy. Previously, he couldn't use it since his cultivation had reached the next layer and needed to be consolidated. But after pill concocting and traveling for so long, Yang Chen had realized that perhaps, the time to upgrade his seventh metal spirit power had come.

Heavenly Roar was also self cultivating during this period. Before entering closed door training this time, Yang Chen fed him two ladles of the Heavenly Roar Dog's blood essence, double the amount from last time. Soon, Heavenly Roar was once again surrounded by a blood cocoon and lost his consciousness. However, this time, the colour of the blood cocoon was much deeper compared to the last time. Apparently, it was because his bloodline had started to transform and become pure.

Looking at Heavenly Roar's transformation, Yang Chen's mood improved greatly. Finally, after thinking about the many enemies whom he still had to face, Yang Chen couldn't help himself and began to tense up. Very quickly, he entered cultivation mode.

He already had obtained the Seventh Metal True Secrets, so after obtaining the Seventh Metal True Qi, there wasn't much difficulty in cultivating it. Yang Chen took out the jade bottle he had obtained from Scarface and began to carefully remove the seals and talismans on it one by one. After they had been removed, traces of Seventh Metal True Qi's essence began to seep out from the mouth of the bottle.

Concentrating the essence from the air, Yang Chen began to absorb these traces through his nose and move it according to the Seventh Metal True Secrets. His entire being immediately sunk

into a state of calmness.

As the traces of Seventh Metal True Qi began to permeate his seventh metal spirit power, it began to transform. This most primal Seventh Metal essence quickly assimilated the spirit power in the surroundings and compressed it. Within less than five months, the entire seventh metal spirit power in Yang Chen's body had transformed into Seventh Metal True Qi.

However, after transformation, more than 90% of his seventh metal spirit power had disappeared. But the difference between his previous seventh metal spirit power and the current Seventh Metal True Qi was simply incomparable. To reach an equilibrium, the other spirit powers also began to help to supplement it, in addition to the Seventh Metal True Qi from that jade bottle, thus increasing his seventh metal spirit power quickly.

The Seventh Metal True Qi within the jade bottle was completely consumed. Fortunately, Scarface had collected a large amount of it, which was sufficient to completely transform Yang Chen's spirit power. What followed was the frantic replenishment from the underground spirit vein. And afterwards, the absorption and transformation, which slowly restored Yang Chen's seventh metal cultivation to its previous state.

The upgraded quality spirit power was slowly being replenished. During the time of replenishment, Yang Chen's spirit sea finally transformed again.

The fifth earth layer was suddenly imbued with many golden particles, which were evenly distributed in the layer. These so called particles were precisely seventh metal and this distribution perfectly followed the principle of five phases engendering each other, with earth giving birth to metal.

Once this transformation happened, the spirit power within Yang Chen's body began to transform once again. The Fifth Earth True Qi, which he had already cultivated some time ago, now

began to crazily increase the seventh metal spirit power.

The size of the spirit sea began to increase again. His spirit sea, which originally had an area of 100 mu, had now increased to 150 mu, directly breaking through the peak of initial YuanYing stage and entering the mid YuanYing stage.

At this stage, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness threads could cover the entire area with a radius of 10 miles surrounding the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. In this area, nothing could be hidden from Yang Chen. Even if something was concealed from the main body of old tree demon, under the probe of Yang Chen's spiritual awareness threads nothing could be hidden.

Under the principle of earth giving rise to metal, the seventh metal spirit power continued to rise. With the Fifth Earth True Secrets and Fifth Earth True Qi in addition to the Seventh Metal True Secrets and Seventh Metal True Qi, within a brief period of a month, his seventh metal spirit power had successively broken through the fourth layer and fifth layer of the foundation stage, directly entering the sixth layer. With this increase, it was only second to his fourth fire spirit power, which was at the seventh layer of the foundation stage.

This situation hadn't even appeared even when Yang Chen had cultivated the Fifth Earth True Secrets. Apparently, even if the five phases can engender or subdue each other, this principle would only show the most effect when the spirit powers have equal status.

Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets, of which he had already completed two, while there were still eight types of spirit powers remaining. But just these two types of spirit power had already increased his strength greatly. Now, Yang Chen was already expectant about how much would his strength increase after the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets had been completed.

This sudden increase in his cultivation made Yang Chen lament

that if at this moment, he had a seventh metal attributed flying sword or perhaps a fifth earth attributed flying sword, he could use then the most primal Seventh Metal True Qi and Fifth Earth True Qi to refine them, then how great it would have been?

Unfortunately, among the two types of flying swords chosen as sword spirits, one was the Bright Ray Sword, which was of the third fire attribute and one was the Blood Phantom Vine, which was of the second wood attribute. Although he still the PengLai Divine Wood, it was already destined to be his first wood attribute flying sword. So that meant that he didn't have any seventh metal or fifth earth attributed flying swords.

Not only that, but he also didn't even have any seventh metal attributed or fifth earth attributed magic artifacts on himself. This itch on Yang Chen's hand was something which was difficult to endure but also couldn't be told to anyone.

Suddenly, Yang Chen had an idea. He thought of something which was seventh metal attributed. The clean bottle Medicine Garden's bottle cap, that dome containing a sword spell formation, was seventh metal attributed, perfect to use to test with.

Inside the hall under the dome, Mo Qian and her disciples were still continuously training without rest. During the time when he was concocting pills for more than a decade, Yang Chen hadn't looked for them even once. Fortunately, there was plenty of spirit power within the Medicine Garden, so there were no chances of any mishap.

But seeing them like this, Yang Chen didn't feel like it was appropriate and carefully shifted them within the medicine garden. He then made each of the JieDan experts consume a profound yang fruit.

As for YuanYing stage Mo Qian, fortunately, there were now many ten thousand years matured herbs in the Medicine Garden. Those profound yang fruits which were only a few thousand years

matured were not very significant. Similarly, for a thousand year ginseng, she could only use one ginseng per month.

Yang Chen had tried many methods, but the consciousness of Mo Qian and her disciples remained unchanged as it had already been thoroughly destroyed by Yang Chen's blood river. Although they had memories and could work according to Yang Chen's instructions, they would never take the initiative to do anything.

They had continued to cultivate for so many years without sparing any effort only because Yang Chen had instructed them to do so. After such a long time, their cultivation had also increased, maybe even faster compared to when they had consciousness.

However, Yang Chen didn't feel any kind of pity towards Mo Qian and her disciples. They had destroyed the lives of so many people using the memory search technique, so they could only blame themselves for their current situation.

On the dome floating over the main hall, there wasn't anything other than the forty nine flying swords which were continuously spiraling around.

Holding the bottle cap in his hand, Yang Chen first prepared a large number of profound yang fruits, he then placed the obsidian mat above the underground spirit vein. Only after preparing everything did he allow his consciousness to enter the bottle lid.

He couldn't help but be cautious. When he had first refined the Medicine Garden after using a tremendous amount of strength, that time, there was still these forty nine high grade flying sword. So presently, even though his cultivation had greatly increased and his spiritual awareness had reached the mid YuanYing stage, he was still very cautious.

Since he had already branded his spiritual awareness imprint on the bottle lid, he could easily use his spiritual awareness to enter the dome shaped bottle lid. After examining it once, a magnified image of the dome shaped bottle lid appeared within his spirit sea.

It had to be said that the person who had created this Medicine Garden was an incredible expert. Although the materials used had some deficiency, his refining technique had almost reached perfection, the whole structure was completely flawless.

What Yang Chen wanted to do was to use the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets. Last time, the bottle had only been refined to the first layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, who knows whether the domed lid could be refined to even higher levels.

The seventh metal spirit power slowly began to enter the domed lid under the directions of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and began to refine the main hall. Whether it was because his cultivation had increased greatly or because his spiritual awareness had increased greatly, this time, refining the first layer of Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets wasn't that difficult and was completed within half a month.

Yang Chen sensed that he still had energy left, so with the intention to strike while the iron was hot, he immediately began to refine the second layer. At the second layer, the difficulty had increased greatly. The grade of the Medicine Garden was already very high and was basically only made for YuanYing stage experts to use. So with Yang Chen's strength at the foundation stage, the difficulty in refining it had somewhat increased.

However, with the support of an unending stream of spirit power, in addition to the great proficiency of Yang Chen's technique, after spending three whole months, Yang Chen was finally able to complete the refining of the second layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets.

The spirit power formed with Seventh Metal True Qi had already entered the domed hall. Many dark golden coloured specks were moving in and out of the hall, the spirit power had also become even purer.

Yang Chen still didn't have the ability to refine the forty flying swords' sword spell formation. However, he was already delighted by the transformation of the hall. Its structure became even more stable and the spirit power became even more pure. As for the increase in the defensive power, it could even be seen with just the naked eyes.

Since the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets had already been refined to the second layer, Yang Chen decided to add oil to fire by using the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Spell Secrets and refine the domed hall to its first layer.

The result this time was even more obvious. The first layer of Earth Fiend Spell Formation had already arranged those dark golden specks properly. Now if someone were to attack, the defense that was formed completely with Seventh Metal True Qi and was much tougher.

After completing it, Yang Chen habitually refined it once using the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets. Afterwards, when he saw the domed lid, the transformations were clear.

The colour of the lid, which wasn't very eye catching before, had suddenly turned heterogeneous after the refining. In other words, it had become much darker. And sometimes, dark golden colour lights would flash from the lid, making it even more mysterious.

Looking at the domed hall, which had not only been imprinted with his spiritual awareness, but had also been passed through his refining, Yang Chen suddenly became expectant. If someone could rush in to give it a try, then that would be great. Unfortunately, someone attacking the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard was simply a joke.

Since the domed hall had been successfully refined to the second layer of Heavenly Stars and the first layer of Earth Fiend, Yang Chen took out the Medicine Garden and began to refine it to the second layer of Heavenly Stars and the first layer of Earth Fiend as

well, only this time, Yang Chen had used fifth earth spirit power.

The fifth earth soil within the Medicine Garden was even more profound. This was the most primal kind of soil and was simply the best kind of foundational base for those legendary herbs. Just this time's refining had allowed all the ingredients within the Medicine Garden to increase in maturation by several decades in one year. As for those newly planted legendary herbs, their roots became even more firm, thus removing the risk of them dying due to carelessness during the process of transplantation.

All of this seemed to happen in an instant, but seven months had already passed. This time's closed door training of cultivating Seventh Metal True Qi and refining the Medicine Garden and dome had consumed a total of more than one year.

This time, Heavenly Roar had slept for an even longer period of time, but after waking up, there were slight transformations in his appearance. His body had become much thinner and he had grown a bit longer. However, he still didn't resemble that of a dragon. The bloodline of the Yazi probably haven't been completely aroused yet.

Indeed, as Yang Chen had expected, Heavenly Roar was madly licking the Bright Ray Sword which had already begun to transform. The most obvious transformation was that the sword blade had become many degrees shaper compared to before. This wasn't the acuteness gained due to his seventh metal attribute upgrading, but rather, was purely due to the amplification by the Yazi's bloodline.

Yang Chen would naturally not favor one and discriminate against others, so he also placed the second wood flying sword near Heavenly Roar. Clearly, the second wood sword formed from the Blood Phantom Vine was of a higher grade compared to Bright Ray Sword, so once Heavenly Roar licked it, he didn't care about the Bright Ray Sword anymore. Apparently, in the future, if he wished to strengthen his flying swords, he would have to give them to him

in the order of increasing grade every time.

After such a long closed door training, Yang Chen had also become somewhat gloomy, so he decided to call his master and take a stroll in the nearby city market, to relieve his boredom as well as to see if he could gain any profits. Naturally, the most important thing was to take a look at the condition of Shangguan Feng's small store.

But Gao Yue didn't accompanied him to go to the Thousand Autumn Pavilion, so Yang Chen walked the whole journey by himself, not interested in using the flying sword.

However, once he came out of Pure Yang Palace and was near the Thousand Autumn Pavilion, Yang Chen sensed something peculiar in the atmosphere. Apparently, someone had been keeping watch on everyone within the city market. Moreover, it wasn't just a single person, rather, a group of many people, at least 20-30 people.

These people appeared to be rogue cultivators, but their cultivation wasn't very weak, with the weakest of them at the mid foundation stage. However, the strongest also wasn't very strong and was only at the peak foundation stage and hadn't reached JieDan stage yet. They were scattered everywhere, some had set up vendor stalls, some were shopping, but their eyes were all over the place.

Chapter 210 - Enemies Come Knocking

Cultivators tend to habitually use spiritual awareness to probe around themselves, so they were not very suspicious towards the types of gazes which seem to examine them accidentally. Especially the few vendors and shop owners who might be probing their surroundings while looking for potential customers. This kind of probing wouldn't be regarded as a major thing.

But what Yang Chen was weird was that, perhaps because his spiritual awareness was very powerful, he wondered if those people were intentionally or otherwise acting strange, which was also the reason they were caught by Yang Chen.

From the moment, Yang Chen stepped foot in the market lane where Thousand Autumn Pavilion was present, there were many gazes on him. There was no need to speak out about Yang Chen's reputation within the Pure Yang Palace. As long as one was a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace, they would immediately recognize Yang Chen. With many disciples of the Pure Yang Palace moving around here, countless people had approached him to greet him.

After finishing being greeted by his fellow disciples, Yang Chen started to slowly stroll around the market. However, even though, he had met with many fellow disciples just now, Yang Chen still didn't relax his attention on those people.

From the time Yang Chen entered Thousand Autumn Pavilion, a cheerful expression appeared in the eyes of these people. But no one did any inappropriate conduct and continued with their own work. Only sometimes, they would use meaningful glances to communicate with each other.

However, none of them used spiritual awareness. These people were extremely cautious. Moreover, despite concentrating their gazes on Yang Chen, none of them had any evil intentions, much less any killing intent. This point gave him slight relief. Perhaps

they had only heard Yang Chen's name and wanted to ask for some elixir? Likewise, perhaps they just wanted to meet him or maybe some other such irrelevant reason?

Previously, since the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard had opened that small shop, the disciples of the sect refrained from using things from Thousand Autumn Pavilion. But afterwards, when Shangguan Feng finally opened a shop here, the Thousand Autumn Pavilion was once again full of disciples of the Pure Yang Palace.

On his whole journey, Yang Chen hadn't found anything which attracted him. The Thousand Autumn Pavilion was basically a shop opened by Pure Yang Palace and mainly relied on selling things used by qi layer cultivators and the foundation stage disciples appearing here was quite rare, so finding nothing good was absolutely normal. But after Shangguan Feng had opened his shop here, it had attracted the interest of many foundation stage cultivators.

Those people whom Yang Chen found queer, would occasionally raise their heads and take a quick look at Yang Chen and then would hurriedly shift away their gazes, busying themselves in their work. Yang Chen also didn't pay them much attention and after strolling around for some time, he directly entered Shangguan Feng's store.

The range of this shop wasn't very large and was only extended to an area of 2 mu. Inside, it was divided into several halls with each receiving people of different grades. Shangguan Feng had specifically found experienced disciples of the sect to be assistants here. From dressing to knowledge, all these assistants were completely professional.

All the assistants knew Yang Chen and immediately, someone asked him to go to the rear hall to see the main shopkeeper Shangguan Feng. Shangguan Feng was in the middle of exchanging goods for spirit stones with a client, when he saw Yang Chen come

in, he signaled for him to wait. Soon, after sending away the customer, he came back to talk with Yang Chen.

“Is it convenient to talk here?”

Yang Chen casually asked. Shangguan Feng understood his meaning and immediately placed his hand on some object, immediately more than ten layers of restrictions were set up.

“It’s good.”

Shangguan Feng nodded, indicating that Yang Chen could speak safely.

“In the market, I saw some strange people.”

Yang Chen didn’t hide his observations from Shangguan Feng. Initially, he had just come to relieve his boredom. Seeing those suspicious people, he naturally had to ask. This was Yang Chen’s property and those people were all foundation stage cultivators so he had to get protective.

After Yang Chen had pointed out the characteristics of those people one by one, Shangguan Feng immediately understood and began to tell him about the history of those people. Yang Chen was surprised to hear that those people weren’t new here, rather they were elders who had already stayed at Thousand Autumn Pavilion for several years, after Shangguan Feng had opened his shop, they had grown even more courteous.

“Perhaps I was just overthinking.”

Yang Chen shook his head, he was confused about those elders living here for several years. Moreover, seeing the amount of businesses here, there shouldn’t be any big problem with such things. Apparently, he was just being overly cautious.

These several years, the business was completely handled by Shangguan Feng, and Yang Chen only knew that the profits were astonishing, but he hadn’t cared about it much. Immersed within the business, Shangguan Feng’s cultivation had increased step by

step and had become more formidable compared to last time, and his temperament completely matched that of a businessman.

Within the market, there were many rumors always spreading around, Yang Chen also heard about some news from Shangguan Feng. He was surprised to hear that the affair between him and Shi Shanshan had already been spread between many people. Many accomplished cultivators seemed to be greatly dissatisfied upon hearing that Shi Shanshan had become Yang Chen's dao companion, so whether overtly or covertly, they just wanted to cause trouble for Yang Chen.

From the time this news was released from Green Jade Immortal Islands, Yang Chen had been mentally prepared that he would certainly become the target of multitudes of arrows. He also couldn't do anything about it. Shi Shanshan was indeed too outstanding, so people couldn't help but feel jealous. Even though now Yang Chen was a pill concocting master with boundless future, it was still the same. Among the young cultivators, no one would willingly accept that they were inferior to others.

Even though he knew about this, after hearing from Shangguan Feng about the number of people cursing him everywhere, Yang Chen could only force a bitter smile. Fortunately, Sun Qingxue still hadn't revealed her affair, otherwise in the future, apart from Pure Yang Palace, anywhere he went, people would be plotting against him.

Everything regarding business was perfectly normal, there was also nothing which captured Yang Chen's interest here. So after roaming around Thousand Autumn Pavilion for some time, he decided to return.

Yang Chen had decided the plan he would follow after returning. First, he would collect all kinds materials for flying swords and then think about collecting all kinds of most primal true qi, perfectly fitting with true secrets of all types of spirit power and complete his Great Yin and Yang five phases secrets.

Cultivation must also be increased, but he wasn't so anxious as to use those legendary herbs he had recently obtained and just wanted to let nature run its course. In his heart, Yang Chen was strongly against relying on these external supports to increase his cultivation. This kind of increase was inferior to the sturdiness which came from his own effort.

While returning, Yang Chen intended to walk on foot again. Although the distance was a few hundred miles and would require a full ten days of time, it would also allow him to relax for sometime. Likewise, he wouldn't have to prepare his mind for cultivation every day.

Whether it was the influence of Shi Shanshan or something else, recently, Yang Chen was always in the mood to drink tea, but he always felt it was not enough to satisfy his craving and was not equal to good wine which would let him become free. Unfortunately, he didn't have any good wine on himself right now, seemingly in the future, he must add some brewed wine to his itinerary.

On the third night on the return journey, when Yang Chen took shelter from the wind and used his Profound Spirit Furnace to brew some tea, he felt that there was some abnormality in his surroundings. A weak killing intent suffused in his surroundings and slowly focused on him.

"I wonder, which fellow daoist has come."

Since Yang Chen didn't sense strong killing intent, so he raised his teacup and said in that direction loudly.

"I just wanted to see what kind of character the future pill concocting master of Pure Yang Palace that also obtained the grace of Fairy Shi had!"

Following the voice, a figure slowly came out of the forest from that side.

Yang Chen had heard from Shangguan Feng that many young cultivators were resentful towards him just few days ago and now already one had appeared. The person was bright and handsome, manner like jade. At a first glance, he seemed like an elegant son of some noble, continuously fanning himself with a folding fan, but his cold gaze was fixed on Yang Chen. That trace of killing intent was could be seen clearly in his eyes. “Myself is not so great a character for fellow daoist to pay close attention to.”

Yang Chen faintly laughed, he had no interest in this character who was turning green with jealousy, but he still hadn’t forgotten his manners and distantly picked his cup and asked:

“Would you like to have some tea?”

“Hmph, stop worming your way into becoming friends!”

The other party closed his folding fan and coldly stated:

“Take out your flying sword, let’s compare pointers and see who wins and who loses, let’s see who is more worthy of becoming Fairy Shi’s dao companion!”

“Myself admits defeat!”

Yang Chen admitted his lost without any hesitation, he was a grand Great Principal Golden Immortal in his previous life, so fighting with this foundation stage youngster who was just jealous of him would lose him face. Moreover, he had always admitted defeat in this kind of nonsensical challenges. If you just want to compare notes then he would just admit defeat, the only kind of battles he would fight were life and death duels, this had always been Yang Chen’s philosophy.

This genius who had been prepared to fight was completely shocked by Yang Chen’s reply. Just now, he had collected his fan and taken out his flying sword but the enemy hadn’t even made a single movement and directly admitted defeat, how could a high and mighty genius like him accept that? However, since the other

party had already admitted defeat, how could he continue to pester Yang Chen with his face?

“How can you admit defeat?”

After being distracted for a moment, the genius barked towards Yang Chen:

“As the person whom Fairy Shi has fallen for, how can you cower before a fight? How did you get in Fairy Shi’s good graces?”

“If you want to him to move, you have to issue a life or death duel!”

A lofty voice suddenly echoed.

“Who is this?” The young genius was stunned, where did this person appear from, surprisingly, he couldn’t even sense anything. He could clearly imagine this person’s cultivation.

An octagonal golden seal the size of a table suddenly and violently swept toward the ground with a deafening sound. Falling from the sky, it had directly rushed towards that genius’s skull.

That genius, having been prepared to compare pointers with Yang Chen with his already unsheathed flying sword, without any hesitation, directly raised it to counter the golden seal flying at him from the sky.

What surprised Yang Chen most was that when the flying sword connected with that golden seal, the sword wasn’t of any use and was directly turned away. The power of golden seal wasn’t affected in any way by that sword.

Bang, the genius, together with his flying sword, was smashed into the ground. He didn’t even have the time to scream.

From beginning to the end, Yang Chen sat at one side and calmly sipped tea without any kind of movement, as if the later appearance of this expert was completely within his expectations.

The golden seal, having fallen on the ground, became smaller and

flew into the sky. However, Yang Chen still calmly drank tea without even raising his head.

“Nice guts!” From the sky, a silhouette slowly came down on his flying sword and dropped ten feet away from Yang Chen. He coldly said:

“No wonder, you dared to mess with the Devil Flame Valley’s auction.”

Yang Chen saw the other party’s appearance clearly. A cold expressionless middle aged man containing a trace of serene killing intent within his gaze, but his restraint was very good, not even a bit of it leaked out.

When the other party mentioned Devil Flame Valley, Yang Chen immediately knew that this matter was related to the young master he had killed. Although not many people in the Great Hundred Thousand Mountain knew of Yang Chen, they also probably didn’t know much of the matter with Gao Yue. After investigation for several decades, someone had finally come to find Yang Chen.

Even though this was sudden, it was still under Yang Chen’s expectations. When he was at the Great Hundred Thousand Mountain, he had already realized that the auction house had a powerful backer, but he hadn’t carefully investigated who it was. Under his fury, when his master was injured, how could he release the young master and manager of auction house? Even if he knew who it was, he would still have taken that person’s head.

Now, since the enemy had come to his door, he certainly wouldn’t have come to negotiate. The person who had come before Yang Chen was unexpectedly a YuanYing stage expert. It seemed like the enemy had spent great amount of effort to take care of Yang Chen.

Thinking about it now, those people he had found peculiar in the market would be this enemy’s manpower. This enemy also had

great patience and knew that it wouldn't be good to move around in the territory of Pure Yang Palace arrogantly, so he had only sent some foundation stage people here to keep a look out waiting for an opportunity to find Yang Chen alone.

“Seems like you people have spent great effort!”

Yang Chen finally collected his tea cup, but he remained seated without any intention of standing.

“Seven years ago, we had already investigated your role, however we didn't have the opportunity to do anything.”

The man with cold appearance sneered:

“All these years, your reputation has increased more and more, our clan master wants to see you once. If you can satisfy our clan master, then the matter of killing those people can be written off in one stroke.”

The enemy had already known about Yang Chen, but not daring to be rash in Pure Yang Palace's territory was absolutely normal. But now, this cold appearing man's words had surprised Yang Chen.

The hatred of killing one's son can surprisingly be forgotten? Yang Chen asked himself. If he had been in the enemy's position, it would have basically been impossible. But the enemy clearly valued Yang Chen's talent in the field of pill concocting. The person behind these words certainly deserved the evaluation of being a ruthless and ambitious person.

“Sorry, not interested!”

While remaining seated, Yang Chen calmly shook his head.

“Doesn't matter!”

The cold person replied with same calmness:

“My clan master has said, if you are not willing to go then it would be the same thing to just take your head to him.”

“I am afraid my head is busy, so it won’t get the opportunity.”

Attentively watching the enemy, Yang Chen replied without being anxious.

“This is beyond your control!”

The other person coldly laughed:

“If you are hoping that someone from the Pure Yang Palace will save you then don’t. In the perimeter of three hundred miles, there are no living person. I will give you another opportunity. My clan master is fond of talented people. If you come, it will certainly be to your own benefit.”

“When did YuanYing stage experts became such naggy people?”

Yang Chen impatiently berated him.

“Courting death!”

The cold man didn’t say anything more after spitting out those words. With just one thought, that golden seal, which had already disappeared, appeared again in the sky and smashed down towards Yang Chen’s place with great power.

Yang Chen didn’t make any move, but when the golden seal was a few feet away from Yang Chen, it suddenly knocked against a shield of golden light and emitted a loud sound.

Chapter 211 - Expert's Turn To Be Surprised

Under the astonished gaze of that cold man, the golden coloured domed palace hall appeared, covering Yang Chen's entire body inside. The enormous golden seal directly smashed against on top of the domed hall. Spark flickered out but the domed hall wasn't damaged.

“Humph, just relying on one defensive magic weapon, you dare to be so arrogant?”

After discovering Yang Chen's support, the cold man sneered, his figure suddenly rushed forward, following along the perimeter of the domed hall.

Under the control of the cold man, the golden seal rose incessantly and then smashed fiercely on the domed hall again and again. But regardless of how he attacked, the domed hall was like a steel cast, not moving a single jot, there was not even any traces of attack left on it.

On the contrary, after continuously smashing down several times, several scratch marks appeared on the golden seal. After discovering this fact, regret appeared in the heart of that cold man, he had spent a lot of time refining this golden seal, if it got damaged like this, then the gains would certainly not make up for the losses.

Seeing Yang Chen holed up within the turtle shell gave a headache to the cold man, since he couldn't find any method to deal with him.

He was a majestic YuanYing stage expert, but surprisingly, he couldn't deal with a foundation stage youngster with a body protecting treasure, how could he endure this? Within the Hundred Thousand Mountains, he was considered a lofty figure who always kept his word, could it be that he was going to fail to do so at this MeiQing Mountain?

Since Yang Chen was already holed up and he couldn't do anything, so it need not be said that the only choice that the cold man had was to retreat. Since Yang Chen was so confident, then he certainly must have notified the experts of Pure Yang Palace, if he couldn't deal with Yang Chen in a short period of time, then apart from retreating, there wasn't another option.

He had dared to behave so atrociously in the sect watched by a Da Cheng stage expert, even though the Dacheng stage expert was rumored to have weak cultivation, a Dacheng stage expert was a Dacheng stage expert, not something a YuanYing stage expert like him could contend against. Furthermore, the Pure Yang Palace also had several YuanYing stage experts, while he was alone, he couldn't simply oppose the entire Pure Yang Palace.

While he was contemplating whether to retreat or not, he surprisingly discovered a fatal weakness of the domed hall. The defense of the great hall was sufficient, but that great hall had openings in four direction, so anyone could go in anytime.

“The trick you used was formidable, but it had such a fatal weakness, seems like even the Heavens wants you to die. Who could stop your death then!”

The cold man burst out laughing and hooted these few words, before directly entering the great hall.

“Alas!”

Sitting at the center of the great hall, his mind seemed to be controlling the defense of this hall. Seeing the cold man charge in, Yang Chen shook his head in pity and took a long sigh:

“The Heavens provided you a road to life but you didn't take it, hell doesn't have any doors yet you burst in, you yourself are courting death so don't blame other people!”

“Looks like you still don't want to admit your mistake!”

The cold man sneered, without the least bit of hesitation, he

figure directly flew towards Yang Chen. His master had ordered him to capture Yang Chen alive if possible, if he can't, then return with Yang Chen's head. Now, Yang Chen was just sitting on one side, giving the cold man a perfect opportunity to capture himself.

“For every grievance someone is responsible, for every debt there is a debtor, fellow daoist, please be on your way!”

Looked at the figure rushing towards him, a trace of ridicule flashed in his eyes and he immediately spoke out his catch phrase before killing people.

As soon as Yang Chen, said these words, the cold man also felt something was wrong. The golden seal which he had already collected back, appeared like a huge shield in front of his body.

Ding ding ding ding, after a series of concentrated collision like a torrential rain, countless nicks appeared on the cold man's golden seal. While at the same time, countless flying sword also appeared behind his body, forcing him to release his own flying sword and obstruct the attack of those flying swords with incomparable difficulty.

“Seven Steps Bewitching Killing Spell, fellow daoist, if you can break this spell formation, then myself will go with you.”

Yang Chen remained leisurely seated at the center of the great hall, looking at the countless swords crazily attacking the confused cold man. He continued in the same tone:

“But if fellow daoist can't break through this spell, then next year, this day will be your death anniversary!”

Forty nine flying swords, all of which were highest grade flying sword used by YuanYing stage experts, under the effects of the sword spell, their power had increased crazily.

How could the cold man, surrounded within the spell, pay attention to Yang Chen's mocking tone, he taken out all his body protecting magic weapons to protect himself from the swords, but

even then, he couldn't completely safeguard himself from the swords and was totally at a loss.

Presently, the cold man was repenting, why was he so greedy and muddleheaded to believe that such a formidable defensive magic weapon had such a fatal flaw? Even if it seemed like a flaw, it was clearly a deadly trap. If he had known about this earlier, then he would have promptly retreated and wouldn't be in such sorry position.

Yang Chen also secretly exclaimed in admiration. Actually, under the Seven Step Bewitching Killer Spell, this cold man had preserved for the longest time. Naturally, this was because of his cultivation.

Previously, among the trapped people, the most powerful ones had a cultivation of JieDan stage, so they basically couldn't do anything in front of this sword spell formed from forty nine high grade swords used by YuanYing stage experts and would immediately die. But now, this person himself was at YuanYing stage, moreover, he seemed to be late YuanYing stage, so he had the ability to stop the successive attacks.

However, this was all he could do. He had used all his defensive magic weapons, including that golden seal, which was all covered with countless nicks. Few of the low grade magic weapons were already approaching the point of breaking down.

While Yang Chen sighed seeing this, the sound of a flying sword and protective armour breaking echoed in the hall and both of them immediately turned into pieces. With two less defensive magic weapons, the cold man had even more difficulty in defending his left and right side. In just a moment of carelessness, a flying sword immediately discovered the gap and penetrated his arm.

The sharp pain made the cold man yell loudly and while he was slightly distracted, that golden seal was pierced by series of flying

sword turning it into an enormous seal with holes all over.

This golden seal was his most beloved magic weapon, and it was comparable to his destined magic weapon, but after it got damaged by those flying sword, the cold man's spiritual awareness immediately suffered a backlash.

Under these dire circumstances, the cold man couldn't do anything to reverse the tide. He had only preserved for five more breath's time, when the golden seal was turned into pieces by more than a dozen flying swords. On his side, the cold man didn't have anymore formidable weapon which could compare to the golden seal.

“Despicable!”

The cold man knew that he had reached his limit. He cursed towards Yang Chen while doing his utmost to endure.

“Indeed, but not as despicable as a late YuanYing stage expert coming to deal with a foundation stage youngster like me!”

Yang Chen sneered:

“Don't worry and be on your journey, senior!”

Under the gaze of that cold man, these forty nine swords were like blood hungry wolves flocking around him. Before his body had even fallen on ground, it had already turned into pieces.

“Seems like I will have to go to Hundred Thousand Mountains to settle this issue, once and for all.”

Yang Chen looked at the ground filled with body parts and called out the five JieDan stage females cultivating in the great hall of the Medicine Garden, with just one thought from him, those females began to clear up the mess and gather the spoils. As for Yang Chen, he began to think the consequences caused by this matter.

This time when the enemy had come, he wanted to intimidate Yang Chen and wanted him to serve the enemy in the the field of

pill concocting. But now, after Yang Chen had killed the late YuanYing stage expert, there was no room for negotiations in this matter. The enemy would certainly go crazy and retaliate against Yang Chen and the people close to him.

If he was the only one to suffer from attacks, then Yang Chen wasn't scared, but he was afraid that something might happen to Gao Yue. Last time, Gao Yue had already suffered injuries at the Hundred Thousand Mountains, if she suffered a mishap again because of this incident, then Yang Chen absolutely wouldn't be able to forgive himself.

As for today, it was just the scout before the enemy launched a full scale retaliation attack. In any case, if those guys injured Gao Yue, that wouldn't be a good thing. At that time, Yang Chen was worried about Gao Yue, so he hadn't eliminated the threat completely. But now, it was time to settle this matter once and for all.

Other matters could wait but this one couldn't. Yang Chen immediately began to ponder regarding dealing with these people. Naturally, the most important thing was to inform the sect about this matter so that they could also be on their guard.

This YuanYing stage expert didn't have anything good on himself. That man seemed to have spent a lot of time on the golden seal and allowed it to become as powerful as his destined magic weapon, but it was still not his destined magic weapon, so it being inferior to the sword spell was completely normal.

However, the materials refined to make the golden seal were quite rare. Unfortunately, the YuanYing stage expert's level in refining tools was so so. Although it could be used to bully those young geniuses, when compared to a genuine high grade magic weapon, it was extremely inferior.

Naturally, the broken golden seal was kept, along with all kinds of magic weapons on his body and his qiankun pouch, nothing was

left behind, everything was taken. Even his flesh and blood weren't wasted, the Blood Phantom Vine was still very weak and this kind of expert's blood and flesh was perfect as a supplement. Although the effects weren't very powerful, it was better than nothing.

“A person from Hundred Thousand Mountains?”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao calmly heard Yang Chen's narration. After a moment, he raised his head:

“Convene all the elders, then tell them the details of the story.”

This time, Pure Yang Palace had fallen under the lust of a great power. Moreover, a bloody battle was quite possible. The enemy had been a hegemon in the Hundred Thousand Mountains for many years, his strength couldn't be belittled. All the elders had come except was Wang Yong who was refining his destined magic weapon in seclusion. When the elders looked at Yang Chen, they seemed to be slightly surprised. It had just been few days after he had cured senior black tiger's injury, they were wondering what kind of big matter had Yang Chen caused this time? Apart from elders, several hall masters had also been called. This matter concerned the security of Pure Yang Palace, so naturally, they were thorough. “Yang Chen, you tell them about the matter, don't forget any details.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao didn't waste any time after seeing that everyone had arrived and directly instructed Yang Chen.

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen bowed and saluted all the elders, then he began to tell them about this matter from the beginning.

Hearing that 25 years ago, when Yang Chen had just reached the foundation stage, together with She Kui and Xie Sha, he had razed the Hao Yi mansion at the Hundred Thousand Mountain to ground. Moreover, had also destroyed the Devil Flame Valley's

auction house and killed the manager and young master, even if the temperament of these elders and hall masters had toughened recently after all these big matters, all of them were astonished. Each and every one of them was stunned and looked at Yang Chen stupified.

Only, the hall master of Eccentric Hall, Gui Shanyou wasn't the slightest bit perturbed, this was something, he had experienced so there was no need to make a fuss about it.

Killing four peak YuanYing stage experts of Hao Yi mansion, moreover, returning back with a Dacheng stage expert, Gui Shanyou, doing all of this when he was just at the initial foundation stage. When he reaches JieDan stage, or YuanYing stage, what kind of accomplishments would he have then?

Despite being shocked, they became cautious after hearing Yang Chen's words. If the enemy really turned to the disciples of Pure Yang Palace to fulfill his revenge against Yang Chen, then it would certainly be a disaster. These people of Hundred Thousand Mountains shouldn't be taken lightly.

Everyone was thinking about this matter, no one said anything. The hall master of Law Enforcement Hall, Meng Xian, asked him after some time:

“Are you certain, you killed a late YuanYing stage expert? What kind of weapons did he use?”

Meng Xian couldn't help but be suspicious, even if Yang Chen was very outstanding, he was only at the late foundation stage. Moreover, he had only reached this level recently. Even if this cultivation speed greatly surpassed many people, hearing that Yang Chen had killed a late YuanYing stage expert by himself, Meng Xian didn't dare to believe it.

“Maybe, you were anxious about the battle and had mistaken the enemy's cultivation!”

Speaking this time was the hall master of Luminous Moon Hall, Lian Shaoming. During the time he was punished to be in seclusion, Liang Shaoming had already planned the cultivation of the flying sword which would be his destined magic weapon, his cultivation also seemed to become formidable compared to before. Although his voice was calm, it was full of suspicion towards Yang Chen.

Yang Chen didn't reply, but took out the golden seal which was in a disastrous state and gave it to Meng Xian. After taking the golden seal, Meng Xian was immediately startled and raised his head to look at Yang Chen with some astonishment in his eyes, only then did he lower his head and begin to observe the golden seal properly.

This golden seal couldn't be refined by ordinary people, also, not everyone could use it. It was different from the sword spell in Yang Chen's domed hall, the sword spell could be used anytime as long as the Medicine Garden had sufficient spirit power. But this golden seal required an expert to control it, if one isn't at YuanYing stage, then he could forget about controlling it.

After Meng Xian had looked over it, he passed it to Palace Master Zhong Jiao. Soon after, all of them observed it once and each and everyone's gazes changed after observing it.

How many formidable flying sword did Yang Chen use to destroy the golden seal to such a state? This was the first time Yang Chen had revealed a bit of his strength in front of all the elders and palace master and all of them were looking at Yang Chen in shock!

Naturally, they had another expression. All of them could see that the material used to make this golden seal was certainly not ordinary. The golden seal had been damaged to this state because of the disparity in level of tool refining, however, the material used was extremely precious. It was a guarantee that anyone who possessed this golden seal could make a high grade flying sword from it.

Unfortunately, this golden seal was Yang Chen's loot.

Chapter 212 - Worth Or Not Worth Fighting For

Many years ago, there had been a debate in Pure Yang Palace about the ownership of treasures found by disciples. That time, it was decided that any treasure found by a disciple would belong to him.

This golden seal was Yang Chen's spoil of war, so naturally, it belonged in Yang Chen's pouch. It would be impossible for others to snatch it forcefully, even if they wanted to. The only method was to find some way to purchase it or obtain it from Yang Chen according to his wishes.

In comparison, it would be simpler to use the last two methods since it was impossible to forcefully snatch it from Yang Chen. After all, Yang Chen had a lot of treasures, and he had fire attributed spirit root, so he wouldn't care much about a metal attributed tool refining material.

This could be taken up later, as presently, the priority for the sect's elders was the matter of Hundred Thousand Mountains. Soon, everyone's attention returned back from the affair of Yang Chen killing a YuanYing stage expert to discussing the necessary countermeasures.

"If the people of Hundred Thousand Mountain publicly declare war against our Pure Yang Palace, then we will not rest until they are all dead."

The first person to open his mouth was Lin Yunfeng, who clearly stated his position:

"Moreover, they were the ones who had attacked the disciple of my Pure Yang Palace first, so reasonable justification is also not on their side. Additionally, we must send the message that any outsider cannot causally bully our disciples!"

Although the people of Pure Yang Palace were not usually tyrannical, when facing this type of matter, the first thought of the majority of the people would be to defend the interests of sect's disciples. Even elder Lin Yunfeng, who looked unfavourably on Yang Chen, was of the same mind. His grudge was his own personal business, but outsiders bullying the disciples of their sect would absolutely not be forgiven.

“Yes, not only had those people broken the rule of their own auction house and attacked the disciple of our sect first, they had also dared to try and kill a disciple of my Pure Yang Palace at MeiQing Mountain. Do they really think that we will not retaliate?”

Immediately another elder continued in a righteous tone.

“Right now, we are not certain of how the Hundred Thousand Mountain would react, if we start declaring mortal enemies like this, then we would invite the ridicule of others for no reason.”

Said another elder:

“Let's not take any action for the time being and see how the enemy responds?”

“Hundred Thousand Mountain had broken their own rules, naturally, they will also have other such debts. So temporarily, they certainly won't dare to take any large-scale action against our Pure Yang Palace.”

Said Foreign Affair Hall's hall master Xu Chengxin:

“MeiQing Mountain is not Hundred Thousand Mountain, if they come to our territory to attack, the other sects and schools will also not tolerate it, so there is no need to panic.”

“They broke their own rules and attacked the disciples of my sect first, we should not let them off lightly. However, when Yang Chen had killed their manager and young master, that was excessive.”

Liang Shaoming immediately opened his mouth:

“So they also sent people to kill Yang Chen, thus it should even out now.”

“What do you mean?”

After reaching YuanYing stage, Medicine Hall’s hall master Zhu Chentao’s confidence had increased greatly. Hearing Liang Shaoming’s words, he immediately furrowed his brows.

“Since they had attacked using the reason of vengeance and hadn’t affected any other people of the sect, then how can we all interfere?”

Liang Shaoming glanced at the Yang Chen, the only one standing in the room and then turned towards Zhu Chentao and continued:

“Since they insist on saying that this is a private matter between them, then it won’t be good for the whole sect to interfere!”

“They attacked the disciple of my sect first, how can it be equaled out with just losing two lives?”

Zhu Chentao coldly snort:

“This time again, they entered my MeiQing Mountain, do you think that at the places of my Pure Yang Palace which aren’t habited, anyone who wants to run amok can do so casually?”

“Naturally, the people of Hundred Thousand Mountains cannot get away with it, as long as a suitable opportunity arises, then naturally we must teach them a lesson.”

However Liang Shaoming said using a virtuous cause, but his gaze again turned towards Yang Chen:

“But, is it the sect’s intention to form enmity with Hundred Thousand Mountains?”

“Huh, do you think the disciples of Pure Yang Palace should allow all outsiders to plot against them?”

Yang Chen was furious, but before he could say anything, Zhu Chentao had already started speaking:

“What do you mean by these words?”

“I mean that after all is said and done, Gao Yue had gone to find materials to make a flying sword for her own disciple when she got attacked and later, Yang Chen went to quarrel with them.”

Obviously, Liang Shaoming was targeting Yang Chen, he sneered:

“It is a private affair of these master and disciple, so why must they insist on dragging my sect into it and even if my sect personally steps in to save them, then they also shouldn’t be let off lightly and must be disciplined by the sect. Otherwise, in the future, others will keep causing trouble when outside the sect, who will uphold the sect’s rule?”

Liang Shaoming meant that the sect should assist Yang Chen and Gao Yue in enduring the pressure from outside, but within the sect, they should be punished.

“Uncle master Liang, when master went to find the materials for flying sword, it was under the orders of Palace Master.”

Standing opposite to him, Yang Chen replied being neither servile nor overbearing:

“Could it be that uncle master Liang forgot that Palace Master had personally bestowed me with a flying sword?”

“When bestowing a flying sword to a foundation stage disciple, why must she insist on using such high grade materials?”

Liang Shaoming slowly said:

“Did the Palace Master say that such a high grade flying sword must be rewarded?”

“Good words, thanks for teaching me uncle master Liang.”

An angry smile appeared on Yang Chen’s face, looking straight at

Liang Shaoming, he asked:

“Palace Master also didn’t say to not bestow such a high grade flying sword!”

However, this also couldn’t be retorted against. Palace Master Zhong Jiao had indeed conferred a flying sword on Yang Chen, but everyone had thought that it would be a normal flying sword.

As long as it is of fire attribute, it would be good. But, it was completely out of their expectation that Gao Yue would be willing to pay such price for Yang Chen’s flying sword. However, Liang Shaoming also couldn’t say anything, if he continued to pursue this question then he may end up offending Palace Master Zhong Jiao.

Previously, Palace Master’s authority was weak so he had to keep cordial relations with Lin Yunfeng and the other elders, so they could easily sway Palace Master Zhong Jiao’s decision.

But now, it was not the same, Wang Yong’s strength had been greatly increased, his cultivation exceeded everyone. Furthermore, there was also the Dacheng stage expert Gui Shanyou, in addition to the successive accomplishments of Yang Chen.

All these things had allowed Pure Yang Palace’s strength to increase greatly, allowing Palace Master’s prestige to swell. Even Lin Yunfeng didn’t dare to easily contradict him now, needless to say of Liang Shaoming.

“No need discuss this matter anymore. The Hundred Thousand Mountain had attacked first so it is their offense.”

Sure enough, Palace Master Zhong Jiao’s shot a glance towards Liang Shaoming and lightly gave the explanation:

“If it had been anyone else among you, then my decision would also have been the same. Regardless of whatever the cause is, we had followed the rules and gone to purchase something, but they attacked, so obviously, they are at fault.”

Surely, Liang Shaoming didn't dare to say anything and could only ruthlessly stare at Yang Chen. In these few years, Yang Chen had left his mark, causing Liang Shaoming's resentment towards him to increase. He was even thinking of personally teach him a lesson. But, after hearing today that Yang Chen had surprisingly dealt with a YuanYing stage expert alone, he was restrained due to fear.

"Yang Chen, what do you think we should do?"

After giving his decision, Palace Master Zhong Jiao immediately turned to Yang Chen and asked.

"Disciple wants to know, if the power behind Hundred Thousand Mountains falls, could my sect control the Hundred Thousand Mountains?"

Yang Chen didn't speak for some time, but when he opened his mouth, he immediately gave a fright to everyone present.

The upper echelons of Pure Yang Palace were all aware that this disciple Yang Chen doesn't lie. He only speaks when he has 100% guarantee that he could achieve his objective.

But even then, hearing about controlling Hundred Thousand Mountain from behind the scenes astonished everyone present on the scene, including Liang Shaoming. Liang Shaoming was just pushed down by Palace Master Zhong Jiao, but hearing Yang Chen's words gave him a great fright.

Hundred Thousand Mountains, that famous dangerous region, dao cultivators, devil cultivators and demon cultivators, all gathered there. Even YuanYing stage experts would also have to be greatly cautious here. Not to mention other things, just the fact that even a formidable expert like old tree demon was silently staying there, clearly showed the fearfulness of the place.

That power behind the auction house controlled the majority of such a dangerous region. But now, Yang Chen suddenly asked

whether Pure Yang Palace could control the Hundred Thousand Mountain or not, this..... this was simply a big joke.

“Ridiculous!”

After discovering that he had almost jumped because of fright and lost his cool, Liang Shaoming immediately yelled towards Yang Chen as if trying to remove his own embarrassment by lashing out at Yang Chen:

“Too arrogant!”

Although Liang Shaoming had loudly yelled in front of everyone, moreover, everyone also knew what he thought of Yang Chen. This time, no one felt that Liang Shaoming had said anything inappropriate.

How can a place like Hundred Thousand Mountains be so easy to control? Even though it lacks spirit power, it had abundant natural resources. In the past, for so many years, no dao sect had the idea to control it, even the sects like Greatest Heaven Sect or Five Phases Sect was the same. Didn't this clearly illustrate the problem?

Not to mention other things, just the position of this place was greatly troublesome. Being at the boundary of regions controlled by all three powers including dao sects, devil sects, and demon race, it was also quite distant from all the sects. Any YuanYing stage expert who doesn't have magic weapons like Yang Chen and Wang Yong, which could boost speed, would take at least one month's time for a one way journey. So if some problem arises, the experts of the sects may not be able to arrive timely.

Moreover, the power structure of this place was also quite complex, so only a few YuanYing stage expert certainly couldn't subdue everyone. Even Hao Yi manor, which had four peak stage YuanYing experts, had to rely on the power behind the auction house and curry favour with the clan's young master to live comfortably.

Originally, after taking everything into account, Pure Yang Palace only had eight YuanYing stage experts. Even if they included a formidable expert like Gui Shanyou, She Kui and Xie Sha, also adding in Zhu Chentao who had recently reached YuanYing stage, the Pure Yang Palace only had one Dacheng stage expert and eleven YuanYing stage expert.

Even if they used their full strength to fight, they could at most control a small corner in the Hundred Thousand Mountains. As for controlling the whole Hundred Thousand Mountain, that was just a dream within a dream.

Besides, before thinking about anything else, there was also the power behind auction house, which won't be destroyed so easily. Yang Chen's words indeed were quite unreasonable.

"You tell me, what happens if we can control it or what happens if we can't?"

Palace Master Zhong Jiao thought to himself, Yang Chen certainly wouldn't speak without thinking. Since he spoke before all the elders and other people, he certainly must have a plan.

"If we can control it, then we will have an easy time sharing the profit."

Yang Chen faintly smiled:

"If we cannot, then we have no choice but to lose some profit and act together joining hands with other big sects."

He spoke clearly, if they can, then they could hog everything to themselves. If they can't, then they would have to find some people and act together. But right now, the people of Hundred Thousand Mountains hadn't suffered any great loss, so Yang Chen's words had put everyone at a loss.

These words were indeed true and made Palace Master Zhong Jiao sink into deeper contemplation. The silence within the hall which lasted for a long time was broken when Xu Chengxin asked:

“Yang Chen, how do intend to deal with people of Hundred Thousand Mountains?”

“To gather experts and exterminate them.”

Yang Chen replied without any hesitation.

This was again an unreal reply, almost everyone present on the scene believed so. It's not like people hadn't tried to research the mastermind behind Hundred Thousand Mountains, those dao, devil and demon cultivators who wanted to dominate the Hundred Thousand Mountains, all believed that it wasn't possible without at least two mid stage Dacheng experts.

This was the minimum requirement, but looking at the stability in Hundred Thousand Mountains for so long, where even any big sect hadn't tried to dip their finger in the pie, it was clear maybe they were even more difficult to deal with.

Yang Chen's unexpected words to find experts and exterminate them simply seemed to be a joke. Moreover, it also wasn't like Dacheng stage experts would so easily agree to exterminate people. Furthermore, if two or three Dacheng stage expert of the same side wants to kill another expert of the same stage who was focused on escaping, then killing him also wasn't easy.

When Palace Master Zhong Jiao and others thought about it, they realized that perhaps Yang Chen really had some assurance in gathering experts. Gui Shanyou of Pure Yang Palace, Senior black tiger of Beast Taming Sect, Elder Hua Wanting of Clear Sky School, they were all people who could be considered to be owing a favour to Yang Chen. So agreeing to attack once shouldn't be a big problem.

But, exterminating the enemy would be greatly difficult for these people too. Driving them away was easy, but who knows when those people would try to make a comeback? It was also impossible for Yang Chen to make these Dacheng experts stay at Hundred Thousand Mountains the entire time.

This caused the Palace Master Zhong Jiao to have some embarrassment. But in front of so many people, he also couldn't ask Yang Chen for the details. Moreover, he also knew that even if he asked, Yang Chen may not reply properly. With Liang Shaoming present on the scene, Yang Chen would certainly not reveal all his cards.

At the same time, Palace Master Zhong Jiao began to get fidgety. This Liang Shaoming was always trying to enter the power struggle all the time. Last time, he colluded with He Lianyun, who was the disciple of Luminous Moon Hall. He couldn't even control a little Luminous Moon Hall properly, maybe it's about time to find a new candidate for the position of hall master of Luminous Moon Hall.

This was the second time, Palace Master Zhong Jiao had this thought, but he didn't say anything. He didn't want to alert those traitors within Pure Yang Palace.

Once he thought that the Greatest Heaven Sect had surprisingly arranged who knows how many people for how long within his sect, Palace Master Zhong Jiao couldn't help but become furious. But after all was said and done, it was still because of the fact that Pure Yang Palace lacked strength. Its influence was insufficient, if they had the strength comparable to a big sect like Five Phases Sect, then how would Greatest Heaven Sect dare to be so brazen?

Presently, Yang Chen's proposal seemed to be a good opportunity to make friendly relations with few other big sects. As for what kind of friendly relations, becoming brothers was good. Connecting by marriage was also good, but what could be more reliable than forming a bond for the interest of both parties?

Once he reached this conclusion, Palace Master Zhong Jiao kept on looking at the argument between the people in front of him without saying anything. But in his mind, he began to strategize to get sufficient bargaining chips in this huge meat pie.

“Humph, keep daydreaming!”

Regarding Yang Chen’s plan of exterminating the enemy, Liang Shaoming directly gave this evaluation. Although other didn’t say anything, they also had the same opinion. If it was really so easy, then how could Hundred Thousand Mountain remain stable for a whole millennium?

“He isn’t indulging in fantasy, he only asked if we can seize the Hundred Thousand Mountain and whether it will be worth joining hands with other big sects.”

However, Zhu Chentao remained on Yang Chen’s side, replying Liang Shaoming.

Chapter 213 - The Elixir Is Called Heart Questioning Pill

“If we can hold it, then naturally it’s worth it.”

Xu Chengxin nodded without any hesitation, everyone present agreed with his words, even Liang Shaoming also consented.

Although the Hundred Thousand Mountain lacked spirit power, it was rich in resources. Who wouldn’t covet those large number of natural resources? If they could hold it, who didn’t know what the benefits would be?

“The problem is whether we can hold it or not.”

Liang Shaoming immediately retorted:

“Relying on whom? Relying on just us? Or adding in experts from other sects? How many Dacheng experts can we have?”

Once Liang Shaoming said those words, it immediately raised a thought in the mind of all the elders. Yang Chen had gone into seclusion for concocting pills for Beast Taming Sect’s Senior black tiger, so it was said that Senior black tiger promised Yang Chen a favour. Together with Hua Wanting of Clear Sky School and Gui Shanyou, there would be a total of three Dacheng stage experts.

Since Senior black tiger and elder Hua Wanting had agreed, naturally the sects behind them wouldn’t also sit quietly, just the Clear Sky School itself could not be looked down upon. If these three powers form an alliance, then maybe there was some chance.

“Disciple had once obtained a certain pill recipe by accident.”

Yang Chen slowly continued:

“Using certain year matured ingredients, an elixir known as Heart Questioning Pill can be refined.”

“Heart questioning pill?”

Zhu Chentao was the hall master of Medicine Hall, so he was obsessed towards pill concocting. After hearing Yang Chen had some new kind of elixir, he impatiently asked:

“What kind of elixir is this? What use does it have?”

Not only Zhu Chentao, other people also raised their ears and looked at Yang Chen. Since he had mentioned the heart questioning pill at this time, then it was certainly in relation to the matter regarding Hundred Thousand Mountain, so everyone couldn't help but value it.

“This heart questioning pill isn't of any great use.”

Yang Chen satisfied everyone's appetite and calmly said:

“At the time of making a breakthrough, when confusion arises in the heart, this heart questioning pill will ensure that devils from outside won't invade and it would just depend on your heart, thus increasing the chances of the breakthrough.”

“Hiss!”

Yang Chen had explained it lightly, but each and everyone who heard it couldn't help but take a deep breath. Outer devils couldn't invade and just depend on your heart, what kind of object was this and he still says it doesn't have much use?

When someone tried to reach Dacheng stage from YuanYing stage or some Dacheng expert has to ascend, there was endless confusion in the heart. If this pill was taken at that time, wouldn't it greatly increase the chances of succeeding? What was the most difficult problem after reaching a bottleneck? Wasn't it the invasion of heart's devil since the dao heart wasn't stable? So was this pill something, which doesn't have much use?

“The requirements for making this heart questioning pill is extremely high and requires at least ten thousand years matured legendary herbs.”

Seeing that everyone had become distracted, Yang Chen waited

for a good while for everyone to accept it, only then he continued:

“Although it can also be used for cultivators below Dacheng stage, it really wasn’t worth it.”

Frankly speaking, this pill was for the use of Dacheng experts especially at the time of breakthrough, so it could be said to be of the same grade as Heaven Seizing Pill. But compared to the heaven seizing pill, the heart questioning pill had a great extent of applicability, at least after Dacheng experts use it, they won’t have to continuously endure the medicinal power and won’t cause their bodies to explode leading to death.

Naturally, people like Yang Chen who were extremely rich could also use it when they were at foundation stage or JieDan stage. But the requirement of ten thousand years matured legendary herbs was really too high and absolutely couldn’t be supported by an ordinary foundation or JieDan stage cultivator. As for YuanYing experts, even their flesh would ache.

However, for Yang Chen, this wasn’t a big problem. He had only recalled this heart questioning pill when he and Shi Shanshan had discovered those legendary herbs.

“This pill, how much assurance do you have in making it?”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao timely asked the question which was in everyone’s mind.

“With sufficient ingredients, this disciple has 70% assurance.”

Yang Chen made a rough estimation and gave a number which everyone could accept. But in reality, as long as Yang Chen had sufficient ingredients, there wouldn’t be any problem.

“Ten thousand years matured legendary herbs, they aren’t so easy to acquire!”

Zhu Chentao creased his brows. He definitely didn’t have any doubt regarding Yang Chen’s pill concocting level. Even until now, he always had the attitude of a student in front of Yang Chen.

Zhu Chentao's words also gave a voice to the problem in everyone's heart. If it was just thousand year matured herbs then they could still be acquired with difficulty, but as for ten thousand years matured legendary herbs, the difficulty to acquire them rises by a hundredfold.

"Previously, when disciple had gone out to gain experiences with Fairy Shi of Green Jade Immortal Island, disciple was fortunate enough to come across some herbs which could be used."

Just when everyone was scratching their head, Yang Chan immediately gave an answer which stunned everyone:

"Refining a furnace of heart questioning pills shouldn't be a problem."

Hearing this, everyone's pupils shrunk. No one asked what he meant by a furnace of heart questioning pill, but looking at Yang Chen's appearance, they were certain that it was not one or two pills. If one heart questioning pill meant the support of one Dacheng expert, doesn't that meant that using just one furnace of heart questioning pill, Yang Chen could gain the support of more than ten Dacheng experts?

Ten Dacheng experts, added together with the ones who owed Yang Chen a favour, would mean almost half of the total number of Dacheng expert present within all the dao sects.

In front of this kind of force, not to mention Hundred Thousand Mountain, even Greatest Heaven Sect would have to stake all their resources together with the lives of all of their Dacheng stage experts to barely avoid extermination.

So didn't this mean that destroying those people of Hundred Thousand Mountain was already in the bag? When everyone present reached this conclusion, their heart became lively, seemingly the first question which Yang Chen had asked was not that stupid.

Whether the Pure Yang Palace could or could not hold the Hundred Thousand Mountain after conquering it? Everyone began to think about this question. Now they weren't discussing the feasibility of conquering it rather were genuinely thinking about the making the arrangement to gobble up the great wealth of Hundred Thousand Mountain in their purse.

If the Pure Yang Palace could really hold the Hundred Thousand Mountain, then the Pure Yang Palace would surely earn great wealth. As long as they do it properly, everyone had the confidence that within a hundred years, the Pure Yang Palace would certainly become a first rate sect.

Everyone's heart began to pound with the vision of the future whose hope had arrived this instant. Looking at Yang Chen, everyone felt that they had really obtained a great treasure.

Once the heart questioning pill came out, what about Heaven Seizing Pill's controversy, it would be thrown to one side. As long as they dominate the pill recipe and refining method, Yang Chen could walk anywhere within the cultivator's world without any fear.

Anyone who dared to offend Yang Chen, would also indirectly offend all the Dacheng experts who required a heart questioning pill, as well as those formidable experts who had the financial resources to pay the price of a heart questioning pill. When that time comes, who would dare to threaten Yang Chen, even the people of Pure Yang Palace wouldn't quarrel with him lightly.

Fantasy was always beautiful, but when returning to reality, they couldn't help but lose hope. It had to be said that the dreams of higher echelons of Pure Yang Palace were indeed slightly mistaken, even if they could conquer Hundred Thousand Mountain, they would still be unable to hold it.

This was the regret of all small sects, everyone present had to accept this fact. It seems that there was only one method that was

to collaborate with few big sects and share the profits.

Actually, the benefits of the Hundred Thousand Mountain were so huge that even a big sect would be unable to keep everything to itself. After everyone thought about this fact for some time, they felt great relief in their heart, since the fact that even a big sect couldn't handle this matter so if Pure Yang Palace wasn't able to do it, then also it was not something for which they would lose face.

After realizing this point, it was time to think about the sects with which they would form an alliance with, this matter had to be considered very carefully. Which sect to accept and which to reject, this was Pure Yang Palace's own decision.

Moreover, the selected sects must also use their full power otherwise why should they receive a portion of benefit? If that happens, then the pressure on Pure Yang Palace would decrease greatly, at least the heart questioning pills could be provided to the experts of those sects.

At this instant, even Liang Shaoming's eyes were shining brightly, if he could obtain one heart questioning pill refined by Yang Chen for himself, then couldn't he immediately make a breakthrough from the peak of JieDan stage and reach YuanYing stage.

At this moment, Yang Chen didn't say anything and kept on calmly standing in front of them. Yang Chen also couldn't do anything about this matter and would still require the Palace Master and elders to make a decision.

“Green Jade Immortal Islands had always wanted to form an alliance with my sect, this time, we might as well have a chat with them.”

One elder said, but while speaking his gaze turned to Yang Chen with a bitter smile.

Hearing this, everyone gave him a knowing smile. The matter of

Shi Shanshan becoming a dao companion of Yang Chen was something that most elders agreed with, to obtain the support of Green Jade Immortal Islands. However, now they can also form the ties depending on profit and take their cooperation to next level. So when the time comes, even if Yang Chen really doesn't want to become dao companions, it would still not go as far as to Pure Yang Palace and Green Jade Immortal Islands becoming hostile with each other.

“Clear Sky School could also be considered as an option.”

When the Palace Master opened his mouth, he also had a similar smile on his face.

Yang Chen understood that this was related to Sun Qingxue. However, he didn't say anything, if he could really resolve the matter of both females with this matter than that would be the best outcome.

Actually, when Yang Chen spoke about the heart questioning pill, the vast sea and sky opened in front of everyone's eyes. Accept whose cooperation and reject whose, it all depended upon Pure Yang Palace's own decision.

“Greatest Heaven Sect's strength is great and it also handles all outside matters fairly, shouldn't we include them also in the cooperation?”

After Palace Master Zhong Jiao had spoken, Liang Shaoming also gave his suggestion.

“Strength being great is acceptable, but they handle outside matters fairly, how can you even say that?”

Law Enforcement Hall's hall master Meng Xian immediately retorted. During the past ten years, Law Enforcement Hall had been unable to find any of the traitors planted by the Greatest Heaven Sect which made Meng Xian furious, so now seeing Liang Shaoming surprisingly mention Greatest Heaven Sect, how can he

not release his anger:

“During the matter of Desolate Valley, how did Greatest Heaven Sect’s attitude seemed fair to you? Or could it be that since they sheltered your traitorous disciple Chu Heng, that’s why you think they are fair and just?”

“You!”

Liang Shaoming couldn’t speak more than one word, he had mentioned them with selfish motives but hadn’t expected that hall master Meng Xian would refute so fiercely.

Not only Meng Xian, even Palace Master Zhong Jiao looked at Liang Shaoming with disgust hidden deep within his eyes. Everyone was aware that Liang Shaoming had some friends in the Greatest Heaven Sect, but talking drivel in this kind of situation was just a joke. In any case, this had made Palace Master Zhong Jiao and hall master Meng Xian place serious suspicion on Liang Shaoming.

It was not like both of them hadn’t doubted Liang Shaoming when finding the hidden traitor within the sect. But afterwards, both of them felt that Liang Shaoming was the hall master of Luminous Moon Hall and would be an elder of Pure Yang Palace in the future, so why would he lower himself to rely on Greatest Heaven Sect’s charity? Therefore, their suspicion towards Liang Shaoming had weakened greatly, at most, they felt that because of his disciple Chu Heng’s matter, he didn’t look favourably on Yang Chen.

Last time was Liang Shaoming’s first offence, but now, Liang Shaoming had surprisingly spared no effort to speak on Greatest Heaven Sect’s behalf, how could this be a good sign. So the future investigation had to be shifted towards Liang Shaoming.

In fact, by sheltering a traitor of Pure Yang Palace and using their disciples to attack Yang Chen, they proved themselves to be the sect’s enemies. Furthermore, deploying a secret piece in the sect,

even after all these actions, if the Palace Master Zhong Jiao still consents to cooperate with Greatest Heaven Sect, then he shouldn't have become the Palace Master in the first place.

Although the other elders didn't know about such complications, they also agreed with Meng Xian's words. Greatest Heaven Sect's actions towards Five Phases Sect had already caused the other big sects to become resentful towards them.

If they really want to walk with Greatest Heaven Sect, then maybe the Green Jade Immortal Islands and the Clear Sky School wouldn't agree so easily. In the extreme case, it might also destroy the relationship of Pure Yang Palace with these two sects.

In fact, after forming alliance with Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky School, these two big sects, the Palace Master could also draw in Beast Taming Sect. With two first rate sects and two second rate sects, controlling Hundred Thousand wouldn't be difficult.

However, these kinds of benefits would certainly give rise to other people's greed. After discussion the topic with everyone, it was concluded that they must also rope in the Rogue Cultivator's Alliance.

Thus, everything was arranged properly. Naturally, the premise of all this was the destruction of everyone at Hundred Thousand Mountains, and the most crucial thing was the time required to refine Yang Chen's heart questioning pill.

"After getting hold of Hundred Thousand Mountains, in the future, we will require some rules to administer it."

This was Palace Master Zhong Jiao's other decision

"How will the benefits be divided, whether to allow the devil and demon cultivators, whether to let demon clan and devil sects to join it, all these would require discussion between all parties."

Everyone consented to this point because after all was said and

done, the time of discussion with all parties would still depend on Yang Chen.

“It seems like we would again have to trouble you, Yang Chen, to refine the heart questioning pill.”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao faintly smiled towards Yang Chen:

“Since the ingredients are all gathered, how much time would you require in pill concocting?”

“If uncle master Zhu helps.....”

Yang Chen made a rough estimation:

“Two years would be enough, I think. This pill isn’t difficult to refine.”

“Good!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao replied without any hesitation:

“You put your mind to pill concocting. I know your cultivation requires flames, from tomorrow, the sect will dispatch disciples to secure flames for you, you will also obtain hundred thousand sect contribution points. Moreover, you will also get another chance to enter sect’s Secret Pavilion. If you have any other requirements, just mention without any hesitation, just refine the heart questioning pill within two years.”

Chapter 214 - Great Harvest

“Wait a moment!”

When Yang Chen was just about to reply, Liang Shaoming interrupted him, as everyone confusingly turned towards him, he asked:

“The heart questioning pill refined by Yang Chen, will they belong to Yang Chen or to the sect?”

“The ingredients are provided by Yang Chen, the refining is done by Yang Chen, so naturally, the pills will belong to Yang Chen.”

Zhu Chentao shot a glance towards Yang Chen and confusingly asked:

“Could it be that hall master Liang feels that they should belong to the sect?”

“Since my sect gave him so many rewards, naturally, they must belong to the sect.”

Obviously, Liang Shaoming wasn't willing to let the heart questioning pills belong to Yang Chen. If they belonged to the sect, then using his identity, he still had some chance to obtain a pill. Maybe with this one pill, he could enter the YuanYing stage, so he couldn't help but make these selfish schemes.

“What about the profits of Hundred Thousand Mountain, are they not enough for the sect to give rewards?”

Zhu Chentao sneered. How could he not see what Liang Shaoming's intentions were?

“It is still unknown how many pills he can refine, so what use is there to discuss about these matters right now?”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao kept up his calm face and shot a glance at Liang Shaoming, then he continued:

“It would be difficult to gain the support of a Dacheng expert to

attack Hundred Thousand Mountain with just one heart questioning pill and we require the support of at least five experts. With two pills for each person, that would be ten pills in total. Yang Chen, you concoct the pills, as for the extra pills, you can keep them for yourself.”

Although he had dominatingly ordered Yang Chen to give ten pills, Yang Chen didn't have any problems with following this. This was a method proposed by him and looking at the big picture, it would also resolve many of Yang Chen's troubles.

“Disciple will do as ordered!”

Yang Chen loudly agreed and was just about to leave when his gaze swept across Liang Shaoming, he suddenly turned and said:

“Disciple would still have to rely on Palace Master to assure the safety of disciple's master.”

“Be at ease!”

Palace Master Zhong Jiao agreed:

“Apprentice brother Wang is just about to come out of seclusion, I will arrange for your master to live near apprentice brother Wang's seclusion place. Furthermore, I will also ask Shi Kui and Xie Sha of the Eccentric Hall to guard your master, you shouldn't worry and concentrate on pill concocting!”

Since the enemy could find Yang Chen's location, naturally, they also knew how important his master, Gao Yue, was to him. This wasn't any secret at Pure Yang Palace, regardless of whatever malicious things you say about Yang Chen, he would just laugh it off, but if someone dares to speak wrongly about Gao Yue, Yang Chen would hunt and kill him a thousand times.

Moreover, Gao Yue herself was one of the people involved in the matter regarding Hundred Thousand Mountains, it was quite possible that those people would similarly retaliate against her.

Therefore, Yang Chen's concerns weren't completely unfounded.

Palace Master Zhong Jiao had also thought about this matter and made this arrangement.

Liang Shaoming's plans to obtain a heart questioning pill had failed because of Palace Master Zhong Jiao's words, but he didn't dare to utter even a single word. Everything was planned by Yang Chen, the ingredients belonged to Yang Chen, the refining was also done by Yang Chen, hence, providing ten pills to the sect was more than enough. Furthermore, the sect would still obtain the profits of Hundred Thousand Mountains.

Such a big matter would require great preparation from Pure Yang Palace in all fields like manpower, resources, and allies. Although Yang Chen still hadn't begun the refining of the heart questioning pills, some information about it needed to be spread.

This was so that when the time comes, the experts of the ally sects don't become unavailable by going into seclusion or for other similar reasons. In short, the time when Yang Chen completes the pill concocting should be the time by which the sect's preparations were finished.

Therefore, all of them began to get busy. Pure Yang Palace immediately postponed many missions and began to use the sect's contribution points to exchange for different grades of flames. The rewards were ample, arousing the interest of countless people.

As long as one was a fire attributed cultivator, he would have to use a flame. But not all fire attributed cultivators were so fortunate and could find flames like Real Sun Fire or Real Moon Fire.

Even Yang Chen's master, Gao Yue, also only had a Purple Heart Fire, which was comparable to Yang Chen's geocentric fire. For the majority of the people, let alone geocentric fire, they would be lucky if they could obtain a first grade or second grade flame.

The issue of Yang Chen requiring flames wasn't raised by Yang Chen, but rather by Zhu Chentao. When Zhu Chentao saw that Yang Chen's Profound Spirit Furnace could be upgraded by

absorbing different types of flames, he immediately noted it in his mind. No wonder, Yang Chen had previously said that he would exchange the Heaven Seizing Pill recipe for a flame.

This Profound Spirit Furnace was obtained by Zhu Chentao by accident, which he later gifted to Yang Chen. Zhu Chentao had He Lianyun's furnace, so he wasn't envious of Yang Chen's Profound Spirit Furnace.

On the contrary, he even mentioned this to Palace Master once. This time, the Palace Master also seized the opportunity to obtain some benefits for Yang Chen to start this magnificent occasion.

Usually, the sect's contribution points were very rarely awarded, causing each and every one of the thousands of disciples to drool over them.

Those who had obtained a flame but hadn't used it, all immediately exchanged it for contribution points. Those contribution points could be exchanged for spirit stones or perhaps other products of the sect, whose value far exceeded that of a simple flame. Even those who had used the flame exchanged it for contribution points. Later, when the opportunity arises, they could obtain a similar flame based on market value, which only required some time to be spent.

Moreover, the sooner the flames were exchanged, the higher the contribution points awarded. Everyone had similar ideas and within a short ten days, the sect had already collected 50 first grade flames and more than 20 second grade flames.

When Yang Chen and Zhu Chentao entered Yang Chen's refining room again, Zhu Chentao immediately produced the flames obtained. These almost 80 flames made Yang Chen extremely happy.

A woodcutter must sharpen his axe before chopping logs. Yang Chen wasn't polite and immediately began to use the Profound Spirit Furnace to absorb the flames. The Profound Spirit Furnace,

which had already reached a very high grade and had absorbed high grade flames like real sun fire and real moon fire without any pressure, began to absorb these low grade flames at lightning speed.

3 first grade flames or 2 second grade flames in a day. Within one short month, Yang Chen's Profound Spirit Furnace had already absorbed all the flames completely.

Speaking of this, the Profound Spirit Furnace had already absorbed many types of high grade flames but hadn't absorbed many low grade flames. This batch of flames was full of low grade flames and although the individual flames in the batch didn't raise the grade of the Profound Spirit Furnace as effectively as real sun fire or real moon fire, several tens of flames were enough to increase it by one grade.

Yang Chen also refined one tenth of the Profound Green Metal Crystal this time, enriching the Profound Spirit Furnace even more. Within a month, the Profound Spirit Furnace had once again been reborn, not only had its grade increased, with the addition of Profound Greed Metal Crystal, its structure had become even more robust and its capability to endure the pressure of flames had increased substantially.

Because the Profound Spirit Furnace could now control a large number of flames, his control over different flames during the pill concocting process became even more perfect, this was another great advantage. Holding the Profound Spirit Furnace, Yang Chen didn't want to part with it.

After using the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets once, Yang Chen finally began to cooperate with Zhu Chentao and entered seclusion to refine pills.

This time again, Zhu Chentao's disciple and Yang Chen's former servant, Ho Lin, was waiting upon them. But, the only difference compared to last time was that from start to finish, Zhu Chentao

and Ho Lin were only spectators, from purifying the ingredients to refining the elixir, everything was done by Yang Chen alone.

Frankly speaking, when Yang Chen was concocting pills, he allowed Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin to learn as much as possible. Although Zhu Chentao was already a YuanYing stage experts, on the road of pill concocting, he himself didn't dare to say that he had surpassed Yang Chen. Zhu Chentao was sincerely observing everything, afraid to miss anything.

As for Ho Lin, who was originally Yang Chen's servant, regardless of her cultivation, she had good control of fire when concocting pills, but it was still inferior to Yang Chen. Since Yang Chen had guided her for so long, she naturally knew good from bad and always waited upon her master and Yang Chen attentively, not daring to be distracted for a moment.

The heart questioning pill required more than ten types of ten thousand years matured herbs, all of which were present in that valley. When Yang Chen took out those freshly plucked herbs, Zhu Chentao became ecstatic.

Although being a pill concocting master meant that he had many chances to personally see ten thousand years matured legendary herbs, who takes out a pile of them? While Yang Chen was preparing, Zhu Chentao spared no effort to teach Ho Lin about the grade of this batch of herbs, while simultaneously holding these precious herbs in his own hands.

Yang Chen first used the geocentric fire to refine all the herbs. The amount of spirit power in the ten thousand years matured herbs was enough to astonish anyone. Not to mention other things, under the influence of this pile of medicinal power, even the colour of Profound Spirit Furnace was changed, from dilute cyan colour to slightly greenish. This was indeed quite mystical.

After some time, Ho Lin was unable to endure the thick overflowing spirit power and had to move far away, only then did

the feeling blood and spirit power rolling around in her body ease out.

When beginning the refining, Yang Chen's fire controlling technique once again astonished Zhu Chentao. He kept on attentively observing the flame within Profound Spirit Furnace without any movement.

This time, Yang Chen was using techniques to control fire as earth and control fire as water. Since the heart questioning pill paid particular attention calming the heart of a person like a river, just flowing on its path, without receiving the onslaught of outer devils, so naturally, among the five phases, the most peaceful ones of earth and water were the most suitable. However, although it was a dual refining of earth and water, the origin was still fire.

At the lowest strata of Profound Spirit Furnace was a flame sealed like a piece of earth, formed together by geocentric fire and cold ice fire. After experiencing the refining of geocentric fire, the medicinal liquid spread on top of this foundation and began to flow around slowly like recently melted magma.

Using the profound wood fire, he transformed it into a miniature bodhi tree. After penetrating the medicinal liquid, it took roots in the foundation beneath the medicinal liquid, that was formed with the combination of geocentric fire and cold ice fire. The portion of medicinal liquid approaching this tree slowly began to boil and the heat was then spread to all portions little by little.

The best condition for meditation and cultivation was under a bodhi tree. Under this tree, anyone could safely enter a meditative state while calming their heart. The bodhi tree formed of profound wood fire also used the idea of mediation and fused with the heart questioning pill, perfectly harmonizing with its medicinal properties.

Naturally, for the bodhi tree formed of profound wood fire to achieve these kinds of results, the most crucial point was the tiny

flame strands of the profound wood fire engraved minute spirit storing spell formations in the medicinal liquid of the elixir while boiling it. This made it so that every infinitesimal drop of this medicinal liquid contained a minute spirit storing spell formation, which was the main reason for this effect.

Also, at any point in time, the profound wood fire could only boil a small portion of the medicinal liquid that was surrounding the tree and wouldn't pass the heat to the entire medicinal liquid. To achieve with this, Yang Chen's precise control over fire was required. Bit by bit, the medicinal liquid that was flowing over the foundation made of two flames, was moved around once to undergo the baptism of profound wood fire.

Just this process required the majority of the two years. The heart questioning pill allowed a person to not bow down to their devils, precisely because of bodhi meditation. Moreover, the coldness of cold ice fire would allow that person to always remain sober, this was the cause of always pointing towards their heart. Naturally, the cold ice flame has its uses and also allowed the minute flame strands to form spell formations.

However, just relying on the spell formations wasn't sufficient to perform the heart questioning pill's function. The genuine reason for its effectiveness was still the medicinal power of those ten thousand years matured herbs that assist and complement each other. Otherwise, even these Dacheng experts could just set up the spell formations, then wouldn't it be easy for them to refine the heart questioning pills?

In the end, the most basic requirement was an enormous and continuous supply of spirit power which doesn't go berserk. The fusion of these factors makes the heart questioning pill deserve its reputation.

Because Yang Chen had absorbed the cold ice fire and profound wood fire last time, he had great confidence in refining this heart questioning pill. Even Zhu Chentao, who had been watching from

start to finish, realized that it was not so easy. Leaving aside the fact that searching for materials was difficult, just this high grade fire controlling technique was something which he can't reproduce.

During the whole process, Zhu Chentao only kept on gasping with excitement. Yang Chen's current level of flame control left him completely speechless and unable to find words to describe his praise.

Now, Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin were convinced that as long as they cultivate the dao of flame control as Yang Chen had thought them, the road ahead of them could lead them far into the future. Thus, Zhu Chentao wouldn't ever have the feeling of an impassable gap, as he had at the peak of JieDan stage.

One year's time was needed to lay down sufficient spell formations within the medicinal liquid, while the remaining time was required by Yang Chen to complete the final refining of the heart questioning pill.

The most surprising thing was, at the final juncture, Yang Chen didn't use any high grade flame, rather, one of the first grade flames that he had collected this time. Although the low key and underrated flame didn't cause any great waves in the final step, it was able to maintain a high temperature from beginning to end.

Initially, Yang Chen used to believe that he would have to use the green phosphorous fire at this step. But now, since he had many low grade flames, some of them were even more suitable and increased the success of elixir.

Finally, after ten months, Yang Chen began the final step of pill collecting. Zhu Chentao was barely able to make bits and pieces of the dazzling pill concocting technique while Ho Lin's vision was completely sunk into a fog, unable to make out anything of the technique used by Yang Chen.

However, at this crucial time, no one dared to disturb Yang Chen.

Both of them cautiously observed Yang Chen, waiting until Yang Chen had completed the final step and extinguished the flame.

Suddenly, a beam of dense dazzling light appeared from the Profound Spirit Furnace. The beam broke through the roof and directly soared outside. The underground spirit vein of Second Fierce Yang Courtyard seemed to be suddenly attracted by something and began to crazily concentrate at the side of this Profound Spirit Furnace.

Chapter 215-Handling With The Heart Questioning Pill

The huge disturbance alarmed everyone in the MeiQing Mountain. The beam of light was 50 km tall and could be seen clearly within a radius of 500 km.

The fluctuation of spirit power was extremely fierce, everyone was thinking what kind of suppressed power had been released that it needed such an enormous amount of spirit power, which was calmly moving towards the region from where the light appeared.

The people of Second Fierce Yang Courtyard had already sensed these fluctuations long ago, even from the hall where Palace Master lived, more than ten silhouettes could be seen flying in the air towards here. In a short period of time, Palace Master Zhong Jiao and other elders had already flown over to the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

The beam of light didn't scatter and was extremely eye-catching within the night sky. All the experts present on the scene could sense the calm movement of a huge amount of spirit power, but no one made any movement.

Everyone knew that the refining of heart questioning pills had reached the final stage. Whether it succeeded or failed wasn't clear yet, but just the fact that this elixir could attract the calm spirit power and absorb it illustrated the fearsomeness of this pill. This heart questioning pill indeed deserved its reputation.

These circumstances lasted for two whole hours, only then did the pillar of light start to flicker and slowly disappear. The spirit power in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard had finally returned to normal.

Immediately afterwards, everyone heard the laughter of Yang

Chen, Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin. Palace Master and others waiting outside finally relaxed, seemingly, the refining of heart questioning pills had succeeded. Now, the only question was the number of pills refined in this batch.

Hearing the sound of activity, Yang Chen knew that he had disturbed many people so he didn't stay in the pill concocting room and quickly came out together with Zhu Chentao and Ho Lin.

Seeing Palace Master Zhong Jiao, all three of them immediately saluted. Palace Master also faintly smiled and returned the greeting, then he immediately stopped Zhu Chentao, who was trying to say something, and led all of them to the official business hall of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, together with the elders.

After properly setting up restrictions, Palace Master Zhong Jiao asked:

“So how many pills were refined in this batch?”

Actually, not only Palace Master, even the other elders also wanted to know the answer to this question, but seeing the large number of people in the surrounding, they didn't ask. This was also the reason for stopping Zhu Chentao from speaking at that time.

“Disciple hasn't broken your trust, this time 15 pills had been refined.”

Yang Chen answered with a smile. On the other side, Zhu Chentao was also nodding continuously.

Hearing that there were 15 pills, everyone immediately relaxed. As long as, it was more than ten pills, then according to the original plan, they could invite five Dacheng stage experts. With this, they would have much greater assurance in dealing with Hundred Thousand Mountains.

During the two years when Yang Chen was refining, whether it was because they felt fear after Yang Chen had killed a YuanYing

stage expert or because they were busy with dealing with the issue of a large number of disciples of various sects that had gone missing in the Hundred Thousand Mountains in the past, which was being secretly pushed by Pure Yang Palace, the power behind the Hundred Thousand Mountains didn't take any big action towards Pure Yang Palace.

With these heart questioning pills, the discussed plan with the few other sects could move to the next stage. However, a fact that everyone suspected was whether this heart questioning pill really had the effect which Yang Chen said it had.

The promise of giving two heart questioning pills to every Dacheng stage expert was because of this consideration. With the first pill, they could verify the efficacy of the heart questioning pill. For those Dacheng stage experts, a rumor would be eternally unequal to a fact which they had personally verified.

All of this was Palace Master Zhong Jiao's responsibility, so those ten heart questioning pills were handed over to Palace Master in a jade bottle. But everyone's gaze was still on Yang Chen, as if desiring to know what he intended to do with those five leftover heart questioning pills.

It couldn't be helped since Yang Chen's description had really tempted everyone, moreover, the majority of the elders had been at YuanYing stage for too long, the appearance of the heart questioning pill bought a new hope for everyone.

How could Yang Chen not realize what all the elders were thinking about, he faintly laughed:

"The ingredients this time were only sufficient for one batch of heart questioning pill, moreover, all the elders don't need it for the time being. Elders, please wait for a few decades, then if any of the elders senses the bottleneck to the Dacheng stage, disciple would refine another batch to help you breakthrough."

These words were indeed most fitting for the situation, the group

of elder became extremely excited. But Yang Chen immediately continued:

“However, the materials to refine this pill are extremely precious, so elders, someone breaking through from JieDan stage to YuanYing stage mustn’t be allowed to use a heart questioning pill, don’t you all agree?”

What kind of question was this, the heart questioning pill was so precious that using it to breakthrough from YuanYing stage to Dacheng stage was already like using a sledgehammer to crack a nut, who would be willing to waste it on JieDan stage bottleneck? Moreover, all the elders were already at YuanYing stage, so they even went as far to point out that there was no need to waste heart questioning pills on someone who can’t even break through to YuanYing stage by themselves.

No one opposed this proposal, everyone silently nodded. Palace Master Zhong Jiao then asked:

“As for that batch of elixirs, do you intend to gift it to the sect?”

“Yes!”

Yang Chen nodded:

“However, for the time being, the sect doesn’t have anyone who needs to use them, moreover, disciple’s cultivation is also insufficient so many materials were wasted during refining. After 30 years, disciple will produce another batch, reckoning that at that time, even more pills would be produced.”

Although Yang Chen’s refining skills were excellent, his cultivation restrained him. Everyone understood this point, in fact, if not for settling the issue with Hundred Thousand Mountain completely, Yang Chen absolutely wouldn’t have taken out the heart questioning pill so easily.

“This is your property, since you are handing it over, how do you want the sect to reward you?”

After Yang Chen gave his promise, Palace Master was delighted and immediately asked about the matter of rewards.

“Disciple doesn’t need many things, I just have two requests.”

Yang Chen wasn’t someone who selflessly contributed to the sect, that would only be possible if his master was the Palace Master. He immediately put forth his requests:

“First is that the sect continues to obtain flames for this disciple. Second is that if disciple takes fancy to something obtained from Hundred Thousand Mountains, disciple could have the priority of buying it at market price.”

These two requests weren’t too difficult. For collecting flames, as long as the sect issues such a mission, it would be simple. As for the second request, it was slightly troublesome, after all, it was a joint operation with a few other sects, so they couldn’t avoid thinking that rather than this, they could promise some other request to Yang Chen.

However, compared to another batch of heart questioning pills, these few requests were nothing. Yang Chen’s purchase would be finite, moreover, he would be paying according to the market price, so it was not overbearing. Moreover, if even this was impossible, then there was no need for the Pure Yang Palace to vie over Hundred Thousand Mountains.

“Good!”

Even without the consent of the elders, Palace Master nodded his head and agreed to Yang Chen’s requests. It would only be a wonder if some elder didn’t agree in face of such benefits.

Although everyone had agreed to everything very quickly, all of them knew that Yang Chen’s previous condition was basically meant to obstruct some people who had their gazes on the heart questioning pill.

When the hall master of Luminous Moon Hall, Liang Shaoming

had heard about the heart questioning pill, he had immediately asked who had the ownership of the pill. Hearing that, everyone present understood what he was trying to do.

But after Yang Chen and other elders had agreed that heart questioning pill wouldn't be used on a JieDan stage disciple, Liang Shaoming's plan to use the heart questioning pill to cross the JieDan's stage bottleneck was completely squashed.

Even Palace Master sighed secretly, Yang Chen was good to everyone except the people of Luminous Moon Hall. Obviously, it also had to do something with the previous Merit Transferring Disciple Chu Heng. If Palace Master had known earlier that this would happen, then he wouldn't have let Chu Heng continue as the Merit Transferring Disciple during those days, then perhaps, the present situation would have been different.

Fortunately, no elder looked into this, even Liang Shoaming's master, Lin Yunfeng, had also agreed without any fuss. If they had really got a heart transferring pill for Liang Shaoming to use, then probably even Lin Yunfeng wouldn't have been willing to let it go. An elixir which could assist Dacheng experts to ascend to be wasted on a JieDan expert, that would indeed be equal to using sledgehammer to crack a nut.

The group of elders quickly made themselves busy and went away feeling excited. Everyone could almost say that they now had ample confidence to breakthrough and were filled with great urge to reach the Dacheng stage. Their situation was the same as Wang Yong when he received the Heaven Seizing Pill, self-confidence was an important factor in making one's cultivation advance by leaps and bounds.

It was obvious that when the cultivation of these elders increased, their confidence would also swell. Moreover, after the matter of Hundred Thousand Mountains was over, Pure Yang Palace's influence would also have increased, which would also give a boost to everyone's confidence that Pure Yang Palace would

become stronger and stronger.

Naturally, the more resources there were, the faster the sect develops. Furthermore, as the sect's influence increases, the more resources it could dominate. This was a mutually beneficial process. Unknowingly, Yang Chen had already made the Pure Yang Palace walk on a path different from his previous life.

After the elders had dispersed, Yang Chen requested to see the Palace Master alone. What surprised Palace Master was that Yang Chen had directly gifted him with a heart questioning pill.

Last time, Yang Chen had suggested for him to find a dao companion, which would increase his cultivation speed while at the same time also promote his cultivation realm. This time, he had even directly gifted him with a heart questioning pill.

Since the Palace Master had shown great consideration towards Yang Chen, Yang Chen was delighted to gift him with a heart questioning pill. Moreover, this time, apart from showing his filial respect to Palace Master, he still had one more matter to discuss, which was to tell him about how he was going to deal with the remaining heart questioning pills.

Although everyone had the assurance that Yang Chen would refine another batch after 30 years, it was guaranteed that some would be sceptical. Apart from this, Yang Chen knew that Liang Shaoming would think of every possible method to obtain a heart questioning pill from him and he couldn't allow Liang Shaoming to have his way.

Five heart questioning pill, Yang Chen gifted one to Palace Master, among the remainder, one would be gifted to Wang Yong. These two people, one was the Palace Master of Pure Yang Palace and the other was Yang Chen's great master. Regardless of whatever was discussed, both of them deserved it. Moreover, there weren't many people who would dare to have any ideas on these people.

As for the last three pills, Yang Chen had also made arrangements for them. This time, he would have to trouble Senior black tiger and elder Hua Wanting, although they did owe Yang Chen a favour, when all was said and done, they would have to fight with Dacheng experts, so it would not look good if they had to request for it themselves. One heart questioning pill would express his gratitude, it was also a payment comparable to other Dacheng experts, who were receiving a salary of two heart questioning pill.

As for the final one, it must naturally be given to Pure Yang Palace's own Dacheng expert, old tree demon Gui Shanyou. He was the main strength of the battle, moreover, Yang Chen had long ago promised to help him to ascend. One heart questioning pill would make the old tree demon's cultivation even more profound, which would also bring great benefits to Pure Yang Palace.

Palace Master hadn't expected that Yang Chen would deal with them like this. Since they belonged to Yang Chen, then he could do whatever he wants with them. Besides, Yang Chen had already gifted him a pill.

Among the ones left, Wang Yong and old tree demon got one each, which would be beneficial to Pure Yang Palace. As for the other two pills, they were given to outsiders, but would allow the Pure Yang Palace to gain even more reputation, why wouldn't the Palace Master feel satisfied?

The reason why he had not mentioned this in front of the elders was because he feared that they may have some schemes and would try to obstruct him. But now, the Palace Master had nodded, so naturally, he would explain to the elders and Yang Chen wouldn't be accused of treasuring a jade ring.

When to attack was not something which Yang Chen could decide. He could only deal with the things at hand while waiting for his sect to negotiate with the other sects, so he began to absorb and refine a mixture of those newly obtained flames.

First and second grade flames did not produce any difficulty for the Profound Spirit Furnace, as for Yang Chen himself, they weren't a problem. After laying a foundation with several flames, fusing these low grade flames weren't too pressurizing.

Presently, Yang Chen's situation was that his fourth fire attribute was powerful while his third fire attribute was weak. However, among these low grade flames, flames that were third fire attribute was more powerful than those of fourth fire attribute. So after completely absorbing these flames, this disequilibrium would be slightly transformed, tending towards equilibrium.

However, due to the difference between third grade flames of both attributes, the end result would still be the same, and fourth fire attribute would still remain more formidable compared to third fire attribute.

Gao Yue was waiting upon Wang Yong, so Yang Chen didn't go and disturb her. After meeting with old tree demon once, Yang Chen arranged the Profound Spirit Furnace in the same room which was broken through earlier by the beam of light from the furnace. He sat down on his obsidian jade mat and started the absorption and fusion process.

Starting from first grade flames, traces of different flames stably preserved within the Profound Spirit Furnace began to come out and entered Yang Chen's body. Yang Chen began to use third fire spirit power and fourth fire spirit power, depending on the attribute of the flames, to refine and absorb them.

The grade of flames wasn't very high, so Yang Chen didn't need a long time to fuse them. Within ten days, all the first grade flames had been fused together. With every fusion, Yang Chen's original flame's strength improved, with his spirit power improving even more.

Even after absorbing 50 flames, regardless of whether it was third fire spirit power or fourth fire spirit power, they were not able to

reach the point of increasing his cultivation, they only transformed continuously.

The real qualitative change happened after absorbing the 20 second grade flames. His third fire spirit power directly jumped up two layers, from the fifth layer of foundation stage to the seventh layer of foundation stage. Furthermore, his fourth fire spirit power also broke through the seventh layer and enter the eight layer of foundation stage.

The increase in the fire attribute spirit power also urged the increase in spirit power of other attributes. Originally, all the other spirit power except fire stopped at the fourth layer of foundation stage, but after experiencing this time's change, all of them increased greatly and collectively entered the fifth layer of foundation stage. During the whole process, Yang Chen entire cultivation base had increased by at least one layer.

Chapter 216 - What A Shame

Absorbing different flames didn't simply increase spirit power, the most important thing was that the Yin and Yang Heaven Burning Flame, which Yang Chen wanted, required the fusion of a large number of Yin and Yang flames to complete it. The increase in spirit power was just an added benefit.

The spirit sea was greatly transformed, each one of those flames appeared within the spirit sea. Since earth rouses fire, each and every one of the flames absorbed were embedded in the trunk of the PengLai Divine Wood. Looking from afar, they seemed like fruits growing on the PengLai Divine Wood.

Although the area of the spirit sea hadn't increased much, his spirit awareness had crazily increased. Last time, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness had already reached the peak of initial YuanYing stage and now, it surpassed this limit and entered the ranks of mid YuanYing stage.

It has to be said that the Three Purities Secrets was indeed a heaven defying secret art, only someone like the Great Supreme Elder could take it out. Until now, Yang Chen's cultivation had only reached the third layer of Three Purities Secrets. The formidable effects of Three Purities Secrets hadn't begun to show yet. Who knew when he cultivated it to the peak, how formidable it would be?

While Yang Chen was cultivating here, among many sects, few had gathered at a secret pavilion. Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky School being the prime examples.

The Pure Yang Palace hadn't informed everyone about the sect's intention to strike at Hundred Thousand Mountain publicly. Palace Master Zhong Jiao had secretly contacted the sect masters of these two sects and informed them about his intentions. While speaking about this, he also mentioned the heart questioning pill

refined by Yang Chen.

Both these sects were not some small sect and had existed for long, so they didn't feel anything wrong with Pure Yang Palace's ambitions. But what astounded them most was the heart questioning pill.

A pill which prevents the outer devils from invading and clearing one's conscience for Dacheng experts and would greatly increase their chances of ascension. What, how could a foundation stage youngster refine this type of pill?

Heaven Seizing Pill was also a similar pill which could assist people in passing the tribulation, but comparatively speaking, the Heaven Seizing Pill itself was quite formidable and has the ability to undergo tribulation, its power was equivalent to receiving a portion or even majority of the heavenly tribulation in place of the person receiving the heavenly tribulation.

Strictly speaking, this was relying on external support, which doesn't provide much help to the cultivation of the person that was undergoing the tribulation.

But the heart questioning pill was different, it allowed the person to keep their conscience clear and stops the invasion of external devils, thus increasing the mental fortitude of the person. Although it doesn't directly increase the spirit power cultivation of the user, if one's conscience during tribulation remains clear then as long as the person has sufficient cultivation base, it was certainly something which would increase his overall realm.

Does this kind of treasure really exist? Both of the sect masters didn't dare to believe it, but, when the light beam from the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard soared over hundred miles into the horizon and remained for a long time without dispersing, the information about this soon spread to Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky Sect.

Both these sects immediately realized that the Pure Yang Palace

was refining some unique godly weapon or perhaps some legendary pill, otherwise, such mystical circumstances wouldn't have happened.

After that, the Palace Master of Pure Yang Palace visited the two big sects again, but this time, he brought the heart questioning pill together with him. He even generously promised that if the Dacheng experts of both sects help them in the campaign, then every one of them would receive two heart questioning pills.

Naturally, no one would believe empty promises, but this time, the Palace Master also brought the real thing. Moreover, what made this deal even more irrefutable was the fact that he even allowed two Dacheng experts, one from each sect, to personally test the medicinal strength of the heart questioning pill.

No one believed that the Palace Master of Pure Yang Palace would personally poison the experts of other sects in their own territories, therefore, both sect delightedly accepted the proposal to test this pill.

Even more interesting was that the experts which both sects sent ahead were both acquaintances of Yang Chen. The Green Jade Immortal Islands was represented by elder Min Huafeng, who had taken the lead during the 'great calamity of devil cultivation', while the Clear Sky School had sent Sun Qingxue's master, elder Hua Wanting.

Under the gazes of some core elders of Green Jade Immortal Islands, elder Min Huafeng somewhat suspiciously took the heart questioning pill. Including the Palace Master of Pure Yang Palace, all the experts present on the scene were tensely watching elder Min Huafeng, fearing if she has made some mistake.

“Shanshan's dao companion refined this?”

After taking the heart questioning pill, there wasn't any great reaction, Min Huafeng faintly smiled. She didn't show any kind of censure towards Yang Chen who had refined the pill, seemingly,

she was very satisfied since Yang Chen had taken a trip together with Shi Shanshan:

“Last time, after they went on the trip together, their chemistry seemed perfect, when should we settle their matter!”

After hearing these words, the people in the surrounding seemed to be slightly disappointed, while at the same time feeling slightly relieved. Although this heart questioning pill didn't have any effect as Yang Chen had said, at least it wasn't poisonous, Min Huafeng didn't seem to be suffering from any injuries.

Just when everyone thought this affair was over, suddenly Min Huafeng loudly shouted:

“How can this be?”

After that, she didn't say anything and immediately sat down on the ground in lotus position and entered meditative state.

The people in the surroundings, looked at each other in dismay, unaware of what had happened. Only one thing was certain that Min Huafeng hadn't suffered any injuries, rather was just cultivating normally.

“What is happening?”

After Min Huafeng entered into meditation, the island master of Green Jade Immortal Islands turned towards Palace Master of Pure Yang Palace and asked.

The pitiful Palace Master didn't know what would happen after consuming the heart questioning pill. Although he already had one pill gifted to him by Yang Chen, his current cultivation wasn't sufficient, so how could he waste it? So facing the island master's question, he shook his head with a puzzled expression, indicating that he also wasn't clear.

At this moment, all the elders of Green Jade Immortal Islands became slightly resentful, this was clearly the effect of the elixir given by Pure Yang Palace to the Dacheng expert of their Green

Jade Immortal Islands to test. Pure Yang Palace themselves haven't eaten it once, but surprisingly, they still took it out? If not for elder Min Huafeng being in meditation during this whole time without any abnormality, then maybe, some angry words would have come from all these elders.

Beads of cold sweat appeared on the forehead of Palace Master, he also started blaming Yang Chen. Since he had told him about the effects of the elixir, then he should have also told him about the working of the elixir and what would happen after taking it, Yang Chen was indeed at fault. But Palace Master also couldn't help but have a few expectations within his heart, if the heart questioning pill really works as Yang Chen had said, then how would elder Min Huafeng change?

Elder Min Huafeng had now been cultivating for six months, which really frightened everyone. The Green Jade Immortal Islands sealed this particular guest residence to avoid any disturbance to elder Min Huafeng, causing a lot of sects to inquire about what had happened to result in such an arrangement.

The Palace Master could only stay there, silently waiting. If he had known that this would happen, then he would have made some preparations. Now, he could only rely on the people of Green Jade Immortal Islands to convey some information to Pure Yang Palace without any complaints.

This was a matter related to Pure Yang Palace, so obviously, it was left to Shi Shanshan, who had already been appointed as Yang Chen's dao companion.

Unfortunately, during the time Shi Shanshan made a few trips to Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen was always training in seclusion, so she couldn't meet Yang Chen, but during the few times she frequented Pure Yang Palace to communicate the message of Palace Master, it created a misunderstanding among all disciples of Pure Yang Palace that Palace Master had already given his consent to the relationship of Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan.

Countless people were secretly envious of Yang Chen, the world famous Fairy Shi, although she always had a cold expression, she was indeed a beautiful woman. High cultivation base, famous background, who knows how many virtues had Yang Chen amassed in exchange for getting in the good graces of Fairy Shi.

During these six months, the upper echelons of Pure Yang Palace and Green Jade Immortal Islands were waiting restlessly and yet expectantly. Then finally, one day, elder Min suddenly took a deep breath and lightly groaned, stopping her cultivation, she slowly opened her eyes.

The elders of Green Jade Immortal Islands were carefully guarding this area. When they saw elder Min open her eyes, they were delighted and hastily sent the news to Island Master and Palace Master. Both of them rushed over here, but elder Min seemed to not have awakened properly, she had not spoken anything yet.

A group of people were nervously monitoring elder Min's situation, they wanted to question her but were afraid to agitate her, all of them were ready to speak but kept on hesitating. If some outside saw the upper echelons of Green Jade Immortal Islands collectively knitting their brows in anxiousness, they would certainly think that the Green Jade Immortal Islands was facing some catastrophe.

“What a pity!”

Elder Min finally opened her mouth, but her first words alarmed Palace Master. Elder Min felt that just one word of regret was not enough and she shook her head again and added in:

“Extremely unfortunate!”

Palace Master immediately became depressed, from the looks it, it seems like this heart questioning pill doesn't have the effect which Yang Chen said it would have, otherwise, elder Min won't have such extreme regret.

Originally, he had thought that elder Min suddenly cultivating and persisting for six months was because of this heart questioning pill, but now, it seems that he was completely wrong. Perhaps, the hopes of Pure Yang Palace on Hundred Thousand Mountains would also be slowly quashed.

This little disciple Yang Chen had really grown arrogant these days after curing Senior black tiger's injuries and refining some elixir used by Dacheng stage expert. Obviously, Palace Master also felt that he himself was also in the wrong to have complete confidence in Yang Chen after seeing his confidence and thus had made such mistake and gratuitously made a joke of himself in Green Jade Immortal Islands, especially after he himself had come to their sect boasting about it.

While he was blaming himself, elder Min Huafeng stood up and suddenly made a bow towards Palace Master. This action of his confused Palace Master so much that he forgot to return the greeting. This was a Dacheng expert, a senior, how could she bow towards a junior? Could it be.....

“Formidable heart questioning pill!”

After the salute, elder Min sighed, feeling that it wasn't enough to express her regret, she again regretted:

“What a pity that I have taken the elixir too early!”

“Uncle master?”

The Island Master of Green Jade Immortal Islands was greatly surprised, elder Min's sentence was clearly directed towards the effects of the heart questioning pill.

“What a pity, I wasted such a good elixir.”

Elder Min sighed again and soon after, said to everyone:

“I have already broken through the mid Dacheng stage.”

Bang, even if everyone present on scene had the cultivation and

mental state of a YuanYing stage elder, upon hearing elder Min's words, they couldn't help but cry out in surprise.

Hearing elder Min's words, Palace Master was shocked to the core, unable to say anything.

Elder Min's cultivation had been stuck at the mid Dacheng stage for a long time, even the battle during the 'great calamity of devil cultivation' wasn't of any help. But unexpectedly, under the effect of just one pill, within a short time of six months, she had broken through and entered the late Dacheng stage. This was the reason for the astonishment experienced by the elders of Green Jade Immortal Islands.

A pill could allow elder Min to break through the bottleneck of mid Dacheng stage without any unique signs, this simply toppled all their knowledge.

"After taking the pill, I had unconsciously and single-mindedly concentrated on cultivation with all my attention, the spirit power of my entire body was moving around like a single thread and there were no external thoughts in my mind, so how could there be an appearance of some unusual occurrence."

Elder Min herself had taken the elixir, so naturally, she realized this in greater detail and gave a fine explanation:

"Unfortunately, I had taken the elixir too early, otherwise, if I had taken it at the late stage bottleneck or perhaps before ascension, then my strength would have increased much more compared to right now!"

This explanation finally made everyone realize why elder Min had felt so much regret after waking up. Using such a formidable elixir at the mid Dacheng stage bottleneck was indeed great pity. Palace Master suddenly thought he was going to rely on this elixir to pass the Yin Fire tribulation to enter the Dacheng stage, wasn't that even more wasteful?

Naturally, this thought only came once to Palace Master's mind, Yang Chen had said that after 30 years, he would refine another batch. So although this heart questioning pill was extremely precious to other sects, to Pure Yang Palace, it couldn't be considered as precious.

Once he thought of this, his previous thoughts about scolding Yang Chen were thrown away in some unknown corner. Currently, his mind was only thinking about ways of exploiting this heart questioning pill and negotiating its price with Green Jade Immortal Islands to get as many benefits as he could.

"Then, this time, all three Dacheng experts of my Green Jade Immortal Islands will join the campaign against Hundred Thousand Mountains."

Seeing the formidable effects of heart questioning pill, in addition to the lure of ample profits of Hundred Thousand Mountains, the Island Master of Green Jade Immortal Islands immediately nodded his head:

"As for how to coordinate and how to attack, we will have to depend on fellow daoist to make the decision."

These words clearly implied that the Island Master had given the authority to Pure Yang Palace. This was something which had never happened before, even Palace Master was only thinking that as long as Green Jade Immortal Islands supported Pure Yang Palace that would be enough, he hadn't expected that Pure Yang Palace would possess the initiative in this collaboration.

But Green Jade Immortal Islands was delighted. The heart questioning pill was formidable, even breaking through mid Dacheng stage was easy. If the Green Jade Immortal Islands obtains the remaining five pills, then not counting the three pills used by each Dacheng expert during ascension, there would still be two pills remaining, sufficient for Green Jade Immortal Islands to gain two more Dacheng experts.

If any among the three current Dacheng expert doesn't need a pill during ascension, that meant that they could gain one more Dacheng expert. So even if all three Dacheng experts of Green Jade Immortal Islands ascend, they would still be counted as a big sect.

The relationship between Shi Shanshan and Yang Chen, this pill concocting master with boundless prospects, must not be destroyed by anyone. If anyone dares to interfere with these two, they would be mortal enemies of Green Jade Immortal Islands!

Chapter 217 - Another Small Shock

After the cooperation was smoothly negotiated with Green Jade Immortal Islands and it was time for Palace Master to go to Clear Sky Sect, his chest was puffed up far more compared to before. The same conditions, one Dacheng expert get two heart questioning pills, the same problem, they would be allowed to test the effects of pill first.

Palace Master gave selective details about his experience at Green Jade Immortal Islands, the most important point was that after using heart questioning pill, elder Min broke through the bottleneck of the mid Dacheng stage and entered the late Dacheng stage within only six months. Even though elder Min had consented to this fact, Palace Master had no choice but to oblige with the wishes of upper echelons of Clear Sky Sect and allow them to test the pill.

The higher ups of Clear Sky Sect didn't have any doubt regarding Palace Master's words. In reality, they had also received the information from Green Jade Immortal Islands that confirmed that Pure Yang Palace and Green Jade Immortal Islands have formed a collaboration, which clearly illustrated that Palace Master's words were completely true.

However, even though Pure Yang Palace and Green Jade Immortal Islands had confirmed that the benefits of the heart questioning pill were great, the Clear Sky Sect certainly could not accept it so easily without testing once. At least after someone from Clear Sky Sect had personally tested the effects, then it would provide an authentic proof that the heart questioning pill's medicinal effects were genuine.

It hadn't been long since elder Hua Wanting had come out of seclusion and was guiding her outstanding disciple Sun Qingxue, moreover, as it turned out, she was the only one among the few Dacheng experts of the sect who wasn't in seclusion.

Naturally, Palace Master wouldn't want to lightly disturb the seclusion of Dacheng experts of another sect, so the burden of testing the pill fell onto Hua Wanting's head.

With the experience at Green Jade Immortal Islands, this time Palace Master had made proper arrangements. Not only had he brought one elder together with him, he had also gotten two JieDan stage disciples to act as messengers.

Before Hua Wanting took the pill, Palace Master properly consulted with Clear Sky Sect that he would return to Pure Yang Palace during the time that she was cultivating after taking the pill and would leave that elder behind at Clear Sky Sect, who would be responsible for maintaining contact.

However, even if he was sufficiently prepared, elder Hua Wanting's reaction after taking the pill was completely different from Elder Min Huafeng, which alarmed the Palace Master.

Elder Min Huafeng had immediately sat down to cultivate, but elder Hua Wanting's situation was completely different from that calm cultivation, rather, her appearance was one that was insisting on battle. Even though she didn't make any movements, everyone in the surrounding felt a dense battle intent which let them baffled.

If Yang Chen was here, then he would have realized that it was because their experiences were completely different, so naturally, their situation would also be different. Before reaching Dacheng stage, elder Hua Wanting had been battling with the Blood Phantom Vine continuously for 100 years.

This situation lasted a whole century, which resulted in the circumstances where elder Hua Wanting would have the highest concentration and remove all external thoughts during a battle. Because of this reason, her current appearance wasn't that surprising.

Because elder Hua Wanting's situation was different, Palace

Master didn't have any option other than to stay there for several more days to observe the situation before leaving. Therefore, as the pill concocting master who had refined the heart questioning pill, Yang Chen automatically became the conversation topic of both sides.

“Your sect's disciple Yang Chen has some relationships with the outstanding genius of my sect, Sun Qingxue.”

The Clear Sky Sect's sect master said in extremely casual tone:

“Sun Qingxue wants to be dao companion with your sect's Yang Chen, can Palace Master help us accomplish it?”

“This.....”

Palace Master can't help but think to himself. Last time, Yang Chen had already discussed the matter of Sun Qingxue with him. Originally, he had believed that Sun Qingxue was only blowing hot air, but now, surprisingly, the sect master of Clear Sky Sect had personally asked him, which made the situation completely different.

“To be honest, the JieDan stage disciple of Green Jade Immortal Islands, Shi Shanshan also wants to become Yang Chen's dao companion.”

After thinking about this, Palace Master didn't intend to beat around the bush and directly told his difficulty:

“So you see, this can't be done!”

“What can't be done?”

The Clear Sky Sect was a big sect so they were more arrogant, unlike Pure Yang Palace who was more humble. The sect master aggressively said:

“Sun Qingxue has a full wood spirit root, her cultivation is also comparable to Yang Chen. Wood rouses fire so their attributes are also compatible, unlike that girl Shi Shanshan who is metal

attributed, which would just restrain him. Moreover, she had been cultivating for countless years, isn't the age difference between those two too big? Furthermore, my little Xue's nature is better than that girl Shanshan, isn't it?"

Hearing the aggressive tone of Clear Sky Sect's sect master, Palace Master could only force a smile. Clear Sky Sect's sect master had spoken so confidently, which he couldn't match. Moreover, it seems that both these females have their heart set on Yang Chen at the same time, in fact, the best outcome in this situation would be that Yang Chen accepts both of them. This would prevent further troubles. But unfortunately, Yang Chen was determined to even reject this type of heavenly matched dao companions.

"It's a matter between disciples, it would be better if they resolve it themselves!"

Having no alternative, Palace Master could only delay as he had done at Green Jade Immortal Islands.

"Yeah that will be better, but Pure Yang Palace also shouldn't be biased towards one and discriminate against the other!"

The sect master of Clear Sky Sect seemed to have been convinced easily, but his last line about being biased towards someone and discriminating against the other confused Palace Master.

"Last time, Yang Chen had gone on a trip for more than one year with that girl Shanshan!"

Clear Sky Sect's sect master didn't beat around the bush and openly told:

"It is reported that this was a decision of both sect, my little Xue should also receive the same treatment, this shouldn't be a problem, right?"

"Yes, well said, that won't be a problem!"

Palace Master quickly replied, however, he scolded Yang Chen in his heart again. Little bastard, two fairy-like women, both of

whom were cultivation genius with full spirit roots, both of them want to be his dao companion.

But surprisingly, he was using all sorts of excuses and making things difficult for his Palace Master everywhere. After returning, he must have a proper chat with Yang Chen about this matter.

Yang Chen was completely unaware that he had become the target of both sects. However, they were not fighting over his heart questioning pill, rather, to make him marry into their sect. But fortunately, Yang Chen had been busy absorbing and fusing the flames after pill concocting and since he was in seclusion, the Palace Master didn't want to disturb him.

This time, elder Hua Wanting's pill testing lasted for one whole year, double the time compared to elder Min Huafeng. This caused everyone who had known elder Min's cultivation time to become anxious. But fortunately, elder Hua's breath was still stable, so no one panicked and calmly waited.

After one year, elder Hua Wanting finally finished her cultivation in a way similar to elder Min. Coincidentally, her first words after completing the cultivation were completely identical to elder Min.

“What a pity!”

After she sighed, everyone felt slightly depressed. No one had seen elder Min's cultivation previously, the only one who had seen it was Palace Master, who wasn't present. So elder Hua's words alarmed everyone.

“It really is good!”

Elder Hua Wanting didn't make everyone wait and after sighing once, she quickly explained the result of her pill testing:

“Although my cultivation increased greatly, I still couldn't breakthrough, if I had taken this pill at a bottleneck, then the results would have been even better.”

“External devil can't invade one's conscience, this heart

questioning pill really deserves its name.”

While speaking, elder Hua began to praise the effects of the heart questioning pill:

“This was refined by Yang Chen? That little friend has some karma with me, so without any doubt, my little Xue must become his dao companion.”

When the elder of Pure Yang Palace that was left behind heard that Sun Qingxue also wanted to become Yang Chen’s dao companion, he was stupefied. What kind of luck has this lucky bastard Yang Chen got? Two exceptionally gifted and gorgeous women were fighting to become his dao companion?

Regardless of what was said, this time, the Clear Sky Sect had also expressed rare sincerity in collaborating for the matter of both heart questioning pills and Hundred Thousand Mountain. Moreover, not willing to fall behind Green Jade Immortal Islands, the Clear Sky Sect also similar sent three Dacheng experts to go to battle, their other conditions were also similar to Green Jade Immortal Islands, they also gave the authority to command to Pure Yang Palace.

The only difference was that elder Hua Wanting was not included within the three Dacheng experts sent by Clear Sky Sect, she was considered to be additionally invited by Yang Chen, so her joining the campaign this time could be considered as repaying the favour she owed to Yang Chen, as well as to obtain a heart questioning pill at the same time. Merely, how the Clear Sky Sect distributed the heart questioning pills of their quota was their sect’s internal matter.

Naturally, elder Hua Wanting required for Yang Chen to personally come and invite her. Even if she owed Yang Chen a favour, doing this would be proper etiquette.

Regardless of what was said, after elder Hua and elder Min had tested the pill, all the elders of Clear Sky Sect and Green Jade

Immortal Islands were astonished by the formidable efficacy of the heart questioning pill, while at the same time, feeling more expectant.

For the time being, the people who knew about heart questioning pill were few, including the few elders and hall master of Pure Yang Palace, Clear Sky Sect's upper echelons as well as higher ups of Green Jade Immortal Islands.

However, this didn't hinder their yearning towards the heart questioning pill. Since the upper echelons of both Clear Sky Sect and Green Jade Immortal Islands had personally seen the effects of heart questioning pill, they attached even more value to it compared to everyone from Pure Yang Palace.

In any case, apart from Palace Master and that elder, the others in Pure Yang Palace didn't know the formidable effect of the heart questioning pill and since both of them had maintained their silence for the time being, everyone still had some doubts towards it.

A pill that could allow Dacheng experts to breakthrough, this was a heaven-shattering effect. After discussing the details of their cooperation with Palace Master, both these big sect immediately began to question about the details of refining this heart questioning pill.

As for the complete pill recipe and refining technique, even if Palace Master wanted to tell them, it was impossible as only Yang Chen had those details. Only, Yang Chen hadn't concealed the ingredients required in refining and generously informed Palace Master. The Palace Master also didn't hide it from their allies and similarly informed the people of these two big sects about the ingredients.

All Dacheng experts have exceptional knowledge and could identify what's in the elixir and what's not, so they could basically confirm a portion of the herbs. Among the ingredients told by

Palace Master, elder Hua and elder Min both had faintly detected the flavour of few materials. Only, how these materials were refined that they attained the effect of heart questioning pill was something they couldn't understand, it was probably due to a unique refining technique.

Because the ingredients were rare, there weren't many pills refined this time. To ensure that their campaign against Hundred Thousand Mountain succeeds, the Pure Yang Palace had taken out all the heart questioning pill to invite experts, there were no pills remaining in the sect.

However, Palace Master had generously declared to the allies that as long as they could get the ingredients, Yang Chen would absolutely refine them some pills for a price.

As for the price, that could be discussed with Yang Chen when the time comes. Maybe, at that time, Yang Chen would have become dao companion with Shi Shanshan and Sun Qingxue and maybe he would refine the pills without any charge.

Maybe Shi Shanshan and Sun Qingxue had their own different reasons to become Yang Chen's dao companions, but now, just this heart questioning pill was sufficient to make sure that these two big sects spared no efforts to facilitate that their sect's disciple was connected to Pure Yang Palace by marriage.

Even the current mortal world's number one pill concocting master Deng Yi couldn't compare to such a formidable pill concocting master. If Yang Chen's cultivation hadn't been low, then maybe he would have already taken the throne for the number one pill concocting master from Deng Yi.

Both big sects felt boundless jealousy towards Pure Yang Palace for obtaining a treasure like Yang Chen. Especially Green Jade Immortal Islands, they felt great sorrow. Previously, before Yang Chen had started cultivating, their disciple Shi Shanshan had already met with Yang Chen. Moreover, she had also gifted him a

body refining pill, how could they have missed the chance to recruit him into their sect.

Yang Chen was completely oblivious to the fact that he had gained the attention of upper echelons of these two big sects. According to his plan, after smoothly observing the flames and improving his cultivation, he ended his seclusion.

The first thing that Yang Chen did after coming out of seclusion wasn't to go and meet Palace Master, but rather, to go see his master, Gao Yue. For a long time, he hadn't seen his master and didn't know how she was doing.

Yang Chen was delighted at the fact that not only Gao Yue but his great master Wang Yong had also finally come out of seclusion.

Presently, Gao Yue was already at the peak of initial foundation stage in water attributed cultivation, just on the verge of breaking through to mid foundation stage. Her cultivation was so fast that even she herself didn't dare to believe it. With this speed, Gao Yue was already comparable to a heavenly talent who has full water attributed spirit root, this placed Gao Yue at a loss.

Equally confused was Wang Yong, in any case, he was unable to understand for what reason his disciple, who has a fire spirit root, could cultivate water attributed cultivation method so quickly.

He knew that Yang Chen had urged her, but he hadn't told them the reason and Wang Yong also hadn't asked him, since he knew that Yang Chen would never hurt Gao Yue in any way, no matter what.

Wang Yang's main target during closed-door training was to refine the qilin's horn. When Yang Chen was refining the black tiger suppressing pill, Wang Yong had already entered seclusion. From that day to now, 20 years had already passed.

It must be known that Wang Yong was at the peak of YuanYing stage, his talent in cultivation was at least a hundredfold higher

compared to Yang Chen. Within short 20 years, he had completely refined the qilin's horn to make his destined flying sword.

After his destined flying sword was completed, the only thing left was to dip and refine it in his spirit sea over several years. This was a lifetime process, so it doesn't require him to remain in seclusion.

After coming out of seclusion, Wang Yong heard everything about Yang Chen's grand plan and the matter of the heart questioning pill. After hearing everything from the Palace Master, Wang Yong also couldn't help but gasp. Since Gao Yue had accepted Yang Chen as her disciple, surprises continuously keep coming from his side.

“Did you find anything about that traitor?”

Feeling even more satisfied with Yang Chen, Wang Yong became even more anxious about his safety and the first question he asked the Palace Master was about the information on the spy.

Chapter 218 - Huge Trap

Facing Wang Yong's question, Palace Master knitted his brows before finally giving him an ambiguous reply:

“We have a suspect for the time being, but we still don't have any concrete evidence.”

Wang Yong creased his brows, clearly feeling dissatisfied. He was Palace Master's senior apprentice brother, so naturally, he could have this attitude towards Palace Master when they were alone.

Palace Master also didn't tangle much with this question. During the investigation through the countless years, the Law Enforcement Hall hadn't relaxed even a bit, but that traitor seemed to have sensed something and hadn't shown his presence. This matter of the Hundred Thousand Mountain was also another opportunity. At least with this opportunity, if the traitor knew about this, shouldn't he inform the Greatest Heaven Sect?

Next, the Palace Master introduced Yang Chen's grand plan for the Hundred Thousand Mountain in detail. While at the same time, the Palace Master also told Wang Yong about the heart questioning pill. Particularly, he was extremely envious that Yang Chen had left a heart questioning pill for Wang Yong. Although the Palace Master himself had one, Wang Yong hadn't done anything in these matters which would earn him the pill. Therefore, Palace Master couldn't help but feel envy.

While Yang Chen was in seclusion absorbing the flames, Wang Yong felt great satisfaction upon hearing about how remarkable his grand disciple was. Once the information about the heart questioning pill became public, then those doubts about the Heaven Seizing Pill would also disappear.

All of these concerns were trifling matters. What really got Wang Yong excited was Yang Chen's grand plan. Swallowing the entire Hundred Thousand Mountain wasn't something that anyone in

the Pure Yang Palace would dare to think about before Yang Chen came.

When Gao Yue heard about all these topics from Wang Yong, she felt even more delighted. The main reason why Yang Chen intended to attack the Hundred Thousand Mountain was still because of Gao Yue. Compared to others, Gao Yue understood this point most clearly. Even though, these days, Gao Yue had endured and hadn't gone to see Yang Chen, but she still paid close attention to information about him everyday.

She waited for Yang Chen to come out of seclusion with great difficulty, and as expected, Yang Chen directly went to meet Wang Yong. Wang Yong was extremely excited and showed Yang Chen the qilin horn destined flying sword Wang Yong had refined. He acted as though he was showing his own child.

It had to be said that Wang Yong was an exceptional tool refining master. The sword completely adhered to the characteristics of the qilin horn with only slight transformations to the horn, which was used as the foundation by adding some materials. The blazing flying sword seemed to give a burning sensation when held in hand.

Any enemy facing this sword would not be able to avoid the impression of being absolutely unable to escape annihilation under Wang Yong's hand. Under the crazy fire attribute, the killing intent of the ninth water attribute was completely concealed. Unexpectedly, Wang Yong hadn't wasted this attribute, and as such, he proved himself to be an expert.

In front of his great master, Yang Chen didn't hide his knowledge. Holding the qilin flying sword in both hands, he closed his eyes and used his spiritual awareness to examine it. Within the spirit sea, a magnified qilin sword quickly appeared.

“Great master, forgive the disciple for being impudent.”

After observing it for a good while Yang Chen opened his eyes

and first asked forgiveness from Wang Yong.

Both Wang Yong and Gao Yue didn't understand what Yang Chen meant, however Wang Yong indicated that there was no harm in speaking his mind.

"The sharp end is completely perfect, but there are defects on the sword on this side, particularly here, here and here."

Yang Chen pointed out three places:

"At these places, the supplemental materials haven't completely combined with the qilin horn, allowing some ninth water spirit power to leak out, which isn't good. Additionally...."

Hearing Yang Chen's words, Gao Yue's complexion turned unsightly and she immediately reprimanded him:

"Yang Chen!"

Wang Yong was Gao Yue's master, but this grand disciple, Yang Chen, was surprisingly being so impudent in front of him.

Seeing that Gao Yue's wasn't happy, Yang Chen could only force a bitter smile and closed his mouth, without saying another word.

But unlike Gao Yue, Wang Yong didn't seemed to be offended. Hearing Yang Chen's words, he held the flying sword in his hand and explored the three places where Yang Chen had mentioned using his spiritual awareness. The flying sword was his destined flying sword and was mentally linked to him, so he quickly discovered the trace of spirit power leaking out. If Yang Chen hadn't pointed the leak out, then just with his spiritual awareness, he wouldn't have been able to sense this little amount of spirit power.

At this time, Wang Yong's expression transformed, he looked at Yang Chen as if seeing some monster. That burning gaze somewhat confused Gao Yue.

"Additionally what?"

Wang Yong hastily asked. Yang Chen had said additionally before he was interrupted by Gao Yue, so clearly there was some other problem as well.

“Master!”

Gao Yue anxiously protested and complained:

“If you continue spoiling him like this, then in the future he will be even more impudent.”

“His words were correct. There were indeed some flaws in this flying sword.”

Wang Yong realized why Yang Chen asked for his forgiveness before. He handed the flying sword to Gao Yue, signaling her to carefully observe it.

Gao Yue was also a tool refining expert, although she wasn't as formidable as Wang Yong, she could still be called a rare talent. Seeing this, she doubtfully took the flying sword and began to probe it carefully with her spiritual awareness.

After Wang Yong had finished refining the sword, and when Gao Yue had first checked it, she hadn't sense any problems with it. But now, after she had focus on the particular places to find the flaws, it became much easier.

However, even then, Gao Yue had to spend a long time and was only able to discover one place where spirit power was leaking. There was nothing that could be done about her abilities, as amongst the three of them, her spiritual awareness was the weakest. Moreover, this flying sword wasn't her destined flying sword. Likewise, she didn't have the ability to channel the flying sword within her spirit sea, so discovering any flaws wasn't easy for her. If it was someone else in her place, they wouldn't have been able discover anything even if Yang Chen pointed out the flaws.

“This small leak which takes a long time to discover shouldn't be

much of a problem, right?”

Gao Yue gently said. Although she discovered that Yang Chen’s words were true, but Gao Yue didn’t think this little leak would be such a big problem.

“It’s not a big problem for the time being.”

Yang Chen smiled and shook his head:

“However, in the future, if great master continues refining and using this as a foundation, then these few regions can become weak points of this dual attributed flying sword, which might be discovered by experts. Then, this secret weapon would cease to remain secret.”

His words were comparatively polite, in case Wang Yong’s trump card was discovered by someone, that would be dangerous. Facing normal experts wouldn’t be a problem, but in case he encountered someone who could discover these flaws, then the discovery would likely result in a hidden disaster.

“What else?”

Wang Yong repeated his question again and waited for Yang Chen’s reply.

“A destined flying sword really doesn’t need such a superfluous sword hilt.”

Yang Chen smiled and pointed towards that seemingly exquisite sword hilt:

“Great master’s characteristic isn’t to hold the sword and attack, which is different from disciple. This sword hilt can affect the qilin horn’s completeness. It is like drawing legs on a snake and is completely unnecessary. Instead, removing it would be better.”

“In the last few years, I have sensed that this flying sword seems to be missing something.”

After saying this, Wang Yong suddenly laughed as if he had

gained enlightenment:

“But now, I realize that this was because of this sword hilt. Indeed, it is completely unnecessary.”

Gao Yue didn't say anything anymore, this disciple Yang Chen seemed more and more mysterious in her eyes. When she heard that Yang Chen had refined a super elixir like the heart questioning pill, she wasn't surprised. From the beginning, Yang Chen had appeared to her as an extremely formidable pill concocting master. But how could he be so proficient in refining tools?

Not only Gao Yue, even Wang Yong was also completely stunned. Although his shock was deeper than Gao Yue's, being a peak YuanYing stage expert, none of the surprise showed on his face like it did on Gao Yue's expression.

But still, Wang Yong gasped in admiration in his heart. It seems like this grand disciple of his had many deeply concealed secrets. After refining something like the heart questioning pill, Yang Chen even gave him such a big surprise.

Regardless of whatever was said, regardless of whatever kind of monster Yang Chen was, he was still Wang Yong's own grand disciple and Gao Yue's disciple. The more outstanding he was, the more glory he would bring for Wang Yong.

All the things Yang Chen mentioned were small worries, for the time being, there wasn't anyone in the mortal world who could realize these flaws, so mending these flaws later wouldn't create problems. Currently, the main priority should be the Hundred Thousand Mountains.

Compared to anyone else, Wang Yong had a clearer understanding of the benefits his sect would obtain if they could succeed in capturing and holding the Hundred Thousand Mountains with the help of a few other sects. When that time came, Pure Yang Palace's strength would increase exponentially.

Such a big matter should be treated as the most important and urgent matter.

Naturally, the heart questioning pill was also delivered to Wang Yong. Yang Chen didn't need to hide anything from his great master:

“Great master, quickly consume this heart questioning pill, your strength will increase greatly so that when the time comes for the main battle, you will be considered as another powerhouse. Furthermore, in the future, I will refine another batch of these pills, so don't feel anxious about using it now.”

When Wang Yong had first told Gao Yue about this heart questioning pill, she had understood that it was a peerless elixir, but hadn't expected that Yang Chen would so lightly give one to Wang Yong. She was thinking of saying something, but suddenly she remembered the countless peeled fruits in her qiankun pouch for everyday consumption. She seemed to have realized something and didn't say anything.

The planning for capturing the Hundred Thousand Mountain had already been going on for five years. All the sects involved were properly coordinating with each other and were only waiting for the Pure Yang Palace to lead the attack. But before that, Yang Chen still had to make a trip to personally invite the people he knew.

Senior black tiger of the Beast Taming Sect, Elder Hua Wanting of the Clear Sky Sect — both of them had to be personally invited by Yang Chen. This was necessary etiquette expected from a younger generation. While at the same time, Yang Chen's trip was also an opportunity to capture the traitor hidden in the sect.

In fact, the whole matter of the Hundred Thousand Mountain was just a huge trap. When Yang Chen revealed his plans in front of all hall masters and elders, he had already set the bait. After that, he immediately communicated with the Palace Master and

hall master Meng Xian in secret.

Speaking frankly, Yang Chen already suspected someone in the upper echelons of his sect was the spy for the Greatest Heaven Sect. As for whom he suspected, hall master Liang Shaoming of Luminous Moon Hall bore suspicion, which even both Palace Master and Meng Xian understood. However, when he mentioned his suspicion, it was too specific and both the Palace Master and Meng Xian could only force a smile.

Pure Yang Palace certainly couldn't just punish a hall master with just mere suspicion without any proof. The benefits of the Hundred Thousand Mountain campaign were indeed gigantic. Moreover, if they succeeded, then not only the Pure Yang Palace, but even the supporting sects like the Beast Taming Sect, the Clear Sky Sect and the Green Jade Immortal Islands would also benefit greatly.

The Beast Taming Sect could still be tolerated, no matter how much it grew, they wouldn't be able to stand on equal footing with the Greatest Heaven Sect even with the conquest of the Hundred Thousand Mountains. Clear Sky Sect and Green Jade Immortal Islands were different. If they succeeded, then they would definitely be placed above the Greatest Heaven Sect. Moreover, the benefit based alliance of these two big sects would certainly cause a big headache for the Greatest Heaven Sect.

Previously, there was no important information which might cause the traitor to move, but this time, the influence and consequences of this affair were too great. If nothing happened, then that would clearly explain that the traitor was not among the upper echelons of the Pure Yang Palace.

Moreover, if the Greatest Heaven Sect wasn't stupid, then they wouldn't do anything which would set themselves against the alliance of the Clear Sky Sect, the Green Jade Immortal Islands, the Beast Taming Sect and the Pure Yang Palace. The Hundred Thousand Mountains weren't like Desolate Valley which was

already under someone's influence. This region was located on the boundary of dao, devil and demon — three powers. If it was captured by a dao sect, then certainly that would be good news. Someone trying to destroy them from inside would be considered a traitor to all dao sects.

However, the Greatest Heaven Sect wouldn't miss this opportunity. To regain their lost influence, there was only one way, and that was to attack Yang Chen. When Yang Chen was in seclusion, the Greatest Heaven Sect couldn't do anything, but since he had stepped out, that precisely was the chance they were waiting for.

Yang Chen had already committed to the higher ups of the Pure Yang Palace that as long as the ingredients were available, he would again refine a batch of heart questioning pill after 30 years. As long as they could obtain the heart questioning pill and its recipe, then even if they lost the benefits of the Hundred Thousand Mountains, the Greatest Heaven Sect with more experts would still be able to stand up as equals to those two sects.

Presently, Yang Chen's cultivation base was only at the foundation stage, but he still could kill a YuanYing stage expert. Even though his formidable magic weapon had played a big role in his victory, he had already become very difficult to deal with. If they waited for his cultivation to increase again and reach the JieDan stage before attacking, then it would become even more difficult to get rid of him. After all, with the increase in the master's cultivation, the strength of their magic weapons also increased. This fact was common sense.

Therefore, they needed to deal with Yang Chen as soon as possible — the sooner the better. Even if they couldn't capture him alive, killing him was also another way. In any case, the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect never thought Yang Chen as any good. It would be better to kill him. At least in the future, the Pure Yang Palace wouldn't have the chance to rise to power.

Yang Chen himself was the bait and only needed to wait to see whether the people of Greatest Heaven Sect bit or didn't bite. Naturally, all this was kept secret from Gao Yue as Yang Chen didn't want her to worry about him.

As for Wang Yong, he also didn't have any clear idea in the beginning, but later, the Palace Master found a good opportunity and told him secretly. Only then did Wang Yong know that Yang Chen was taking such a risk. Later, Wang Yong secretly met with Yang Chen but didn't inform Gao Yue.

"When you go, I am coming with you."

Wang Yong didn't have any intention of debating his intentions with Yang Chen and directly gave his decision:

"Don't try to make excuses, I know you have things like a Medicine Garden, so no one will know I am going with you."

Yang Chen didn't try to refuse Wang Yong's decision. His master's strength was a little weak, but the great master was at the peak the YuanYing stage. Together with his destined flying sword, even if he encountered a Dacheng expert, he had the strength to hold his own. So obviously, Yang Chen wouldn't reject the assistance of his great master and nodded his head.

Naturally, another major character, the old tree demon Gui Shanyou, was also accompanying him. Until now, only a part of his body had appeared in front of everyone. Apart from Gao Yue and Yang Chen, no one knew where his main body was. When Yang Chen went out this time, Gui Shanyou's main body also moved into domed palace hall. The strength of his main body was more formidable compared to the other portions. He himself could hold his own against two or three ordinary Dacheng experts.

Wang Yong again disappeared before the eyes of everyone under the excuse of entering seclusion for a brief period. Everyone thought he had gone to cultivate, but hadn't anticipated that he was hidden in Yang Chen's domed palace hall and was

accompanying Yang Chen on his trip.

Yang Chen going out of the mountain meant that huge bait had been set. Now they only had to wait for the response of the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Hundred Thousand Mountains.

Chapter 219 - Main Culprit Hasn't Appeared

Naturally, at this moment, Yang Chen a foundation stage disciple that was going to travel, but if he had to go alone, then that would really be excessively careless. Therefore, two people were appointed to accompany Yang Chen. One was She Kui, and the other was Xie Sha.

The people of Eccentric Hall had pretty good relation with Yang Chen, and everyone in the Pure Yang Palace understood their relationship. Therefore, after assigning two YuanYing experts to follow after him, it seemed like the Pure Yang Palace was serious about protecting the heavenly talent who had the pill recipe of the heart questioning pill.

Old tree demon's main body didn't enter the domed palace hall from Yang Chen's room. Rather it entered after Yang Chen left the Pure Yang Palace mountain. He moved quickly and properly observed everything.

What surprised Yang Chen was that even when his gaze swept over this area and he probed it with his spiritual awareness thread, he still didn't sense anything.

When Gui Shanyou entered the domed palace hall, Wang Yong who was hidden inside, didn't sense anything strange. Such a huge affair, in Yang Chen's view, was comparable to danger. Having Gui Shanyou with him, made him feel much more secure.

Yang Chen didn't use his flying shuttle and instead just took out an ordinary flying sword and began to ride on it towards the Clear Sky Sect.

The Palace Master had already told Yang Chen about Sun Qingxue. Having no option, Yang Chen could only find an opportunity and have a good discussion with her.

On the journey from the sect to the exit on the mountain, they

flew on their flying swords, allowing many people to see them. Yang Chen didn't care in the least, as he had wanted the people to see him. If he hadn't wanted to be seen, then why would he fly so openly?

Travel time from there to the Clear Sky Sect would take around one month if they flew slowly. Yang Chen didn't care about the time and calmly flew at normal speed.

When more than ten days had passed, nothing out of ordinary had happened. Yang Chen wasn't worried, as he knew that the Greatest Heaven Sect had endured patiently for several hundred years to lay down their spell formation in the Desolate Valley. Perhaps the Greatest Heaven Sect was only confirming something during those ten days.

When they neared the Clear Sky Sect, Yang Chen didn't wait for the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect to come out. Instead, he had expected the experts of the Hundred Thousand Mountains. Once the enemies showed themselves, Yang Chen immediately knew that they belong to the Hundred Thousand Mountains. Since they had a devil cultivator and also a demon cultivator in their ranks, they certainly couldn't belong to the Greatest Heaven Sect.

Speaking of experts, they had only sent two YuanYing experts and three JieDan experts. It could be assumed that since their YuanYing expert went missing last time, without any warning, they had increased the number of YuanYing experts this time just to be safe.

They also couldn't do anything about it. Yang Chen also had two YuanYing experts, She Kui and Xie Sha, on his side, so unless the enemy also had two more YuanYing experts, they simply couldn't resist him. The leftover three JieDan experts were probably sent to assist the two YuanYing experts and capture Yang Chen.

Last time, that person had disappeared at the MeiQing Mountain without any news, perhaps the people of the Hundred Thousand

Mountain would also have searched for him for long time. They certainly must have felt that he hadn't concealed his movement properly and disturbed the experts of the Pure Yang Palace and had thus been killed. This time, they seemed to have learned the lesson and kept following Yang Chen until he was far away from the Pure Yang Palace. Moreover, only when they didn't see anyone assisting Yang Chen and the others on his journey did they decide to act.

“Seize him!”

The expert who had appeared this time, unlike their last expert, didn't talk much. He immediately started moving as soon as he appeared, not leaving Yang Chen and others with him any time to prepare.

Unfortunately, in front of old tree demon, these people couldn't hide themselves and didn't know that they had been discovered several days ago.

At the instant the enemy attacked, She Kui and Xie Sha, who had been enduring for long, immediately rushed towards them. Under Yang Chen's directions, She Kui and Xie Sha had been refining their destined flying swords during the last twenty years, and they had also obtained little success. During these past ten days, they had been enduring, just restraining their strength, worried that they might not get the chance to show their treasures, so the enemy attacking was exactly what they wanted.

The enemy had been preparing for a long time. One YuanYing expert together with one Jiedan expert against Xie Kui, and the other YuanYing expert and another JieDan expert to deal with Xie Sha. The last JieDan expert rushed towards Yang Chen.

A dazzling huge net, covering a perimeter of several tens of meters dropped on Yang Chen's head. But the enemy using this huge net didn't have any killing intent and only wanted to capture Yang Chen. With the dropping of this net, a heaven defying pressure pushed towards Yang Chen.

This kind of pressure didn't worry or bother Yang Chen, and the people of the Hundred Thousand Mountain weren't the ones he was waiting for. However, since they had come to seek him on their own, Yang Chen also wouldn't be polite.

The huge net knocked off against a tangled tree, and then suspended on top of it. In the next instant, this huge net returned back with even more frightening speed compared to when it had dropped down. The master of this huge net was completely stupefied and didn't know what had happened and was covered by the huge net.

Yang Chen hadn't wanted to tangle with the people of the Hundred Thousand Mountain. He didn't want to alert other enemies and had no option but to ask old tree demon to make his move and quickly settle this.

Wang Yong also wasn't willing to remain idle and couldn't wait to use the newly refined qilin flying sword. The YuanYing expert battling with Xie Sha was afraid of that his spirit power attack might injure Yang Chen and was somewhat restrained from the beginning. Suddenly, a red light flickered and with one thought from that YuanYing expert, a piece of armour appeared in front of him stopping the red light.

Chiii

With a light sound, the red light directly pierced through that piece of armour and stabbed the opponent's chest. Soon, the red light reappeared from the enemy's back.

With a blood curdling scream, that YuanYing expert fighting Xie Sha fell from the sky. Seeing this, the JieDan stage demon beast was astonished and was about to flee. When Xie Sha coldly snorted and released the pressure of a higher grade demon beast, it caused the entire body of that demon beast to become weak. He didn't dare make any movements and curled up on the ground without moving.

The grandeur of the red light hadn't waned and rushed towards the two experts battling She Kui. The YuanYing stage cultivator fighting She Kui was a demon cultivator, seeing the red light, he didn't show anxiousness. His body trembled once and released a black smoke which instantly turned into black fog, which covered his entire body.

When this black smoke touched the body of the assisting JieDan cultivator, a hissing sound could immediately be heard and his clothes instantly turned into rags. Clearly, this black smoke had corrosive properties. She Kui loudly laughed, his body flickered once and entered the black fog without any hesitation.

Wang Yong's qilin sword rushed through the sky and pounced on the other JieDan expert.

“Puchi”

Without giving him any time to respond, it directly stabbed through his body.

In an instant, among the five opponents, two had already died and two others had been subdued. The only one left was the devil cultivator concealed in the black fog who was stubbornly resisting.

However, She Kui didn't make everyone wait for long and within five breaths' time, a blood curdling scream transmitted from the black fog. Soon, the black fog was dispersed by a strong wind. She Kui's snake tooth daggers had pierced through his opponent's shoulders, and the devil cultivator's body was hanging on those daggers and was carried out by She Kui.

With the assistance of old tree demon Gui Shanyou, no one within the surrounding hundred miles would discover what had happened here. Three people were left alive which was sufficient to obtain the information of the Hundred Thousand Mountains' current situation.

That demon beast who had been scared by Xie Sha, was

trembling with fear under the pressure of She Kui and Xie Sha. Before these two YuanYing experts, he was curled up on the ground, answering every question asked without daring to hide even the slightest bit of information. Sometimes the workings of the demon beasts' world was much simpler than human world.

Just as Yang Chen had expected, the secret organization in the Hundred Thousand Mountains was still thinking of capturing Yang Chen and was completely engrossed in their wishful thinking. They didn't have the slightest idea about the imminent danger heading their way.

That was kind of expected since, although the Pure Yang Palace had been making arrangements for five years, they had been extremely careful. Other than the upper echelons, no one had any idea about this. Similarly, in other sects also had limited this information to the higher ups without any leaks. The supporting sects also realized that this was a rare opportunity to control the Hundred Thousand Mountains from behind the scenes and didn't want to destroy their chances recklessly.

Even the person whom Yang Chen suspected to be the traitor didn't have any collusion with the Hundred Thousand Mountains. So Yang Chen's information also hadn't been leaked.

Yang Chen questioned him in detail, although it took a long time, it allowed the Pure Yang Palace to have a clearer understanding of the workings of the Hundred Thousand Mountains. However, the knowledge he obtained would still not be enough. It was always better to be prepared.

That person who was entrapped within the huge net was a rogue cultivator and had been staying at the Hundred Thousand Mountains for many years, so he knew how to take advantage of the situation. After he saw Wang Yong killing two people with his sword, he didn't have any idea of resisting and sincerely revealed everything he knew.

Although these two JieDan cultivators couldn't tell much about secret information like the insider details of the Hundred Thousand Mountains, the back-stage supporters, the relations of among crews and their strength, they did inform Yang Chen about the circumstances of dao, devil and demon cultivators intermingling in the Hundred Thousand Mountains. This information could be considered as important, since the Pure Yang Palace would have to supervise them one day.

As for that demon cultivator, he had lost consciousness due to severe injuries. After some thinking, Yang Chen handed him over to Wang Yong and old tree demon to torment him in any way and obtain the information from him while also scooping out some precious treasures.

The qiankun pouches of the two dead people had already been swept up by She Kui and Xie She. These two eccentrics had learned the importance of these resources, and had therefore already begun to collect treasures. Naturally, they also had their portion among the things sold within Shangguan Feng's shop, so presently these two could also be considered as wealthy.

The old tree demon calmly threw out some small trees covered all traces of the battle, even the spirit power fluctuations had also been removed.

As for these two JieDan stage cultivators, Yang Chen had thrown them into the domed palace hall after sealing their senses. Since they had cooperated, Yang Chen didn't want to make things difficult for them. After conquering the Hundred Thousand Mountain, he would require some people like these.

The rest of the journey passed without any incident on their way to the Clear Sky Sect. There were no signs of anyone ambushing them. To give face to the Clear Sky Sect, Yang Chen also walked on foot and requested to see the Clear Sky Sect's elder Hua Wanting. Soon after requesting, Sun Qingxue's bouncing figure appeared in front of everyone.

Since She Kui and Xie Sha were also present, Sun Qingxue didn't show any intimacy with Yang Chen and saluted both the eccentrics following the proper etiquette. She then led all three of them to see elder Hua. Although she didn't say anything, Yang Chen could see the happiness in Sun Qingxue's expression.

“This time, this junior has come to request senior's assistance.”

In front of elder Hua Wanting, Yang Chen again showed proper manners.

The Palace Master had already clarified about the matter so elder Hua Wanting knew about it clearly. However, Yang Chen had to make this trip to give face to Clear Sky Sect and elder Hua Wanting.

He also delivered the heart questioning pill which he had prepared long ago to elder Hua. Even though, she was a Dacheng expert, but seeing the heart questioning pill, expressions of surprise appeared on her face.

Originally, she had believed that after taking one pill, she wouldn't have the chance to take another. She had never expected that other than using the favour she owed, Yang Chen would surprisingly gift her another pill. Since she had personally experienced the effects of heart questioning pill, she couldn't help but be moved.

“Good, I agree.”

Elder Hua finally promised:

“Notify me when to attack.”

“Many thanks senior!”

Yang Chen loudly thanked her.

“No need to thank me, I had already promised long ago to help you once.”

Hua Wanting didn't accept his gratitude and calmly said. After

taking a look at Yang Chen once, suddenly a faint smile appeared on her face:

“Yang Chen, you are compatible with my little Xue, your attributes are also suitable for each other, you should become her dao companion. It would be much better than becoming the dao companion of that girl Shi Shanshan!”

Yang Chen hadn't expected that with her status, elder Hua would say such a thing, causing him to choke on air and cough, putting him at a loss. Elder Hua also wasn't forceful and continued with a smile:

“It's a matter between you juniors, I cannot interfere. We elders forcing you is also not appropriate, I understand that sometimes forcing isn't the best way. I only want to let you know that you don't have to be afraid of the pressure from Green Jade Immortal Islands. You will receive support from little Xue's side but you also cannot be biased.”

“Yes, senior!”

Yang Chen absolutely hadn't expected that a Dacheng expert surprisingly would say this to him. At this moment, he also didn't know what to say. Even though he had been a Great Principal Golden Immortal, but didn't have the experience regarding such matter, so he simply agreed.

“Little Xue, you see off Yang Chen!”

Elder Hua instructed Sun Qingxue who was waiting upon them. A smile bloomed on her face, and she led Yang Chen out of the guest hall of Elder Hua.

From beginning to end, Yang Chen had only invited Elder Hua once, but hadn't talked about which matter. Sun Qingxue clearly didn't know about it, and elder Hua also hadn't said anything, so this could be regarded as a little secret between both of them.

Sun Qingxue happily gave a tour of the Clear Sky Sect to Yang

Chen. This time, her behaviour was completely different from the last time when she had met Yang Chen. She was confident, beautiful, brimming with enthusiasm, and fully reflected the title of a heavenly talent in the cultivation world. Furthermore, within the sect, no one dared to bully her anymore.

This Sun Qingxue was identical to the Snow Dance Fairy in Yang Chen's memories. Yang Chen felt extremely gratified in his heart while also distressing over the matter of Sun Qingxue and Shi Shanshan in his mind, but he couldn't find any solution over how to resolve it.

Yang Chen didn't spend a long time at the Clear Sky Sect and immediately hurried to the Beast Taming Sect to meet Senior black tiger. Although Sun Qingxue was reluctant to part with him, she could only follow Yang Chen until his figure disappeared, gazing at him with a broken hearted expression.

During the journey to the Beast Taming Sect, Yang Chen suddenly received some information from old tree demon. On the way to Green Jade Immortal Islands, the Palace Master had suffered an accident.

Chapter 220 - Traitor Finally Shows His True Nature

Palace Master together with another elder had been enroute to pay a visit to the Green Jade Immortal Islands when they were attacked by some experts with unknown identities.

Five YuanYing and one Dacheng expert had attacked them. According to reason, this kind of formidable force was sufficient to kill both the Palace Master and the accompanying elder. But no one had expected that the result would be completely different.

In fact, only Gui Shanyou hadn't known the identity of these people. Palace Master and the accompanying elder, both of them, had information about these people. Apart from that Dacheng expert, all the YuanYing experts were quite famous. Among them, four were famous rogue cultivators who had been missing for the past few years.

The most shocking thing was that the last YuanYing expert was surprisingly Pure Yang Palace's elder Lin Yunfeng. When Palace Master discovered this, he was so shocked that he couldn't say anything.

Originally, this ambush would indeed have succeeded, but what destroyed their plan was the appearance of the old tree demon Gui Shanyou. No one had expected that Gui Shanyou would be together with Palace Master.

Only Yang Chen knew that the Gui Shanyou over there was only a clone of the old tree demon, his main body was still in Yang Chen's domed palace hall. However, even though it was just a clone, it was also a formidable Dacheng expert who had suppressed the Yin Fire tribulation, so he couldn't help but feel contempt for these people.

Yang Chen had already discussed this plan with the Palace Master

long ago. Moreover, Yang Chen having asked the old tree demon to enter his domed palace hall outside Pure Yang Palace was precisely the illusion they wanted to present to others showing that the old tree demon was travelling together with Yang Chen. Under this misconception, no one had expected his clone to appear.

Inside the Pure Yang Palace, only Yang Chen, Gao Yue, She Kui and Xie Sha knew about old tree demon's clone. She Kui and Xie Sha hadn't said anything, and Yang Chen and Gao Yue also didn't reveal anything. Lin Yunfeng and his henchmen only saw the old tree demon leaving with Yang Chen but hadn't imagined the clone of old tree demon would also be accompanying the Palace Master.

During the great calamity of devil cultivation, following Yang Chen's suggestion, Gui Shanyou hadn't shown his complete strength and tried to gain many favours by saving people. But this didn't mean that the cultivation of the clone of old tree demon could be underestimated by others.

Only Yang Chen knew that at that time, if old tree demon's clone had battled with full strength, then no other people would be needed to settle that matter. Even if Lin Chenghe, who had died because of backlash from devil cultivation, and the other two Dacheng experts whom he had absorbed had joined together, then even they would have found it difficult to deal with old tree demon.

Old tree demon had forcibly suppressed the Yin Fire tribulation several times, so the profound strength he had accumulated even made Yang Chen, a Great Principal Golden Immortal, speechless.

Moreover, the old tree demon's clone had another formidable characteristic which others didn't have. It wasn't afraid of dying. If the clone was dead, then the main body would only lose several hundred year's worth of cultivation, so there wouldn't be any severe damage to the main body. Therefore, when needed, the old tree demon won't be miserly with his clone and could control it to detonate anytime.

The formidable power released by the the self detonation of a Dacheng expert was completely unfathomable. With the old tree demon's clone fighting without caring for his life, even the Dacheng expert who had tried to make a sneak attack earlier, also was suppressed and had ran away after getting seriously injured.

In fact, old tree demon knew about each and every movement of most people of Pure Yang Palace like the back of his hand. After the old tree demon had passed the Yin Fire tribulation, countless cassia saplings were born on the MeiQing Mountain. Everyone had believed that they were born because old tree demon had ascended his tribulation, but they didn't know that every one of these cassia trees was a part of his main body.

The root system of these countless trees was merged together with the roots system of the old tree demon's main body, although they weren't his clones, any activity in the surroundings didn't escape old tree demon's notice. Old tree demon clearly knew about all the major activities within the MeiQing Mountain.

When Yang Chen had made this plan of catching the traitor with Palace Master, old tree demon was a major character. As long as anyone was inside the MeiQing Mountains, the old tree demon could find out what they are doing.

During the several years, when Yang Chen was concocting pills and had been cultivating in seclusion, the old tree demon had screened each and everyone in the Pure Yang Palace to check for any abnormality. What made Yang Chen happy was that apart from Luminous Moon Hall's hall master Liang Shaoming and his master Lin Yunfeng together with few other disciples of Luminous Moon Hall, the behaviour of others was completely normal without any abnormality.

If it had been just for a day or two, then that wouldn't have proved anything, but this was the result of countless years of surveillance. Moreover, among the upper echelons, the behaviour of Liang Shaoming and Lin Yunfeng was the strangest. 。 Yang

Chen knew, old tree demon also knew, it doesn't mean that the Palace Master also knew. Even if Palace Master would have heard this from Yang Chen and old tree demon, then also he wouldn't have completely believed it. After all, the feud between Yang Chen and Liang Shaoming was public knowledge within the whole Pure Yang Palace, so Yang Chen exposing this wasn't suitable. The best way was to allow them to discover it themselves.

Moreover, the Palace Master going on a trip this time was also the perfect opportunity. In fact, in the past few years, every time the Palace Master went out, he would be accompanied by old tree demon to guard against the unexpected. However, this was a secret which no one knew, Yang Chen had the Medicine Garden so Palace Master who was the sect leader, why won't he have anything like this?

Yang Chen was very important, but his cultivation was low, making it easy to deal with him. But this also meant that everyone's attention would be concentrated on him, so on the contrary he wouldn't be the best target to attack. While the Palace Master, who was a proud YuanYing stage expert, usually went out on his own and was rarely accompanied by elders, so making him an easy target.

But if the Palace Master met with an accident, that would be a huge affair. If Greatest Heaven Sect wanted to delay Pure Yang Palace's campaign on Hundred Thousand Mountain, then, rather than colluding with the Hundred Thousand Mountains, it would be better to use the internal strife within the Pure Yang Palace. Moreover, if the Palace Master met with an accident, then it would create large confusion which would delay the matter of Hundred Thousand Mountains for long time.

Furthermore, if the Palace Master met with an accident then the Pure Yang Palace would be like a dragon without its head. Then Lin Yunfeng would also have the opportunity as an elder to become the new Palace Master. With the support of Luminous

Moon Hall's hall master Liang Shaoming and external support from Greatest Heaven Sect, his chances to become the Palace Master would increase greatly.

If Lin Yunfeng became the Palace Master then all the previous plans which Pure Yang Palace had made with Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky Sect would be thrown out of the window. Likewise, with Lin Yunfeng as incharge, it would make inclusion of the Greatest Heaven Sect quite easy.

Perhaps because of this fact, Lin Yunfeng had attacked impatiently. Perhaps he had completely assured or perhaps because he thought that if he also helped them, then they would have higher chance of victory. Lin Yunfeng had also come personally to see Palace Master die.

Facing everyone's attack, Palace Master still couldn't dare to believe that it was surprisingly his own junior apprentice brother, Lin Yunfeng, that would collude with Greatest Heaven Sect to kill him. All the other rogue cultivators were certainly deployed by Greatest Heaven Sect secretly, including that mysterious Dacheng expert. All of them were Greatest Heaven Sect's hidden strength.

Old tree demon's formidable battle prowess left Palace Master gobsmacked. The old tree demon staked his life in fighting with that Dacheng expert and didn't hold back. He attacked without caring for his life. A Dacheng stage expert's pressure erupted out from his body like a rainbow, and within a short time, the opponent coughed up blood and then unleashed a forbidden escape technique at the cost of his cultivation base and disappeared without any trace.

The remaining five YuanYing experts, including Lin Yunfeng, couldn't match the joint attack by the old tree demon, Palace Master and that elder, and in a moment, only three corpses together and a seriously injured Lin Yunfeng were left behind. The last YuanYing expert also coughed up blood and escaped using a forbidden technique.

But the Palace Master was also heavily injured after being secretly attacked by that Dacheng expert at the beginning of the ambush. The other elder was also injured but compared to the Palace Master who had been the target of everyone's attack, his injuries weren't worth mentioning.

“Junior brother Lin!”

Palace Master still wasn't willing to believe that it was surprisingly his own junior brother, Lin Yunfeng, that had personally attacked him. Palace Master popped a healing elixir and before it could take effect, he directly arrived in front of injured Lin Yunfeng and angrily asked:

“What benefits had the Greatest Heaven Sect given you that you had turned traitor? What had they given to you that even the position of an elder wasn't enough?”

“Greatest.....Heaven Sect?”

Covering the injury on his stomach, the extremely weak Lin Yunfeng looked at Palace Master feeling ashamed of himself. But when he heard Palace Master's question, he couldn't help but reveal his surprise:

“I.....hadn't.....colluded.....with.....Greatest Heaven Sect?”

“You still aren't willing to admit?”

Palace Master was already shaking due to anger, blood continuously flowed from the wound caused by the magic weapon of that Dacheng expert, a bitter and hateful expression filled his face, all his organs were almost a mess:

“If you hadn't colluded with Greatest Heaven Sect then what will explain the secret spell formation on the sect mountain? How would you explain the leaking of xun qi pill given to new disciples? How would you explain the words of Cheng Wencai who had been sent here to retrieve these things?”

“Senior brother!”

Hearing the questions of Palace Master, Lin Yunfeng immediately coughed up a mouthful of blood and a painful expression appeared on his face.

The elder standing on the side couldn't bear to see this and immediately gave him a healing elixir. After all they belonged to the same sect and had known each other for a long time. He didn't have the heart to see Lin Yunfeng suffer.

However, it was clear that this elixir would only lessen his pain a little bit. His injuries were extremely serious. Other than some legendary herbs, which could get him to rise from deathbed, nothing else would work and he would certainly die.

“I.....I.....only.....wanted....to become....sect leader!”

Lin Yunfeng explained in a stammering voice:

“I.....haven't.....colluded.....with.....Greatest Heaven Sect!”

“You really haven't?”

Palace Master also began to have doubts, Lin Yunfeng was on his deathbed and words of a man on his deathbed always came from heart. There isn't a great probability that he was lying, could it be that he really hadn't colluded with Greatest Heaven Sect?

“It.....must be.....Liang.....Shaoming.....that traitor!”

Lin Yunfeng seemed to have thought of something and said with his face full of shame and pain:

“He.....incited me, saying.....Greatest..... Heaven Sect.....would provide support!”

After hearing this explanation, the Palace Master finally understood everything. Everyone knew that Lin Yunfeng hadn't accepted the current Palace Master. Furthermore, with the benefits of Hundred Thousand Mountains in front of him, Lin Yunfeng was tempted. If he became Palace Master and could

conquer the Hundred Thousand Mountains then his name would certainly be written in most glorious words in the history of Pure Yang Palace.

He had some ambitions, combined together with Liang Shaoming's instigation and a guarantee from him that the Greatest Heaven Sect would definitely support him. He believed that as long as he could deal with the current Palace Master, he would certainly obtain the position of Palace Master and would bring unprecedented glory to Pure Yang Palace, only then he decided to act.

However, from the beginning, he only wanted to become the sect leader and also the sect leader who had brought great glory to the sect, he didn't have any intention of betraying the sect.

But Liang Shaoming was definitely suspicious. He even had secret dealing with Greatest Heaven Sect. Moreover, he also supported the Greatest Heaven Sect on all matters. Furthermore, this time, the involvement of a Dacheng expert on the attack on Palace Master, it would only be a wonder if he didn't have any relation with the traitor.

Otherwise, without sufficient benefits, who would dispatch a Dacheng expert for someone whom they had no relation to? When the Pure Yang Palace had invited the few Dacheng experts to join the campaign, not only did they have to use their personal favours, they also had to give the heart questioning pill as compensation. Liang Shaoming was a trifling JieDan stage expert, what kind of favours could he have done for Dacheng experts. Neither could he provide anything useful for them, but still, the Greatest Heaven Sect had sent a Dacheng expert on his word. The only explanation of this would be that he had already sold out the Pure Yang Palace completely.

At the apt timing, the old tree demon also made the report of unusual behaviour of Liang Shaoming and few other disciples of Luminous Moon Hall to the Palace Master. Hearing all this, Palace

Master became certain that Liang Shaoming was definitely that traitor.

“What didn’t my sect provide him, why did he become a traitor?”

The Palace Master couldn’t restrain his anger and loudly shouted.

As for Lin Yunfeng, he had lost a lot of blood and his injuries were also quite severe, he couldn’t support himself to stand now and squeezed out his final words with great difficulty:

“Senior brother, I.....haven’t colluded.....with....Greatest.....Heaven Sect!”

After saying this, his head crooked and he died.

“Return to the mountain!”

After this scandal, naturally it wouldn’t be good to go to the Green Jade Immortal Islands. Palace Master loudly instructed and all of them, and they returned back. With all the information, Liang Shaoming certainly couldn’t be allowed to flee.

Gui Shanyou’s clone had some secret link with his main body, whatever the clone knew about, the main body would immediately become aware of it. Yang Chen and Wang Yong also heard about everything that had happened from old tree demon.

Apart from several elders, there was also Meng Xian at the sect. He had been keeping a close watch on Liang Shaoming, this time, Liang Shaoming couldn’t escape.

Thinking that he could get rid of Liang Shaoming now, Yang Chen’s also began to get excited. Liang Shaoming, this person was the main culprit of his master’s death in his previous life. If he hadn’t betrayed the sect, then his master wouldn’t have had to die. But now, surprisingly, he was already within a deep mess. Yang Chen wanted to immediately return to Pure Yang Palace and personally deal with Liang Shaoming.

However, his grand plan was also important, so Yang Chen had to go to invite Senior black tiger first. He used the clone of old tree demon over there to inform that Palace Master to leave Liang Shaoming alive, so that he would have plenty of opportunity in the future to make Liang Shaoming ask for death but couldn't obtain it.

Chapter 221 - Perhaps This Is Our Chance

He didn't need to waste too much time to visit Senior black tiger. Since he was certain that Liang Shaoming was up to some mischief, Yang Chen also didn't hide his strength and immediately took out the flying shuttle and quickly rushed to Beast Taming Sect.

Palace Master had already discussed this matter with the higher ups of Beast Taming Sect, so meeting with Senior black tiger quickly wasn't a problem. After delivering the heart questioning pill he had prepared for senior black tiger, Yang Chen quickly steered the flying shuttle towards Pure Yang Palace.

Everyone present on the scene was aware of the flying shuttle's existence. Although Wang Yong had seen it for the first time, when they went to save Gao Yue, he had realized that Yang Chen had a high speed magic tool. So he wasn't the slightest bit astonished upon seeing the flying shuttle. Within less than 20 days, Yang Chen had returned to Pure Yang Palace.

Hall master Meng Xian had been keeping watch over Pure Yang Palace. When the old tree demon had valiantly led the Palace Master to rapidly return to Pure Yang Palace, Liang Shaoming had been waiting with a bunch of followers for the good news.

But when he suddenly saw the bloody figure of the Palace Master appear before him, he was rooted to the ground because of fear. Without waiting for him to resist, the old tree demon quickly tried to capture him. A trifling JieDan stage cultivator didn't have any means to resist in front of the old tree demon's clone.

When he saw that the turn of events was far from encouraging, Liang Shaoming counterattacked, which gave everyone a huge fright. Several tens of tenth water godly thunder pearls directly appeared. The old tree demon swiftly struck him causing Liang Shaoming to lose conscience, but it was already too late to stop the

tenth water godly thunder pearl's explosion.

Having no other alternative, the old tree demon used his body to receive all the tenth water godly thunder pearls and rushed towards the sky. Clearly, these tenth water godly thunder pearls had been refined by Dacheng experts. The explosion of several of these at the same time caused the clone's body to die, which then disappeared after a moment.

Even if the old tree demon had tried to save the Pure Yang Palace but still because of the continuous explosions in the sky, the mountain protecting spell formation flickered several times before disappearing. Almost all the buildings had collapsed due the shockwaves. Several thousand foundation stage disciples had also been affected by the shockwaves and were severely injured. Even the Jiedan stage disciples were also affected and suffered light wounds.

All the people present on the scene turned pale with fright. These many tenth water yin thunder pearls certainly couldn't be refined by Liang Shaoming alone. He didn't have that kind of ability. If it were not for the old tree demon, everyone present on the scene would have died, and the Pure Yang Palace would have been turned into ruins.

A Dacheng expert had died horribly, the Palace Master had been severely injured, an elder had betrayed the sect, several thousand disciples had also been injured, and all the buildings in the sect including the main hall of the sect had also turned into dust. From the time, it was established, it was the first time the Pure Yang Palace had suffered from such an extent of damage.

Old tree demon's main body which was on the flying shuttle, suddenly trembled and then his whole figure became depressed.

Seeing this, everyone was greatly astonished. What had happened which caused this kind of transformation in the old tree demon? Only after a moment of depression, the old tree demon's

complexion quickly returned to normal, however, anyone could see that his body was currently very weak.

Soon, everyone heard about the attack on Pure Yang Palace from the old tree demon. Hearing that the Pure Yang Palace had suffered such destruction, Yang Chen was furious and recklessly increased the flying shuttle to return quickly to Pure Yang Palace. Gao Yue was still there and it was unknown whether she had been affected or not, and whether she had suffered any injuries.

Unexpectedly, this time, when the old tree demon had sacrificed his clone to save everyone. His contribution was unprecedentedly big. Even without waiting for the rewards that Palace Master would bestow on the old tree demon, Yang Chen immediately took out a tree of PengLai divine wood and directly gave it to the old tree demon after receiving him into the domed palace hall.

The first wood spirit power of PengLai Divine Wood was countless times more pure compared to old tree demon's main body which was formed of Cassia trees. Old tree demon hadn't expected that his one act to save lives would get him this kind of enormous returns. Under great excitement, he even forgot that he had lost his clone. He then split open his body and bundled the entire PengLai Divine Wood within it.

“The last heart questioning pill will perfectly fuse the PengLai Divine Wood's spirit power.”

Yang Chen said and quickly came out of the domed palace hall:

“Don't worry and concentrate on healing. You don't need to worry about other things.”

When Yang Chen and others returned to the Pure Yang Palace, the Pure Yang Palace was being crazily rebuilt. The matter of the main hall of the sect being destroyed was a matter of great humiliation for all the disciples. Every disciple was filled with anger and was concentrating on rebuilding the sect. Fortunately, Gao Yue only suffered from light wounds which didn't cause her

much harm.

When Yang Chen saw the Palace Master and other elders, everyone had a heavy expression on their faces mixed with a sense of guilt. Yang Chen immediately understood the reason. It hadn't been easy for the sect to gain a Dacheng expert, but unexpectedly they had lost their Dacheng expert against the final struggle with this traitor Liang Shaoming. Who would feel happy about this?

“Palace Master, hall master Gui isn't dead!”

When Yang Chen said this, everyone raised their heads and looked at Yang Chen not daring to believe as if trying to distinguish whether his words were true or false.

Everyone knew that if they could capture Hundred Thousand Mountains then the Pure Yang Palace would gain the opportunity to advance rapidly. But at this critical moment, Lin Yunfeng's surprising revolt and loss of their only Dacheng expert had made all the higher ups of Pure Yang Palace feel despair.

But Yang Chen's words, instantly returned their confidence. Without caring for etiquettes in front of Palace Master, everyone immediately began to talk together asking the reason.

Now, Yang Chen also wasn't afraid of disclosing the matter of Gui Shanyou's clone. After hearing that hall master Gui Shanyou had only lost a clone which he could restore after cultivating for some years, everyone instantly began to cheer for him making the atmosphere quite lively.

“What happened to that bastard Liang Shoaming?”

At this moment, Yang Chen also wasn't polite and directly mentioned him by name:

“I want to make him regret being born in this world!”

No one felt any sympathy for Liang Shoaming who had surprisingly prepared the savage tenth water godly thunder pearls and had also detonated it within the great mountain defending

spell formation. If Gui Shanyou hadn't acted swiftly by collecting all the tenth water godly thunder pearls and flying high towards the sky, then maybe Pure Yang Palace would be exterminated today.

Palace Master and that accompanying elder also felt a burst of lingering fear. If those people who had launched a sneak attack on them together with Lin Yunfeng had used the tenth water godly thunder pearls, then both of them would have been dead long ago. This excess fear caused their hatred towards the main culprit Liang Shaoming to rise to the deepest levels.

Yang Chen's attitude clearly implied that he wanted to punish Liang Shaoming. Although all the people present on the scene had higher status than Yang Chen, no one stopped him. Even Palace Master felt regret that even after so many unexpected events at Luminous Moon Hall, he never had the resolve to deal with Liang Shaoming. If he had, then the Pure Yang Palace wouldn't have to face the current destruction.

"He will be handed over to you!"

Palace Master said gnashing his teeth in anger:

"Ask him clearly for me, what was he doing all these years?"

No one supported Liang Shaoming who had caused the destruction at Pure Yang Palace. When Liang Shaoming was handed over to Yang Chen, Yang Chen didn't ask him anything and first made him suffer all the tortures he had learned at the Heavenly Court without caring for his cries of forgiveness or anguished wails.

While punishing him, Yang Chen even used many powerful elixirs to treat all sorts of injuries to make sure that he could suffer all the tortures without dying.

"I will make sure that you know what means by not being allowed to live and not being able to seek death!"

After Liang Shaoming woke up, Yang Chen told him this and didn't talk with him anymore.

In the beginning, Liang Shaoming endured to the greatest extent thinking that the upper echelons of Pure Yang Palace would certainly want to get some information from him and wouldn't let him die lightly. But after more than ten days had passed, he didn't have this kind of extravagant hope anymore.

Liang Shaoming felt as if he had been thrown in hell and Yang Chen had turned into a fiend from hell, ignoring any reason, disregarding all causes and effects, he even didn't talk to him and was solely engrossed in carrying out his punishment, he only want Liang Shaoming to suffer the torture without caring for obtaining any information from him.

This kind of torture which didn't differentiate between right and wrong was so painful that could make people wish that they were dead. It made Liang Shaoming clearly understand what was meant by not being allowed to live and not being able to seek death.

Now, whenever Liang Shaoming was sober enough to see Yang Chen's figure, his body would start trembling as if every cell in his body was afraid of Yang Chen and couldn't help but tremble in fear.

Within less than half month, Liang Shaoming had already collapsed. Every time he saw Yang Chen, he would start shouting:

"What do you want to know? Just ask me, ok! But please don't hurt me!"

Yang Chen sneered, regardless of however Liang Shaoming begged for forgiveness, he continued with his torture. Thus, ten more days passed like this and Liang Shaoming had completely collapsed many times and didn't have any intention of concealing anything.

"I am Greatest Heaven Sect's inner disciple, before entering Pure

Yang Palace, I had already entered Greatest Heaven Sect. Under my master's command, I secretly entered Pure Yang Palace to look for the opportunity to annex Pure Yang Palace!"

Hearing Liang Shaoming's words, the complexion of all the higher ups of Pure Yang Palace turned unsightly. A majestic hall master of the Pure Yang Palace, Luminous Moon Hall's hall master, was surprisingly a disciple of Greatest Heaven Sect who had entered the sect several hundred years ago to look for the chance to annex Pure Yang Palace. For several hundred years, everyone was surprisingly hoodwinked by Liang Shaoming without any suspicion.

Other than great embarrassment, everyone only felt great hatred. Greatest Heaven Sect was just being an intolerable bully. They didn't even hesitate to start killing the sect leader and destroying the entire sect to achieve their goal. Although Greatest Heaven Sect is considered a leader of dao sects, their actions simply resembled that of a devil sect.

Once Liang Shaoming's secret identity became public, all doubts were explained. If Palace Master had died in that sneak attack, then most probably Lin Yunfeng would have become Palace Master. At that time, he would have certainly thrown his full support behind Liang Shaoming, so long as Liang Shaoming waited patiently for a few hundred years until Lin Yunfeng would ascend, being the person with the highest influence he would have been selected as the Palace Master.

Once Liang Shaoming became the Palace Master, then making the decision of merging with Greatest Heaven Sect would be completely up to him. The long term arrangements of this plan made everyone tremble in fear.

Those tenth water godly thunder pearls were also provided to him by the upper echelons of Greatest Heaven Sect through that concealed spell formation. If the situation doesn't look very encouraging, he was to ignite those tenth water godly thunder

pearls and exterminate the entire Pure Yang Palace in order to shield Greatest Heaven Sect's plans so that it isn't denounced by others.

Those several henchmen of Liang Shaoming in Luminous Moon Hall including the substitute hall master Song Hang had also been captured. Unexpectedly, they didn't offer any resistance and revealed everything they knew about this matter.

All of them had been coaxed by Liang Shaoming, so they didn't know the concrete details of the plan. After completing tasks assigned by Liang Shaoming, they had obtained many benefits from Liang Shaoming and the Greatest Heaven Sect separately. Because of which, they didn't have any hesitation in following Liang Shaoming and chasing after Greatest Heaven Sect's shadow. No one supported these traitors, since they had betrayed the sect, their punishment was clear, execution!

"They went too far!"

Wang Yong who had a fiery temper couldn't endure this and slapped the table in front of him in anger:

"I say, we should reveal this scoundrel's true colours to the entire world and see how this Greatest Heaven Sect deals with this?"

Everyone was also furious, but hearing Wang Yong's proposal, everyone silently contemplated over it. Although making this matter public would allow them to relieve their pent up frustration, what would happen in the future?

This was a big question, if the Greatest Heaven Sect could just casually push out an elder and say that it was all planned by him in secret and being guilty of terrible crimes, he would be executed as an apology to the entire world. After they provide this explanation, Pure Yang Palace would become Greatest Heaven Sect's mortal enemy and might have to face more secret reprisals from them.

Honestly speaking, the current Pure Yang Palace could in no way

contend against Greatest Heaven Sect and wasn't simply their opponent. Apparently, this matter has to be considered at great lengths.

“Yang Chen, what do you think?”

Palace Master didn't announce any decision, rather asked Yang Chen for his opinion.

The higher ups of sect, which included the group of elders and hall masters, focused their gazes on Yang Chen's face. No one suggested that Yang Chen's participation in this kind of matter was not suitable. Similarly, no one felt that Yang Chen raising a suggestion in front of everyone was not appropriate, giving a very strange feeling.

“Disciple thinks, this is a rather good chance.”

After mumbling to himself for a while, Yang Chen slowly said.

“Chance? What chance?”

Everyone was completely astonished and Zhu Chentao who had good relations with Yang Chen, couldn't help but speak up.

“Since the tenth water godly thunder had already been detonated, in all likelihood, people of Greatest Heaven Sect think that Liang Shaoming is already dead and we don't know about their plan.”

Yang Chen sorted out his reasoning and slowly said.

Ordinary disciples didn't know that Liang Shaoming had been captured by upper echelons of Pure Yang Palace. So far, the only people who knew that Liang Shaoming was alive were all present here. No other people knew about it.

“Also there isn't much possibility that those people who attacked Palace Master will come forward and speak up that they came from Greatest Heaven Sect.”

Yang Chen looked at the Liang Shaoming who was still

mumbling to himself and said with a smile:

“Our current strength is insufficient, so for the time being, we should feign ignorance about Greatest Heaven Sect’s actions.”

“Then how do we explain this kind of appearance of my sect?”

Xu Chengxin immediately asked.

“Since our attack on Hundred Thousand Mountains is imminent, then we might as well use this attack as the grounds of justification.”

Yang Chen looked at everyone and said in a loud voice:

“Publicly announce that people of Hundred Thousand Mountains have attacked Pure Yang Palace, then even if our sect exterminates Hundred Thousand Mountains, no one will say anything about it.”

Chapter 222 - I Will Break The Spell

Shifting the blame. This was clearly shifting the blame. In fact, without caring for the fact that Greatest Heaven Sect was being too arrogant, this reason mentioned by Yang Chen was far better than the previous reason of a disciple of Pure Yang Palace being attacked in Hundred Thousand Mountain, it clearly seemed more honourable.

Before this matter had happened, when the alliance formed by Pure Yang Palace, Green Jade Immortal Islands, Clear Sky Sect and Beast Taming Sect would exterminate the Hundred Thousand Mountain, they would certainly gain the reputation of robbing other's territory illegally, maybe someone would even come forward desiring to share the profit. After all, the previous line of reasoning wasn't sound enough and this matter would certainly be discussed among the others.

But the reason mentioned by Yang Chen made everyone speechless. Trying to destroy the sect, breaking the mountain protecting spell formation. This kind of hatred wouldn't be quenched without proper revenge.

So at that time, even if some people were resentful, they also wouldn't be able to stick their foot in this matter. By then, the market of Hundred Thousand Mountains would be perfectly under the control of Pure Yang Palace and its three allies.

“Shifting the blame on people of the Hundred Thousand Mountains wouldn't be that easy, right?”

Xu Chengxin spoke again while creasing his brows:

“How will we convince others of this?”

“During the journey when disciple was visiting elder Hua of Clear Sky Sect, we were ambushed by the people of Hundred Thousand Mountains.”

Yang Chen immediately thought of using the few people he had caught earlier:

“One was a devil cultivator, one was a demon cultivator and the last one was a rogue cultivator of dao path. All of them had lived there for many years, so we have enough evidence.”

This was a complete accident, even Yang Chen hadn't expected that the matter would develop to this stage and could only say that it was a lucky coincidence. With these few people serving as the perfect evidence, it seems like the Hundred Thousand Mountains were doomed to be destroyed by Yang Chen.

“How can we forget about Greatest Heaven Sect?”

Wang Yong furiously said, but asking this question was also in vain, how could anyone forget the hatred of their sect being near wiped out? As soon as he said this, Wang Yong also felt that he was being somewhat stupid by asking this, so he immediately change the question:

“That Greatest Heaven Sect already knows that we are going to attack Hundred Thousand Mountains, can they be watching our movements to try to get a piece of action?”

“Right now, they are anxious that we have discovered their plan and are trying to think of countermeasures to respond to us. How can they try to exploit this opportunity?”

Yang Chen sneered:

“Previously, they had sheltered a traitor of our sect, when he was suddenly discovered later, they could only admit that they are guilty. They will not be willing to make this type of mistake again.”

“Even if they come to exploit the opportunity and attack in place of us under the pretense of getting justice for us, but if we don't move they don't have any reason to attack.”

Yang Chen continued to analyze:

“If they could control the Hundred Thousand Mountain on their own, they would have attacked long ago. Why would they wait until now? Since they cannot control it alone, if we don’t make our move and they do, they will be in an embarrassing situation. If they attack, they can’t gain high ground, if they don’t, that means they are orally supporting us and won’t be able to make a move, they certainly won’t let themselves get caught in this kind of difficult situation.”

“If they really attack under the guise of getting justice for us, how can our sect watch without lifting a finger?”

Xu Chengxin asked again, he frequently interacted with a lot of people from other sects so naturally he has to consider a lot of things.

“My sect is busy reconstructing the sect area, isn’t this reason enough?”

Yang Chen lightly smiled:

“In any case, whether we attack early or late, our sect has sufficient reason to attack. The initiative lies with us and not with Greatest Heaven Sky.”

“What if other sects ask why our sect has requested the help of Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky Sect, and not of Greatest Heaven Sect?”

Xu Chengxin immediately followed.

“Greatest Heaven Sect has shielded my sect’s traitor before, my Pure Yang Palace also doesn’t hold much love for Greatest Heaven Sect so why should we form alliance with Greatest Heaven Sect?”

Yang Chen seemed to have thought out everything and directly explained his reasoning.

After some more questions and answers, everyone understood Yang Chen’s line of reasoning. Seemingly, this was a great opportunity to capture Hundred Thousand Mountains. Even the

Greatest Heaven Sect could only look helplessly as the few big sects form alliance and divide the profits of Hundred Thousand Mountains without finding even a trace of reason to step in.

If they want to attack under the guise of getting justice for Pure Yang Palace, Pure Yang Palace could still refuse that option. If my Pure Yang Palace firmly refuses then how could the Greatest Heaven Sect still have the face to step in and exploit the opportunity? If they really did attack, then Pure Yang Palace could just announce that Pure Yang Palace itself will avenge its hatred, as for forming an alliance with Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky Sect, it could always be explained saying that Pure Yang Palace couldn't beat them in their first attempt so they could only form an alliance. In that case, Greatest Heaven Sect could do nothing but look at them enviously.

“So everything is set!”

After seeking the opinions of several hall masters and elders, Palace Master slapped the table and finalized their strategy:

“No one should reveal any trace of information regarding Greatest Heaven Sect's matter, do not even show least bit of animosity towards Greatest Heaven Sect, wait until we gain enough strength to get revenge!”

Although they were still angry, everyone present could see the bigger picture. All of them pushed down their hatreds for the time being and began to wait for the chance to get revenge.

After Liang Shaoming and the rest of his henchmen had been captured, Yang Chen suddenly discovered that there weren't many voices opposing him within the Pure Yang Palace. All the higher ups supported him making him feel like fish back in water.

The most important thing was that the greatest threat against Gao Yue, Liang Shaoming had already been dealt with, thus ensuring Gao Yue's safety within the sect in the future and removing the need for him to be on his guard all the time. This fact

delighted Yang Chen.

After determining their strategy, Yang Chen left everyone and directly went to Gao Yue's residence. Although Gao Yue had only suffered light injuries, she had still been injured which distressed Yang Chen greatly.

Gongsun Ling's cultivation wasn't high, the injuries she had received were quite serious. When Yang Chen had returned back to the sect earlier, she could barely crawl back to her place. Yang Chen was extremely considerate towards his talented senior apprentice sister and personally delivered the best healing elixirs and refined a batch of ginseng liquid of thousand year ginseng for her. Only then did he feel relieved.

The upper echelons of the sect made all the arrangements according to Yang Chen's intention. Soon the news of Hundred Thousand Mountain attacking Pure Yang Palace began to spread quickly among all dao sects with the few dead corpses of people from Hundred Thousand Mountain serving as evidence.

The news of the sect area of Pure Yang Palace and several thousand disciples being injured began to spread. After a long time, entire cultivation world had again began to boil.

The evidence revealed by Pure Yang Palace was like adding more oil to the fire, which immediately flared up the storm. Chaos spread within the cultivators, everyone was discussing this matter. Instantly, Pure Yang Palace stood at the heart of the struggle.

Together with Pure Yang Palace, the secret organization behind the Hundred Thousand Mountains had also become the center of talks. When the task gets divided between many people, it becomes easier. With so many people discussing the event, soon the whole chain of events starting from a disciple of Pure Yang Palace being attacked at Hundred Thousand Mountains followed by Yang Chen destroying the auction house which made the secret organization to fly in rage because of humiliation, causing them to attack Pure

Yang Palace. All the events became public quickly.

Regardless of whatever was said, the auction house of Hundred Thousand Mountains had broken their own rules which wasn't a secret. They weren't able to remove the traces of their crimes over the past years by any means possible. This time, they had gone a step further and attacked Pure Yang Palace, thus becoming the target of criticism from countless people.

Today, Hundred Thousand Mountain had attacked Pure Yang Palace's mountain. Tomorrow, it might be some other sect. The people who were burned by Hundred Thousand Mountain weren't only limited to Gao Yue, right now all of them people were expressing their anger towards common enemy and jointly denounced the secret organization behind Hundred Thousand Mountains.

What worried people most was that two YuanYing experts and three JieDan experts had used some unknown treasure to turn the entire Pure Yang Palace upside down. Even their mountain protecting defensive formation couldn't hold. If this had been some other sect in place of Pure Yang Palace, how could they escape extermination?

There was also another opinion. Pure Yang Palace had finally become undisguised in front of everyone, since they couldn't even defend their own mountain and sect, how can they still have the face to establish their sect? But this kind of voice was clearly very few, no one cared about it.

Pure Yang Palace had been enraged by this provocation, blood had entered their eyes. In front of countless sect disciples, Palace Master has pledged that Hundred Thousand Mountain must be purged and sect's humiliation would be washed using enemy's blood.

When Pure Yang Palace presented the evidence, simultaneously, it also combined with Clear Sky Sect, Green Jade Immortal Islands

and Beast Taming Sect. The grand alliance marched to exterminate Hundred Thousand Mountains.

There weren't many people in the lead, only 50. But no one would dare to provoke these only 50 people in the whole world. These people included, nine Dacheng experts as well as 33 YuanYing experts and only one foundation stage disciple, Yang Chen.

Yang Chen had come with them as a guide, naturally, everyone knew that this was just a guise. Yang Chen only wanted to personally get justice for Gao Yue.

Gao Yue, Gongsun Ling, even Green Jade Immortal Islands' Shi Shanshan and Clear Sky Sect's Sun Qingxue, all wanted to follow Yang Chen, but they were firmly declined by Yang Chen, while at the same time, they were also constrained by their sect, drawing unhappiness from these females.

In fact, the stronghold occupied by the secret organization of Hundred Thousand Mountains had been investigated in detail for several years. The reason why everyone agreed to allow Yang Chen to follow them was because he was the pill concocting master who had concocted the heart questioning pill. The upper echelons of all sects were hoping that the experts of their sect could form some contact with Yang Chen and sow good karma which would make it quite convenient for them to seek pills in future.

Behind the Hundred Thousand Mountains were four Dacheng experts and around twenty YuanYing experts. This kind of strength was enough to contend against the best sects. However, when all is said and done, they were formed by dao, demon and devil paths working together so everyone had only joined together for their mutual benefits and weren't interdependent on each other in life and death like a sect. This also meant that they could only occupy Hundred Thousand Mountain but couldn't contend against big sects like Greatest Heaven Sect or Clear Sky Sect.

There was one more reason why the Hundred Thousand Mountains had been standing tall without falling. They had a guardian magic weapon, which was the Seven Star Heavenly Thunder Spell which covered their entire territory. Only the four Dacheng experts knew the profoundness of this spell formation, ordinary experts couldn't break this spell formation.

Previously, Greatest Heaven Sect always had five Dacheng experts making it the sect with most Dacheng experts among dao sects. Their strength was quite formidable. But if they went on an expedition against Hundred Thousand Mountains, they would have to pay considerable price. When compared to the investment, the benefits couldn't compare.

It was impossible for them to break the spell and kill four Dacheng experts unless they were ready to sacrifice at least three of their Dacheng experts. Moreover, during the 'great calamity of devil cultivation', they had already lost one of their Dacheng experts, considerably weakening their strength, making it even more difficult for them to move against Hundred Thousand Mountains.

Currently, the strength of the alliance of these four sects was already double of Hundred Thousand Mountains. The people leading the party weren't afraid of the few Dacheng experts behind Hundred Thousand Mountains. Their only concern was that Seven Star Heavenly Thunder Spell, even if they had a group of YuanYing and Dacheng experts, still there would be heavy casualties to break the spell.

"I can break the Seven Star Heavenly Thunder Spell!"

Before starting, Yang Chen had guaranteed this in front of the group of experts. All the experts looked at each other in dismay, if Yang Chen hadn't concocted the heart questioning pill then someone would have already scolded him. But, even then, many people didn't think his words were reasonable.

A foundation stage junior who concocts pills can break Seven Star Heavenly Thunder Spell? Even Dacheng experts didn't dare to make such claims.

It must be known that the Seven Star Heavenly Thunder Formation used a dangerous location of Hundred Thousand Mountain as foundation and was set up by a Dacheng stage spell formation expert.

That dangerous location was basically a place where lightning falls continuously, after being reinforced by spell formation, the might of thunder at that place has become greatly astonishing. The lightning here can be said to be comparable to the lightning tribulation of the three great tribulations.

Yang Chen, a trifling foundation stage junior, surprisingly dared to shoot his mouth saying that he could break the spell, he was simply being delusional. Everyone only gave face to Pure Yang Palace and his title of pill concocting master and didn't say anything unpleasant.

"Then how about this, since seniors allow this junior to be impudent."

Yang Chen understood what everyone was thinking, but didn't try to defend himself and faintly smiled while continuing:

"If junior cannot break the Seven Star Heavenly Thunder Formation, then junior agrees to refine a pill requested by each senior for them free of charge, what do you think?"

Since they were already planning to attack Hundred Thousand Mountains, that spell must be broken. But now, Yang Chen had taken the sole initiative to break the spell formation. Moreover, if he failed, he was still willing to refine elixirs for everyone free of charge, where could they find such a great deal? At that time, not to mention other elixirs, just finding the raw materials and refining a batch of heart questioning pills was sufficient to repay everyone's labour several times.

No one said anything to oppose him, but everyone became hopeful, wishing that Yang Chen would be unable to break the spell formation and everyone could fairly obtain a heart questioning pill. Only, at that time, they have to protect Yang Chen properly so that even if failed in breaking the spell, he wouldn't be injured by the spell formation.

The news of Pure Yang Palace declaring Hundred Thousand Mountains to be the main culprit hadn't spread to Hundred Thousand Mountains currently. The secret organization of Hundred Thousand Mountains hadn't sensed that the imminent danger, completely oblivious to the fact that their villa had already been surrounded a group of experts completely cutting off the escape for the people inside.

Because of the Seven Star Heavenly Thunder Formation covering the villa, even Dacheng experts on the outside couldn't use their spiritual awareness to examine the situation inside. Similarly, the people inside villa also couldn't use their spiritual awareness to examine the circumstances outside. Perhaps, they had absolute faith on the spell formation, so the people inside villa didn't think that anyone would come to attack them.

Presently, Yang Chen was standing outside the spell formation observing the lightning inside the spell formation which was waiting to strike. Slightly far away, a group of experts was curiously observing Yang Chen, trying to guess what kind of method did he plan to use to cut open the spell formation.

Chapter 223 - Destroying The Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell

Standing outside the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell, Yang Chen halted for a moment as if trying to find the direction of lightning within the spell formation. Soon after, two red balls twice the size of fist appeared in his hands.

“What’s that?”

Standing behind him, the pupils of the group of the expert shrank:

“Thunder pomegranate?”

Thunder pomegranate could absorb lightning, because of this property, many people tried to find some thunder pomegranate when undergoing the lightning tribulation and use it to absorb some lightning.

Although Seven Star Godly Thunder Formation was formidable, in the end, it was nothing but the strength of lightning and thunder. The thunder pomegranates could absorb lightning and thunder, there was no doubt about this, but wanting to break the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell with nothing but thunder pomegranate was just Yang Chen being delusional.

Leaving aside the fact that this spell formation has been set by a Dacheng expert, the amount of power of thunder and lightning ingested by this spell formation for the past millennium years was unimaginable. Even if a Dacheng expert enters it, they could only focus on self preservation and nothing else. Although it was unpleasant to hear, only two thunder pomegranate were not enough to even get stuck between the teeth of this Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell.

Whoosh whoosh, under Yang Chen’s control, both thunder pomegranates flew within the spell formation. Once the spell

formation sensed that some foreign object has entered spell formation and it doesn't comply with the unique route set by spell, the spell formation immediately began to attack. With rumbling sounds, the omnipresent lightning rushed towards the two thunder pomegranates.

Everyone present on the scene apart from Yang Chen had passed the lightning tribulation. So they didn't feel anything over these two thunder pomegranates being wasted. A few old men shook their head in disappointment, Yang Chen was just overestimating his abilities, why didn't he think anything before making a fool out of himself? Could it be that Yang Chen only has talent in pill concocting, but isn't any good in other fields?

Just when everyone was shaking their head or were at loss, another two thunder pomegranates appeared in Yang Chen's hand, this time they flew towards another direction.

Next, everyone began to look as if Yang Chen was performing some magical trick, one after another, he produced two thunder pomegranates and as before, threw them in some direction. Moreover, his supply surprisingly didn't seem to be running out and in less than the time taken for a wick to burn, he had thrown another two more thunder pomegranates.

By this time, the group of people from Pure Yang Palace were already dumbstruck, they didn't know that Yang Chen had successfully cultivated a thunder pomegranate tree, they seemed to have turned into stone and couldn't breath.

When he had returned from Heavenly Stairs, Chu Heng made fun of Yang Chen about his words over thunder pomegranate, wanting to use the opportunity to punish Yang Chen, but the matter was left unsettled. But now, seeing his actions, everyone understood what Yang Chen had done that time.

By now, Yang Chen had casually taken out 200 thunder pomegranates, wouldn't that mean he had successfully cultivated

more than ten trees of thunder pomegranate? How many seeds does one thunder pomegranate has inside it? How many thunder pomegranates had Yang Chen successfully cultivated?

However, this was another pleasant surprise, although every thunder pomegranate tree could produce 20 fruits at most, if they were cultivated on a large scale, wouldn't that mean that afterwards, if any JieDan expert of Pure Yang Palace doesn't have confidence in passing the lightning tribulation on his own, then he could be provided a thunder pomegranate fruit for assistance?

Others also vaguely guessed such an outcome, but no one dared to confirm it. Moreover, even if he had used over 200 thunder pomegranate, there still wasn't any sign of the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell Formation breaking down.

These experts had a lot of experience and could make out that these thunder pomegranates were approximately 20 years matured so they weren't very precious. The effects of this type of fruits were greatly reduced, so probably just relying on these type of fruits wasn't sufficient to break the spell.

Presently, contempt seemed to be rising up in everyone's mind, their previous sighs couldn't be seen anymore as everyone began to ponder, how many thunder pomegranates would Yang Chen require to achieve results?

What surprised everyone again was that the supply of thunder pomegranates still seemed to be endless for Yang Chen. Within a short time, he had thrown 200 more thunder pomegranates within the spell formation. Everyone couldn't help but feel shocked and wonder how many thunder pomegranates Yang Chen, this junior, has?

By this time, the entire spell formation seemed to be aroused, dazzling thunder seemed to be casting a huge net knitted of light. Apart from light from thunder, the only leftover sound was that of thunder claps, nothing else could be heard.

Within a blink, Yang Chen had used 100 more thunder pomegranates, raising the total to 500 fruits. At this moment, Yang Chen didn't seem to be adding anymore, rather waved his hand, causing 2 thunder pomegranates inside the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell to return back to him as if being tied by some kind of thread.

After absorbing lightning until they were full, the appearance of thunder pomegranates changed. They didn't have that sort of red colour from before, rather, they had turned black red with indistinct flickers.

His hand again flashed, these two full thunder pomegranates seem to disappear within his hand, soon after, two more red coloured thunder pomegranates immediately appeared in his hand and were again thrown inside spell like before, replacing the two fruits which had been replaced recently.

Next, this cycle continued. Every time, Yang Chen would remove two thunder pomegranates and afterwards replace it with two new thunder pomegranates.

“What is he doing?”

Everyone again became suspicious. Replacing one fruit after another, what does he want to do?

“After absorbing the lightning to its limit, the thunder pomegranates can be refined into magic weapons which can explode according to their master's wish. Their strength couldn't be considered as weak.”

Immediately someone who had studied about thunder pomegranates explained.

“He is surprisingly using the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell to refine magic weapon?”

Hearing this explanation, everyone didn't know what to think. Yang Chen, this youngster's mind was hard to fathom, making

these old men feel inferior.

Who could have thought that the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell which could strike fear in anyone's heart could surprisingly be used like this? If the person who had deployed the spell formation knew that the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell which he had deployed after a century's hard work, which had existed for thousand years absorbing countless amount of lightning energy, would surprisingly be used by someone to refine their magic weapon, he would be rolling about in his grave.

“That's odd!”

After Yang Chen had replaced the thunder pomegranates for the fourth time, the expert who had just explained about thunder pomegranates again found an anomaly:

“The thunder pomegranates he is holding now, its maturity far exceeds those he had used earlier.”

If he had sufficiently matured thunder pomegranates why did he bother with those unripe fruits earlier? Everyone again felt a wave of confusion hitting them, no one could answer this question. However, no one troubled Yang Chen, moreover, everyone turned their gaze towards the earlier expert at the same time as if agreeing by chance, waiting for him to provide some explanation.

That person carefully observed everything for a while, when suddenly an astonished look appeared on his face, as if he had thought of something unfathomable.

The people around him resentfully reminded him once, after which he spoke in a serious tone:

“He is using the lightning power to rush the breeding of those thunder pomegranate trees.”

Once the expert gave a summary of his conclusion, a wave of shock once again washed over everyone. But it has to be said that with Yang Chen's display from the start, there was indeed a

possibility of this happening.

After the thunder pomegranate absorbed lightning, apart from being used as an explosive magic weapon, it could also be used to release thunder and lightning. Moreover, when placed in surroundings with thunder and lightning, the thunder pomegranate would grow exuberantly. Thus, Yang Chen using the lightning to urge the growth of thunder pomegranate trees wasn't impossible.

Everyone, however, was still under great shock. Although thunder pomegranate provided good assistance in lightning tribulation, relying on excessive external help also wasn't good, so these people didn't place it in their eyes. Only those who lack confidence in passing the tribulation used it. Many devil cultivators also used it.

However, it didn't change the fact that thunder the pomegranate tree was still difficult to grow. This was already a problem in the cultivation world for countless years. But for Yang Chen, this problem didn't seem to be anything difficult.

If that expert's recent conclusion was true, then wouldn't it mean that Yang Chen did not only know the method to grow the thunder pomegranate tree, but he even knew how to speed up its growth.

How was that possible? Countless people had researched this for too many years, but none have been successful, and this foundation stage junior, Yang Chen, who has spent at most 40 years cultivating from the time he started, unexpectedly had already found a way to grow and speed up its maturity?

Not only that, Yang Chen could apparently make a spirit pill like the heaven seizing pill and an elixir to restore the constituent spirit of demon beasts. Moreover, he had also personally refined the mysterious heart questioning pill. When the credits of all these unfathomable achievements went to one person, then people

couldn't help getting astonished when thinking about it.

However, right now clearly wasn't the time for everyone to be astonished. The thunder pomegranate in Yang Chen's hands had been reaching its limit in maturity, absorbing even more and more lightning. At this corner, the power of the spell formation also seemed to have reduced greatly. The lightning, which was initially densely packed, also became sparse. The time gap between two lightning bolts also began to widen.

Even if the spell formation had absorbed large amounts of lightning, it couldn't last under the incessant absorption by 500 thunder pomegranates. Moreover, as the maturity of the last thunder pomegranate continued to approach the limit, it began to absorb larger and larger amounts of lightning. Its absorption rate also became quicker and quicker.

What was most astonishing was that as the thunder pomegranate's maturity approached its limit, and the absorption of lightning increased more and more, that pomegranate tree also began to mature faster and faster, which in turn lead to further increase in the maturity of the thunder pomegranate in Yang Chen's hand.

As this virtuous cycle continued, within less than the time it takes to drink a cup of tea, the lightning at this corner had already been completely absorbed. No bolt fell in this area for a good moment.

Careful observers had discovered that the places where Yang Chen replaced the thunder pomegranates every time were all fixed. Moreover, what shocked them even more was that only this corner had no lightning, but the lightning in other areas flickered vaguely and didn't seem as if the spell formation had been aroused.

What did this mean? Everyone was again astounded. The only explanation could be that Yang Chen was so familiar with the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell that he couldn't learn anything

new about it. Just by the controlling the thunder pomegranates, he could determine how to break this formation or not. What did this show? Could Yang Chen also be a spell formation expert?

An expert pill concocting master in addition to a pinnacle spell formation expert? What's left for which Yang Chen couldn't do? In front of Yang Chen, this foundation stage junior, this group of YuanYing and Dacheng experts felt ashamed to death. When their cultivation was at Yang Chen's level, they didn't know what to do, so how could they have the chance to follow a group of YuanYing and Dacheng experts to play.

However, Yang Chen didn't pay any attention to these people's thoughts and was solely preoccupied with breaking the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell. Now that he already had the control of one corner, he could use this nick to carve a path to lead the experts into the villa.

Probably, even if the person who had deployed the spell was beaten to death, he couldn't have thought that there would be a foundation stage junior in a later generation who would use such a brilliant and domineering method to break his Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell.

Just as the expert had guessed, Yang Chen had indeed used the absorbed lightning to urge the growth of a pomegranate tree. The seeds of thunder pomegranate had been influenced by the pure first wood spirit power to their limits, but there wasn't any place where formidable lightning fell in the Medicine Garden, so Yang Chen could only stimulate it at a piece of land to grow several tens of trees.

In so many years, Yang Chen also didn't have the opportunity to upgrade his thunder pomegranates, because firstly, stimulating lightning required large amount of spirit power and secondly, Yang Chen's current realm was too low, so transforming spirit power would waste a lot of it and was totally not worth the effort.

These pomegranate trees could only produce these many fruits in so many years, which were difficult to use. When Yang Chen heard about the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell, he had made the plan to use the natural lightning to promote the ripening of his pomegranate trees.

When the lightning filled thunder pomegranates began to meet with the roots of original thunder pomegranate trees' roots, the endless lightning energy began to rush through the roots. Because of this enormous lightning energy urging its growth, within a short while, the thunder pomegranate trees maturity reached 100 years old.

Hundred year matured thunder pomegranates were a difficult to find treasure. One such fruit could absorb half the lightning of the lightning tribulation of a JieDan stage cultivator. So one thunder pomegranate fruit could double the chances of passing the lightning tribulation.

The direction in which the thunder pomegranates were sprinkled was also perfectly chosen to cut into the spell formation, merely influencing one portion of the spell formation. With Yang Chen carrying out this mission in such brilliant fashion, one more portion was cleared neatly. If he continued with this speed, within a short time, a secret passage would be formed through the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell.

Even at ordinary times, the lightning kept rumbling around in Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell, with the lightning cutting spiritual awareness and no signs of large scale activity on this side. It didn't give rise to the attention of anyone.

Who could have thought that they would use such a freakish method to enter the villa. Initially, everyone was afraid that the sounds of breaking the spell formation would alert the enemy inside that something fishy was going on. But now, it seemed that they didn't need to care about this problem.

When they thought about the scene when Yang Chen had proclaimed with full confidence that he could break the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell, they couldn't help but think:

“This junior will be redoubtable in future!”

Finally, after Yang Chen exerting himself for two more hours, a path without any lightning or thunder was carved through the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell.

“Seniors can now advance to meet the secret organization behind Hundred Thousand Mountains!”

Yang Chen pointed towards the end of passage and made a bowing gesture:

“Junior requests seniors to make their move and get justice for junior's sect! Junior will stay behind to destroy this Seven Star Godly Thunder Formation and will quietly wait for senior's victory call!”

Chapter 224 - Hundred Thousand Mountain Changes Master

When old tree demon Gui Shanyou passed by Yang chen, Yang Chen smiled and reminded him:

“Same rules, leave their corpses for me!”

The corpse of Dacheng experts could be considered as the best tonic for the delicate Blood Phantom Vine in Yang Chen’s clean bottle Medicine Garden. Nothing could be done about it, after all, it was still alive after great damage to a major portion of the master root and master vine, which could already be said to be an enormous fortune. It certainly couldn’t be restored without proper care for several hundred years.

With the path to enter the villa opened, the group of experts stormed in. Now Yang Chen didn’t need to be worried about being discovered by people and could brazenly absorb the lighting power of Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell.

This time was completely different from before when he was trying to sneak in. At that time, Yang Chen had carefully control the direction of the 500 thunder pomegranates according to the requirement of spirit power to be absorbed to create the path. But now, he didn’t have to worry about it and could release his control over those fruits allowing them to brazenly absorb.

Battle cries had already begun to echo out from the villa. After careful investigation for several years previously, Pure Yang Palace had verified that the Dacheng experts of the secret organization remained at the villa to cultivate secretly in seclusion. The upper strata in control of business was also concentrated within the villa, so no one could flee without exception.

With their numbers double that of enemy, the experts rushed into the villa like an indestructible force. Whether they had made a

plan before or not, they still possessed an absolute superiority. The enemy was caught completely off guard and was rather shocked that the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell had been of no use and couldn't form any decent resistance.

Within the first moments of the attack, everyone under the Dacheng stage had been dealt with. With no one to save these people, the Pure Yang Palace which had already paid a great price, strictly didn't permit for any fish from the higher ups to escape their net.

The nine Dacheng experts began to carefully search the locations where the enemy Dacheng experts were in seclusion. Within the Hundred Thousand Mountain, few people had absolute faith each other. These Dacheng experts in charge of Hundred Thousand Mountains were also the same. Moreover, the only one who hadn't gone into seclusion was completely startled and was already fighting a battle with elder Hua Wanting.

All of their seclusion locations had severe restrictions placed on them with all kind of spell formations. Soon, Yang Chen heard a loud rumbling sound. He expected that noise should be the sound of all kind of restrictions being crazily destroyed by the group of experts.

For the time being, these events had no relation to Yang Chen. Yang Chen was just a foundation stage junior. He had no role in a battle of such level. Even if he had the ability to defend himself, She Kui and Xie Sha still had to be by his side pretending to protect him.

No one felt this was inappropriate. Protecting Yang Chen also meant protecting the future heart questioning pills. Moreover, Yang Chen had already played a major role in this battle. If the group had forcefully tried to break the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell, then there was a high possibility that it would have alerted the people inside the villa, resulting in their campaign being much more difficult.

Presently, Yang Chen was in the middle of absorbing the lightning energy and crazily urging the growth of the thunder pomegranate tree. Apart from urging the growth of the thunder pomegranate tree, he still wanted to refine the clean bottle containing the Medicine Garden at least once. After he left this village, he wouldn't find this situation anywhere else. In the future, finding a place where he could absorb the lightning energy without any problems would be difficult.

In the beginning, Yang Chen had only made a few meters wide long passage through the enormous Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell. But now, he planned to completely absorb all the lightning energy within the spell.

With Yang Chen recklessly urging the growth of the tree by reckless absorption, the pomegranate tree began to grow frantically. Like when Yang Chen had refined the clean bottle containing the Medicine Garden, the large amount of spirit power absorbed had increased the maturity of herbs within it by several years. It was the same with the absorption of lightning energy.

In reality, the lightning energy was itself of first wood attribute. Only, it erupted slightly fiercely. This kind of frantic absorption of lightning energy was mainly to urge the growth of the pomegranate tree, but the clean bottle could also be refined simultaneously by using the formidable first wood spirit power.

During his recent opening of the passage, Yang Chen hadn't been able to pay attention to this. Now, since he was relieved of that burden, Yang Chen naturally wouldn't let this opportunity go by.

After asking She Kui and Xie Sha to pay more attention, he began to use the lightning energy released from thunder pomegranate to refine the clean bottle of the Medicine Garden.

The clean bottle had only been refined to the first layer of a Heavenly Star Treasure Refining Secrets, which was accompanied by the refining of fifth earth true qi. Last time, after the addition of

seventh metal true qi, he had only refined the domed hall, so naturally now he wanted to carefully refine the clean bottle itself.

The lightning of Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell couldn't be used directly, but with the thunder pomegranate, this wasn't a problem anymore. After a simple refining done by Yang Chen, he could casually control the lightning energy within the thunder pomegranate however he wished, which was just perfect for this process.

The lightning energy could be considered as a pure first wood power. Yang Chen carefully used this first wood spirit power in his body to carefully refine the lightning energy released by thunder pomegranates and move it to reach the second layer of the Heavenly Star Treasure Raising Secrets. He then began his refining.

Although his Profound Spirit Furnace had already reached the fifth layer of Heavenly Stars and the seventh layer of Earth Fiend, this Medicine Garden itself was of much higher grade. Yang Chen could barely advance the second layer refining of Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets.

Who would have thought that while the group of Dacheng experts were fiercely battling on one side of mountain, Yang Chen was leisurely advancing the refining of his magic weapon, and he was also using the lightning energy of enemy's Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell to do so.

Pure lightning energy began to crazily flow inside the Medicine Garden, but apart from increasing spirit power, the clean bottle didn't show any great transformation. Even if the first wood power was much more pure, but still it couldn't transform solely based on its intrinsic quality.

It has to be said, the clean bottle itself was sufficiently formidable. After Yang Chen had refined the thunder pomegranates once and begun to release more and more lightning

energy from thunder pomegranates into the clean bottle, he had discovered that this little bit of lightning didn't have any effect on the clean bottle and now, when it was being refined, the crazily pouring lightning energy also could only lead to an increase in spirit power without having any other effect.

This also led to another result. That speed of refining became faster and faster. The refining which should've at least required two months by Yang Chen was completed in a short 20 hours under such circumstances. With the clean bottle successfully reaching the second layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets.

The genuine transformation happened when Li Yunmu used the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets to refine the clean bottle. Same as the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, when the refining began, the clean bottle began to crazily absorb the lightning energy. The lightning energy which had been accumulating for thousands of years, helped the clean bottle succeed and within a short few hours, the first layer refining of Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets was completed.

After both the Heavenly Stars and Earth Fiend had been completed, a notable transformation occurred within the clean bottle. Not only had the space inside Medicine Garden increased greatly, even those herbs which belonged to the first wood attribute had their maturity increased by several decades.

This still wasn't enough. The most startling change was the appearance of a door like object within the clean bottle. Although it currently couldn't be opened, this also meant that there was still empty space within the clean bottle which Yang Chen couldn't yet access. But as long as he continued to refine it, there would be a day when he could open that space.

Previously, Yang Chen used to believe that there were only some thousand years matured herbs in Medicine Garden. But after returning from that Heavenly Roar Dog's valley, he realized that

something wasn't right. The previous master of the Medicine Garden must have ascended more than ten thousand years ago.

If that person had planted these legendary herbs before ascending, then by now, they should have reached a maturity of at least ten thousand years and shouldn't only be some thousand years old.

Although thousand year old legendary herbs could be considered as sufficiently precious, all of this didn't make any sense. The only possibility could be that there was another portion of the Medicine Garden. Presently, Yang Chen has only opened a portion of Medicine Garden, moreover, this portion should be the one where some seeds must have fallen a thousand years ago and had now grown into medicinal herbs. Yang Chen still hadn't come across the genuine core.

Although he was presently still unable to access the genuine core of Medicine Garden, the door to the core had already appeared. Believing that as his cultivation increased, there would be a day when this door could finally be opened and the secrets inside would finally be completely clear to Yang Chen.

Looking at this door, the doubts in Yang Chen's heart finally cleared. After all, this explanation seemed more reasonable.

From the beginning of the battle, two days had already passed, but the battle still continued. Each one of the several YuanYing stage experts held a spell flag in their hand and arranged an enormous spell formation within the villa. The spell could be broken only by simultaneously attacking all the YuanYing experts defending the spell formation. Otherwise, the people trapped inside could sneak out in a short amount of time.

The nine Dacheng experts invited by Pure Yang Palace were battling the four most formidable experts of Hundred Thousand Mountains within the spell formation.

The spell formation was deployed both to prevent people from

fleeing away as well as to suppress the enormous fluctuations in spirit power. The battle between thirteen Dacheng experts wasn't something ordinary cultivators could imagine. With every move, all of them were driving the formidable power heaven and earth to attack. Even the several YuanYing experts could only rely on the spell formation to watch from far, but it was impossible for them to come near.

Speaking of the battle, after being woken up from their seclusion meditation by attacks, the three Dacheng experts of Hundred Thousand Mountains were both furious and alarmed. Just this sudden transformation seclusion to battle mode was sufficient to cause them grave injuries, almost causing them to cough up blood. Apart from the last one, who managed ordinary affairs and had been injured before the battle began.

Confronting these nine Dacheng experts, the four people of Hundred Thousand Mountains also began to stake their life on the outcome. They clearly understood that since so many experts had started attacking as soon as they came, there was no chance for the people of Hundred Thousand Mountain to flee alive and, at this critical moment, they also had begun to erupt with power.

As the saying goes: place anyone on the field of death and they would fight to live. Facing death's door, the four enemies were trying their best. In the face of their full power attacks, the nine experts didn't have the intention to die together with them. Since they occupied complete superiority, they naturally wanted to obtain the best results. Even if they had to delay the fight a bit longer, they wanted to make the enemy consume all their spirit power and die without their own side suffering any major casualty.

This was also the reason why the battle had continued for so long. Facing the attacks of the nine experts, the four enemies were completely spent. One of them who had the most serious injuries was unable to defend himself in battle and hid behind his companion's back struggling whilst at death's door.

With one less enemy, everyone's spirit was greatly roused. With this disturbance in balance, the four of them didn't have any chance to get lucky. They didn't even know why they had to suddenly experience this type of calamity which exterminated them.

Under the continuous attack of the nine Dacheng experts, the four enemy experts, who were unable to close their eyes because of regret, finally died. The instant they perished, everyone outside the spell formation loudly cheered.

Everyone in the villa had been exterminated. This also implied that the original upper echelons controlling the Hundred Thousand Mountains behind the scenes had been exterminated, only leaving a few scum behind.

Hundred Thousand Mountain was a pragmatic place, since these people were exchanged with an even more formidable backstage power, the people who ran businesses naturally submitted obediently, not daring to be rash.

The end of this battle also implied that the Hundred Thousand Mountains was now under the control of the alliance of the four sects. In the future, the countless treasures and natural resources would be the profits of these four sects.

However, the counterattack by the four experts facing death's door had also wounded five out of nine experts. Fortunately, most of them only had light injuries and hadn't lost any battle strength. However, despite that, there were also two experts whose cultivation had dropped. But killing four Dacheng experts for such price had really been a profitable business.

Old tree demon had already used the heart questioning pill and harmonized with the PengLai Divine Wood, so he had formed another clone using the Body Dividing Secrets. This clone was sent here. He was also the one who had sustained the most serious injuries. After all, the Pure Yang Palace had been the main

instigator. Moreover, they had to do their best since they were here under the pretense of getting revenge.

Their next action was naturally to sort through the battlefield and divide spoils of war. Soon after, a batch of staff rushed over and scattered over the entire estate of the Hundred Thousand Mountains to quickly stabilize the markets and calm down people.

The most difficult task was to kill these four formidable experts, which had been accomplished, so there were no more difficulties left. Soon after news spread, the people of Hundred Thousand Mountains had surprisingly tried to destroy the Pure Yang Palace. In return, the Pure Yang Palace had immediately formed alliance with few big sects and had ruthlessly exacted their revenge.

With the destruction of the secret organization, everything else went as expected. Especially when the four sect alliance declared that the rules of Hundred Thousand Mountains would remain the same, cultivators of all paths including dao, devil and demon paths could enter whenever they wanted, only, no one could seize the treasures of the weak by relying on their strength, which even received the support of many cultivators.

This move of the four sect alliance had astonished the entire world, especially when the Pure Yang Palace showed the bloodthirstiness which they rarely displayed. They gained a whole new level of respect among the cultivators.

After the end of this matter, no one dared to act like that clan and tried to act shamelessly with the Pure Yang Palace. It must be known that the sect area of the Pure Yang Palace was still under construction. Only god knows whether the demonic fire formed after their sect had been destroyed had been completely vented or not. If someone still dared to go against them, they would just be courting death.

The later matters didn't have anything to do with Yang Chen. He even handed over the task of receiving the spoils of war to the old

tree demon's clone and great master Wang Yong. He himself only received the corpses of the four Dacheng experts and directly returned back to the MeiQing Mountain and to the Pure Yang Palace with She Kui and Xie Sha.

Even without adding the spoils of war, this time, his harvest had been enormous. Not to mention other things, just urging the growth of the thunder pomegranate trees had allowed them to reach two hundred years maturity. Moreover, he was also able to refine the clean bottle Medicine Garden once more and discovered the secret door. This was already sufficient to make him delighted. Furthermore, he had also been able to get rid of Liang Shaoming, the spy of the Greatest Heaven Sect, ensuring his master's safety. What else could be a better reward for him?

After returning to the sect, the first thing he did was to go see his master. After greeting her once to let her know that everyone was safe and in good health, he went straight to the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace to see Palace Master.

“Everything successful?”

Seeing Yang Chen come, Palace Master asked feeling pleasantly surprised.

“Successful!”

Yang Chen nodded, giving a positive reply to Palace Master.

“Good!”

Palace Master exhaled a deep breath and relaxed. He then continued to talk with Yang Chen:

“Yang Chen, the matter which you mentioned last time, I have thought about it carefully, but it will still be planned and managed according to your intentions.”

“Eh?”

Yang Chen was startled, feeling completely confused, the matter

he mentioned last time? What matter was that?

Chapter 225 - Palace Master's Cultivation

Palace Master didn't have any hesitation in front of Yang Chen and directly spoke what he was thinking.

After suffering from the ambush last time, he had clearly realized that his cultivation was still weak. Although it was sufficient to manage a second rate sect, but as Pure Yang Palace has developed in recent times and considering its future development, he understood that his cultivation may not be able to keep up with it. Therefore, the matter of quickly increasing his cultivation was the most pressing issue for him presently.

But, Palace Master was in the end the Palace Master, elders like Wang Yong would often enter seclusion but he couldn't do this so lightly as he still has to manage the Pure Yang Palace. So an efficient method to increase his cultivation has become all the more important.

Just as Yang Chen had previously mentioned, he knew a metal attributed dual cultivation method which could help increase the Palace Master's cultivation by using a harmonious dual cultivation process. Such a method was perfectly suitable for the Palace Master. He wouldn't need to enter seclusion during cultivation, but the results would still approximately be the same as if he did. That's why the Palace Master was currently having this conversation with Yang Chen.

Yang Chen immediately realized what the Palace Master was thinking. He didn't find anything abnormal about it. Wanting to increase his cultivation while sparing no efforts in working for the sect, in fact, Palace Master Zhong Jiao was indeed a good sect leader.

During Yang Chen's previous life, the Palace Master because wasn't good at seeing the true colour of people. He had been fooled by people like Liang Shaoming at the end. But now, this type of

problem no longer existed. Liang Shaoming had already been dealt with. Moreover, the sect had also began to walk on the path of rapid development. Seeing the bright future prospects of the Pure Yang Palace, Palace Master was also confidently rushing to increase his strength.

The Palace Master was not alone in displaying this attitude. Wing Yong and the other elders felt the same as the Palace Master. All of them were filled with the hope of revitalizing the Pure Yang Palace and were going all out in hopes of building a bright future. This was the Pure Yang Palace which Yang Chen had always desired to see.

“I have carefully thought about this for many days and have selected some dao companions which may be suitable.”

Palace Master amiably said to Yang Chen:

“Help me take a look and see which one of them is most suitable?”

His words were completely natural. The Palace Master didn't feel the least bit embarrassed and restricted because of asking a junior like Yang Chen to assist in selecting a suitable dao companion in his place.

Yang Chen also didn't feel this was something to be embarrassed about, since the cultivation method had come from him, Yang Chen could also determine which one was most suitable among them compared to others.

He looked over the candidates once, all of them were YuanYing experts from either the Green Jade Immortal Islands or the Clear Sky Sect. Both the Green Jade Immortal Islands and the Clear Sky Sect had many female disciples, and the majority of their experts were also women. Presently the Pure Yang Palace had good coordination with these two big sects at the Hundred Thousand Mountains. If Palace Master was willing to choose a dao companion from either of their sects, that will also make the

relationship between the sects closer.

Looking at this list of names, Yang Chen suddenly felt as if he was being relieved of a burden. If the Palace Master was willing to personally step in and advance their friendship, that would consolidate the relationship between sects even more strongly than Yang Chen choosing Shi Shanshan or Sun Qingxue as his dao companion.

But as soon as he had this thought, Yang Chen was dejected. The Palace Master could not have two dao companions. Neither the Clear Sky Sect nor the Green Jade Immortal Islands would agree to send one disciple from each sect to become dao companions with the Palace Master. Regardless of whomever Palace Master chose, it would attract resentment from the other sect unless someone from the elders also used this method to tie knot with someone from the other sect at the same time.

Dao companions were very beneficial for everyone, but if the Pure Yang Palace relied on such methods, then it certainly would be mocked by people for using women to attach with two big sects. The hope of revitalizing a sect which had been formed with great difficulty would also be suppressed by rumors and gossip. Probably, the Palace Master had also thought about this, and that's why had consulted with Yang Chen.

When Yang Chen took a quick look, he suddenly discovered a familiar name. Clear Sky Sect's elder Mo Qian, who also had a full metal spirit root, had the cultivation at the mid YuanYing stage and was perfectly equivalent with the Palace Master, making her a suitable candidate.

Currently Mo Qian was in Yang Chen's Medicine Garden, untiredly and crazily cultivating. If the Palace Master was willing, Yang Chen was absolutely happy to take her out and make her the Palace Master's dao companion. In this way, the cultivation of both the Palace Master and Mo Qian would increase. Moreover, because Mo Qian had disappeared for some time now, as long as

they keep it a secret, no one would think that her disappearance had any relation with Pure Yang Palace.

The only problem was that presently Yang Chen still didn't dare to suddenly inform the Palace Master that Mo Qian had already become a vegetable. He didn't fear that the Palace Master would sell him out, but rather this information was too shocking. The best way would be to make the Palace Master slowly accept this.

“Palace Master, according to disciple's thoughts, Clear Sky Sect's edler Mo Qian is a suitable candidate.”

Yang Chen mulled over it for a moment and raised his suggestion to Palace Master.

“Elder Mo Qian?”

Palace Master creased his brows. Mo Qian's name was towards the end of the list. The main reason for this was that, currently, the whereabouts of Mo Qian and her disciples wasn't known, so there wasn't any way to select Mo Qian for the time being.

“Clear Sky Sect's elder Mo had been missing for a few decades.”

Fearing that Yang Chen wasn't aware, Palace Master explained to Yang Chen:

“I am afraid that it won't be so easy.”

“When we get to the mountain, there'll be a way. Palace Master doesn't need to worry about this for now.”

Yang Chen smiled and continued:

“However, it will be best if Palace Master follows disciple's great master and refined a destined flying sword first.”

The matter of Wang Yong refining a destined flying sword hadn't been secret among the elders of the same sect. Moreover, after refining for many years in seclusion, Wang Yong's cultivation had increased by leaps and bounds. Everyone had noted this point and were filled with a craving to do the same. Now Yang Chen was also

saying that this was a good method.

“Destined flying sword?”

A shine passed through the Palace Master’s eyes at the thought. After the possession of Hundred Thousand Mountains, he had all the required ingredients. Moreover, refining a destined flying sword was indeed an enormous lure. Previously, he didn’t have any good ingredients, but now he didn’t need to worry about this lack.

Moreover, refining destined flying sword was completely different from other things. He absolutely didn’t have need to enter seclusion. Like Yang Chen, whose immortal executing blade was being nourished within his spirit sea presently, it didn’t hinder Yang Chen’s regular activities in the least. It would only take a little more time, that’s all.

“Speaking of which, disciple has some suitable ingredients.”

Yang Chen laughed, taking out that golden seal obtained after killing that YuanYing stage expert last time and presenting it to Palace Master.

Although that golden seal had been turned into shreds by the sword spell of the domed hall and had been ruined beyond recognition. But even if this magic weapon, while being considered as damaged beyond repair, the materials used to make it were still there and could still be considered as first rate metal attributed materials. They were more than suitable to be used for refining a metal attributed flying sword.

“This golden seal. Don’t you want to keep it for yourself?”

Naturally, the Palace Master knew that this golden seal was an exceptionally good raw materials to refine a destined flying sword, but as a Palace Master, he couldn’t lower himself to taking a disciple’s belongings to refine his own destined flying sword.

“For the time being, disciple isn’t refining his metal attributed

flying sword. This gift could be considered as disciple showing his filial respects, Palace Master should accept it.”

Yang Chen smiled and pushed the golden seal towards Palace Master:

“As for Palace Master’s dao companion for dual cultivation, disciple will think about it and find a way.”

First planting the seeds here which would allow Palace Master to have some mental preparation, thus when he took out Mo Qian in the future, Palace Master should be able to accept it. At least it wouldn’t go as far as giving him a sudden fright.

Moreover, during this time, Yang Chen needed to refine the living puppet of Mo Qian once more so as to avoid any mishaps after her cultivation increased. Although the chances of such an accident happening were too low, but he just want to be cautious in case of every possibility.

Palace Master wasn’t too astonished when Yang Chen gifted the golden seal to him. He could even handover the heart questioning pill without the slightest hesitation, then what to speak of a little raw material. By comparison, Palace Master cared a hundred times more about Yang Chen’s kind intentions than that ingrateful bast*rd Liang Shoaming.

This golden seal was sufficient to keep the Palace Master occupied for a long time. Then Yang Chen provided him with a detailed explanation of everything that had happened at the Hundred Thousand Mountains. Hearing the tale cause the Palace Master to once again become washed over by a wave of astonishment.

“You cultivated thunder pomegranates?”

Palace Master didn’t dare to believe what he was hearing. Both of his eyes went wide and a dumbstruck expression appeared on his face. Few years ago, someone wanted to use this as an opportunity

to punish Yang Chen, but who could have thought that unexpectedly Yang Chen had already reared thunder pomegranates.

Yang Chen didn't reply directly, rather took out ten thunder pomegranates from his qiankun pouch and placed them in front of Palace Master. These thunder pomegranates had sufficient maturity and had also discharged the thunder energy, making them ready to be used for absorbing lightning.

Palace Master reached out his hand to pick the thunder pomegranates and examined them one by one. After looking at these thunder pomegranates with same size, same maturity, apart from being both alarmed and excited at the same time, what could he say?

"This would make sure that the underconfident JieDan cultivators of my sect also have the hope of entering YuanYing stage!"

Palace Master didn't know how to describe his current mood. Capturing the Hundred Thousand Mountain had made the Pure Yang Palace wealthy and overbearing, but these thunder pomegranates would give hope to many JieDan experts who had no hopes of reaching YuanYing stage.

Although relying on external sources to increase cultivation wasn't the best method, but regarding those disciples whose aptitude was average, reaching JieDan stage was already the limit. But now, with these thunder pomegranates, they had the possibility of entering YuanYing stage and to increase their life expectancy while greatly increasing their cultivation at the same time.

Whether it was for the disciple or for the sect, this was a huge matter. Many YuanYing stage disciples also meant an increase in the sect's strength. Moreover after reaching the YuanYing stage, maybe they could also rush towards even higher realms? The higher the realm, the greater the chances, absolutely a win win

situation.

“These thunder pomegranates, how many do you have? The sect will buy from you!”

The Palace Master obviously knew which matters were important and which matters weren't and directly said to Yang Chen:

“Sect contribution points, spirit stones, magic weapons, cultivation methods, other materials, whatever you need, you will get!”

The increase in the sect's strength was also related to cultivating the lower level disciples apart from the natural resources it possessed or the number of experts it had.

Presently, with the xun qi pill, the number of outer disciples of the Pure Yang Palace had greatly increased. With the thunder pomegranates, the hopes of JieDan experts would also be boosted. High level elders also had the heart questioning pill, so from top to bottom, the Pure Yang Palace's strength was increasing. As a Palace Master, what else could he hope for?

Speaking of which, all these were almost because of Yang Chen. Or it could also be said that everything was completely because of Yang Chen. From xun qi pill to the thunder pomegranate to the heart questioning pill, and from the Hundred Thousand Mountains to finding the traitor Liang Shaoming, every matter had some relation with Yang Chen.

At this very moment, the Palace Master even had an intense desire to nurture Yang Chen as the next generation Palace Master. Once this thought appeared in his mind, it couldn't be suppressed again. Although this kind of matter still required consultation with other elders, but he was convinced that other elders absolutely wouldn't oppose it.

A disciple who possessed such a strong luck, and moreover still

had the innate talent in concocting pills. Who wouldn't be willing? Just the achievements of Yang Chen in the previous few years were sufficient to make the Palace Master himself feel inferior, let alone other elders.

“Palace Master, these thunder pomegranates have already been revealed in front of experts of other sects, so disciple doesn't think there is a great possibility that the sect can monopolize them.”

Looking at the Palace Master within his beautiful dream, Yang Chen found it somewhat laughable but he had no choice other than to break Palace Master's beautiful dream:

“Even if disciple hands all of them over to the sect, then they will use all kinds of other means to demand them from the sect.”

“En, your words make sense.”

Palace Master was worthy of being the Palace Master, he immediately became aware of the reality and at once figured out a response:

“However, since you have found the method of growing them, so if they want them, then they must be willing to indebted to my sect and perhaps would have to pay with something exceeding the price of thunder pomegranates itself in exchange. In the end, we are the ones who would get the most benefits. You don't have to worry about these, the sect will help you.”

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen knew that Palace Master would think of a countermeasure, so he just touched the subject but didn't delve deeper.

“Yang Chen, recently you have been in limelight, which is both good and bad.”

After rejoicing, the Palace Master began to worry about Yang Chen. Since he had planned to cultivate Yang Chen as the next Palace Master, this matter required even more comprehensive

consideration to nurture him. First and foremost being his safety:

“In the future, whenever you go out of the sect, regardless of wherever you go or at what time, you must take along She Kui and Xie Sha. Both of them are also fond of being with you, so they will also look after your safety.”

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen replied. Yang Chen who had a lot of experience could clearly understand the Palace Master’s concern.

“Your cultivation, within less than four decades after reaching foundation stage, it has already progressed to late foundation stage.”

Palace Master continued:

“Your cultivation speed is unprecedented. Although it has some relation to absorbing flames, but, you yourself had also been persistent and hardworking. However, don’t be too hasty, even if you have many legendary herbs, don’t abuse them. When the time is suitable, properly consolidate current cultivation first. By all means, don’t harm yourself.”

In all fairness, this was his genuine worry, Yang Chen’s cultivation speed had indeed been fast, so fast that anyone hearing about it for the first time wouldn’t dare to believe it. Even the Green Jade Immortal Islands’ Shi Shanshan had spent a full 80 years in the foundation stage before reaching the JieDan stage. Since even the people with a full spirit root had taken so long, then what to speak of Yang Chen. Regarding this, the Palace Master’s concern

“Disciple understands!”

Yang Chen bowed and made his salutations to express his gratitude:

“With the matter of Hundred Thousand Mountains settled, disciple had also intended to settle down and consolidate his

cultivation first.”

Chapter 226 - Exploring Another Residence

Yang Chen himself had sensed some disequilibrium in his cultivation. If he hadn't been busy dealing with the Hundred Thousand Mountain to completely remove the threat to Gao Yue, then he would have already taken care of it.

On the surface, he completely seemed to be a fire attributed cultivator, since his cultivation in the fire attribute had surpassed others. But, this wasn't a good phenomenon regarding the Yin and Yang five phases secrets or the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets that he cultivated.

The most important thing in the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets was equilibrium. Although he could tolerate his fire attribute spirit power surpassing others for a short time, but finally he had to achieve equilibrium.

So Yang Chen had intended to spend some time on increasing other attributes spirit power. In any case, the fiercest people of the Hundred Thousand Mountain had been subdued, there will certainly be no one left who would want to take revenge for the young master or the old manager of the auction house, and even if someone would want to take revenge, it will be directed towards the Pure Yang Palace and not Yang Chen or Gao Yue.

Just when Yang Chen was going to leave, the Palace Master suddenly called him back and informed him about another matter which was giving him endless headache:

"I have made many trips to Clear Sky Sect. They have requested that Sun Qingxue should be treated the same as Shi Shanshan, asking you to not favour one and discriminate against another. Since you have already taken a trip with Shi Shanshan, then you must also go out with Sun Qingxue on a trip to gain experience."

During his previous life, Yang Chen basically didn't have to fight this kind of battle and thus didn't have the least bit of experience

about it. He was totally oblivious that his indecision and procrastination had caused great jealousy. In fact, among cultivators, very few people had to worry about this kind of problem. Yang Chen's current problem was extremely unique.

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Since Palace Master had already instructed him, Yang Chen could only agree helplessly. He didn't dislike Sun Qingxue and since he had already taken a trip with Shi Shanshan, then going with Sun Qingxue also wasn't a big problem.

When the matter regarding Hundred Thousand Mountains was being planned, everything was arranged carefully and quietly, but when the alliance of the four sects genuinely made a move, they uprooted the enemy with an irresistible force.

The dao sects raised a great clamour after the Pure Yang Palace and other three sects made their move. But the matter had already reached this stage, it was completely impossible for anyone to try to stick their foot, regardless of whatever pretense they used. That wouldn't be considered as helping, rather a scheme to forcefully seize the business of these four sects and incur hatred of ruining the livelihood of other people. No one would be foolish enough to infuriate both the Clear Sky Sect and Green Jade Immortal Islands at the same time together with Pure Yang Palace and Beast Taming Sects, both of whom had a Dacheng expert.

The follow up personnel had also been dispatched, and everything had been taken care of. Nine Dacheng experts with several YuanYing experts had formed nine squads and had began to receive underlings for controlling Hundred Thousand Mountains from behind the scenes.

A complete new mountain manor had been established at another location. Yang Chen had completely absorbed the thunder and lightning power of the Seven Star Godly Thunder Spell and the battle among the thirteen Dacheng experts had already reduced

the previous villa into pieces, removing any possibility of future use.

Usually three Dacheng experts would be stationed here, one from each Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky Sect respectively. Since they have many experts and can take turns to come here. The last place would be alternated between Pure Yang Palace and Beast Taming Sect, each sect's expert would take responsibility for ten years.

Naturally, these guarding experts wouldn't have to manage anything specific. The ordinary matter would be handled by people who knew how to run a business and who would be dispatched by these four sects. It was clear that if the current system at Hundred Thousand Mountains was better than before, then the earnings will also be higher.

Regarding the worries of dao, demon and devil paths, the four sects displayed complete sincerity. This time, it was completely the fault of the Hundred Thousand Mountain who had destroyed the Pure Yang Palace's sect area first. Taking revenge was the sole reason why these four sects had attacked. As for the future matters, business was business. It was completely unrelated to position of dao, demon and devil paths.

This position of view was approved by everyone. Apart from the Pure Yang Palace, the only ones who knew the actual situation were the Greatest Heaven Sect, but they didn't dare to speak up. In any case, the Greatest Heaven Sect couldn't just proclaim that the Pure Yang Palace wasn't destroyed by the Hundred Thousand Mountains, rather by their mole at Pure Yang Palace!

Everything had been advancing properly according to the arrangements. The visits between the four sects had also become exceptionally frequent. This time's trip was just for the spoils of war at the villa, which made everyone sufficiently excited. They couldn't be considered a replacement of the heart questioning pill promised by Yang Chen, but such good affairs, the more they

happen the better.

Pure Yang Palace's Eccentric Hall's hall master Gui Shanyou was among the people who were selected for the first turn to oversee the Hundred Thousand Mountain. The Hundred Thousand Mountain was basically his home, after pacify the few remaining disobedient people, the old tree demon again sprinkled large number of cassia tree sprouts with their numbers reaching several tens of thousands like he had done at MeiQing Mountain.

When the roots of all had been combined together, Gui Shanyou would know of all activities in every area of the Hundred Thousand Mountains at all times. So, no one could be more suitable than him to be appointed among the first overseers. Naturally, it was Gui Shanyou's clone which had gone to sit guard, and its original body was still at Yang Chen's courtyard in the Pure Yang Palace absorbing PengLai Divine Wood.

The matter of operating business had no relation with Yang Chen for the time being as it was being dealt by specialized people from the four sects. Yang Chen rushed back to Gao Yue's side. His master's water attributed cultivation had already reached mid foundation stage, so it was time that he should discuss cultivation with his master.

Yang Chen had revealed a lot of things on this trip. Heart questioning pill, thunder pomegranate as well as magic weapon which could kill YuanYing stage experts. If someone would want to attack Yang Chen in the future, he would certainly factor all those things. Yang Chen could only find some other trump cards which other people couldn't possibly know about.

His great master had already refined the fire qilin's horn into a flying sword, but his master's flying sword hadn't been settled yet. At the same time, Yang Chen also needed to think about Gongsun Ling's destined flying sword. Recalling about the remaining magic weapons at the Palace of Dragons, Yang Chen's heart began to beat faster.

Heavenly Roar had already swallowed half of Heavenly Roar Dog's blood essence. The bloodlines of Yazi within his body had been completely aroused. Present Heavenly Roar didn't look like that weak little pup anymore. Its head had remained the same but its body had grown longer, resembling more and more a dragon's body.

The long slender body would remain wrapped around the bright ray sword all day long without the slightest fear of its sharp edge. Within its mouth, it would hold the second wood flying sword tightly, afraid that someone may snatch it. Only Yang Chen could take the flying sword away from him.

Yazi, dragon's second son, had the body of a dragon and the head of a dog, an unyielding temperament, was a brave and ruthless warrior, and fond of belligerent killing. He would always hold a magic weapon in his mouth, had glaring eyes, and would be engraved on the sword hilts and knife end's to increase their strength.

Heavenly Roar had began to look like the legendary Yazi more and more with time. Perhaps right now, the bloodlines were being aroused frantically. After Heavenly Roar had completely transformed into Yazi, he might completely remove the restrictions at the Palace Of Dragon King and collect all the items left there.

Thinking this, Yang Chen again looked at Heavenly Roar's figure, and without any hesitation, fed it the remaining half blood essence.

"Yang Chen, you tell us. Since the sect had suddenly seized the Hundred Thousand Mountains, would it attract the envy from other sects?"

Gao Yue had just heard about the sect's large scale action and couldn't help but feel astonished at the daring of sect's upper echelon. When Yang Chen had hurried over to her, she had been

discussing this issue with Gongsun Ling. As she saw yang Chen, she naturally asked him.

“How can that happen?”

Yang Chen laughed, then started to explain:

“The issue of our sect mountain being destroyed was just an excuse. The Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky Sect were the main force. My sect and Beast Taming Sect were only assistants. If other sects have some ideas about the Hundred Thousand Mountains, then first they must think of a way to deal with Green Jade Immortal Islands and Clear Sky Sect.”

The two females had only been talking about it, but they weren't worried much. However, Gao Yue kept staring at Yang Chen for a long time without saying anything. She then asked with a straight face:

“Is this all because of you?”

“Hundred Thousand Mountains were unwilling to give up and insisted on settling old scores.”

Yang Chen nodded his head, this time. He also fearlessly informed Gao Yue of the truth:

“Disciple had already been attacked by them twice. Disciple was afraid that they would come after master and thus made the first strike to get the upper hand.”

Gao Yue had guessed the entire story. Last time, Yang Chen had raised a commotion at the Hundred Thousand Mountains without the slightest hesitation. If he hadn't been worried about Gao Yue's injury then he wouldn't have let them off lightly just by getting rid of that auction's manager and young master. If at that time, any one of the four Dacheng experts had been present, then Yang Chen wouldn't have had the slightest hesitation in using his blood river. Then even if he would have to again refine his destined immortal beheading blade, he would have certainly massacred the entire

Hundred Thousand Mountains, turning it into an ocean of blood.

Regarding her disciple's thinking, Gao Yue just didn't know what to say that would be good. However, the most sensitive heartstrings in her heart again began to stir. A lump formed in her throat and tears glistened in her eyes. But, in the end, she was able to endure in front of Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling.

For her, Yang Chen had surprisingly uprooted the entire Hundred Thousand Mountains which had four Dacheng experts. While he was only at the foundation stage now. Thinking about this, Gao Yue was moved emotionally while being astonished and alarmed at the same time.

For such a simple reason, Yang Chen had first taken out the heart questioning pill and then the thunder pomegranates. The appearance of any one of those items could easily send the cultivation world into turmoil, but Yang Chen had revealed them to ensure her safety and remove the mark from her back. Such affection, Gao Yue didn't even know how to respond to them.

Gongsun Ling looked at Yang Chen with eyes full of envy but also with tenderness. Even if cultivators were supposed to have severed all their emotions, but in the end, some human feelings still remain.

“No need to be anxious. The matter has already been dealt with.”

Yang Chen consoled his master. Looking at master's almost crying face, Yang Chen's heart was filled with sweetness. For his master, even if he had paid an even higher price, then also what would be the problem?

“For some years, stay within the sect. Don't run around everywhere!”

Gao Yue commanded in a dignified and unyielding tone:

“Presently, there certainly will be many people on the outside who would wish to harm you, so you must not casually go out.”

“Yes, master!”

Yang Chen also didn't oppose and agreed. In any case, Heavenly Roar would still require a long time to absorb the blood essence. During this time, he would obediently remain inside the sect and accompany his master.

However, Gao Yue's concern also reminded Yang Chen. The Pure Yang Palace had allied with the Green Jade Immortal Islands and the Clear Sky Sect and had captured the Hundred Thousand Mountains. Although temporarily people wouldn't dare to have any ideas about the Pure Yang Palace, as the profits poured in, it would certainly attract the greed of others. Maybe they couldn't do anything to the Pure Yang Palace as a whole, but dealing with some disciples of the Pure Yang Palace wasn't impossible. The cultivation world couldn't do without such matters, so he needed to properly make the preparations to counter them.

Naturally, the best method was to substantially increase the battle strength of all the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace. If the strength of the entire Pure Yang Palace increased, then it would be like the top sects, and others wouldn't dare to have devious ideas about them.

For the time being, Yang Chen didn't have any method to care for all the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace. However, the case was different for the people by his side like his master, Gongsun Ling, Du Qian, Wang Yong or Shangguan Feng. The strength of those people must be increased quickly.

Soon, Yang Chen remembered a place which was greatly suitable for everyone at the foundation stage to temper themselves and increase their battle strength. Moreover, this location still had other benefits. That place didn't hold much significance for Yang Chen, but after he could completely control it, it would offer an exceptional training location as well as a place to retreat to at a critical time.

Even a crafty rabbit has three burrows. Currently Pure Yang Palace had just the MeiQing Mountain and the Hundred Thousand Mountain. The sect still lacked one more. The location Yang Chen had recalled was just perfect. It could be regarded as a training location for a long time, and if he could collect it for himself, then it could act as exceptionally good habitat for the Pure Yang Palace.

The grade of this legendary abode was very high. As Yang Chen remembered, this cave was left by someone facing death's door at the QingQiong Mountain and was sealed at the moment. The seal required a special method to be opened. As for collecting it, the process was an even more troublesome.

The spirit power on QingQiong Mountain was far more plentiful compared to MeiQing Mountain. That cave could even be classified as blessed by god. It was quite far from MeiQing Mountain where the Pure Yang Palace was currently located.

Yang Chen had many such caves in his memory, but he couldn't occupy them all by himself. Moreover, compared to the Dragon King's Palace where magic weapons were hidden, which cave could be considered a better residence? As for the others, naturally Yang Chen would give priority to the people by his side to obtain the benefits first.

QingQiong Mountain's legendary abode had been sealed for a long time. Reportedly, it had many demon beasts and puppets. Presently, it was unknown how these inhabitants might have matured. One thing was certain, the cave was naturally divided into different grade palaces and other locations which contains demon beasts and puppets of different grades, making it an exceptionally good training location.

The legendary abode was sufficiently large. Even if the entire Pure Yang Palace, which contained thousands of disciples, was to move in, there would still be much space left. Even if the Pure Yang Palace was much larger, the legendary abode would still be able to hold it. Originally, it was the place for a large sect to take

refuge in, but some unknown entity exterminated the entire sect. Later it became the dwelling of someone from the Heavenly Court, and now it had fallen into Yang Chen's hands.

There weren't any other problems with this cave, and it was just the perfect place to be used to train those people by his side. It was also a good place to stroll around sometimes. He knew that apart from the demon beasts and puppets, this cave dwelling also contained a large number of medicinal fields which had been sealed for more than ten thousand years. If they hadn't been wrecked by the demon beasts, then he could obtain many benefits. Moreover, it was also unknown whether the treasury of that large sect had been plundered or not.

Even if, it didn't contain all these, just the location, which had exceptional spirit power, was enough to nurture ten thousand year old demon beasts and was already a treasure which could make anyone drool over. If he even plucked a body hair from any of those demon beasts, it could also be sold as a thousand year old profound silk.

This kind of place was perfect for master and Gongsun Ling to temper themselves.

Chapter 227 - Master Will Make The Decision For You

Coincidentally, all the people Yang Chen was thinking about had already gone out. Du Qian, Shangguan Feng, and Wang Yong, as well as Yang Chen's previous four servants, had surprisingly all had been sent out by their respective masters. Only his master, Gao Yue, and his senior apprentice sister Gongsun Ling were left.

"It can only be said that their luck is lacking!"

Yang Chen slightly regretted and gave up on waiting for them. He decided to do some scouting with his master and senior apprentice sister first.

This time, Yang Chen had planned to let his master and senior apprentice sister get some training as well as obtain some benefits for himself, so for the time being, he didn't inform other people of the sect. Moreover, reporting something to the sect required proof. He couldn't just go and shoot his mouth. It was better to first make a trip with them. This trip would also give him the opportunity to make up some excuse like they just encountered that location while travelling.

"Where are you taking us?"

Gao Yue knew that Yang Chen frequently did actions that astonished everyone. Therefore, she didn't feel it was odd and also didn't refuse and just asked him first about it.

"A good place. You don't need to worry about where we are going. In any case, disciple will never harm master."

Yang Chen didn't said anything to remove their doubts because he didn't want to ruin the surprise.

Gao Yue agreed. Gongsun Ling also nodded her head, so Yang Chen immediately went to the Palace Master to make a report. There was nothing to be done about it. Presently, he was a popular

person in the sect, so he wasn't allowed to casually go out. The Palace Master must always know his whereabouts.

“Disciple is going out to gain experience with master and senior apprentice sister.”

Yang Chen told him a little fib, since this wasn't any important matter, so he kept it a secret for the time being.

“Ok, but take She Kui and Xie Sha along and also remember to be careful!”

Naturally the Palace Master wouldn't restrict Yang Chen's freedom and only reminded him to take along the two experts as protection. Right now, the Palace Master was concerned about dealing with how the matter of the Hundred Thousand Mountains was being received as well as making the business arrangements and didn't have the time to solely concentrate on Yang Chen. In any case, as long as Yang Chen was safe, he could go wherever he wanted.

Everytime She Kui and Xie Sha followed after Yang Chen, both of them could kill people and loot their wealth, which perfectly suited their preferences. Especially, brazenly killing and plundering their belongings, which surprisingly also gained them praise from others. The current conditions were far better compared to when they were at the Desolate Valley. So when Yang Chen called for them, they both immediately left together with him.

Flying to the QingQiong Mountain would take a long time. Within the flying shuttle, Yang Chen remembered how he had enjoyed his time with Shi Shanshan and also made some fresh tea for his master and senior apprentice sister. After adding water properly, he placed the tea in front of his master, senior apprentice sister and the two eccentric hall seniors and waited for their assessment.

Gao Yue who was enjoying the filial respects from her disciple

had no qualms about the tea being served. Gongsun Ling was also the senior apprentice sister, so it was also justifiable that she would only sit and relax. Even She Kui and Xie Sha were higher in seniority compared to Yang Chen, so Yang Chen was the only one who had to do all the work.

After calmly sampling the fine tea, Gao Yue slightly nodded her head to express her praise. Gongsun Ling also took little gulps in a dignified manner and didn't say anything for a long time, but the intoxicated expression in her eyes betrayed her otherwise expressionless face.

As for She Kui and Xie Sha, they were just recklessly destroying this beautiful tea, dampening the atmosphere by drinking one whole cup in one gulp and continued to cry that it was insufficient, which annoyed Yang Chen so much that he just wanted to kick both of them once.

"I have long heard about the Green Jade Immortal Islands' Fairy Shi's good tea, Yang Chen. Did you learned this skill from Fairy Shi?"

After enjoying the tea for a good while, Gao Yue asked him beaming with smiles.

Hearing this single sentence gave Yang Chen another headache, and he didn't know how to reply. Previously, he had never had the habit of making tea, he was just trying imitate the enjoyment when he had done this last time with Shi Shanshan on the Flying Shuttle, but hadn't anticipated that his master would start mocking him.

.Gongsun Ling also stopped drinking the tea and looked at Yang Chen with a thoughtful expression, as if waiting for him to reply.

"Not really, but I was reminded of this because of her."

Yang Chen neither confirmed nor completely refused to answer:

"However, disciple had learned this technique long ago, so the

credit doesn't go to her."

After he said this, Yang Chen also felt somewhat strange. How could he remember the things he had done with Shi Shanshan so easily? Although juniors offering tea to their seniors isn't anything strange, but Yang Chen certainly wouldn't have done so earlier.

Although he felt strange, it didn't obstruct them from enjoying this pastime with nothing on hand. Yang Chen's technique was exceptionally good. Moreover, the water he had used this time was also far better as well as the maturity of tea leaves had been increased by two hundred years after being passed through the Medicine Garden, so the tea was more fragrant and stronger compared to when he had made it together with Shi Shanshan. Although Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling never had the habit of drinking tea previously, but that didn't stop them from relishing it now.

She Kui and Xie Sha were acting completely like servants, regardless of how high their cultivation was. They didn't care about anything and were only interested in following Yang Chen to kill and burn. On the whole journey, only his master and senior apprentice sister conversed with him.

"So where are you taking us?"

Seeing that they had reached ocean after Yang Chen had piloted the Flying Shuttle for two months and the Flying Shuttle had transformed into a huge ship floating on the ocean, Gao Yue couldn't help but ask.

"You will know when we reach there."

Yang Chen still didn't reveal anything, fearing that it would ruin the surprise. To reach QingQiong Mountain, they must cross the ocean, but seeing that his master was enjoying the scenery along the way, Yang Chen wished that the journey would last longer.

"Is it some place you have read about in some book?"

Gao Yue again guessed.

“Yes!”

Yang Chen hastily nodded his head. Only now, he clearly realized how effective his image of a scholar and avid reader had become. Any unnatural matter could be pushed under with this excuse. In any case, others were incapable of verifying, and Yang Chen himself wouldn't also tell them which book it was. In fact, even if they tried to verify, it would take long time to properly confirm things.

“Ok!”

Gao Yue didn't press him anymore and steered the subject to another direction:

“Yang Chen, how are you thinking of dealing with the Green Jade Immortal Islands' Fairy Shi and the Clear Sky Sect's Sun Qingxue?”

“Disciple himself doesn't know.”

Hearing this question, a bitter smile appeared on Yang Chen's face and he sighed deeply. Actually, he also didn't know how to deal with it:

“Palace Master has said to not discriminate among them and had asked disciple to go out with Sun Qingxue on a trip to gain experience. Disciple was just fretting over this.”

“What's there to worry about.”

When Gao Yue saw Yang Chen's face, her mood suddenly became cheerful for some reason compared to her earlier depressed mood when she had mentioned this matter. She continued in a joking voice:

“In any case, whether it is Fairy Shi or Sun Qingxue, both are good talented geniuses. They are both immortal level figures so why are you unhappy that they want to become your dao

companion?”

Seeing the ineffable smile on his master's face, Yang Chen didn't have the heart to change the topic and could only raise his hand lazily in response to his master's joke.

“Actually, you don't have to worry about it so much.”

Gao Yue didn't stop there and her next words completely stunned Yang Chen:

“Great men usually have three or four concubines. There is also your senior apprentice sister Gongsun within the sect, although she cannot compare to the two fairies but you should accept them all, either way you have more than one type of spirit power, don't you?”

Once she said these words, not only Yang Chen was completely shocked, even Gongsun Ling was also frightened by Gao Yue's words. Her face flushed because of embarrassment and her thoughts were completely mixed up. She was even confused with where she had placed her hands.

After Gao Yue said this sentence, her heart suddenly felt relaxed. Yang Chen was her disciple. Anything happening between them was seemingly impossible. But since he was her disciple, Gao Yue as his master, must think about these things. Naturally the better wife Yang Chen got, the happier she would be.

Once she thought of this, although she felt some indescribable sadness, but another part of her heart also felt glad. He was her disciple so it was natural that she would wholeheartedly think and care about him. Since Yang Chen didn't know what to do, it seems his master would have to make the decision.

“What.....what.....”

Yang Chen was at a loss of words and could only say these two words foolishly. Then his gaze moved from Gao Yue to Gongsun Ling who was sitting on other side feeling extremely embarrassed

and hadn't said anything.

“What? You don't like your senior apprentice sister?”

Gao Yue seemed intent on discussing this topic and directly pulled Gongsun Ling towards her:

“Is your senior apprentice sister lacking in any way compared to those two? Have you looked properly? In terms of appearance, Ling'er can be considered as one of the best. In terms of talent, Ling'er has full earth spirit root, in terms of cultivation, she is almost at the same level as you. A match made in heaven!”

When she had been discussing the matter of Yang Chen's dao companion with Gongsun Ling, she had replied somewhat unnaturally. Gao Yue had seen through it long ago, but hadn't got the chance to talk about it. Gao Yue herself was having contradictory views, so how couldn't she understand what Gongsun Ling was thinking. Gongsun Ling was hindered by her status as senior apprentice sister and couldn't take the initiative, so Gao Yue had substituted her and proposed this. In any case, she was just concerned about her disciple, so naturally the more he got the better, the more suitable they were the happier she would be. Moreover Gongsun Ling was also an acquaintance, so when the time came, she would take good care of Yang Chen.

Hearing Gao Yue suggest her so openly, Gongsun Ling bashfully lowered her head, but for some reason she felt loosened. The words hidden deep within her heart were being spoken by Gao Yue. Although she wasn't personally raising the issue but the load on her mind had been removed.

Right now, Gongsun Ling was feeling nervous thinking about what Yang Chen's answer would be. Whether he would think she was shameless and was using other people to suggest her. However she also didn't know what to say in this situation. Her tender body had already started to slightly tremble.

Yang Chen hadn't anticipated that his master would surprisingly

think that this was the way to show concern for him. /this situation was completely different from what he had thought. In his heart, the person he loved most was his own master. He had thought only about her for more than ten thousand years in his previous life. With great difficulty, he had been able to see her again and enter her tutelage and again experience all those beautiful moments. How could his master suddenly try to find other people for him?

“No.....I don't dislike senior apprentice sister.”

Yang Chen was upset but he knew that this was not the time to break the heart of Gongsun Ling. If he said that he didn't like her then it would certainly hurt her. However, this situation was completely different from what Yang Chen wanted, but how can he speak his mind?

Hearing Yang Chen's words, Gongsun Ling's shivering tender body suddenly became tranquil. All of a sudden, warm currents began to flow through her heart making Gongsun Ling's whole body from top to bottom feel relaxed.

During the few breaths of time when she was waiting for Yang Chen's answer, Gongsun Ling felt as if she was going all out and fighting with some and felt her body weakening as if her strength was being pulled out by someone. Once these words came out of Yang Chen's mouth, Gongsun Ling was almost unable to support herself and felt weak in her knees. Fortunately, she was already sitting and hadn't lost her self control completely.

After arranging her thoughts as the master, Gao Yue suddenly discovered that she could easily see what Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling were thinking. Because of their previous contact, Gongsun Ling had favourable impression towards Yang Chen but didn't dare to say anything.

As for Gao Yue herself, deep within her heart, she also hated to push Yang Chen towards other people. However, she was Yang

Chen's master, so how could their relationship be possible? How could they not consider the bond between master and disciple? Gao Yue still hadn't come to accept such situation.

"Since this is the case, then I as your master will make the decision. What else were you worried about?"

Gao Yue completely assumed Yang Chen's master's attitude and said to him with a straight face.

Too sudden, all of this was too sudden. Yang Chen was completely shocked by Gao Yue's words and seemed to have gone completely silly.

Following the order of seniority between master and disciple, Yang Chen must listen to Gao Yue's instruction. This was to display his respect towards his master. But if he followed his feelings, then whatever the case may be, he could never accept such arrangements made by Gao Yue.

He hadn't been reborn after spending over ten thousand years previously and entered the tutelage of his master again, just to see his master arrange another dao companion for himself.

"Master!"

Yang Chen suddenly smiled and said:

"Do you think that the Clear Sky Sect and the Green Jade Immortal Islands would agree to their heavenly talents jointly becoming the dao companion of the disciple?"

Since he couldn't accept master's arrangements, Yang Chen must find a justifiable reason to refuse them. Moreover, this reason should be something significant.

The Green Jade Immortal Islands and the Clear Sky Sect were both outstanding big sects. Permitting their heavenly geniuses to become Yang Chen's dao companions was already their limit. If he simultaneously dual cultivated with the disciples of both sects, then that wouldn't be forming relationship between the sect rather

it would be provocation.

Yang Chen thought of this reason, Gao Yue also started to think about it and couldn't help but feel discouraged. However when she saw the slightly depressed Gongsun Ling, she gritted her teeth:

“Since you can accept them both simultaneously then just become the dao companion with your senior apprentice sister. It will also free you from worrying about them.”

Once these words came out of her mouth, Gongsun Ling felt even more ashamed and lowered her head. Both her hands were fiddling with the small tea cups as if trying to wring out water from them. There was nothing she could dare to say, so she just remained seated at her place.

“That would require the Palace Master's approval.”

Yang Chen forced a smile. The sudden transformation in Gao Yue's attitude had completely confused him.

“You are correct!”

After some thinking, Gao Yue could only abandon this topic grudgingly:

“Then you tell us. This training location we going towards, what kind of things will we encounter there?”

Although Yang Chen had maintained complete secrecy on this topic, but at this moment, he didn't care about leaking out a few things:

“Perhaps there won't be anything too special. If our luck is good, we might find a pile of thousand year old herbs, magic weapons left by seniors or perhaps some lost cultivation method, spirit veins contained abundant spirit power and things like that.”

“If our luck is good?”

This topic wasn't so embarrassing for Gongsun Ling, hearing the clues mentioned by Yang Chen, she immediately rhetorically

asked:

“Then what if our luck isn’t good?”

“If our luck isn’t good then.....”

Yang Chen turned his head to look towards She Kui and Xie Sha who were equivalently excited and suddenly replied with a smile:

“Then we may find some fierce demon beasts as well as formidable puppets.”

Chapter 228 - Finding A Good Location

QingQiong Mountain was located on a gigantic island, but there weren't many green hills or clear waters there. Neither were there many types of trees also. It was very difficult to believe that this place surprisingly held a heavenly grade cave.

Yang Chen landed his Flying Shuttle, and everyone stepped on the island looking at each other in dismay. Although watching the majestic ocean surging with great waves every day had broadened their horizons, stepping on the land again after one whole month was much more delightful. However, their excitement soon turned to confusion.

“Here? There are demon beasts here?”

She Kui didn't believe that there could be demon beasts here. He even flew around the whole island once and asked Yang Chen with surprise.

Although there were a few high peaks on the island, there were only few coconut trees growing near the ocean. He even couldn't find any source of water present there. As far as he could see, the entire place was filled with mountain rocks.

Let alone demon beasts, any living organism would only be seen after great difficulty. That is if you don't consider the coconut trees growing near the ocean as living organisms.

“I believe you should not always trust books mindlessly!”

Gao Yue had rarely seen Yang Chen getting conned. Feeling happy, she assumed the attitude of an earnest master and guided Yang Chen.

However, her face looked so beautiful that even if she was talking to a board, then it also would have made Yang Chen feel envious. When he saw Gao Yue, he became dazed while suddenly looking at her beautiful appearance and unable to say anything.

“Junior apprentice brother!”

Gongsun Ling helplessly called him, trying to wake him from that kind of infatuated state. She couldn't help but feel somewhat bitter.

Almost anyone could see that Yang Chen's heart was on his master, but no one said anything. Moreover, Gao Yue had made her resolve that since she is Yang Chen's master, she would always think about him from a master's standpoint.

“Could the demon beasts be in the ocean?”

She Kui standing at the coast, gazed at the ocean wrinkling his brows. There were countless demon beasts swimming in the ocean. Everyone knew this fact. But he and Xie Sha were earth attributed demon beasts. Although among the five phases earth subdued water, but going into the ocean wasn't too convenient for them.

“If everyone knew about the treasures here, then wouldn't the people have already taken it away?”

Yang Chen didn't say anything towards his master, but he said this to She Kui and Xie Sha:

“Do you want to make a bet?”

“What kind of bet?”

She Kui and Xie Sha weren't afraid of making any bets with Yang Chen. In fact, neither of them cared much about the outcome. Cultivators and demon beasts' reasoning on different matters is sometimes greatly different.

“Bet all the earnings you get inside.”

Yang Chen joked, but then he sensed it was not proper and supplemented:

“Half of your earnings, I mean.”

“Ok!”

She Kui and Xie Sha were completely unaffected. In any case, any treasure obtained would be because Yang Chen gave them the chance, so giving half their harvests to Yang Chen wasn't impossible.

When Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling saw Yang Chen being cheeky in front of two YuanYing stage experts, they also didn't try to stop him. They knew that She Kui and Xie Sha didn't care much about such things.

“Follow me then!”

Yang Chen immediately took the lead and flew on his flying sword towards the highest peak among all the other mountains. The others also weren't willing to fall behind and followed him.

All the peaks assembled on this island formed the QingQiong Mountain. The sect which initially resided on the QingQiong Mountain had fallen ten thousand years ago, so the fact that no one knew about it was completely normal.

After flying along the surrounding of the peak once, Yang Chen confirmed the position and drove his flying sword to reach halfway to the mountain, continuing to hover there.

Everyone was at loss while looking at Yang Chen's action, but no one said anything and calmly waited.

Everyone could clearly see a series of flickering formation symbols radiating from Yang Chen's hands, flashing and dying out without entering that almost vertical precipice. Different symbols contained different spirit power and spell formations and flickered continuously.

When Yang Chen stopped, everyone looked at the precipice opposite to them as if they had woken from a dream. Above the rock half hanging in the air, a transparent and barely visible door appeared. Even though they were cultivators, they could barely make out the door even at such close distance.

“You all go in first, after I go in, the door will close and vanish which could only be opened from inside.”

Yang Chen instructed them:

“After going inside, remain cautious and don’t run around everywhere for the time being, everyone stay together at the same place.”

The sudden appearance of the door caused everyone to become cautious. When Yang Chen earnestly warned them, all of them understood that it was dangerous inside. Immediately, everyone prepared their defensive magic weapons and flying swords first, only then nodded to Yang Chen implying that they were ready to go in.

She Kui and Xie Sha lead the way, they were YuanYing stage experts, so if they encountered something dangerous, they will be able to resist it for sometime. They were followed by Gao Yue, who had unleashed her fire attributed spirit power restoring her cultivation base back to JieDan stage. The last one was Gongsun Ling followed by Yang Chen.

The door seemed to have a criss crossed spell formation on it. After entering, there found a long twisted tunnel. Everyone followed Yang Chen’s instructions and didn’t run around carelessly, only checked their surroundings.

In terms of spiritual awareness, Yang Chen could be said to be the most formidable one among them. Furthermore, after releasing the spiritual awareness threads, the extent of his probe was even larger than She Kui and Xie Sha. Only after carefully investigating once, Yang Chen felt at ease.

A small fire was lighted using a very small fire attributed spell formation. This fire only had the size of torch and could sustain on a low grade spirit stone for a long time. This was refined by Gongsun Ling herself for use at the Immortal Falling Well, now was the perfect chance to use it again.

Everyone felt much more comfortable after the flame was ignited. Yang Chen indicated that there isn't any danger here but everyone still remained on their guard and slowly moved forward in the tunnel. Especially She Kui and Xie Sha who were holding their snake tooth dagger and scorpion tail thorn respectively and moved forward as if they were facing a huge enemy.

The tunnel was very clean without the slightest speck of dust even after so many years. Seemingly it was because of the spell formation for eliminating dust. This seemed the most plausible explanation since even the spell formation for special entrance had lasted so many years, then what to speak of a minor spell. This region was supposed to be rich in spirit power so this was normal.

However speaking of spirit power being abundant, Yang Chen was somewhat confused, this tunnel seemed to be completely ordinary without the slightest sensation that it was rich in spirit power, this matter made him extremely suspicious.

This ancient tunnel was completely composed of bricks which were engraved with some symbols unknown to everyone. Surprisingly, usage of spiritual awareness was also cut off within the tunnel, so moving in this ten thousand years old, even if it was Yang Chen, he also had to be cautious.

Others following behind him, kept slowly moving but no one had as many thoughts as Yang Chen. All of them were extremely vigilant to defend against any possible danger they may encounter. Yang Chen had told them that if their luck wasn't good, they may encounter countless demon beasts and puppets, this thought weighed heavily on everyone's mind.

Suddenly light appeared in front of them, seeing it, Yang Chen hinted for Gongsun Ling to extinguish the fire. Everyone walked a few more steps and could immediately see a huge and illuminated hall.

The appearance of the halls shocked everyone, the size of this

hall was far larger compared to Pure Yang Palace's main hall. It had sufficient to hold more than a thousand disciples with enough to spare.

The hall was completely empty, apart from the single decorated door from which they entered, there weren't anything else. The enormous hall didn't even have a single pills which made it seem even more empty. At the top of the hall, several hundred flickering pearls could be seen which illuminated the hall making it feel as if it was day time.

On the other side of the hall, there were five glittering door like things. There was nothing in other places, except from the jade tiles neatly spread on the floor, the hall was completely empty.

"That should be the exit."

Yang Chen had rough knowledge of some things, he said pointing towards the door.

No one else had any other idea and followed behind Yang Chen to arrive in front of those door arranged in a row. Soon after, Gao Yue turned her head and asked Yang Chen:

"Which door should we pick?"

Without waiting for Yang Chen's reply, She Kui had already opened the door on the right most side. Seeing this, Yang Chen was alarmed but before he could stop She Kui, a white light suddenly flickered and then She Kui's body was thrown towards the other side of the hall by some kind of huge pressure.

While everyone hastily rushed towards She Kui to support him, She Kui slowly stood up. When he saw Yang Chen examining his body with a confused gaze, he hastily yelled:

"There's no problem! There's no problem!"

A force which can casually throw away a YuanYing expert like She Kui towards the other end of the room, when the others thought about the source, they were extremely terrified. She Kui

was only thrown towards the other end, but hadn't suffered any internal injuries and soon stood up on his feet. After making some random movements, he seemed to be completely fine.

Everyone's gaze was fixed on Yang Chen, waiting for his response. Yang Chen bitterly smiled while inspecting She Kui, but didn't say anything and only shook his head.

"Those five doors should be arranged according to cultivation realm difference."

Yang Chen didn't continue the suspense and began to explain:

"People with different cultivations can enter different doors. The rightmost one should be for Dacheng experts."

Everyone seemed to have suddenly understood, according to this hypothesis, the doors should be divided between Qi layer, Foundation stage, JieDan, YuanYing and Dacheng stage. Experts can enter any door for cultivators lower than their cultivation, but they definitely cannot enter the doors for higher level cultivators, even if some kind of spatial item like Medicine Garden was used, it was still impossible.

This time, She Kui didn't dare to move around randomly, just opening a wrong door had made him clearly realize that he wasn't anything formidable here. No one had come here before them, therefore everyone had unanimously agreed to check out the qi layer door first. In case, some mishap occurs, they should be able to handle it with their cultivation levels.

Yang Chen pushed his hand inside the leftmost door and didn't sense any repulsion as if outside was completely empty. Yang Chen pulled his hand back and signalled She Kui and Xie She that everything was ok. Seeing this, both of them immediately took out their destined magic weapons and went inside followed by Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling respectively.

The scenery suddenly changed, the region where everyone found

themselves had huge fields, mountains, rivers, grasslands, forests and everything else that could be found. Everyone was gobsmacked seeing this.

It was really deserving to be called a heavenly grade magic weapon, even the Qi layer region was surprisingly this large. Yang Chen flew within the sky and looked everything, roughly estimating it to have a perimeter of 1000 miles.

The place where they had appeared was the exit of a huge palace. Below them was a group of grand palaces situated on the mountain. These grand palace filled the entire peak of the mountain.

What surprised everyone was the quietness here, without the slightest sound. The quiet among the large number of grand palace seemed quite eerie to them.

“Let’s see if it worth something which should be collected!”

Suddenly Yang Chen excitedly said:

“I told you that I will lead you to riches, let’s see how good your luck is!”

Everyone again looked at Yang Chen with amazement, but seeing the serious look on his face, all of them were excited and began to disperse.

“Wait wait!”

Yang Chen suddenly stopped everyone:

“This is the region for Qi layer disciples, if you encounter demon beasts and puppets, then don’t kill the ones whom you can allow to live, they will be good for training of disciples in the future.” ” Everyone agreed, Yang Chen again supplemented like an old man:

“Treasures are also the same, don’t be greedy for things which you don’t need, leave some things for the future generation. We will again find treasures in high level areas!”

“Yes we know! Troublesome!”

Gao Yue smiled towards Yang Chen while impatiently saying this. Then she urged her flying sword and began to tour around the group of palaces.

Yang Chen also began to scroll around with curiosity in the surroundings of the nearest palaces. After taking a round around the group of nearest palaces, he discovered that it was basically a fully functioning sect's encampment. All types of palace halls, all types of dwellings for disciples and other such things were built in complete detail.

The only strange thing was that although there was no one inside them, but there still wasn't any speck of dust inside. Soon, Yang Chen discovered an extremely concealed aureole outside the group of palaces, he had almost skipped over it while sweeping the surroundings with his spiritual awareness and was only able to find it because the formidable spiritual awareness threads formed by Three Purities Secrets.

After examining for a moment, Yang Chen finally became certain that this wasn't just a simple aureole rather a boundary. After coming out of this aureole, he could sense the presence of demon beasts, but after coming inside, the presence immediately vanished. In other words, the area inside this aureole must be safe zone.

After discovering this, Yang Chen was completely dumbfounded, how was this a simple sect encampment, it was clearly a sect's encampment and locations for training together. This was basically the most suitable location for a sect, a perfect location for a dojo.

After entering here, he could clearly sense the abundant spirit power, which made him feel a little like when he had entered the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. Although it was as rich as Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, but this was a region for Qi layer disciples,

who knows what kind of surprises were waiting for him at the Foundation stage, JieDan and YuanYing stage locations?

“Yang Chen, quickly come!”

Gongsun Ling’s voice suddenly echoed from far away, because the region was too quiet, her voice had transmitted from a long distance.

Yang Chen was startled and hastily flew towards her. While flying towards her, he saw Gongsun Ling standing in front of an enormous palace hall. There was a large board hanging in front of the palace hall. On the board, three words were written in ancient language “Concealed Scripture Hall”.

Seeing that Gongsun Ling wasn’t in trouble, Yang Chen slightly calmed down and advanced towards the Concealed Scripture Hall. Although there was nothing special about it on the outside, but when Yang Chen entered the Concealed Scripture Hall, he was stunned.

Countless enormous bookshelves on whom numerous jade slips were neatly arranged. This Concealed Scripture Hall is surprisingly not empty.

Chapter 229 - Unexpected Surprise

Gongsun Ling's yell attracted everyone to rush over here, when they saw this scene, mix of surprise and alarm could be seen on their face.

Everyone was clear, regardless of whatever kind of medicinal ingredients or magic weapons they find, none of that could be compared to a sect's inheritance. And these densely packed jade slips was precisely that inheritance.

“What are you all looking at? Collect them quickly!”

Looking at everyone rooted to the spot, Yang Chen hastily reminded them what should they do:

“God knows what danger will we face, first collect these, then we will see what to do.”

Everyone seemed to have woken up from a dream and under Yang Chen's reminder, all of them scattered in different directions and began to collect the jade slips one after other within their qiankun pouches. There was no time to look at these, everyone was focused on collecting the jade slips first, then if they got the opportunity, they can take a look.

After rushing for one hour, all these were collected. After completing everything, everyone looked at each others with a smile on their faces.

“Other layers must also have some!”

Gao Yue suddenly realized and yelled with surprise reminding everyone.

Without saying anything, they directly made a beeline for the entrance gate of main and returned back to the original hall. Yang Chen said to She Kui and Xie Sha:

“You both, one go to YuanYing stage region, one go to JieDan

stage region. First collect all the things in the Concealed Scripture Halls before anything else.”

Apart from Yang Chen, no one else knew the dangers of this dwelling. Hearing Yang Chen’s words, She Kui and Xie Sha went through the third and fourth door. Yang Chen however pointed to the second door and said:

“Master, senior apprentice sister, we will go through this one.”

Saying this, he stepped through the door.

The scenery again transformed, everything was different from the earlier place, but the main structure was mostly identical. The three of them quickly found the location of Concealed Scripture Hall. It didn’t betray their expectations, foundation stage region’s Concealed Scripture Hall was also similarly filled with jade slips.

No one was courteous this time, first they were focused on collecting these treasures, then move about on other things. After a wave of looting, the Foundation stage region’s Concealed Scripture Hall was raked clean by the three of them.

After they returned back to the hall, She Kui and Xie Sha still hadn’t come back. After all, they were collecting by themselves so they wouldn’t be quick like Yang Chen who had two more people to help him and required more time.

After approximately two more hours, She Kui and Xie Sha finally returned back to the hall. However, their expressions weren’t so good.

“What happened, some problem inside?”

Yang Chen hastily asked.

“We discovered JieDan stage demon beast under a mountain.”

She Kui had entered the JieDan stage region, he continued:

“However, they hadn’t advanced inside.”

“YuanYing stage region was also the same, only the enemy there

was more powerful puppets.”

Xue Sha had also discovered a formidable opponent:

“In the beginning, I thought they were going to attack but later discovered that they cannot come near. Only then could I feel relieved and collected the jade slips.”

Yang Chen had known about this earlier, but it allowed others to discover something interesting. Now, everyone could understand the main use of this dwelling.

“So what do we do with all this?”

Gao Yue was completely at a loss while staring at the four qiankun pouches filled with jade slips, in a daze. While they were collecting it, she hadn't felt it to be too much, but when the time for putting these to some use came, she realized there were indeed too many jade slips.

Even a second rate sect like Pure Yang Palace had more than a million jade slips in the sect's Concealed Scripture Pavilion which recorded all types of things about cultivation methods, pill concocting, tool refining, spell formations, all types of cultivation knowledge as well as all sorts of scattered information.

This dojo was sufficiently two to three times the size of Pure Yang Palace, the jade slips collected by everyone numbered in several millions. The question of what to do with all these things had put everyone at loss.

“For you!”

She Kui and Xie Sha were straightforward and directly threw their qiankun pouches to Yang Chen. They were demon beasts so these cultivation methods and others things of humanity weren't of any use to them. It would be better to give them to Yang Chen as his portion because if there was something among these which they required, Yang Chen wouldn't be stingy. Yang Chen had made this fact clear over the time, so both of them didn't have any

worries about it.

Seeing She Kui and Xie Sha's action, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling looked at each other and smiled suddenly as if they had formed a mutually agreeable decision. They also tossed their qiankun pouches to Yang Chen:

“Yang Chen, this is for your toil, if there is something among these which you think we need, then give it to us.”

Everyone had a multitudes of thought running through their mind regarding this enormous dojo. It was completely impossible for their group to seize it for themselves, however if they just hand it over to sect, that also won't be a justifiable way to deal with it.

Yang Chen had already led the sect to capture the Hundred Thousand Mountains very recently, if he again delivers this formidable dojo to the sect within such short time, then it will surely cause many people to raise their brows. By now, Yang Chen had done many astonishing things successively, if one more world shaking matter comes from him, then probably even the people within the sect would be unable to stand by idly.

One person getting in limelight all the time by himself isn't really a good thing. Therefore, for a long time in the future, this place will remain their private dojo.

Who discovers it, gets it. This is an accepted argument within the sect. All these jade slips and other inheritance type of things clearly belong to them only. However, since Yang Chen had led them here combined with the fact that he is also fond of reading different things, all this things should be best handed over to Yang Chen.

Yang Chen had led them all here so he trusted them enough to believe that if they found something suitable for him, they wouldn't secretly hide it otherwise he wouldn't have informed them about here. All of them were clearly aware of this fact.

After giving Yang Chen the jade slips, everyone sat down at the original hall and began to discuss their next action. After discovering that the demon beasts and puppets cannot enter a circular boundary, all of them clearly realized the situation here. This was simply the most suitable place to cultivate through battling, such a chance doesn't come by easily, they shouldn't waste it so easily.

“Probably everyone has discovered that this is a suitable location for your cultivation.”

Yang Chen suggested a solution for them:

“Why not cultivate here once?”

This proposal obtained everyone's consent. The existence of the safe zone was enough to ensure the everyone's survival during training, She Kui and Xie Sha didn't have any hesitations and directly returned to the YuanYing stage experts' battling region.

Gongsun Ling also stood up while looking at Yang Chen and Gao Yue, after bidding them farewell, she also entered the Foundation Stage battling region, leaving behind only Yang Chen and Gao Yue within the main hall.

“Yang Chen, when are you planning to hand over this location to the sect?”

Gao Yue thought about it but felt that it was better to ask the question directly, therefore asked the question which she had been in her mind for a long time.

“When master enters the upper echelons of Pure Yang Palace or maybe when our Pure Yang Palace faces some calamity which could exterminate the sect.”

Yang Chen laughed while informing her about his original plans.

“Upper echelons?”

Gao Yue shook her head:

“It is still too early to think about those imaginary matters. Yang Chen, what do you think, which path should be for master to test myself?”

“Foundation Stage!”

Yang Chen said without any hesitation:

“Qi layer region isn’t useful, but gaining battle experience starting from low level battles is better, increasing your level step by step will make your foundation robust. Additionally, sometimes master should try to deliberately not kill those demon beasts and instead capture them alive. That would be even harder.”

“Good, then I will go to the foundation stage region.”

Gao Yue agreed without any resistance and again asked:

“What about you?”

In Gao Yue’s view, Yang Chen apparently had never gone through any kind of battle experience. Moreover, he seemed to always understanding everything. Sometimes Gao Yue was unable to determine Yang Chen’s present level.

“Disciple will also go to the foundation stage region.”

Yang Chen smiled:

“However, forget about fighting, disciple will stay on one side and take a look at those jade slips.”

As if she had guessed what Yang Chen was thinking, Gao Yue didn’t seem to be surprised. Nodding her head, she said to Yang Chen:

“Then what are we waiting for? Let’s go!”

Yang Chen stood up and followed after Gao Yue to enter the foundation stage region. Gongsun Ling’s figure had already disappeared from their view. She must have already gone outside the boundary. Gao Yue also chose some random direction and urged her flying sword towards it without saying anything.

As for Yang Chen, he casually walked to one corner which was rich in spirit power and laid down his black obsidian mat and sat on it. After making the preparations, he opened a qiankun pouch and began to go through those jade slips one by one.

The jade slips were sorted properly, according to different realms as well as different attributes. But those on some specific content were still mixed, so Yang Chen had to carefully read them one by one.

The dust filled bookshelves, were an identical mark of those sects who had disappeared from the cultivation world. Of all the jade slips, few hadn't been categorized.

It was naturally impossible for Yang Chen to read the several million jade slips in a short time. Thus, Yang Chen gave priority to examined the cultivation methods described on them first and see whether any of those methods caught his eye. The things from ten thousand years ago had many differences compared to the present.

However, while checking for cultivation method, at the same time Yang Chen also took a rough glance at the contents of all the jade slips, differentiating and categorizing them according to cultivation methods, spell formations, pill concocting, tool refining, cultivation insights and other random things.

His search naturally began from looking through foundation stage cultivation methods, but after going through several hundred cultivation methods, Yang Chen discovered that the cultivation world had indeed moved forward continuously. The cultivation methods from ten thousand years ago already lagged behind, and even the concept could be said to be conflicting with the cultivation methods of modern world.

At least within these past ten thousand years, cultivation methods had gone through great transformations involving opening more meridians, having even more potential as well as increasing the rate of spirit power absorption. The changes had

been so enormous that cultivation methods of the past era and the current era couldn't be mentioned on the same terms.

Many rapid transformations had been happening within the world continuously. It was basically impossible for anyone who had found cultivation methods of ancient sects by fluke to start their own sect. Because of the countless ages of research and improvement by countless experts within the last ten thousand years, the present level of cultivation methods was at least two grades higher compared to before.

So far, every big sect would have specialized halls of experts to research the cultivation methods. Often, the big sects would sell their outdated cultivation methods to small sects and rogue cultivators.

When these cultivation methods will similarly spread to other big sects who would also have research specialists who would extract what they needed and remove the unnecessary parts, absorbing other's experiences to enrich their own sect's cultivation methods.

This was also the reason why Yang Chen didn't care much about choosing a cultivation method at a lower grade. After passing through this research and exchange, actually the speed of different cultivation methods was nearly the same, only the cultivation speeds were different.

But high level cultivation methods weren't the same, after reaching the YuanYing stage, the further cultivation included not only absorbing spirit power everyday, but a majority of it also relied on mental assurance as well as gaining an understanding of the natural order rather than just cultivating laboriously at early stages.

This is also the reason why after reaching the YuanYing stage, the people who had mediocre talent quickly fell behind compared to geniuses. The original difference of only several hundred years

became as large as the difference between heaven and earth after reaching the YuanYing stage.

Yang Chen was only looking at these methods for consultation and didn't care much about gaining other things from them. While he was immersed in this process, time continued to pass. Yang Chen even didn't feel that a long time had passed, but Gao Yue informed him that one year had already passed.

During this one year, others also didn't bother Yang Chen much and were busy with their own cultivation. It has to be said that the growth acquired during battle is the quickest. When they encountered some demon beast which they couldn't beat, then that sensation of doing their utmost to return back to the safe zone, to return back alive, was precisely the best strategy for growth in cultivation.

Within this one year, Gongsun Ling's temperament had undergone a huge changes. She didn't seem that same sort of naive like before. Instead, her body radiated a hidden killing intent which ensured that she wasn't someone to be easily trifled with.

Before, mostly the disciples of Pure Yang Palace pursued a full faith in the principle of "not only to contend but to become invincible". This principle gave the feeling that the only way to increase cultivation was fair and honest. But, most disciples easily interpreted this as standing aloof over worldly matter, although their mental state ascended quickly but when facing genuine tribulation, they seemed to lack a sort of ruthlessness and determination. Many Pure Yang disciples had died because of this reason, including the previous life's Gongsun Ling.

Presently, Gongsun Ling didn't face this ending anymore. This was an extremely gratifying transformation. In fact, from the time the upper echelons began to conspire to capture the Hundred Thousand Mountains, this thought had began to slowly transform to the most widely spread thoughts of competing to win.

If Yang Chen didn't stop reading continuously, Gongsun Ling and Gao Yue would not come over and bother him. But just when Yang Chen withdrew himself from the books, both women appeared within the first moments after discovering this.

Yang Chen didn't continue anymore because he had found something which made him extremely excited. Within the several million jade slips, Yang Chen unexpectedly discovered the «Ninth Water True Secrets» of the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets.

This was mixed up with YuanYing stage cultivation methods and had been reviewed by people as extremely difficult to cultivate. Probably it was because people at that time didn't know that these Ninth Water True Secrets could only be cultivated with Ninth Water True Qi.

The most unexpected thing was that despite it being a «Ninth Water True Secrets» from ten thousand years ago, this cultivation method among the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets hadn't experienced any changes those ten thousand years?

This was the most original cultivation method, there almost wasn't any margin of improvement in it for a long time. After obtaining the Ninth Water True Secrets, Yang Chen had already obtained eight types of cultivation methods of the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets, only two remained which he hadn't found yet.

Chapter 230 - Discovering Treasures Continuously

Yang Chen had never expected that this legendary abode on QingQiong Mountain would bring such a pleasant surprise for him. This was completely beyond his expectations. Apparently, he need to make a trip to all the regions left behind by the immortals in the Mortal World, maybe they would have similar surprises waiting for him.

In his previous life, when Yang Chen was in the Mortal World, he never had the chance to access such high grade objects. At most, he would hear the information that some precious treasure had appeared for which countless sects would contest with each other. Among them were also some place where Ying and Yang Five Phases True Qi would be found, like the Fifth Earth True Qi of the Desolate Valley.

Among the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets, presently he still lack two methods. One was the Third Fire True Secrets and other was the Sixth Earth True Secrets, but now his hopes of obtaining them were raised again.

Although he had an idea about the location of those two methods, but Yang Chen was fully convinced that finding those two methods absolutely wouldn't be difficult compared to his rebirth.

What he must do presently was to increase his strength quickly. His cultivation of foundation stage was really insufficient in front of this grade of cultivation methods.

Although Yang Chen had already cultivated the Fifth Earth True Secrets and the Seventh Metal True Secrets, but that was because of coincidental opportunity and the main thing was that the places he absorbed the Fifth Earth True Qi and Seventh Metal True Qi were both safe places. But according to his memories, he knew that

the other true qis of the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets would all be found in dangerous places where he had no way of reaching with his present strength.

“Did you find anything good?”

He could see that although Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling had undergone great changes during the training battles, they didn't conceal their joyous look from Yang Chen. Seeing this, he couldn't help but ask.

“There wasn't anything good, just some demon beasts.”

Gongsun Ling replied with a smile. Gao Yue standing near her also nodded her head.

“Are you so happy because of these demon beasts?”

Yang Chen didn't believe their words, if there were only demon beasts then they wouldn't have been acting like this. After pondering for a moment, he immediately guessed something and asked with a smile:

“Senior apprentice sister, have you discovered some unique spell formation?”

“Nothing can be concealed from you.”

Gongsun Ling stopped smiling and she started grumbling:

“Can't you pretend to not know for once? Guess now what kind of spell formation is it?”

Yang Chen stared at Gongsun Ling for a good moment which made her feel extremely uneasy. Only after more than half of her face had turned red, did he stop and say with a smile:

“Actually, the spell formation most worthy of studying is that classification spell formation in the outer hall and these safety spell formations, other than that, there aren't many things which can catch your attention. Senior apprentice sister, am I right?”

This time, even Gao Yue was slightly stupefied and suddenly

asked:

“Then tell me what did I find?”

“Master should have discovered some tool refining method, am I right?”

Yang Chen turned towards her:

“Or you must have found a fragment of some magic weapon which you can use for consultancy?”

“If I hadn’t personally witnessed your cultivation until today, I would really have thought that you are some kind of monster.”

Gao Yue was astonished and said in a resigned tone looking at Yang Chen.

“If what I said is correct, then here are some jade slips which both you and senior apprentice sister should read once.”

Yang Chen took out some jade slips from the pile he was reading through and handed them to the two:

“Only remember, although creative thinking requires guidance but you don’t need to read much about the refining methods and techniques to lay down spell formations.”

Yang Chen had specifically left these for them. Naturally he still had even higher grade ones but they were suitable for both of them for now. Moreover, Yang Chen didn’t think that it wasn’t worth for master and senior apprentice sister to research and study these ancient things in detail. The main priority here was to absorb that kind of creative thinking and not those techniques.

Both of them acted like they were holding their most precious treasures. It had to be said, Yang Chen guess was right at the mark. Gongsun Ling was intrigued by the spell formations in the safe zone as well as the spell formation which classified them according to cultivation. Not only that spell formation could prevent YuanYing stage and higher level demon beasts from coming

outside, they also could easily throw away experts like She Kui, barring their entry into the regions not meant for them. This spell formation was an exceptionally good defensive spell formation.

As for Gao Yue, she had accidentally encountered some magic weapon fragment and discovered the hints of a strange tool refining method which was completely different from the tool refining techniques used presently. She was a fire attributed cultivator and was fond of refining weapons so she became excited instantly after discovering this.

However, they didn't waste much time pondering over them and remembered that Yang Chen had a pile of jade slips so certainly some of them must have information about these things. And as expected, as soon as they mentioned it, Yang Chen directly delivered them what they wanted.

Yang Chen's words were clear, these can be used as guides to learn the thought process of their predecessors, but the techniques themselves shouldn't be learned. Both of them also understood that after more than ten thousand years had passed, every type of cultivation methods or techniques had been improvised greatly, so they shouldn't neglect the fundamentals.

The most important treasure of this legendary cave were still those training location. They even allowed people to undergo life and death experience, after obtaining the jade slips, both women didn't start reading them immediately rather put this matter aside for now and went outside again to continue battling.

No one asked Yang Chen anything about why wasn't he participating in this training. Both women seemed to have realized that Yang Chen didn't require this. Seeing the disappearing figures of both females, Yang Chen stood up and stretched his body. Looking at the groups of palace halls, he suddenly felt very relaxed. If this life could last for eternity, wouldn't that be beautiful?

Unfortunately, this was only a dream, the path of cultivation

wasn't so gentle. At most, they could stop caring about worldly matters, but there was still the heavenly tribulations, so Yang Chen couldn't help but relax now.

After stretching his body, Yang Chen again sat down and began to continue his search among the pile of several hundred thousands of jade slips. After obtaining the «Ninth Water True Secrets» previously, Yang Chen was convinced that there was certainly another similar treasure hidden among these countless jade slips waiting to be discovered by him.

Naturally, he didn't forget his cultivation while continuing his search. The Three Purities Secrets which were at third layer wasn't stopped and was continuously revolving through his body allowing Yang Chen to have a clear head and feel energetic.

He would stop after going through hundred jade slips every time and cultivate the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secrets and move his spirit energy once through all the meridians. Cultivation wasn't something where he would advance in a single night and receive a flash of enlightenment, regardless of whether it was Yang Chen or Gao Yue or Gongsun Ling or even She Kui and Xie Sha, none of them slacked in their cultivation.

Hard work doesn't fail. When Yang Chen had continued to sit for approximately half a year, he finally discovered an absolutely shocking cultivation method within the pile of jade slips which he had never expected to find there.

This cultivation method was said to be found unexpectedly because this was the cultivation of some servant of the Heavenly Court which basically shouldn't appear within the Mortal World. It was only for immortals which could only be found among the cultivation methods of Heavenly Court after entering there.

This cultivation method was called «Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique».

Huangjin Strongman was a servant at the Heavenly Court, so this

method was prepared mainly for weak servants at the Heavenly Court. Naturally, the prerequisite of cultivating this cultivation method was that not only one's physical body must be strong but also its power must also be sufficient.

The main condition to cultivate this cultivation method was that one must have at least 18,000 kg of power. This wasn't the power generated by rotating their cultivation base, rather strength of only the physical body. Attaining this kind of power by just relying on the physical was almost impossible.

Before he began the cultivation of this body refining technique, Huangjin Strongman still had to cultivate a heap of supplementary cultivation methods and fulfill this condition, only then could he truly began the cultivation of Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique.

In the eyes of others, Huangjin Strongman seemed to have reached this level of strength by carrying heavy objects from one place to another, but the real reason was this. Huangjin Strongman had great power but weaker battle prowess so he could only work like a low level servant in the Heavenly Court.

But, Huangjin Strongman didn't continue to live his entire life like this. When his strength reached a certain level, he revealed his terrifying power which didn't seem to lose to spirit power of cultivation methods. For example, within the book 'foolish old man moves the mountain', the two sons of Kua'ershi had casually carried the Taihang Mountain and Wangwu Mountains and separated them.

Body strength to extreme limit is extremely terrifying and comparable to remarkable abilities which could move mountains and drain seas. This was a true fact otherwise no one would have cultivated this kind of cultivation method.

For Yang Chen, this Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique was a completely unexpected benefit. The benefits

provided to him by the QingQiong Mountain didn't stop at a perfect training location and Ninth Water True Secrets, now he had also obtained the Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique.

It was completely impossible within the Mortal World that there would be anyone else whose physical strength would reach 18,000 kg. But Yang Chen was different, his physical body had nourished by the blood of countless immortals and thus had already reached its peak condition. Furthermore, Yang Chen had tempered his physical body before starting cultivation, so by the time he entered Pure Yang Palace, his body had already been remarkable.

At that time, Yang Chen had mowed down Shen Da and others using a metal rod strengthened by thousand catty talisman. Although the thousand catty talisman didn't exactly have the power of thousand catties, but after many thousand catty talismans were used to strengthen the talisman tool iron rod, then it should have the strength of at least 30,000 catties or 18,000 kg. Even if Shen Da wasn't influenced by the thousand catty talisman since he was the master of the talisman tool but after it was reinforced with several thousand catty talismans; he basically couldn't stand while holding it.

At that time, Yang Chen had barely entered the qi layer while now the spirit energy of all his ten attributes was already at foundation stage and his body was being nourished by the spirit energy of the world and had become even stronger. Although Yang Chen hadn't tempered only his physical body for a long time, but his body's foundations were still there and would remain there eternally.

Yang Chen also hadn't tested whether he did truly have the strength of 30,000 catties, but since he had found such a formidable method, so wouldn't not cultivating it be a complete loss?

Thinking about the time in the future, when he would hold his

Immortal Executing Blade possessed by Yazhi as well as possess formidable spiritual awareness as well as physical body, who would still dare to resist him? With a physical body which could move mountains and seas, reinforced by the spiritual awareness condensed by the Three Purities Secrets as well as the immortal executing blade bestowed by Yazhi, he could cut monsters, armies, anything. At that time, there wouldn't be any living being who would be able to escape in one piece from him.

Cultivation method used by low level servant? Too inferior to show in public? Yang Chen never had such thinking. In his view, there was no difference between the power of nobles or peasants, there was only the power itself.

However, the conditions of cultivating the Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique were very strict. If his physical body didn't have the power of 30,000 catties, then his body would simply be incapable of supporting the enormous pressure produced by cultivation of this technique and would crack, causing him to die.

With no way out, Yang Chen could only test himself first to confirm whether he truly had the required strength or not. Otherwise if his body cracked during cultivation and he died, that wouldn't be funny.

There was no lack of things for testing here. Yang Chen randomly chose a pile of stone which should surpass the thirty thousand catties energy constraint. He refine these stones to create a stele with a handle. Just to be sure, he added another thousand catties of stone in the mixture and began to test.

Since he hadn't relied on his only physical strength for a long time, Yang Chen first used the body refining fists solemnly. After warming up, he crouched down and grabbed the handle of the stele with his both hands and began to lift it.

After some slight shaking, the enormous stele slowly left the

ground. With Yang Chen using his full strength, he raised it above his head.

Bang, the enormous stele which was triple the height of Yang Chen and thick enough that his arms could wrap around was directly thrown on the ground by Yang Chen. Although it wasn't easy for Yang Chen to produce the strength to lift up thirty thousand catties, but using his full strength, he was able to lift it up.

This was sufficient to confirm that Yang Chen's body had already satisfied the basic condition for cultivating the Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique and he could cultivate this cultivation method which increased his physical body's strength and strengthened it.

When Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling noticed the difference in Yang Chen, he was already sitting on one side, cultivating this Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique. The reason why they found him different was because Yang Chen's body seemed to have suddenly inflated from inside, from time to time, some part of his body would again swell or suddenly shrink. Below his body, there seemed to be a strange monster which was incessantly saluting it with both hands, all of this was extremely strange.

Both women were slightly astonished, but no one dared to bother Yang Chen. Yang Chen seemed to be extremely serious, so he certainly must be practicing some strange cultivation method he found here. However, hadn't he said to them that they must only think creatively using the concept to create the cultivation method but must not learn the cultivation method itself? Then why is he himself cultivating some cultivation method from here?

Yang Chen's body continued to transform continuously. Every part of flesh on his body seemed to strongly thumping and compacting, every muscle on his body had become even more formidable compared to before it was compacted.

While cultivating, Yang Chen hadn't discovered that within a short time, his entire body was filled with strong muscles. Every part of flesh on his body had faintly swelled up and covered the whole body.

When all of his flesh had stopped transforming, Yang Chen finally completed his first cultivation of Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique. As soon as he stopped cultivating, Yang Chen immediately sensed the presence of Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling.

“What?”

Yang Chen had spent half a month during the first cultivation of this body refining technique. But Yang Chen didn't think that it was something the two females would be astonished about. However the expression on the faces of his master and senior apprentice sister didn't resemble their calm expressions, so what was the matter here?

Chapter 231 - Body Transformation

After he said this, Yang Chen couldn't help but look down at his body and he was completely startled when he did so. The clothes on his body had surprisingly become too small for him at some point of time, although they weren't completely stretched taut, however he clearly looked very funny.

After sweeping with spiritual awareness, he immediately became clear about everything. During the few days he cultivated the Hunagjin Lisi Body Refining Technique, Yang Chen's figure had increased rapidly. His body wasn't well proportioned anymore, rather his muscles had increased greatly turning him into a bodybuilder.

Cultivators especially those who have reached foundation stage have automatic transformation in their body once the spirit energy of the world enters to body. Generally, very few people would have the figure of a strong man with their entire body full of muscles, most of the cultivators prefer well proportioned bodies since it has great benefits in both cultivations and coordinating with others.

But presently, Yang Chen had surprisingly transformed into a strong man with large muscles. His entire body seemed to be exploding with muscles. A single glance would leave the impression of overflowing power on anyone. However, this kind of body figure didn't provide any great superiority among the battle between cultivators, thus very few people would willing be let themselves be transformed into such appearance.

However some people who cultivate special body techniques would have this kind of body. How could Yang Chen's appearance transform so much? Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling were completely at a loss.

Once he stood up, Yang Chen discovered that his height which originally was only a little more than the two women had

increased by much. Now if he wanted to look at them, he had to bow down his head to see.

Looking at the short clothes covering his body, Yang Chen forced a bitter smile while shaking his head and offered an explanation:

“I had encountered a good cultivation method and wanted to give it a try thus causing this transformation.”

On his one side, the enormous stone stele was lying not too far from them, it could be assumed that they both understood what it was used for. Looking at Yang Chen’s comical appearance with unfitting clothes, both of them couldn’t control laughing and burst out laughing.

They completely were unworried that Yang Chen would have cultivated some unsuitable cultivation method which had created problems in his cultivation base, in this field, Yang Chen’s knowledge and experience far surpassed both of them. So when they saw Yang Chen’s comical appearance, they were unable to control their laughter.

Yang Chen knew that he looked a little funny right now, so he didn’t pay any attention to the reaction of the both of them and directly went to the enormous stone stele lying on the other side. But before he bowed down and grabbed it to test his strength, Gongsun Ling shouted:

“Let me try!”

Once these words left her mouth, Yang Chen didn’t contest with her. Gongsun Ling walked over here and grabbed the two metal handles refined by Yang Chen with both hands. She rotated her spirit energy which spread everywhere and the enormous stele was slowly left the ground.

A tender female lifting a enormous stone stele which was almost ten meters in height and multiple times thicker than her waist. If some ordinary person would have witnessed this scene, he will

certainly be extremely shocked. But here, in the eyes of Yang Chen and Gao Yue, this wasn't anything exceptional. If someone with a cultivation of mid foundation stage didn't have the strength to lift of weight of thirty thousand catties then she can only be considered as extremely weak.

“Yang Chen, what use is your cultivation method?”

Gongsun Ling easily placed down the stone stele, she didn't seem out of breath and was completely relaxed:

“It doesn't seem very difficult to me!”

“I just found this cultivation method and wanted to try, that's all.”

Yang Chen also didn't offer much explanation, some things were better left unexplained as they couldn't know that this is a cultivation method which could only be used by someone of the Heavenly Court. So he only gave a single line explanation to elaborate how formidable it was.

“Additionally, though it isn't difficult, but it also isn't too easy.”

Yang Chen again supplemented and walked forward a few steps reaching the stone stele.

His one foot lightly touched the corner of the stone stele and the enormous stele suddenly flew high in the air as if it was suddenly struck by some large force. When it started to fell down with great momentum, Yang Chen stretched one hand and grabbed one handle within midair and stopped the stone stele from falling downwards and lifted it above his head. All of its weight was controlled by Yang Chen using just one arm.

Grabbing this metal handle, Yang Chen easily swung the stone stele through the air. Terrifying sounds echoed through the air and the stone stele was used by Yang Chen with one hand like using a rod in a systematic manner. However, regardless of whether he chopped down or swept across, it didn't encounter any material

and was only swept and chopped through empty air.

After finishing the set of moves, Yang Chen lifted the stone stele and nimbly erected it by his side without disturbing even a speck of dust. The enormous stone stele was like a straw in his hand.

When Gongsun Ling saw Yang Chen's actions, she couldn't help but burst out laughing again so much so that she couldn't stand properly. Gao Yue standing by her side, although wasn't so excessive as Gongsun Ling and still had her mouth closed but her both shoulders were trembling incessantly trying to control her laughter. Actually, the clothes on Yang Chen's body were too unsuitable, so regardless of how elegant his movements were, they only seemed like a monkey performing tricks.

"It certainly seems like your strength has increased."

Finally the two women stopped laughing, Gongsun Ling said still smiling:

"But didn't you say it wasn't so difficult?"

"Little Ling, Yang Chen's thinking is impossible for us."

Gao Yue standing by her side wasn't smiling anymore and pointed out to Gongsun Ling:

"Everything he had done until now isn't just him getting lucky!"

After all being in the JieDan stage, her judgement was much better compared to Gongsun Ling. She could see Yang Chen's ferociousness with one look.

Gongsun Ling was a clever person and she immediately understood what the words meant and was instantly stupefied, not daring to laugh anymore. Just by relying on power of physical body, he could easily swing around the enormous stele weighing more than thirty thousand catties. What kind of terrifying strength was this?

They had heard long ago that Yang Chen's physical strength was

astonishing. Before he had began his cultivation, he had beaten Sun Haijing unconscious using Sun Haijing's own thousand catty talisman, but both women had never expected that the strength of Yang Chen's physical body would surprisingly reach this stage. Within an instant, even Gao Yue was also completely astonished.

That enormous stone stele weighing more than thirty thousand catties was like air in Yang Chen's hands, he could move it around so easily so presently how powerful was he exactly? Both women were already at a loss, is this still a human?

Presently Yang Chen was feeling a burst of happiness. With only first time cultivation, his physical body's strength had already surpassed thirty thousand catties. With just this cultivation outcome, he could have easily blocked the golden seal of that YuanYing stage expert from few years ago just by relying on his physical body.

What's more, this Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique not only increases the power of fleshly body, it also refines and tempers it and even the strength of the person will also be upgraded by a substantial degree. From inside to outside, from bones to skin, everything had experienced a complex transformation. As his fleshly body become increasingly more formidable, even his defensive power will also continue to increase.

Bones are the main pillar of support for the body, if he wants to his body to be able to support a weight of more than two hundred thousand catties, then his bones must certainly be able to support comparatively higher pressure. Even the muscles also followed the same reasoning.

Yang Chen knew that this moment was still too far, these were the results of first time cultivation that's all. As he continued to walk down this path, his body structure would undergo increasingly more transformations. In the future, he wouldn't even need to rely on defensive magic weapons. Just by relying on

his physical body, he would be able to block the attacks of majority of magic weapons.

Huangjin Strongman's only weak point was his speed, but in this case, Yang Chen certainly didn't have that flaw. These strongmen couldn't use any other cultivation methods that's why they had relied on this method, but this wasn't the case for Yang Chen.

Moreover, Yang Chen also knew that as his cultivation of this Huangjin Strongman Cultivation Method continues to increase, his body will undergo more and more enormous transformations. His body certainly won't continue to have this body builder type structure, rather finally it would tend to become well proportioned as the cultivators preferred, but its formidable power won't be affected the least bit.

After ascending to the Heavenly Court, there wouldn't be great possibility to encounters opportunities to allow the body to undergo transformation, before one's cultivation reaches the rank of Great Principal Golden Immortal. Very rarely can someone reach the rank of Huangjin Strongman so his first choice was to create a formidable fleshly body right now.

Yang Chen had just began his cultivation in the mortal world and still had two opportunities to ascend, so undergoing body transformation depended on his willingness. Moreover, even a fool could see that when will he have higher achievement in this cultivation method, if he starts cultivating now when he had just began on the path of cultivation or if he starts cultivating this technique after ascending to Immortal World.

However, for the period of time, Yang Chen could only maintain this body build. At least, until Yang Chen had achieved great success in this Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique, after that his body would again undergo transformation. Regarding this, Yang Chen didn't care in the least whether cultivator's battle prowess has any relation with his body appearance?

His biggest problem right now were his clothes, every time they looked at him, both woman couldn't control their laughs. After they had enough fun on his expense, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling didn't return back to train rather searched through their qiankun pouches to search for some demon beast's corpse to peel the skin and make clothes for Yang Chen.

Yang Chen had never expected to see the day when he would be calmly preparing tea by the side of his master and senior apprentice sister watching their lily white hands which were used for tool refining and creating spell formations, sewing clothes for himself. This warm sensation was on another level compared to instant he had received the Bright Ray Sword.

Even if both of them weren't skillful with their hands, but still their proficient control over their flying swords allowed them to easily control the sewing needles, furthermore with Gao Yue's achievements in tool refining, it only took the two women less than two days to create a leather pants and gown using the skins of demon beasts.

These clothes had not only been sewed but also undergone simple refining by Gao Yue. However, since these were just for temporary use by Yang Chen, they also haven't put much thought in making them.

But even then, Yang Chen excitedly picked them up and quickly rushed to the empty palace hall to try out the gown and pants. This time, since they were made in accordance to his present body appearance, so after adorning them, they were completely fit for him. What's more, since they had been sewed in front of him by his master and senior apprentice sister, he felt a cozy sensation after wearing them.

When he came out of the hall in front of Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, a shine passed through their eyes on seeing Yang Chen wearing these clothes, even though both of them had been the ones who designed this outfit.

Gao Yue had specially designed the gown and pants in heroic style matching with Yang Chen's present valiant body. When Yang Chen wore them, the lining of his swelled muscles could be clearly seen on the outfit, simply like a living violent statue. The blatant sensation of power produced by stretching of muscles together with Yang Chen's strong presence was extremely bewitching.

Gongsun Ling's face turned red since these clothes didn't cover his entire body, the part of arm below the shoulders was exposed, which made him look wild. Even Gao Yue's face also turned red, her gaze remained fixated on the ground for a few moments, before she again dared to look back at Yang Chen.

"Many thanks master, many thanks senior apprentice sister!"

Yang Chen expressed his gratefulness to both women, however then he shamelessly puffed up his chest and said:

"The handiwork of master and senior apprentice sister seem pretty good, how do I look?"

"In the first glance, you seem like some hired thug of somewhere."

Gongsun Ling again made fun of him and laughed. When Gao Yue heard this, she also smiled gently. This one smile removed all the awkwardness in the atmosphere.

"Good, master and senior apprentice sister, in the future, the responsibility of being the hired thug of this cave would belong to me."

Yang Chen also made a joke, which again caused everyone to laugh.

Following this, Yang Chen asked them about the results of their training as well as their future plans. Gongsun Ling didn't have anything on her mind and was of the intent to continue training, but Gao Yue didn't want to do so.

"We must again make a trip back to the sect for now."

Gao Yue was senior most person among the three people and thus her words carried the most weight:

“Presently, Yang Chen is the most important disciple of the sect, so he couldn’t disappear for long time. At least, we must let the sect know that you are safe. Otherwise, it will attract all sorts of troubles.”

Yang Chen was presently one of the most important people in Pure Yang Palace. Everyone was well aware of this. If he traveled outside to gain experience for one or two years, that’s not a problem, but if he remained outside for long time, that would be something the sect wouldn’t allow. Gao Yue was aware of this fact. Yang Chen also understood.

“Then you both should continue to train for six more months, after six months, we will return back to the sect.”

Yang Chen nodded his head agreeing with Gao Yue’s intentions.

Both women also didn’t waste any time and again stepped out of the safe zone and began to gain battle experience by fighting demon beasts and puppets. As for Yang Chen, he again immersed himself within the jade slips.

She Kui and Xie Sha also would come over to take a look from time to time, Yang Chen also notified them about their next plans during last visit. During these past two periods, he also didn’t know about what happened at Hundred Thousand Mountains, so he also must visit there once he returned back.

After approximately five months, less than one month’s time was left before he had to leave with Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling. At this time, Yang Chen who was immersed within the jade slips, and he suddenly discovered an abnormality in the Medicine Garden’s clean bottle.

This legendary cave was full of spirit energy which Yang Chen had used long ago to fulfill the lack in his clean bottle and the clean

bottle could absorb the spirit energy at all times, thus would always be full of spirit energy. But at this instant, Yang Chen suddenly discovered that the spirit energy in the clean bottle was rapidly depleting. Within a short while, nearly a quarter of its spirit energy had been used and this process was still continuing.

Being greatly alarmed, Yang Chen hastily controlled the clean bottle to crazily absorb spirit energy and simultaneously his spiritual awareness entered within the clean bottle to investigate the matter in detail which had caused this unexpected anomaly.

Once the spiritual awareness entered within the clean bottle, it experienced a huge resistance by the spirit energy. Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was unable to move forwards. Moreover this enormous resistance seemed to be coming from the place where he had put his Bright Ray Sword and Blood Phantom Vine Sword.

That should be his spirit per Yazi's location.

Chapter 232 - Arousal Of Bloodlines

Complete

Before he fed the blood of Heavenly Roar Dog to his Heavenly Roar last time, he had already completed the master pet bonding contract with his spirit pet and the spell had already began to take effect within his body and Heavenly Roar's body. This master pet bonding contract couldn't be altered by even the Dragon King let alone the Heavenly Roar who was just Yazi.

During the previous time, Yang Chen had fed the complete remaining blood essence of Heavenly Roar Dog to him. After continuously feeding it little by little many time, its body had adapted to the blood essence and his body had already began to transform into that of a dragon.

After feeding it the blood essence this time, the final result was about to appear. Whether the bloodline of Yazi had been completely aroused or whether only a part of it had been aroused, it would be seen after Heavenly Roar woke up.

The abnormal change in the spirit energy as well as the main location where it was happening being the the blood cocoon of the Heavenly Roar, there was no question about it. Certainly, the final transformation process had been completed.

But Yang Chen also hadn't expected that such enormous amount of spirit energy would be required to arouse the bloodline in Heavenly Roar. Within another moment, the amount of spirit energy remaining within the clean bottle went down to half. The spirit energy was being used up more quickly than the intake.

Yang Chen was greatly alarmed and immediately found the mouth of a spirit vein and placed the clean bottle there. The clean bottle after being controlled by Yang Chen, began to absorb spirit energy madly from the spirit vein.

After Yang Chen had refined the clean bottle last time, he could control it even more easily. Naturally, it was just his good luck that this cave had abundant spirit veins, otherwise Yang Chen also didn't know where would he supply spirit energy to his own Medicine Garden.

With the clean bottle absorbing spirit energy crazily, the remaining amount of blue liquid which signified the spirit energy within the clean bottle began to slowly rise. This was after all the residence of a large sect, so spirit energy was plentiful even far more compared to Pure Yang Palace, naturally this place will absolutely meet the needs of Medicine Garden.

Yang Chen continued to maintain the extravagant use of spirit energy for full one day and one night. Enormous amounts of spirit energy was concentrated at the location of Heavenly Roar and was being used up rapidly. Moreover, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was still unable to penetrate the resistance of spirit energy, so he didn't have any idea what was going on inside.

To prevent the Heavenly Roar from giving up halfway and awakening because of lack of spirit energy, Yang Chen put his full attention to control the clean bottle to absorb spirit energy. As long as the amount of spirit energy in the clean bottle dropped below 90%, Yang Chen controlled it to quickly absorb it to the limit. Who knows whether this kind of transformation which had just began would require how much spirit energy?

Yang Chen was just being cautious here. After one day and one night had passed, the speed of absorption of spirit energy was again increased by the blood cocoon. If Yang Chen had been controlling the maintain the spirit energy of the clean bottle above 90% at all times, then maybe the supply of spirit energy would've been suddenly broken.

This instant, the spirit energy was again used up ferociously depleting nearly 80% of the total spirit energy of the clean bottle. Yang Chen was greatly alarmed and used his frightening control to

absorb spirit energy rapidly and replenish the supply. The bottom of the clean bottle's blue liquid could be vaguely seen at this point, Yang Chen used his full concentration to make sure that the supply isn't broken.

Fortunately, this kind of sudden depletion of spirit energy happened only once in awhile, moreover wouldn't continue unceasingly. After facing this situation, Yang Chen broke out in cold sweat, he again controlled the Medicine Garden to increase the absorption speed.

This kind of situation would happen once every hour. After understanding the pattern, Yang Chen also dealt with it carefully. Finally he continued to maintain the spirit energy of the clean bottle filled to the limit, as long as some of the spirit energy inside would be depleted it would be immediately replenished.

Yang Chen even used the QingQiong Mountain cave's controls to guarantee that supply of the spirit energy is adequate. He even shifted the spirit veins other regions to come here. The amount of spirit energy supplied with the convergence of these several spirit veins would make anyone's eyes go green with jealousy.

However, the longer this situation continued, the happier Yang Chen became. The more the amount of spirit energy was absorbed would mean more spirit energy would be required to arouse Yazi's bloodlines, which would mean the more percentage of Yazi's bloodlines aroused. The thought of Yazi's bloodlines being aroused completely brought a smile to Yang Chen's face in front of this nightmare.

Feeling this, although controlling the clean bottle to absorb spirit power was tedious and he couldn't distract for a single moment, but Yang Chen was gladly enduring all the hardships, wishing that this day would last longer.

It was already the day he had decided with Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling. She Kui and Xie Sha had already come over. Not finding Yang

Chen at his usual location, the four people quickly searched for him. But when they found Yang Chen, he hinted to them to stay quiet. Meanwhile, seeing the spirit veins of all five attributes converging near him, they were all shocked.

Yang Chen wanted them to wait. No one protest against it, and finding the abundant spirit power here, all of them sat down in Yang Chen's surroundings and began to cultivate. However, even the spirit power used up by these four people, including two YuanYing stage demon beasts, also couldn't compare to the spirit power absorbed by the clean bottle in the time it takes for an incense to burn.

The region which he couldn't probe with his spirit power was still quite large. Yang Chen was somewhat anxious, thinking about whether his Bright Ray Sword and Blood Phantom Vine Sword would get damaged. The Bright Ray Sword was his master's precious gift for him. Yang Chen would rather have the Blood Phantom Vine Sword get damaged than some accident happening to the Bright Ray Sword.

Fortunately, Heavenly Roar was more fond of higher grade flying swords and the Blood Phantom Vine Sword was of higher grade than the Bright Ray Sword. This fact was undisputable. Yang Chen only hoped that during the process of arousing Yazi's bloodline, this fact wouldn't change! Otherwise Yang Chen really didn't know how would he face his master after losing the Bright Ray Sword.

After one month, the blood cocoon finally stopped the process of absorbing spirit power. Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was finally able to enter that region, however he could only probe the blood cocoon from the outside. He was still unable to uncover the situation inside.

Fortunately, both the Bright Ray Sword and Blood Phantom Vine Sword weren't damaged. Not only that, these two swords had even undergone some sort of transformation. Apparently after being

washed by a large amount of spirit energy, even the minutest impurities they had were also removed. Yang Chen was even doubtful whether Heavenly Roar had used these two swords as a medium to absorb the crazy amount of spirit power?

The situation inside the blood cocoon was still unknown, but it also seemed to have undergone some sort of transformation. Initially it was somewhat soft but presently it seemed to have become hard. There were even the sounds of some indistinct activities inside coming through, but they weren't very clear.

These activities seemed to continue for approximately one month before the blood cocoon finally calmed down. Immediately following this, suddenly a crack appeared on the thick cocoon crust.

During this time, everyone, including Yang Chen, were sitting in their positions. Yang Chen didn't dare to relax in monitoring the cocoon and discovered this transformation which startled him again. Finally, Heavenly Roar had aroused his bloodline and his true body would now come out.

The only question was whether this time his body would have completely transformed into that of Yazi or not.

When the blood cocoon finally split open, a small head appeared from inside. The face and head were still the same.

Soon, its long body walked out of blood cocoon, wiggling constantly, floating in the air in the Medicine Garden. When Yang Chen's spiritual awareness probed it once, his pupils shrank immediately.

Yazi, head of a dog and body of a dragon, sure enough it was so. That long body clearly was the body of a dragon. Apart from the beautiful scales, its body also had four dragon paws, on each dragon paw there were five claws.

Obviously the Yazi bloodline had been thoroughly aroused. The

instant he looked this body which had completely transformed into that of a dragon, Yang Chen understood where the large volumes of spirit power had gone. Just the transformation of Heavenly Roar's original body to the current situation would require astonishing amounts of spirit power.

As soon as Heavenly Roar came out of the blood cocoon, it impatiently started eating the cocoon crust. Soon after, its body again wrapped around the Bright Ray Sword and the Blood Phantom Vine Sword again entered its mouth, completely satisfying it.

Yang Chen's first thoughts were that now it would rest, but suddenly, Heavenly Roar seemed to have sensed something and rushed towards a direction after releasing the Bright Ray Sword and putting down the Blood Phantom Vine Sword.

Within a few breaths, it had already rushed towards the Medicine Garden. Although it was unable to enter because of the Medicine Garden, but it looked extremely anxious with its long body twisting and tangling continuously.

With one probe of his spiritual awareness, Yang Chen immediately discovered that on the outer side of the Medicine Garden, in this direction, was where She Kui and Xie Sha sat. Yang Chen's sudden movements had surprised everyone who looked at him doubtfully.

“What did you both collect over there?”

Yang Chen suddenly asked, without showing any politeness or any respect shown towards seniors of sect by a junior.

“Nothing.”

She Kui and Xie Sha replied almost at the same time. They simply didn't mind his attitude, soon after they looked at each other and She Kui opened his mouth:

“We fought many battles with several demon beasts over there,

they were extremely envious that we can transform into humans. Wait until the time we fight again, we will ask old man Gui to teach them a lesson once. Maybe then we will get some high level members for Eccentric Hall.”

All YuanYing stage demon beasts are very intelligent, this fact was undoubtable. She Kui and Xie Sha also knew their position within the sect presently and because of being always looked down upon, they wanted to pull in some more comrades to increase their number. Probably, with She Kui and Xie Sha using themselves as examples and again adding in the benefit of Appearance Transformation Secrets, maybe the Pure Yang Palace would again gain a few more YuanYing stage demon beasts.

However, this was a discussion for later. Presently Yang Chen was interested in the knowing the object they obtained. Xie Sha had already opened his qiankun pouch and emptied it. A pile of objects fell down from it.

In one glance, he surprisingly found more than ten pieces of high grade puppets. These weren't live puppets like Mo Qiang. Rather, they were refined using various materials and used either spirit stones or spirit assembling spells to provide energy. Could it be that Heavenly Roar wanted these pieces?

Yang Chen neared two large pieces, but Heavenly Roar inside the clean bottle was still constantly wandering, seemingly it had no interest in these.

Presently, it wasn't suitable to bring Heavenly Roar in front of everyone. Yang Chen also didn't have any other option other than choosing in its place. So he could only search through the pile one item at a time.

There were all sorts of bones, skin, and teeth from the skeletons of the YuanYing stage demon beasts preserved from countless years ago, which would make anyone's eyes go green with jealousy. But for Yang Chen and Heavenly Roar who showed no interest,

they were just like a pile of garbage.

However, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling seemed to have been obsessed with these things. Both of them quickly rushed forwards and began to examine all these bones from corpse of demon beast.

While looking through this pile, Heavenly Roar suddenly stopped moving when Yang Chen held a piece of a flying sword. He seemed to be waiting anxiously for Yang Chen to throw the piece inside.

After confirming that Heavenly Roar wanted flying sword pieces, Yang Chen didn't say anything and began to crazily search for pieces of flying sword.

These several hundred similar pieces, which She Kui and Xie Sha had collected from some place where the original sect had suffered a mishap, were casually thrown in the Medicine Garden by Yang Chen. However, he collected the remaining ones. Then he began to analyze one of the pieces carefully.

Yang Chen's first impression was that it had been manufactured using some ancient refining technique which had died out countless years ago. Soon, his spiritual awareness wrapped on all the pieces and the magnified picture of this piece appeared within the spiritual sea.

The refining was pretty good according to that era's standard, but presently according Yang Chen's opinion, there were still many regions which needed improvement. Development was the necessity of time. The refining techniques have also been improving constantly.

Since he couldn't see what was so unique about these sword pieces that made Heavenly Roar go crazy, Yang Chen could only collect these pieces. However, his spiritual awareness entered the Medicine Garden to check on Heavenly Roar's movements.

Just one glance immediately stunned Yang Chen. At this moment, Heavenly Roar's body was wrapped around the Bright

Ray Sword and Blood Phantom Vine Sword, but he wasn't biting any of the pieces. All the pieces thrown to him were lying in front of him at this moment. Following which, Heavenly Roar did something the result of which made Yang Chen unable to believe his eyes.

As if taking a deep breath, Heavenly Roar deeply inhaled on the piece of flying sword and immediately a hazy mist appeared around the piece of flying sword. The hazy white mist left the flying sword piece and entered Heavenly Roar's nostrils.

After absorbing this, Heavenly Roar seemed to be content. Holding the two swords close to him, it closed its eyes and began to rest. That satisfactory expression on its face was similar to someone who had gone to bed after eating a delicious meal.

Yang Chen who had seen this complete act, was shaken to the core. That hazy mist which rose from the flying sword must be the spirit which had been formed flying sword had undergone refining countless times. Perhaps, this was an intelligent spirit but this kind of tool spirit really did exist. Even some high grade magic weapons, all would have a constituent spirit sealed within like the pill spirit of Heaven Seizing Pill.

That hazy mist must be the unfinished tool spirit. Yang Chen devour tool spirits, but Yang Chen had never known that even these pieces of magic weapons also have incomplete tool spirit within them which can also be devoured. Even Yang Chen was doubtful that this was the only path for Yazi to mature.

There aren't magic weapons which have tool spirit, but the flying swords which had developed incomplete tool spirits after undergoing countless refinings were countless, so many that they even became a cause of distress for the masters of these magic weapons. There were many things which Heavenly Roar could pleasure himself with.

Chapter 233 - Another Challenge

The smile on Yang Chen's face wasn't hidden from everyone. All of them stopped what they were doing and looked at Yang Chen. Senior apprentice sister Gongsun Ling even asked immediately:

“Something good happened? You seem pretty excited!”

“I discovered something good, however, it is of no use to you guys for the time being.”

Yang Chen didn't give a clear explanation but it was not to the point where he didn't even say a word. He only gave them a general idea and then smiled without saying anything.

Since they couldn't use it right now, everyone completely lost interest. One could not be overly ambitious in cultivation. Taking firm steps one by one was the only genuine path. Even if they currently obtained something at the level of the Immortal World, it wouldn't be of any use to them.

“Check your belongings, we return to the sect now!”

Seeing that everyone was ready to go, Yang Chen didn't stay here for long. With one wave of his hand, everyone quickly collected their things and followed after him to return back to the main hall.

Walking out was much easier compared to entering. In any case, this cave dwelling was under Yang Chen's complete control. With only some simple tricks, they easily exited the cave dwelling.

The vast ocean was still there like before with the empty island devoid of any signs of human existence. When they were sitting on Yang Chen's flying shuttle, Yang Chen marked the location for master and senior apprentice sister. As the controls of this place were in his hands, he had to teach them ways of entering and exiting so that they could come here freely.

This was a good place to gain battle experience with the only flaw being that the location was too far. If he could completely collect it

and place it at some other location, then it would certainly attract the envy of many sects.

“For the time being, this matter must not be told to the sect.”

Gao Yue first gave a reminder to everyone:

“The sect had just witnessed great upheaval. If we provide it something like this again, then people would certainly think of malicious ideas.”

The heart of a person could not be easily understood, all of them were clear about this fact so they all nodded their heads in agreement. Yang Chen also didn't say much, this was a conclusion acceptable to him for this matter.

After travelling for three months, everyone returned back to the MeiQing Mountain. In the two years they weren't here, the MeiQing Mountain had undergone a great transformation.

Using the opportunity of rebuilding the destroyed sect area, the Palace Master and a few other elders designed a new sect area for the Pure Yang Palace. Since they had become majestic compared to before, even the distribution of the underground veins were considered, including the underground vein of Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

Compared to before, the present Pure Yang Palace had grown by almost three times. A huge building spanning over a perimeter of 200 miles was built within the sect area, this was the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. If not for the immense grandeur of main palace hall, Yang Chen and others wouldn't necessarily be able to find its location.

Let alone mention other things, even the temperament of Palace Master had undergone great changes. During the two years time, they had tightened their grasp on the Hundred Thousand Mountains. The huge earnings from the Hundred Thousand Mountains had given him the confidence to hold the ambition of

fighting for supremacy with other sects.

Although they knew that the earnings from Hundred Thousand Mountains would be astonishing, no one had expected that the profits would be so enormous. The earnings of just the first year when they had gained complete control were enough to easily support the Pure Yang Palace for more than ten years. The profits of second year doubled.

This was only a portion of the total earnings after dividing between Green Jade Immortal Islands, Clear Sky Sect and Beast Taming Sect, so the wealth accumulated by those few experts of the backstage organization in the past years could be clearly imagined.

Unfortunately, it was reported that those few people had spent the enormous wealth to buy the highest quality pills and elixirs to attack the boundary of their current realm. Even then, the four sects had made a killing just from the spoils of war.

The four sects were already pleased beyond expectation with this outcome and started paying more attention to the Hundred Thousand Mountains. Furthermore, after the four sects had established the rule that there won't be any killing and robbing in the Hundred Thousand Mountains, even more cultivators of the devil and demon path flocked over, thus increasing the earnings even more.

After becoming the palace master who had ushered the Pure Yang Palace into a new era, the Palace Master naturally had to appear more majestic. The backs of the few other elders also similarly straightened. Brilliance shone on their faces since their situation had changed compared to before, when the sect was tediously struggling at the edge of second rate sects.

Not to mention the upper echelons, even the ordinary disciples would proudly announce the name of Pure Yang Palace when adventuring outside, which gained more face for the sect. Even the

number of new recruits in the previous two years had grown by many folds. Seeing everything moving in a better direction, Yang Chen was pleased.

But when he visited the Palace Master to pay his respects, he was left complaining when he came outside. In the previous two years, when Yang Chen's group went to adventure outside, the Palace Master and great master Wang Yong had been anxious to death without any news of them. Fortunately, they had returned back quickly, otherwise, maybe the Palace Master would have offered a bounty to find Yang Chen.

“Disciple requests Palace Master to forgive disciple for his impoliteness.”

Yang Chen had to show his respect in front of the care and concern shown by Palace Master, only then did he begin to explain:

“If the sect become so protective of this disciple, then it wouldn't have any genuine benefits towards disciple.”

The seedlings grown within a greenhouse without experiencing many things couldn't compare to the trees growing in wilderness. Everyone understood this principle, but when it came to the sect's most important disciple, all of them seemed to have a tacit understanding to forget this fact.

In Yang Chen's opinion, the sect should never been so protective of him. After pondering for a short moment, Palace Master finally nodded his head. Which sect doesn't want a talented disciple and they shouldn't make him useless by being overprotective.

With Palace Master's approval, other elders were easier to convince, even great master Wang Yang couldn't say anything. With this, Yang Chen finally got the permission to adventure outside again.

Yang Chen had two motives of returning to sect this time. The first was to allow the people of the sect to feel relieved and the

second was to fight for the opportunity to adventure outside. Actually, Yang Chen had never experienced the issue of security before, let alone mention the domed palace hall's protection, he also had Mo Qian and her disciples. Furthermore, with two other YuanYing experts, he would never face any problems.

Not to mention his ultimate trump card, the blood river. He had decided to use this trick only at the most critical and desperate moment.

“Adventuring outside is good. When you go out this time, take that girl from the Clear Sky Sect with you so the Clear Sky Sect doesn't start complaining again.”

Although the Palace Master had nodded his head, he still reminded Yang Chen about the matter regarding Sun Qingxue before he left.

Presently, Yang Chen dreaded to hear about this matter. Last time when this matter was raised, his master Gao Yue had surprisingly started playing matchmaker between him and Gongsun Ling. After hearing Palace Master's reminder, he hastily agreed and rushed outside without daring to turn back his head.

Although he had just returned back, Yang Chen wasn't planning on staying in the sect for long as the bloodline in Heavenly Roar had been completely aroused. Yang Chen was growing impatient and wanted to take him to the Dragon King's Palace in the east side ocean and check whether Yazi's bloodline would help him opening some of the barriers.

After gaining battle experience for two years, they had returned at the perfect time to digest that battle experience and peacefully cultivate. All of them returned to their residences and began to cultivate.

Yang Chen didn't have the intention of taking anyone along. The Palace of Dragon King was of great importance to him and he didn't plan to let anyone know about that legendary place.

If his master and them wanted to gain more experience, he had told them about the method of entering and exiting so they could go there whenever they wanted, without the need of him to bring them along. In any case, Yang Chen had only remained in one of the palace halls cultivating and reading jade slips as there wasn't any need for him to go and battle with demon beasts.

Naturally, Yang Chen didn't stop cultivating, he still insisted on cultivating a complete cycle once a day. However, others still thought that cultivating one full cycle per day was quite lazy. But everyone also knew that Yang Chen was a pill concocting master so no one urged him to be more diligent in cultivation.

When he returned to the sect this time, the sect had prepared a small surprise for him. During the two years he had been away, the sect had collected more than two hundred flames and all of them were different from the ones he had absorbed previously. This time, there weren't only first and second grade flames, there were also two flames that were third grade.

Someone even wanted to use a fourth grade flame to exchange for a heart questioning pill, however, this price was clearly too low so the Palace Master directly refused. A heart questioning pill, even if it could be exchanged, would require at least a fifth grade flame like the Real Sun Fire or Real Moon Fire, a fourth grade flame wasn't even worth counting.

Yang Chen wasn't polite and directly collected all the flames. These were his rewards for his service to sect, so he didn't feel uncomfortable collecting them. Naturally, there was no one among the elders who had any problem.

When he took his leave from his master, he only told her that he was going out to find some secret place to absorb the flames. Gao Yue thought that Yang Chen wouldn't want the sect to worry about such a trifling matters and so didn't obstruct him. She knew Yang Chen was extremely strong and after cultivating the Huangjin Strongman Body Refining Technique, his strength had

been boosted greatly, so there wasn't any need to worry about his safety. But she still warned him repeatedly to be cautious.

Speaking of Huangjin Body Refining Technique, when Yang Chen returned back to the sect with his body full of muscles, even the Palace Master and the elders were surprised. Although the body becoming full of muscles wasn't any shocking matter, only one thought flickered within everyone's mind, that Yang Chen wanted to use this figure to chase away Shi Shanshan and Sun Qingxue.

But when all was said and done, this was just a far fetched guess. However, no one could comprehend what Yang Chen was thinking. Regardless of whether it was Fairy Shi of Green Jade Immortal Islands or Sun Qingxue of Clear Sky Sect, each had greater background than the other, each was more beautiful than the other, each was more talented in cultivation than the other, but even such a sweet deal was insufficient for him.

When he leaving his master's place, she gave him another set of clothes. She and Gongsun Ling had stitched these clothes while waiting for Yang Chen. The demon beasts used to sew the previous set of clothes were too low grade and weren't worthy of being refined properly. This time, Gao Yue had rummaged through She Kui and Xie Sha's spoils of war to find the skin and furs of some YuanYing stage demon beast and used them to properly refine some good clothes.

When Yang Chen came out of Pure Yang Palace, he didn't directly leave on his flying shuttle, rather, he first went to the market street at the MeiQing Mountain to check up on Shangguan Feng.

Shangguan Feng was completely infatuated with business but his cultivation had increased again compared to the last time when Yang Chen saw him. This caused Yang Chen to sigh in admiration, Shangguan Feng sure was completely suitable for business.

Scarface had returned with some good things last time he

returned, due to which, Shangguan Feng's business had soared like rising water and wind.

Seeing that everything was on the right track, Yang Chen was also happy. After a brief conversation with Shangguan Feng, Yang Chen walked out of the market and used his flying sword to fly towards the East Sea.

Yang Chen didn't want to cause uproar in the market street and thus hadn't used his flying shuttle. But soon, a bitter smile made its way on his face.

In the direction Yang Chen was flying, a group of people had suddenly appeared. Most of them were at the foundation stage, with at least two being at JieDan stage. All of them had a scholarly aura and seemed quite refined. With just one look, anyone could make out that they were all chosen and seemed to know that he was going in this direction and had thus blocked his path.

Yang Chen nimbly controlled his flying sword and slowly descended to the ground. After collecting his flying sword, he looked at the group of people who had surrounded him and calmly asked:

“Fellow daoists, how can myself help you?”

A person jumped out from the group of people and fixed his gaze on Yang Chen as if trying to confirm something. Suddenly, he greeted Yang Chen and asked:

“Could fellow daoist be Yang Chen of Pure Yang Palace?”

“That is myself!”

Since the opponent had greeted him properly, Yang Chen also wouldn't be rude. He knew why the opponent couldn't confirm without asking, his appearance had changed greatly, so no one would dare to believe that he was Yang Chen.

“Myself, xxx, issue a challenge towards fellow daoist Yang!”

“Myself, xyz, invite fellow daoist Yang to compare pointers!”

Once they were certain of Yang Chen’s identity, the group suddenly started to talk together leaving Yang Chen stunned. He had indeed heard correctly, these people had come to issue a challenge and pit themselves against him.

Yang Chen immediately frowned. So many people issuing challenge to him, what’s the reason? Furthermore, he wasn’t very excited towards these kind of challenges, so he could only restrain his temper for the time being and cupped his hands before asking:

“What kind of misunderstanding is there between fellow daoists and this Yang?”

“No misunderstanding!”

Said that youngster who had jumped out earlier. After coming the identity of Yang Chen, his attitude had completely transformed:

“Fairy Shi certainly couldn’t agree to be your dao companion, myself issue a challenge to you. If you lose, then you absolutely mustn’t bother Fairy Shi from this moment forth!”

Wew, it was the admirers of Shi Shanshan again, Yang Chen was even more annoyed. He didn’t say much, only yelled loudly:

“Myself isn’t skilled enough to compare pointers with fellow daoists, so myself admits defeat!”

When the group of chosens heard Yang Chen’s words, they were instantly astonished. Initially, they had planned to confront Yang Chen head on and beat him so that he loses all face, but they had never expected that Yang Chen surprisingly would admit defeat, what could they do now?

“You! You! Our Fairy Shi who is clear is ice and jade had surprisingly been swindled by a gutless person like you!”

Immediately, someone started shouting loudly:

“How can you admit defeat without battling?”

“My skills are insufficient, can't I just admit defeat?”

Yang Chen faintly smiled towards these ‘elites’ who were trying to provoke him and stepped forward, wanting to leave:

“Since myself has already admitted defeat, myself requests everyone to clear the path!”

“Can't do!”

The youngster who had jumped out in the beginning yelled loudly:

“I had long ago heard that Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen doesn't agree to challenges. Myself today has finally experienced this personally. Since this is the case, then Yang Chen, I issue a life and death challenge towards you!”

Chapter 234 - No One Can Save A Person Who Is Courting Death

“Deathmatch!”

Upon hearing those words, the surrounding cultivators looked at their companion with astonished expressions, thinking they had misheard.

“This life and death I’ve challenge you to will settle who is most suitable for Fairy Shi!”

With the gazes of the surrounding cultivators on him, that companion stood tall and puffed up his chest, as if showing that he wasn’t afraid of dying.

“There are no grievances or hatred between us. Why must you declare a deathmatch?”

Yang Chen shook his head:

“Forgive me, but I don’t have time for this.”

The other party acted as if blood had rushed into his head to the point where he even issued a life and death duel. Apparently, he had heard about Yang Chen’s previous life and death duels. Yang Chen currently wasn’t bored enough to battle with someone he didn’t know. Furthermore, the challenge was over the affection of a woman, making this demand even more ridiculous.

“No grievance or hatred?”

The opponent suddenly sneered:

“My senior apprentice brother entered the MeiQing Mountain a few years ago to issue a deathmatch against you. Even now, his whereabouts are unknown. Did you kill him?”

“In this world, dying isn’t something exceptional and not everything happens because of this Yang.”

Yang Chen mocked him:

“A few years ago, my sect was destroyed and countless corpses were buried at that time. If you want to blame someone, blame those people who destroyed my sect!”

Yang Chen’s declaration left the person who had taken the initiative speechless. The destruction of the Pure Yang Palace wasn’t a secret. When people investigating the incident had arrived at scene, they could clearly see that not even the mountain protecting spell had been able to the sect from that sort of catastrophe, so people dying wasn’t anything exceptional.

Maybe his senior apprentice brother had been killed during that disaster? Regardless, the Pure Yang Palace had long ago publicly proclaimed that Hundred Thousand Mountains had been behind the attack.

Furthermore, the Pure Yang Palace had also aligned with a few big sects and launched a retaliatory attack, exterminating the backstage power of the Hundred Thousand Mountains. Thus, this person forcefully insisting that his senior’s death had some relation to Yang Chen wasn’t so conclusive.

But if a person goes insane and keeps courting death, then even heavens can’t save them. When that person heard Yang Chen’s words, he paused for two breaths and then suddenly yelled:

“If not for you, why would my senior apprentice brother have come here?”

“This Yang Chen hadn’t invited anyone.”

Yang Chen sneered. He had already begun to get impatient with dealing with these people:

“If anyone doesn’t have anything else to say, then this Yang must excuse himself!”

The group of people looked at each other in dismay. Initially, they had intended to issue a challenge to Yang Chen and beat him

to make him leave Fairy Shi. Nevertheless, they hadn't anticipated that this person himself would take the initiative to admit defeat. Their mission had been completely unsuccessful.

Even though they heard Yang Chen admit defeat, no one felt any sense of victory. The sensation of being looked down upon by Yang Chen had instead made these people, who were usually regarding as outstanding, feel humiliated and burning with rage. This kind of defeat – is it even regarded as defeat?

“You still have to pay for my senior apprentice brother's life!”

The person who had taken the initiative to speak earlier couldn't control his hatred any longer. He rushed towards Yang Chen while yelling loudly. His friend standing by his side had been thinking of how to dissuade him from acting recklessly, but it was already too late.

Just a moment ago, Yang Chen had already said that this matter didn't have anything to do with him. Regardless, if Yang Chen's accuser absolutely wanted to attach this matter with Yang Chen, then that was an unwise decision. Who didn't know that Yang Chen's name was presently listed among the peak pill concocting masters?. If they had only beaten Yang Chen while comparing notes, no one would have said anything as he was a pill concocting master, so him being inferior in cultivation would've been considered as normal.

Nevertheless, if he absolutely insisted on fighting a deathmatch with Yang Chen, then that decision was a completely foolish choice. On the one hand, even if he won, he might not necessarily be able to obtain Fairy Shi. Instead he would likely make enemies out of countless experts who desired pills from Yang Chen. If he lost, then the only outcome waiting for him was death.

“And it is not related to me!”

Yang Chen simply didn't pay any attention to his opponent's yell. He simply just turned around and left. This person couldn't be

reasoned with.

Just as that person's friend let out a deep breath, he discovered, to his surprise, that his friend had raised his flying sword and silently stabbed towards Yang Chen, who had already turned his back.

No one among the group dared to utter a sound. Apparently, they had also been stupefied by this action of their fellow companion. Sneak attack, this, this was a sneak attack! Weren't we going to defeat Yang Chen fair and square?

Just at the instant when his flying sword was going to enter Yang Chen's back, Yang Chen's figure suddenly moved. His figure which had its back facing towards everyone, with a flash, turned to face everyone. His hand moved, shua, and he tried to swiftly grab the incoming flying sword.

Grabbing a flying sword with one hand? The eyes of the entire group of people became wide open. How is this possible? But the circumstances in front of them simply made them unable to believe their own eyes.

Their fellow companion's flying sword, flickering with light, had been pinched between two fingers by Yang Chen. The sword continued to tremble incessantly between Yang Chen's two fingers, but it was unable to break free. A struggling expression appeared on their companion's face with beads of sweat appearing on his forehead.

It was simply one strike and couldn't even be regarded as deathmatch, so how can there be beads of sweat appearing on their companion's forehead? How is this possible? But this was exactly what was happening in front of them right now.

The most astonishing thing was that Yang Chen's hands were still empty. If he had some kind of glove or even a cover over his fingers, then also everyone could understand. Then it would've been just a magic weapon against a magic weapon. Maybe the

difference between the magic weapons was just so vast? But surprisingly, Yang Chen had grabbed their companion's flying sword with bare hands. Was this still something a human could accomplish?

If Yang Chen had been a YuanYing stage or higher level expert, then it wouldn't have been so astonishing, since the large disparity between their cultivation base was enough to make up for the magic weapon. But Yang Chen clearly was at the foundation stage, the same as them. But he still had grabbed their companion's flying sword with a bare hand and their companion had been completely incapable of resisting.

Could it be that this was Yang Chen's true strength? While everyone kept guessing, Yang Chen had already made his next move.

Since the other party had launched a sneak attack and with the intent of taking his life, even if Yang Chen's temperament was even more forgiving, it would still have been impossible to not feel enraged towards these people.

The same time when he grabbed the flying sword, Yang Chen's expressions also became cold. He ruthlessly gazed at the master of the flying sword and suddenly said in loud voice:

“For every grievance someone is responsible, for every debt there is a debtor. We didn't have any previous grievance or hatred but today you surprisingly tried to take my life, so you must not blame me in the afterlife!”

Before his words had fallen on the ground, Yang Chen's hand applied force and under the shocked gazes of the group of people, the flying sword grabbed within his hand was forcibly broken down into two by his fingers.

What was this? The group of people were left speechless by this act which occurred in front of their eyes. Using a flying sword to break another flying sword, this was something which everyone

could accept, because there are difference between the quality of flying swords. Even using another magic weapon to break a flying sword also could be accepted, as some magic weapons were comparatively harder than others.

But using fingers to pinch the flying sword like pinching a small insect and easily breaking it into two halves, what was this? Yang Chen's fingers, could they be high grade magic weapons?

However, Yang Chen didn't intend to provide another opportunity to the master of the flying sword. He stretched his one hand, gripped Heavenly Roar's body within the Medicine Garden, and simultaneously, the Bright Ray Sword under Yang Chen's control flew into its mouth.

Heavenly Roar seemed to have understood what Yang Chen was trying to do and obediently served Yang Chen. When the sword hilt of Bright Ray Sword entered Heavenly Roar's mouth, its body suddenly began to transform.

The long dragon like body began to coil around, twisting around Yang Chen's hand and immediately transformed into a golden coloured sword hilt and opened its large mouth, to swallow the bright ray sword. However once it closed its mouth, the sharp edge of the bright ray sword extended out of Heavenly Roar's mouth. Heavenly Roar's head also transformed into a sinister demon's head.

Suddenly a thin layer of light which was invisible through naked eye, appeared on the sword edge of Bright Ray Sword. If Yang Chen hadn't been the master of Bright Ray Sword and Heavenly Roar, he basically would've been unable to sense this minor transformation.

Accompanying the melodious sound of sword being taken out, Yang Chen's Bright Ray Sword appeared in front of everyone. However, the appearance of the Bright Ray Sword didn't astonished anyone, since all of them were still hadn't sobered up

from the shock of Yang Chen stopping their attack with three fingers.

Others didn't know that these people had been in contact with each other for the past few days, hoping to join hands and cause trouble for Yang Chen and would compare notes with each other everyday to prepare for today. Thus they were clear about the quality of this person's flying sword. Even if it may be inferior to their flying sword, but it couldn't be called weak by any means.

However, it was still easily broken by Yang Chen, this also implied that even if they all unsheathed their flying sword, the results would still be the same. Yang Chen wouldn't even need to use his flying sword, just the force of his fleshly body will be sufficient to beat them all.

However, when the sword appeared in Yang Chen's hand, they all noticed the peculiarity of Yang Chen's offense. He surprisingly was holding it in his hands, could Yang Chen be unable to control flying swords?

Once this thought entered their mind, immediately some of them were tempted, especially the friend of the person who had attacked Yang Chen. Since they had already attacked and Yang Chen had also broken his friend's flying sword, there was no option other than to battle. Why not use this opportunity to surround and kill Yang Chen? This would also fulfill everyone's desire, providing them a chance to chase after Fairy Shi?

Two flying sword silently appeared behind Yang Chen and fiercely rushed to chop down Yang Chen. The people in front of Yang Chen, could see that someone had moved to attack him, but no one said anything. Yang Chen being killed, also meant that they would've gain the chance to get close to Fairy Shi.

However, Yang Chen just sneered. The Bright Ray Sword in his hand, moved once as if he had grown eyes behind his back, and two "Pengs" echoed. The two flying swords behind his back, were

easily broken down into four by him.

With Heavenly Roar possessing his weapon, the flying swords used by these foundation stage cultivators, were even easier to cut than tofu. Even before the edge of his blade had come in contact with opponent's flying sword, the portion of sharp energy already dispersed everywhere and cleaved the enemy's flying sword into two halves.

These two flying swords were the destined flying swords of their respective masters. Once these two were destroyed, instantly the masters of the flying sword began to howl in grief. Yang Chen didn't pay any attention to it, his figure moved like lightning and quickly chopped down towards three people who attacked him. With one horizontal slash, the three of them transformed into six pieces. Blood filled the ground and their internal organs fell out creating a puddle.

Yang Chen had already collected the three qiankun pouches and returned to his original position, by the time everyone realized what had happened. He had completed his attack, within the time it takes for a spark to die out. No one could even respond.

“He killed fellow daoist Wang!”

A shocked yell suddenly echoed from someone. That desperate and terrified voice, apparently declared that this ‘fellow daoist Wang’ whom Yang Chen had killed, wasn't an ordinary person.

Almost everyone looked at the scene as if they were looking at a ghost. All of them began to edge backwards and move away from Yang Chen, as if Yang Chen was the personification from some kind of demon.

The most unexpected this was that the two JieDan experts among these these people, were still standing at the same place, looking at Yang Chen coldly as if they were looking at their mortal enemy.

“You dared to kill young master!”

One of the JieDan experts, squeezed these words while howling with grief:

“Prepare to die!!”

Another JieDan expert, hadn't said anything rather directly attacked.

It needn't be asked, these certainly were the bodyguards of some young master. However, they hadn't expected that Yang Chen will attack so rapidly that they won't be able to stop him. At this moment, only by killing Yang Chen could they provide an explanation for young master's life.

Their attacks hadn't affected the surroundings, but, the omnipotent presence of JieDan experts appeared. Those foundation stage fools by their side, basically couldn't endure it and cried out in surprise. Then they began to flee in all directions.

Everyone was aware that blood had entered the eyes of the two JieDan experts. They were unable to protect the young master, this crime was sufficient to send them on the path of death. Facing death's door, these two JieDan experts may not attack the life long friend of young master, but maybe they would take their anger out on them and maybe send them to accompany the young master. Furthermore, Yang Chen's next target probably will be them. So none of them dared to stay there for long and began to run in all directions.

These people who didn't even know which direction they were rushing towards because of panic, naturally didn't know what happened after they left. They had no idea that at the instant, they began to escape, five veiled females suddenly surrounded the two JieDan experts.

The five females had appeared silently, but their attack was extremely weird. Using the Five Female Profound Spell which they

had used many times, they instantly covered the two JieDan experts within the spell.

Bang, even more fierce JieDan pressure caused those escapees to run even faster, wishing that their parents had given them an extra limb. They didn't even dare to turn their head around, let alone speak of using spiritual awareness. If they used spiritual awareness to probe this terrifying scene, then apart from being devoured by backlash, there won't be any other result.

The two JieDan stage bodyguards also lost all hopes. In one moment of carelessness, Yang Chen had killed their young master, and presently, the five females who had appeared suddenly also let them know that killing Yang Chen to avenge their young master was already an extravagant hope. Not to mention that it was still unknown whether they would be able to leave here alive.

These two who were facing death's door, had never expected this. Clearly, Yang Chen was just an ordinary disciple, even though he had shown great potential in the field of pill concocting, but still how can the Pure Yang Palace dispatch five JieDan stage experts to protect him? His security was even stricter compared to young master Wang.

However, it was already impossible for them to know the answer. After being captured under the Five Female Profound Spell, they could only resist for few moments, before each of them was stabbed by five flying swords and both of them died while looking at Yang Chen with resentful gaze.

Pointless challenge, meaningless deaths, Yang Chen didn't know how to evaluate these people. However, until the day he settles Shi Shanshan's affair, these kind of events will continue to happen. Who asked Shi Shanshan to allow her name to shock the entire world, causing countless people to desire to be her dao companion?

What made Yang Chen most suspicious was the fact that he had barely shown himself and he was immediately found by these

people. Yang Chen definitely wouldn't believe there was no conspiracy going on here and these people who had no worries in their lives, were simply waiting all the time for Yang Chen to appear at the MeiQing Mountain?

Chapter 235 - Still Being Pursued

MeiQing Mountain market wasn't restricted for outsiders or rogue cultivators. Someone keeping a constant watch over the market was ordinary. For this group of silk-pants, who had no worries in their lives, a long wait for him there was certainly not ordinary.

Someone had gathered them together using an excuse like challenging Yang Chen for Fairy Shi. Moreover, that person had also used a common topic to push all the hatred on Yang Chen.

The first person was clearly incited by someone. Given the nature of these silk-pants, face was the most important thing. After Yang Chen had conceded defeat, they had gained face, so at least most of them wouldn't think of attacking him. But that person not only argued with him, he even took the initiative to attack Yang Chen. Clearly he wanted to coerce everyone into attacking and had hoped that Yang Chen would be killed in the confusion, thus creating trouble for Pure Yang Palace.

What he hadn't expected was that Yang Chen would break his attack using just three fingers, subduing most of the group. With no other way in sight, he could only use the other two people to attack, one of whom was some young master of the Wang family. The outcome, they were killed by Yang Chen's one strike, thus leading to the present situation.

Regardless of whatever is said, Yang Chen had killed someone. Those people who escaped would certainly claim it publicly. Even if Yang Chen chased after them and killed as many as he could, someone would still spread the information about Yang Chen killing people.

Regarding this, Yang Chen didn't care much. His only worry was that these people hiding behind the scenes might use this incident to bring harm to his master. Fortunately, Yang Chen wouldn't

need to spend a long time on this time's trip. His trip this time was to the hidden treasury of the Palace of Dragons to check whether Heavenly Roar's dragon clan's bloodline could be used to remove some of the seals and obtain some treasures.

Just the flying shuttle, which he had received from there, had assisted Yang Chen many times. He had obtained that treasure after removing the simplest seal. It was obvious what grade of treasures he would receive after removing those difficult seals. Once he thought about those treasures, Yang Chen could barely control his heart.

Yang Chen had also discovered that as his cultivation advanced, the speed of the flying shuttle also increased. When he was at the initial foundation stage, it clearly didn't have its present speed.

When he reached the coast, Yang Chen submerged the flying shuttle into the ocean, without revealing anything. Even if someone was chasing after him, Yang Chen was truly convinced that no one could match the flying shuttle's current speed within the ocean.

The deep dark ocean bed was serene and dangerous, but with the high speed of the flying shuttle, Yang Chen simply didn't care. Those demon beasts who might chase after the flying shuttle didn't have the required formidable strength. Those who were sufficiently powerful couldn't catch up to the flying shuttle. Last time, Yang Chen had confirmed this.

It required him around ten days to reach the secret treasury of the Palace of Dragons. Yang Chen set the direction and coordinates properly and began to cultivate.

Whether it was because of the sudden change in the surroundings after he entered the ocean or whether it was because of the powerful hindrance provided by the ocean water, those people who wanted to chase after Yang Chen would have to pay a great price. Yang Chen suddenly felt as if someone was chasing him.

How was it possible? Apart from Dacheng stage experts, even Wang Yong himself wouldn't be able to chase Yang Chen if he couldn't sense Yang Chen's direction. Nevertheless, presently some formidable spiritual awareness was clearly tracking him.

After realizing this, the first thing that Yang Chen did was to immediately examine his body and check for spiritual awareness imprint or something like that. After a proper inspection, he confirmed that this wasn't the case.

Yang Chen became somewhat desperate. If the enemy had engraved some sort of spiritual awareness imprint on his body, then he could easily use the blood river within his consciousness sea to deal with him. Although presently, the Immortal Executing Blade was being refined within the blood river, but to get rid of the imprint, Yang Chen didn't need to move the blood river. He only needed to throw the imprint within the blood river.

Last time, Guan Yueying was tormented by Yang Chen using the same method while she chased after him to hunt him down, and a majestic YuanYing stage expert became a captive of a trifling foundation stage cultivator like Yang Chen. That was when, Yang Chen didn't know any deadly tricks. If Yang Chen could sense the hostility, then the enemy would easily lose consciousness.

If it wasn't on his body, then it was certainly on some object that he owned. Yang Chen began to thoroughly inspect all his treasures.

The Medicine Garden and the domed large hall were both within his Achievement Ring. Yang Chen couldn't think of any expert within this mortal world whose spiritual awareness could penetrate the Achievement Ring to track him down. Moreover, the Medicine Garden was the treasure which was given utmost priority by Yang Chen and had been refined several times by him, but he had never discovered any spiritual awareness imprint.

It was even more impossible for the imprint to be placed on the Profound Spirit Furnace as presently it was completely branded by

Yang Chen as his own. Even if other people held the Profound Spirit Furnace, they wouldn't be able use it. If their control over fire wasn't as good as Yang Chen's, the only outcome from trying to use Profound Spirit Furnace would be that they would be unable to control the countless flames and would then be turned into ashes by the Profound Spirit Furnace.

If someone had engraved the spiritual awareness imprint on Profound Spirit Furnace, the only conclusion would be that his spiritual awareness would be burned completely by Real Sun Fire, Real Moon Fire as well as Nanming fire and the enemy would turn into a vegetable like Mo Qiang. Moreover, the Profound Spirit Furnace was also within the Achievement Ring, so it was impossible.

Bright Ray Sword and Blood Phantom Vine sword were both within the Medicine Garden together with Heavenly Roar. Their incomplete sword spirit had already been engulfed by Heavenly Roar. If the spiritual awareness imprint was on them, then it would've already become a good meal for Heavenly Roar.

Although the flying shuttle was a possibility, but until now, Yang Chen had no method of refining the flying shuttle and could only engrave his spiritual awareness imprint. However, even to accomplish that, Yang Chen had to spend at least few months time. It must be known that Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was extremely formidable and had reached mid YuanYing stage. If others wanted to leave their spiritual awareness imprint on it, they would only be able to barely touch it.

Until now, the flying shuttle was under Yang Chen's complete control, which clearly explained that the flying shuttle hadn't been forcefully imprinted by others.

Apart from these treasures, which Yang Chen considered as his most precious, all the other ordinary items were placed within the qiankun pouch refined by Wang Yong. After Yang Chen carried out a similar inspection on them, he quickly discovered a problem.

There were a few qiankun pouches within, which belonged to the few people whom Yang Chen had killed not long ago which also included the qiankun pouches of that young master and his two JieDan stage bodyguards. The tracking spiritual awareness was engraved on top of each of these.

This wasn't strange, usually all the large sects would use the tracking spell formation so that they could find their disciples. This would act as a safety measures as well as was also a way to guard against the unexpected. So this sort of tracking imprint on the qiankun pouches of that young master as well as his followers was absolutely normal.

The only abnormality was that those few people whom he had killed at the start of that farce clearly didn't belong to the same sect. Unexpectedly, the tracking imprint on their qiankun pouches was identical. This was a little bit weird.

This only had one explanation. Those people, even including those who had fled the scene, were all guinea pigs who were delivered to Yang Chen to be killed so as to track Yang Chen's movements.

If Yang Chen hadn't entered the ocean, thus forcing the opponent to increase the intensity of his inspection because of the resistance offered by several layers of ocean water, he wouldn't be able to discover the enemy's plans.

Collecting the spoils of war after killing the enemy was common practice followed by everyone, and Yang Chen was no different. Perhaps, the enemy had made this plan based on this common practice and had even incited those youths, by using the name of Shi Shanshan, to cause trouble for Yang Chen.

As long as Yang Chen killed a few of these people, he would certainly fall within this trap. Moreover, as long as Yang Chen killed someone, these people could publicly claim to attack Yang Chen out of hatred for killing their allies.

But the opponent wouldn't have anticipated, even in their wildest dreams, that Yang Chen's spiritual awareness would surprisingly be so formidable and would be able to discover the traces of the imprint created by them, which even some YuanYing experts would be unable to sense.

After discovering the enemy's tricks and discovering that it was all done by the same person, Yang Chen didn't impatiently remove the spiritual awareness imprints.

There was a great difference between knowing that you had an enemy and knowing who it was. Yang Chen wasn't willing to destroy the little clues that he had found.

He cautiously sent out his spiritual awareness thread and completely wrapped the spiritual awareness imprint on some qiankun pouch, easily controlling to enter within his consciousness sea and placed it at the edge of blood river. This spiritual awareness imprint could be thrown within the blood river at any time.

After verifying that there wasn't any other tracking imprints, Yang Chen used his spiritual awareness thread to strictly bind that spiritual awareness imprint so as to make it impossible for the enemy to track him using this spiritual awareness imprint.

Following this, Yang Chen rummaged through the other qiankun pouches and conveniently collected all the objects inside, placing them into his qiankun pouch. Afterwards, he started throwing those qiankun pouches towards formidable beasts which he had encountered. Within short two days time, all of them were thrown to the sides of demons beast of the ocean.

Convinced that the enemy had completely lost tracks of him, Yang Chen again continued with his search. Who knew what these formidable demon beasts, who had encountered him, would be feeling right now? After completing this trip to the Palace of Dragons, he would properly have his fun with these people.

However, presently, Yang Chen didn't have any intention of dealing with these people. Yang Chen had aroused Heavenly Roar's dragon race bloodline with great difficulties, he was impatient to see what kind of treasures he could obtain using them.

He finally reached the secret treasury of Palace of Dragons. That large unremarkable sea rock again opened up the entrance after Yang Chen completed manipulating a series of complex mechanisms, and he was finally able to enter the secret treasury.

Sure enough, Yang Chen's expectations weren't betrayed. Once they entered within the treasury, Heavenly Roar again began to wriggle crazily, wanting to be let out.

Since there weren't any outsiders here, Yang Chen immediately released Heavenly Roar. At this moment, Heavenly Roar, no longer resembled a small pup like before. He completely resembled Yazi with his dog head and dragon body. After the transformation to a dragon body, Heavenly Roar didn't walk on the ground and rather flew within the air.

Heavenly Roar, who seemed to be extremely attracted towards something within the palace's treasury, continued to fly slowly but unwaveringly in the front. Yang Chen unhurriedly followed behind him, curiously looking towards the direction Heavenly Roar was flying.

After flying for a good while, Heavenly Roar finally struggled to land on an enormous sea map. He seemed to have been exhausted after reaching the map and directly descended on some flickering location which marked a spirit vein on the sea map and began to rest. At the same time, it turned its head towards Yang Chen as if expecting something from him.

Yang Chen thought for a moment and threw some pieces of magic weapons, which he had found at the QingQiong cave, in front of Heavenly Roar.

Heavenly Roar was certainly waiting for his reward He opened

his large mouth and took a deep breath with all his might. The shining mist again appeared on top of the few pieces and entered Heavenly Roar's mouth. Those pieces immediately lost their lustre and transformed into ordinary rubble, losing all the evidence of being a magic weapon.

Yang Chen didn't throw these pieces away, and he collected them within his qiankun pouch. These chunks were good raw materials, although these magic weapons had been broken and were now just raw materials that hadn't been ruined.

After resting for a time it takes for half an incense to burn, Heavenly Roar again recovered his strength and began to fly. This time, he directly flew into the main hall.

Following behind Heavenly Roar, Yang Chen also entered the main hall. Soon, Heavenly Roar rushed towards the dragon pearls on top of the throne kept at the center.

Yang Chen was watching his silhouette, filled with expectations, hoping for some restrictions on the side of the throne to open up.

Peng, Heavenly Roar, who was flying forward, directly knocked against an invisible barrier. The sound of a collision echoed, and he fell down on the ground.

Pah, Yang Chen exhaled out the air he had holding because of nervousness and sighed in his heart, shaking his head. Apparently, Heavenly Roar had the same problem as Yang Chen. Its cultivation wasn't sufficient and hence couldn't gain the approval, being unable to open the restrictions.

Although Yang Chen was disappointed after realizing this, he didn't lose all hope. His cultivation base was indeed extremely inferior, being only at the trifling foundation stage. Thus, being unable to open the restrictions was normal. If he had truly been able to remove the restrictions, then the only thing could be said that the restrictions weren't powerful and there wasn't anything good behind them.

Heavenly Roar constantly kept spiraling around that dragon pearl, filled with impatience. Regardless of the number of times he tried, he was unable to get within a one meter radius of that dragon pearl.

However, Heavenly Roar's bloodline was indeed extremely pure, the dragon pearl apparently flickered a few times, apparently it had sensed the strong presence of dragon race on Heavenly Roar's body. But it only flickered a few times and nothing more, a weak descendent of dragon race was still incapable of obtaining its approval.

Yang Chen grabbed Heavenly Roar with his hands and transmitted a thought to him. Heavenly Roar quickly calmed down and stopped rotating around that dragon pearl. He calmly sat on Yang Chen's arm, placing his small head at the back of his hand, becoming motionless. Apparently, he had also understood that his strength was quite low and insufficient to obtain the dragon pearl.

After placating Heavenly Roar, Yang Chen walked towards the eight jade cases. That jade case which previously contained the flying shuttle was completely empty. Yang Chen tried to extend his hand to the other jade cases.

Perhaps, Heavenly Roar's dragon clan's bloodline was truly effective. The jade case on which the small golden bell was placed, which Yang Chen had been unable to previously reach with his hand, sudden opened with a brilliant light.

Yang Chen was greatly exalted, and he again extended his right arm on which Heavenly Roar was sitting and soon encountered the same barrier. Yang Chen knew that this was the restriction of the jade case, however, presently, many changes had happened with it.

After coming in contact with the hand, the invisible barrier surprisingly softened up. This discovery, left Yang Chen both surprised and joyous. What was even more unexpected was that Heavenly Roar opened his small mouth and began to absorb the

golden brilliance, bit by bit.

Chapter 236: Formidable Golden Bell

Just after coming in contact for a while, Yang Chen discovered that the barrier closest to the mouth of Xiao Tian on his hand had become softer.

This was simply an unexpected surprise. If Xiao Tian could absorb all these things, it meant that Yang Chen could easily get the things in the jade case.

Thinking of this, Yang Chen had been unable to hold back his excitement and began to use the Beast Controlling Secret Art to communicate with Xiao Tian, to let it absorb the light as quickly as possible. In that case, he could quickly make a hole in the thickness of his arm, so that Yang Chen could reach and take out the golden bell.

Xiao Tian also understood the meaning of Yang Chen, but the actual implementation was the problem. Of course, this couldn't be blamed on him. It was really that the light that shined seemed to be in a general flow. After only a moment of loss, the light around it began to supplement the loss, and the barrier began to slowly harden.

It seemed that this was a gradual process, Yang Chen could only wait while guessing what the golden bell on the jade case was.

This process took a whole month and the Xiao Tian seemed to be very fond of this kind of light, which it constantly absorbed. Yang Chen knew that there must be a lot of dragon qi in it, otherwise it will not be like this.

Almost occasionally, Yang Chen would try to touch the restriction on the jade case. The invisible barrier was getting softer and softer, the surrounding light was also getting shallower.

When the light finally disappeared, Yang Chen's hand had been put into the barrier impatiently. The originally sturdy barrier, was

like a soft film at this moment, was broken quickly.

Yang Chen's hand grabbed the golden bell and then quickly retreated. Who knew if there would be any change in the restriction, turning matters to take a turn for the worse.

The small golden bell looked like it had been battered by time. It was an unusually beautiful bell that was full of delicate dragon marks. If you looked at it carefully, there were nine golden dragons hovering on the outer bell. Each one had a different shape, with their claws dancing, but each one was so beautiful and lifelike.

Inside the golden bell was a hanging metal ball that he didn't know what material it was made of. The ball also had a delicate pattern, but it was not in a dragon shape, but a regular pattern.

In his hands, the golden bell was very light, as if it had no weight. Yang Chen tried to shake it. Unexpectedly, the ball inside the golden bell did not move, nor did it make any sound.

This was not surprising. It could make the old dragon king serious enough to put it in his Hidden treasure house, and use the restricted barrier to seal it. If it could be easily swayed, it would not be worth the lengths the old dragon king went to protect it.

Filled with curiosity, Yang Chen began to try to input spiritual power into the golden bell. However, when Yang Chen's spiritual power entered the golden bell, it was like a needle entering a sea, it disappeared without a trace.

There was usually only one reason for this to happen; the spiritual power required and the input had a very large disparity, which, thus, caused such a situation.

After he estimated the amount of his spiritual power, Yang Chen had to be frustrated to admit that even if he put all his spiritual power into the golden bell, it was estimated that he could not meet the needs of the golden bell.

However, there was a huge East China Sea chart outside and

there were countless Spiritual veins on it, which could provide Yang Chen with a steady stream of spiritual support. Yang Chen didn't want to go straight outside, so he found a submarine Spiritual vein that was not used by the sects. He put down the obsidian jade rush cushion.

Sitting on the obsidian jade rush cushion, Yang Chen held the golden bell in both hands and then began to input his spiritual power into the golden bell. With the input of Yang Chen Spiritual power, the size of the golden bell began to grow bigger and bigger. Slowly, Yang Chen's hands could not easily contain it. He had to put the already grown golden bell in front of him and touch its top with his hands.

The spiritual power madly poured into the golden bell while it got bigger and bigger. When the golden bell changed to a higher level than Yang Chen's body, he discovered that he couldn't continue as is.

He had been unable to control the output speed of the spiritual power. The spiritual power input from his body seemed as if being swallowed up by a black hole, it crazily flowed from his hands to the golden bell. The spiritual power in his whole body was absorbed in less than a hundred breaths.

Fortunately, Yang Chen was now able to control the absorption of the spiritual power with his formidable Spiritual Awareness. The huge spiritual veins and the obsidian jade rush cushion came together to provide this possibility of controlling this crazy absorption. In addition to being able to maintain his self-imposed absorption of Spiritual power from the obsidian jade rush cushion, Yang Chen could no longer do other things.

As soon as the Spiritual power entered his body, it was directly swallowed up by the golden bell and none remained. Fortunately, Yang Chen's Yang Five Phases Secret Art provided 10 times more spiritual power and 10 times more absorption speed than the ordinary Foundation stage. Which let the supply of spiritual power

to the golden bell become possible.

Yang Chen had now begun to regret it. This level of magic weapon was not something that he could use, but curiosity had caused Yang Chen to fall into this state which he was not able to get rid of. There was no other choice than to allow the crazy absorption of spiritual power by the Golden Bell.

What made Yang Chen increasingly fearful was that as the Golden Bell absorbed increasingly more spiritual power, the speed of the absorption got faster and faster. There were also signs that he eventually would be unable to keep up with the supply. If he couldn't keep up with the speed of the golden bell's absorption of Spiritual power, will he not be sucked dry by the Golden Bell soon?

The surface of the golden bell began to brighten slowly, and the dragons became clearer and brighter. The dragon pattern above seemed to have begun to bulge slowly, becoming like a relief, just like the nine gold dragons that were slowly inflating

Yang Chen's spiritual power absorption finally reached the limit and could no longer provide faster spiritual power absorption. The golden bell seemed to be able to feel the state of Yang Chen, thus, it maintained the speed of spiritual power absorption at that level.

Quickly a light flashed, Yang Chen seemed to see the dragon's eye that was facing him. The dragon's eye flashed slightly. When he was doubting whether it was an illusion, the golden bell suddenly stopped absorbing spiritual power.

Just when Yang Chen was surprised, he felt a slight tremor of the golden bell, a low and heavy bell sound rang from the golden bell.

The heavy sound was mixed with a terrible impact. Being so close, Yang Chen almost instantly fainted.

In the sea where the treasure house was located, a huge ripple suddenly appeared, followed by a bang, causing countless splashes. Within a hundred miles, all the creatures lost consciousness in an

instant, and even the seabirds flying through the sky fell sharply.

The huge ripple formed a wave several feet high and began to spread towards the surroundings. After a long time, the sea area slowly calmed down, but there were countless kinds of fish and shrimp with white bellies floating above the sea.

When Yang Chen woke up, he didn't even know how long he had been fainted. He only knew that there was no pain in his whole body. The spiritual power in his body was completely depleted and there was no trace of it left. In his Sea of Consciousness, it seemed that there was still a heavy and clear bell sound, it was seemingly endless.

Although it was said that he woke up, but only his awareness was alert in his mind. But his mind was still like a river and unfocused. Even if he wanted to concentrate, it was impossible.

Yang Chen could only lie on the ground like this and slowly wait for a natural recovery. At this time, Yang Chen, didn't think about taking a medicine as even controlling his spiritual power was impossible. The imperial power of the golden bell was evident.

Maintaining such an awkward state, for at least three days, the shock in Yang Chen's Sea of Consciousness finally and slowly slowed down to a point that Yang Chen could accept.

Enduring the mad tremor, Yang Chen began to control his spiritual power and healed his injuries. In these few days, the water did not approach him, he was lying on the spiritual vein, but he did not get even a little spiritual supplement. If it wasn't for Yang Chen's physical strength, he would have passed away.

Spiritual power slowly entered the dry meridian of Yang Chen and began to slowly moisturize his body.

After a while, Yang Chen finally got some strength and sat up with his arms. The first thing he did after sitting up, was to eat two Profound Yang Fruit from the medicine garden. The huge spiritual

supply, coupled with the fullness of the food in his belly, made Yang Chen a little better.

After the spiritual power of the Profound Yang Fruit was completely absorbed by Yang Chen, he began to cultivate the Three Purities Secret Art...

In Yang Chen's Sea of Consciousness, there was still the bell sound and he still felt dizzy, but he couldn't eliminate this influence.

The Three Purities Secret Art was worthy to be a Grand Supreme Elderly Lord cultivation method, only after cultivating One Heavenly Circulation, the feeling of shock had been greatly reduced. He did not say anything and continued to practice.

With eight One Heavenly Circulation of the Three Purities Secret Art, for two days and two nights, no such tremor remained in his Sea of Consciousness, and his mind returned to full awareness. At this time, Yang Chen had practiced the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art cultivation for several Heavenly Circulations, and frantically replenished his lost spiritual power.

The golden bell still had its huge appearance and it was placed not far in front of Yang Chen, but he did not dare to move closer to it easily. Just a while ago, he almost disappeared and he could be sure that it was not the full power of the golden bell. In this case, if he disturbs it again, was it not like courting his own death.

Yang Chen still did not know the situation outside the Hidden treasure house of the Dragon Palace. All the ordinary creatures within a hundred miles had died and even the monsters below the Foundation stage have all died.

Those who were above the Foundation stage were all in a coma. Until now, after waking up, they were still unable to distinguish between the southeast and the northwest, all the monsters were stumbling around in a mess.

Sure enough, when Yang Chen looked at this golden bell higher than himself, he could only sigh. No wonder the old dragon king kept it in the treasure house. It had not even reached full power yet. After it reached full power, what would it become?

Speaking of it, Yang Chen was slightly affected. After all, the bell was initiated by his spiritual power. He was the initiator of the attack. The attack of the magic weapon would not hurt the owner. This was common sense. But just the impact had already caused Yang Chen to be so injured. Facing its full attack, he did not know what the situation would be like.

Such a good thing, Yang Chen's heart almost bust with joy, he couldn't wait to get his hands on it.

In any case, Yang Chen did not dare to even input a little bit of spiritual power into the golden bell. Fortunately, laying down a Spiritual Awareness Imprint did not require spiritual power as a support, if his Spiritual Awareness was strong enough, he still had an advantage.

Sacrificial refining? Yang Chen didn't think about it. He sat directly on the obsidian jade rush cushion and began to collect the golden bell. At this time, his formidable Sea of Consciousness and huge Spiritual Awareness played a huge role and began to penetrate the entire golden bell little by little.

Even with the Three Purities Secret Art as the source of his Spiritual Awareness, Yang Chen still spent half a month to complete the initial steps.

When Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness Imprint was successfully engraved in the golden bell, the golden bell violently turned into a golden shadow which was then hidden in his body.

Boom, countless memories breached and poured into Yang Chen's mind. After a while, Yang Chen was sure that these were the instructions of the golden bell. If he followed these instructions, he would be able to impel the golden bell without the

slightest injury.

However, the spiritual power required to utilise the golden bell was no longer imaginable by Yang Chen. At least until Yang Chen reached the peak Yuanying realm, he would not have to consider this issue.

Even if it was the peak of Yuanying realm, it would not be so easy, if he wanted to understand the golden bell completely.

At most, it would be like this time, a resounding sound. If he wanted to fly in Kowloon, the Golden Bell was ringing, and he would have to consider it again!

However, before this, the golden bell did not have any use. When the golden bell fitted into the body of Yang Chen, it created a natural protective barrier for him. It was equivalent to his body having a powerful protective magic weapon to protect it at any time.

After discovering this, Yang Chen's mind naturally came up with a vocabulary: the golden bell cover. This was simply a true golden bell cover.

With the cover of the golden bell, even if Yang Chen stood in the dome hall, and he let the seven-seven flying swords slash at him, Yang Chen would not feel anything.

This was just the power of the golden bell after Yang Chen had just collected it. After he does the sacrificial refining, it would be more powerful and the protection would double.

After getting thoroughly refined by Yang Chen, the bell will also have its most powerful attribute unlocked; the golden bell will even get triggered by an enemy's attack, directly countering it.

This kind of magic weapon with both offensive and defensive features, even if it was in the Immortal world, would be a rare treasure.

Bringing Xiao Tian to the Dragon Palace, did not let Yang Chen

be disappointed. Just this golden bell was enough to make Yang Chen stunned. Not to mention that there were six jade cases in the hall, waiting for Yang Chen to open the barriers one by one and collect the magic weapons inside.

Now, Yang Chen was looking forward to it, were the rest as good as this golden bell?

Chapter 237: Massive Wealth

In a rather happy mood, Yang Chen rushed back to the main hall, he tried to let Xiao Tian open the pagoda's restriction. A pity, he could not do so, this time around.

The pagoda restriction light outside did not even flash.

It was not that the level of Xiao Tian was too low. The level of the restriction was too high for only two reasons. Yang Chen could only turn to the next one, the two long-horned jade cases.

It was a pity that the two long-horned restrictions still had no movement. He tried everything until he was near the bottle gourd, this time it had a response.

The light was shining again, this time it was not a white light, but a blue one.

Xiao Tian was obviously happy, and its big mouth was enjoying the light, just like something delicious.

Yang Chen could feel a trace of dragon qi from those lights, which was a natural tonic for Xiao Tian. For Yang Chen, it also meant that he could get a heart-warming treasure again.

The solemn piece bottle gourd placed in the jade case did not seem to be eye-catching. The side was large and asymmetrical. The whole gourd showed a dark yellow colour that seemed to have not been picked up for a long time. There was still a lot of mottled shadows on it. He didn't know how many years have had passed with it lying here.

The middle part of the gourd was tied with a red string which was very casual. He didn't know what was inside and why it was kept here by the Dragon King.

The devouring of the Xiao Tian was not urgent, Yang Chen also patiently waited, while quietly practicing the Three Purities Secret Art. After the sound of the golden bell, Yang Chen's Spiritual

Awareness was somewhat shocked, and he had to cultivate rigorously to relieve it.

Half a month later, the restriction on the periphery of the jade case with the gourd was once again swallowed up by Xiao Tian. Yang Chen had been waiting for this moment and could not wait more before grabbing the gourd.

The gourd was not big, and the place where his hand was holding it, the waist just fit perfectly. That part seemed to have been held often, and a light was shining about it. Making it very comfortable to hold.

In his hands, the gourd seems to have little weight, was not very heavy.

When gently shaken, you could even hear a screaming sound inside, as if it was filled with something.

Yang Chen's other hand was immediately placed on the mouth of the gourd. That part of the gourd was stuffed with a cork. Stretching his hand and using force to try and open it, Yang Chen immediately became stunned, this gourd could not open.

That was normal, as if it could be opened easily, it would be strange. If it was that easy it would not be worthy of the attention of the Dragon King.

However, with the lessons from the golden bell, Yang Chen did not dare to input his spiritual power casually, he went out and found a position on a Spiritual vein to sit down and started to follow the old method, first he used his Spiritual Awareness Imprint to bind it.

The strong sense of the Yuanying realm, Middle Stage formidable Spiritual Awareness, was enough to bind this gourd.

However, it still took Yang Chen a full half a month to successfully lay down his own Spiritual Awareness Imprint in the gourd.

Just like the golden bell, when the Spiritual Awareness Imprint successfully entered the gourd, a series of memories directly entered the mind of Yang Chen through the Spiritual Awareness Imprint and Yang Chen knew how to control the gourd.

What surprised Yang Chen was that the gourd turned out to be just a container, which made Yang Chen almost collapse. Just a container, was worthy enough for the old dragon king to so seriously place it here? Isn't a Cosmos bag enough to put things in, why should it be placed in this gourd?

However, although it was only a container, there were still some functions that were different from the Cosmos bag.

This hoist could not only store liquids, it also had additional, very powerful functions.

Different liquids could be stored separately, never to affect each other. And would bring out the same liquid, the gourd owner wanted to pour out.

That was not the most exciting function of this gourd. The most important function was that no matter what liquid was put in, it will be affected by the action of the gourd itself and will change more and more towards the mellow direction.

If this was the case, this gourd was simply a beautiful wine gourd. Think about it, the wine you brewed would be more and more mellow, what kind of taste would it have?

Of course, it's not just limited to fine wines, but there were other things like Fragrant Liquid, which could also be aged. What does aging mean? Increasing of its age.

If a liquid stuff was put into the gourd, it could age without you knowing it. Was there anything more beautiful than this?

Yang Chen couldn't wait to open the gourd. When he opened it, he found that there were only two kinds of liquid inside. A thick and infinite liquid, with an amber glow. The other was a purple

liquid, which emitted a little bit of fluorescence, and it was beautiful.

The amount of these two liquids was very shocking and each one was like a huge lake. The liquid that when you shake the hoist screams outside was simply two giant lakes.

With Yang Chen's knowledge, it was easy to preliminarily determine what these two liquids were. However, as soon as he saw such a huge amount, Yang Chen was somewhat uncertain.

He found a piece of jade and used a flying sword to quickly spin it into a jade cup. He placed it in the Profound Spirit Furnace. After a simple burning of the True Sun Fire and Moon True Fire, Yang Chen picked up the gourd and gently dropped out an amber thick liquid out of the gourd.

As soon as the liquid entered the jade cup, it instantly gave off a wonderful smell. This smell made Yang Chen stand absentmindedly in the same place. This taste, this taste, is this really the taste of the most mellowed wine, how is this possible?

The reason why Yang Chen was not sure of it was because of that huge lake, it was too much. How many raw materials were needed to make so much wine. Just smelling the smell of this mellowed wine, and one would know, what kind of precious raw materials were used inside. Numerous monks could compete for a lifetime for these things. To the old dragon king, it was nothing but a raw material for brewing wine. How was this humanly possible?

What made Yang Chen feel the most unbelievable was that this treasure trove was not known for how many thousands of years that it had been here.

With the aging and mellowed effect of the gourd, how delicious were these wines now? Yang Chen felt it was almost impossible to guess.

Perhaps, in the heavenly court, the jade wine of the celestial

beings was also so much like this. It may even be worse than this. We must know that it had only been a few years after the rebellion in the heavenly court. The new Jade emperor was only a few years old. With that chaotic situation, it was certain that no good things would have been left for the rebels.

Even if it was the current Jade Emperor, it was impossible to enjoy this level of fine wine.

After thinking about that point, Yang Chen's mood suddenly improved. Although tens of thousands of years of wine has become a thick colloidal wine, he still raised his neck and poured a drop of the wine into his mouth.

He felt the peerless taste that came out of the fusion of his saliva and that wine, making him intoxicated. However, the powerful spiritual power contained in the wine awakened him from that intoxication.

A line of fire rushed directly from his mouth to the sole of his foot and then rushed back to the top of his head. Then the line of fire turned cool and once again went up and down his whole body. So, the hot and cold process repeated itself nine times, his whole body was almost like it was at its most comfortable period, it was far better than a Spa bath.

Even Yang Chen, who was a strong-willed person, felt as light as a feather, and wished that such a feeling will never go away.

This kind of taste, such enjoyment, even if the old dragon king was replaced with Yang Chen, he would definitely put this in the most secret treasure house.

With this lake wine base, Yang Chen would not be able to accept another liquid that isn't this wine.

Purple, scattered with fluorescence, these two features could be found in many materials, but when combined, and at the same time being liquid, especially found in the treasure house of the old

dragon king, it seemed that there was only one possibility – Mysterious Coral Liquid.

There was no other possibility.

Mysterious Coral Liquid was a liquid secreted by the thousand-year-old black corals in the northeast and northwest of the sea. However, this liquid was extremely precious. Only after the millennium black coral had grown to more than a thousand years, would it secrete a drop from its body every year.

How many thousand years of black coral could there be? Collecting a drop every year, how long would it take to collect as many of it to form this lake?

Yang Chen's entire brain was filled with shock, even if he was reborn born with the Great Principle Golden Immortal memory, he still could not maintain his calm.

Not to mention the Great Principle Golden Immortal, even if it was the old Jade Emperor who died under Yang Chen's Immortal Beheading Blade, who he did not know for how many years he had lived. He would not necessarily have had such a large volume of Mysterious Coral Liquid. That was, the old Dragon King, who was the first to get to the moon in the near-water platform, he did not know how many generations of efforts he must have had relied on to collect so much Mysterious Coral Liquid.

Mysterious Coral Liquid does not have many effects, just after drinking a little, it could thoroughly wash the impurities in the body, so that the body becomes as pure as snow. Or if it was added in alchemy, it could shorten the time of alchemical brewing a little, and could also improve the quality of the drug. Either in the refining process or thorough integration of different materials.

Of course, the impurities in the body would be ejected every time you advanced. However, even if the Yuanying realm was upgraded to the Dacheng realm, the Yin Fire Tribulation could only remove 90% of the impurities in the body and the Mysterious Coral Liquid

could eliminate 9%, if 100 kilograms was consumed. Which means you could eject about 99% of the impurities.

The Dao was okay, usually there would not be too many impurities. But for many Demon and Monster Cultivators or the monks who practice special exercises, had absorbed countless different materials during their cultivation; it often could cause problems in their body. With the Mysterious Coral Liquid, there would be no need to worry about such a situation.

The alchemy time was shortened because Mysterious Coral Liquid was a very good neutralizer and catalyst, which allowed most drugs to fuse faster without conflicts. With the Mysterious Coral Liquid, the stability of the drug would be greatly improved. In that case, it was possible to carry out two to three revolutions or even higher-level refining.

If Wu Xiong had this thing in his hands when he was refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, even the final medicinal pill would not be black coloured. This was the difference.

As for refining, it was also due to the neutralization and catalytic properties of the Mysterious Coral Liquid. Even if it was a five-phase material, under the neutralization of the Mysterious Coral Liquid, there would be no violent reactions. The success rate of the refining would be greatly improved, and a more stable and uniform material could be obtained.

This profound increase in the quality of refining allowed even refining across levels. The magic weapon that originally needed the Yuanying realm to be refined, after having the Mysterious Coral Liquid, was likely to be refined like in the Jiedan realm.

Based on the rarity of the Mysterious Coral Liquid, the price of a drop of it in the market had exceeded one jin of High-grade spirit stones. If someone discovered a thousand-year-old black coral, He would definitely protect it as a treasure with his life. Unless he died, he would never let it go.

He knew that this was just the value of a drop. What would be the value of such a lake of Mysterious Coral Liquid? Even if it was converted into Top Grade spirit stone, the amount could kill Yang Chen.

Was it still the Mysterious Coral Liquid of the Thousand-Year-Old Coral? Yang Chen couldn't even judge how many years had it been in this gourd, but it would not be less than 20,000 years. It would take about that much to collect so much of it.

Such a huge wealth, in the early days of Yang Chen's previous life, he did not have a bit of impression, it was estimated that he had never been born. Now, this piece of Heavenly Wealth, which was estimated to be coveted by even the Heavenly court, had already reached the hands of Yang Chen.

After waking up from the shock, the first thing he did was to hold the jade cup and pour a drop of the wine-yeast out and then he used the Mysterious Coral Liquid to melt it. After that he greedily drank it into his stomach. This Top Grade delicacy was something one must enjoy promptly when one has it...

With such a good thing, Yang Chen certainly would not forget his own spiritual pet, thus, the same cup of Mysterious Coral Liquid was poured for Xiao Tian.

Ejection of the impurities from the body of Xiao Tian, meant that the bloodline of the Wolf-Dragon would become purer...

After drinking their fill, Yang Chen and Xiao Tian were all spoiled, so they ignored their image and laid on the Spiritual vein of the nautical chart.

The abnormal sweetness of this sleep was the normal reaction after taking the Mysterious Coral Liquid, no matter how high the person's cultivation was, they would sleep a lot.

In their sleep, Yang Chen and Xiao Tian began to ooze a trace of black liquid, it was like grease on the surface of their bodies.

When he woke up, Yang Chen sat up and stretched out a yawn. Since he had started cultivating, he had not had such a comfortable sleep, only to feel refreshed, all over his body, it was like he was free from any attachments.

Chapter 238: Tenth Water True Essence

Although Yang Chen's body had been nourished by the essence of tens of thousands of Divine Immortal Life Essences, it did not mean that he had no impurities. In fact, because of this, Yang Chen's body had the most impurities. After all, the Divine Immortal Life Essence with different attributes were all absorbed by Yang Chen.

It seemed that Yang Chen did not have any problems, but it was only because of his low level of cultivation. When his cultivation does begin to get deeper and deeper, this hidden danger would gradually emerge.

In the final analysis, the Old Demon Yi's Demonic Art was still magical and the beginning was easy. Future cultivation would become more difficult, and this hidden danger would gradually emerge.

But now it was completely different. With the Mysterious Coral Liquid, even if Yang Chen couldn't exhaust the impurities at once, he could do it gradually.

This was what Yang Chen realized after discovering that his body's impurities were much more than Xiao Tian. At that time, he was very strange. Xiao Tian's bloodline was stimulated by the Howling Celestial Dog's blood essence, postnatal. How could it have less impurities than the impurities in his body? After trying to understand this, he began to have a cold sweat, even wanting to cry out in alarm.

It seemed that the Heavens wanted to let Yang Chen sit back and relax, so they sent the Mysterious Coral Liquid to him. This kind of gift was one hundred times better, and he would not refuse.

"You are really my lucky star, Xiao Tian!" Yang Chen said while happily hugging Xiao Tian.

Xiao Tian also noticed the joy of Yang Chen and was also very happy to wiggle in Yang Chen's hand. The dark impurities on the surface of their body were messed up.

Splash!

A stream of water appeared out of thin air, just like the last time when building the foundation, Yang Chen controlled this stream of water, washed the impurities in his and Xiao Tian's body. While quickly collecting them into a jade bottle. These kinds of impurities from the body were the best medicine for chronic poisons.

The two magic weapons were good things that made Yang Chen too shocked to jump up. Yang Chen couldn't wait to see what else was left.

What disappointed Yang Chen was that the remaining five jade cases were left with only one jade whose restriction coursed resonance with Xiao Tian and shined.

This time it was still a blue light, but Xiao Tian only took a mouthful and swallowed it up, as if it had eaten a lot that needs to be digested.

The performance of Xiao Tian made Yang Chen very helpless, no way the level of Xiao Tian was too low. Having swallowed up two restrictions' worth of Dragon Qi, it was estimated that it was almost at its limit.

The third was naturally slower to absorb.

However, Yang Chen wanted to know about them urgently. But he couldn't do anything about it, he could only communicate with Xiao Tian using the Beast Controlling Secret Art to promise it a lot of benefits. This allowed Xiao Tian to devour the Dragon Qi with more vigour.

Even so, when the third restriction's Dragon Qi was absorbed, it still couldn't resist the feeling of inhaling too much Dragon Qi. In

Yang Chen's hand, it went to sleep immediately...

Yang Chen carefully sent Xiao Tian back to the medicine garden, placing the Bright Light Sword and the Blood Phantom Vine sword around it. Then he also released a dozen pieces of magic weapons inside.

The azure jade cup on the jade case was carefully taken by Yang Chen in his hand and placed in front of his eyes. The azure jade cup was not empty, just like the gourd, but it was not spatial, it was filled with some transparent and clear liquid, which was colourless and tasteless.

What was this? Yang Chen cautiously did not dare to shake it even a little, for fear of spilling that liquid. He sniffed it but found it of no special significance. He wanted to input spiritual power to try, but then he remembered the golden bell, thus, he held back and began to explore with his Spiritual Awareness.

His Spiritual Awareness very easily passed through the azure jade cup, without the slightest pause. Yang Chen was startled, this was an unprecedented matter, was this azure jade cup not a magic weapon?

He tried it again but his Spiritual Awareness still very simple passed through it, it did not stop. Yang Chen suddenly realized what he needed to do. He carefully placed the azure jade cup on the ground, closed his eyes and tried to explore with his Spiritual Awareness... Eventually he became shocked.

Since Yang Chen started cultivating the Three Purities Secret Art, his Spiritual Awareness had risen sharply, and he had also absorbed the Immortal Executioner Stage killing intent, after fusing all kinds of flame he also absorbed many other treasures in addition, now his Spiritual Awareness had already reached the standard of Yuanying realm, middle stage. Moreover, there was those Three Purities Secret Art formidable Spiritual Awareness threads, including the Dacheng realm, Old tree monster, most

good at hiding their personal appearance, were all discovered by Yang Chen.

However, Yang Chen now closed his eyes, but couldn't find anything in front of him. If it wasn't he himself who put the azure jade cup there, Yang Chen would have thought that there was nothing there.

It was a miracle to obtain good materials that could ignore Spiritual Awareness. If someone used this material to make a piece of clothing that covers the whole body, then doesn't that mean that others couldn't find him with Spiritual Awareness?

In addition to Spiritual Awareness being unable to explore it, marking it was even more close to impossible. How could this be refined? For the time being, Yang Chen could not think of any method.

Another thing that made Yang Chen wonder was the colourless liquid in the azure jade cup.

In Yang Chen's memory, there was no obvious information about it. This was very strange. Was it not just ordinary water?

He very carefully used a silver needle that he made with his hand to penetrate the jade. After a little liquid was left on the tip, he slowly pulled it out.

As soon as it left the half-foot range of the azure jade cup, Yang Chen suddenly noticed a pure and powerful Tenth Water spirit power from the tip of the needle. The spiritual power was so pure that the Tenth Water spirit power in Yang Chen's body was directly attracted and began to fluctuate.

“This! This!”

Yang Chen carefully felt the pure spiritual power, in his mouth, he made two more incredible sounds.

Where was this clear water, clearly it was the pure to the extreme Tenth Water True Essence, the essential true element in the

cultivation of “«Tenth Water True Secret Art»”, it was also the most original source of water.

Now Yang Chen had no idea how to describe his feelings. Apart from Yang and Xiao Tian, there seemed to be no one else to express them to. Yang Chen’s laughter was a bit ugly, and he had to suppress this impulse.

With the Tenth Water True Essence, Yang Chen could cultivate the true Tenth Water True Secret Art and let himself go further towards the completion of the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art. It was also possible to greatly improve his cultivation, which was exactly what Yang Chen was currently doing.

However, now Yang Chen was somewhat worried. In the jade cup, there was only such a small amount of Tenth Water True Essence, would it be enough for the cultivation of the Tenth Water True Secret Art?

In any case, Yang Chen still had to collect this Tenth Water True Essence first. He worried that if he did not, he might accidentally drop the jade cup and lose it.

Preserving the Tenth Water True Essence was not a simple matter. Jade bottles were a requirement. In addition, many formations and talismans were needed to avoid its dissipation.

To gather this Tenth Water True Essence, Yang Chen had to do detailed preparation work first. It was no surprise that with his shallow cultivation base, it had taken him a few decade’s time to gather the Seventh Metal True Essence.

Of course, Yang Chen did not have to prepare for such a long time. After all, the Tenth Water True Essence was already in the Jade Cup. All Yang Chen needed to do was pour it into a jade bottle to collect it. Therefore, what Yang Chen mainly needed was those talismans.

Although the required preparations were reduced, Yang Chen

still made at least three times as many talismans as insurance. His cultivation base was low and could not be compared with Scarface's. As such, he could only make up for it with the quantity of talismans.

Carefully, he picked up the jade cup and then placed it against the mouth of the jade bottle. He tilted the jade cup slightly and poured it into the jade bottle, striving not to waste a single drop of the Tenth Water True Essence. It could not be helped; the jade cup was the size of his palm and the Tenth Water True Essence shallowly covered the bottom. Even with such a small jade bottle, only half the bottle was filled. If even a single drop was wasted, it would have made Yang Chen distressed.

When the Tenth Water True Essence fell into the jade bottle, Yang Chen immediately put down the jade cup. He quickly made a series of movements with his hands and attached dozens of talismans to the jade bottle.

This set of actions that Yang Chen simply did was the electro-optic flint, there was no pause until everything was completed. Only when the jade bottle did not have the slightest water to leak, did Yang Chen become relieved.

Once he had poured everything into the jade bottle, Yang Chen picked up the jade cup to collect it but was immediately stunned. At the bottom of the jade cup, there was still a trace of moisture.

Yang Chen had just dumped everything from the jade cup. He would never make such a mistake. He recalled that he had really poured out all the Tenth Water True Essence so there shouldn't have been any moisture left in the jade cup.

After realizing that there was a problem, Yang Chen did not simply store away the jade cup. He had to examine it. What if the jade cup was a magical treasure?

Waiting was very difficult. Yang Chen cultivated the Three Purities Secret Art, the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret art and

then even cultivated the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique. Even after cultivating, he saw that there was still no obvious change in the jade cup. Finally, he took out the gourd and poured the Mysterious Coral Liquid blended wine, drank until he was full, and then lay down satisfied on the Nautical chart.

In Yang Chen's body, there were indeed too many impurities. After drinking the Mysterious Coral Liquid, he once again fell asleep as his body seeped a greasy black liquid.

Yang Chen was not afraid of any danger in the treasure house of the Dragon Palace, so he slept comfortably. This time, he slept longer.

It was only after sleeping for five days and five nights that he woke up. Yang Chen refused to even take care of his greasy body before looking directly at the jade cup.

At the bottom of the cup, there had been a magical reappearance of the liquid. Although it was less than only one percent of the original amount, it was obviously there.

Suppressing his excitement, Yang Chen carefully took a silver needle and dipped it in the liquid. Immediately, he felt the pure and authentic aura of the Tenth Water True Essence.

Sure enough, this jade cup was indeed able to condense Tenth Water True Essence. Considering this point, coupled with the fact that Spiritual Awareness could not explore it, this jade cup was a peerless treasure.

The Tenth Water True Essence was originally a water of the sea. Now that he was in the East China Sea, Yang Chen could wait here to collect enough of the Tenth Water True Essence needed to cultivate the Tenth Water True Secret Art before going back.

Taking advantage of this time, Yang Chen also used the Mysterious Coral Liquid to completely discharge the impurities in his body. If he did not, the hidden dangers would still be there and

later cause him a lot of trouble. The Dragon Palace hidden treasure house was so safe that he was not even worried about sleeping there.

Although the other houses in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard were equally safe, the old tree demon was now refining and absorbing the Penglai Divine Wood. His avatar was still sitting in the hundred thousand mountains and was unable to divide many spirits to protect himself.

The environment here was also suitable for cultivation and would not cause many people doubts. It was just the right place for Yang Chen.

Yang Chen never thought that there were so many hidden dangers in his body. After the fear subsided, he also felt fortunate. If he had not obtained the Mysterious Coral Liquid this time, he would not have realized how many impurities were hidden in his body. From this point of view, he was still very lucky.

While he was waiting for the jade cup to absorb the Tenth Water True Essence in the East China Sea, Yang Chen had enough time to drink at least dozens of cups of the Mysterious Coral Liquid and slept for more than two hundred days.

At the beginning, his body discharged greasy, black fluids. Slowly the colour of the fluids began to fade, gradually becoming grey. By the end, very few impurities were discharged. Even so, the Mysterious Coral Liquid was also good for treating diseases. Drinking it could develop a strong immunity to diseases, so drinking more was not a big problem.

The jade cup continuously condensed the Tenth Water True Essence which was poured into the jade bottle, little by little.

Finally, there was enough Tenth Water True Essence for Yang Chen to cultivate the Tenth Water True Secret Art.

During this time, Xiao Tian had been sleeping. It seemed that the

third Restriction had indeed exceeded its limits. He could not digest and absorb the dragon qi easily.

Yang Chen had stayed in the Dragon Palace Hidden Treasure House for almost a year. He would have to leave this place as his disappearance for nearly a year may have made his sect worried. Moreover, he still had a few promises to keep. He had to teach the palace master, had to go out and travel with Sun Xiaoxue and he had also promised to visit the Blue Cloud Sect.

Fortunately, he also was qualified to participate in Blue Cloud Sect's auctions. Blue Cloud Sect was a big sect and there were always some good things to auction. Perhaps he could catch up and see if there were any good things to buy.

Yang Chen's flying shuttle appeared again in the depths of the sea as he left the Hidden Treasure House. Suddenly his heart moved; the imprint that the guys who tracked him planted, started to tremble in a few Qiankun bags.

After he left the Hidden Treasure House, Yang Chen opened a gap in his Spiritual Awareness' bindings and secretly examined the Spiritual Awareness Imprint of the opposite party. With just this little action, Yang Chen immediately felt the Spiritual Awareness Imprint begin to tremble slightly. This showed that the other party was still searching for his trace.

For a moment, Yang Chen was speechless with anger. This kind of tracking, it was true that when the young master was muddy, he still couldn't make it. (TL: This final sentence may be a poem)

Chapter 239: Cat And Mouse

The Spiritual Awareness mark could only let the person who is tracking know the direction of the target relative to himself. If the distance was close enough, within a hundred miles, it may also be able to roughly define the range of the target, but it did not allow people to find the exact position...

If he was tracking a strong expert, he couldn't find the other person's position. Unless the target was trapped in a certain formation under his own arrangement, and a Spiritual Awareness mark on his body, only then he would be able to find him accurately.

However, the person who was following Yang Chen's line now knew exactly where the Spiritual Awareness Imprint on Yang Chen's body was. Such scenarios had been experienced by him, several times during the year.

Above, a dozen people looked at the sea under their feet bitterly, all of whom had a strong aura. These people seemed to have experienced a lot of hardships, and they were a bit distressed. Among the crowds, there was only one Yuanying Expert, and the others were at the Jiedan realm.

The Spiritual Awareness Imprint showed that Yang Chen was below them and they did not know exactly where it was, but it was definitely in this area.

"This time it would not be the Cosmos bag again, right?"

The leader was the Yuanying Expert, but now on his face, there was no pride, but only annoyance.

The other people's faces and performances were not much better. Over the past year or so, the group of more than a dozen people had tracked Yang Chen. Every time they tracked in one direction, they would spend a lot of effort to explore to the bottom of the sea,

only to end up discovering a terrible monster.

If it weren't for a dozen people with decent cultivation and the magic weapon of a Yuanying ancestor, working together, they would not have been able to retreat.

But even so, everyone was embarrassed. The most uncomfortable matter was that every time they found the source, it would not be a Cosmos bag but something marked with the Spiritual Awareness Imprint. Yang Chen's figure would not even be a hair near it.

Once or twice, everyone thought that Yang Chen was sly. But after eight times and ten times, apart from exhaustion and numbness, everyone had no other ideas.

However, despite this, everyone did not dare to relax. Yang Chen was the person designated from above. They didn't dare to say any words. They could only go deep into the sea and inquire about him.

Many people were wondering how Yang Chen knew the homes of these powerful monsters in this deep sea. Every time he was so accurate that he had put those things just beside the monsters. If they followed the Spiritual Awareness Imprint, they would surely alarm the beast, with no exception.

The Yuanying Ancestor was tired and bored, but unlike the other Jiedan realm masters, he knew very well that once he could catch Yang Chen, it would be a great credit and how much benefit it could bring.

The name of the Inner Heart Pill, after the event of the Hundred Thousand Mountains, was passed from above. The effect was said to have been thoroughly tested by the elder Hua Wanting of Blue Cloud Sect and the elder Min Huafeng of Green Jade Immortal Island. Legends said that it could almost rival the Heaven Seizing Pill and may even be stronger.

Heaven Seizing Pill could only be taken by a master of the Great

Ascension stage.

Otherwise, the masters below the Great Ascension stage would only have one result after taking it. Their spiritual power would soar, and they would explode and die. However, Ask Inner Heart Pill was different, you could take it from the bottom to the top of a realm, and it sounded like, the lower the realm, the higher the success rate of promotion.

If Yang Chen arrives, it means that the recipe of the Ask Inner Heart Pill was in his hands. It was also said that Yang Chen still keeps medicinal material needed for the Ask Inner Heart Pill and would open another furnace in 30 years. Thirty years was enough for him to advance higher, if he arrives in the realm of Jiedan realm, it meant that the furnace would produce more Ask Inner Heart Pill than the previous one.

Even if there was only one, at least the Yuanying realm leader could be sure that it was no longer a dream to enter the Great Ascension stage. This huge advantage stimulated him, how could it not make people feel mad fascination?

This was not a reward from his superiors, not to mention the Yuanying ancestor, a master of the Great Ascension stage would be willing to do anything to just catch a glimpse of it.

The above has already expressed that they must have it, otherwise they would not send a Yuanying realm master and 12 Jiedan realm masters to deal with a younger generation of the Foundation stage.

Even if the younger generation foundation stage was very powerful, they would not be spared in the face of such a huge disparity in numbers and realm.

At this moment, Yang Chen, below the cadres, sat on the shuttle above the sea and looked at the group coldly. Those people were not prepared very well. It seemed that they did not know that he was coming out of the East China Sea. People of all attributes were

there, but there were only three people of the water attribute.

This position was where Yang Chen specially chose to wait. Otherwise, at the speed of the shuttle, those people simply couldn't catch up. Even if he did not let go of the parcels of the Spiritual Awareness Imprint, the other party couldn't detect it.

It might be precisely because of the performance of Spiritual Awareness Imprint on Yang Chen was different from those of the previous ones, so the followers would think that this should not be the bait that Yang Chen left, it should be the body.

A dozen guys, their costumes were not uniform at all, and there was no martial art mark on them. If they did not deliberately conceal it, then they were originally rogue cultivators and not part of any sect.

But watching these people, he could deduce their good coordination, they did not have an unorganized posture. That could only be explained, even if they were rogue cultivators, they were also secret disciples of a certain sect, they were used as their eyes and ears.

There was an open space on the bottom of the sea in this area. Yang Chen was now parked in this open space. He held the Bright Light Sword and was gasping Xiao Tian and waited quietly for the people above. He would like to know who these people were and which sect's thugs they were.

Greatest Heaven Sect was very suspicious, but several other sects were also equally suspicious. If they would come up with such a squad, then they definitely wanted to capture Yang Chen alive. The temptation of the Ask Inner Heart Pill was not something that ordinary people could resist, no matter which sects they were from.

The three water attributes Jiedan realm masters quickly came down from the sea. Their methods were very good. In the sea, there was not a slight tension, so they directly rushed down.

In the sea water, the scope of the Spiritual Awareness had been greatly reduced. Within less than twenty feet, Spiritual Awareness was also shielded by the sea and couldn't be discovered. If one wanted to know what was going on below, one could only come closer to it to know. Cultivators with non-water attributes, even if they could enter the water and fight in it, they would feel very uncomfortable.

Unfortunately, the Spiritual Awareness thread that Yang Chen released was not within this range. When the other party was still 40 zhang (3.33 m) away from him, he had already discovered the behavior of the other three.

Splash!

Yang Chen's swaying figure disappeared, in place, the shuttle instantly appeared, it again appeared on the back of a Jiedan realm master. As soon as the shuttle appeared, the Bright Light Sword in the hands of Yang Chen was directly and viciously stabbed to the back of the opposite party.

The vibration of the water flow and the results of the exploration of his Spiritual Awareness made the Jiedan realm master horrified, but he did not immediately panic, a flying sword appeared out of thin air, he then stabbed it at Yang Chen's figure. His body that was originally careful to maintain balance, turned quickly to face Yang Chen.

Just as he was fast, Yang Chen was faster. It was very close; Yang Chen's Bright Light sword still stabbed the opponent's body first.

A water blue armour appeared out of thin air on his body, it was transparent in the sea water, almost no trace of it could be seen. There was a slightest pause before the Bright Light Sword broke through and stabbed him directly.

But, when Yang Chen's Bright Light sword had pierced the other's skin and entered the other's body, the other's flying sword also touched Yang Chen's body. However, Yang Chen's body

became slightly bright, a Golden Bell appeared on the looming appearance of his body, the opponent's flying sword only made a squeaky sound, and he could no longer stab.

But, the tip of the Bright Light sword had directly punched the back of the Jiedan realm master. The face of the Jiedan realm master was startled, but he couldn't make any sound. The air bubbles in his mouth were sprayed, and the surrounding sea water was instantly reddened by blood.

After killing him, the disturbance made in the sea alerted the other two Jiedan realm masters who came down with the dead person. They found Yang Chen's figure and found that he had already killed the other person in such a short time. They were companions, their eyes rumbled, and the two disorderly struck out their flying swords at the body of Yang Chen.

Their futile efforts made the two guys horrified, they never thought that they would suddenly come up against such a powerful guy. With just a bit of hesitation would determine their life and death.

The shuttle appeared again with the speed of lightning, it was on the left side of a Jiedan realm master. Yang Chen's Bright Light sword was struck out.

This Jiedan realm master subconsciously reached out, and then a series of dense scales appeared on his sleeves. Not yet waiting for the array on the scales to start, Yang Chen's Bright Light sword had already struck his body.

The raised arm was futile, and it was easily unloaded by Yang Chen's outer sleeves with his arms. A bright red blood colour appeared. The hard Protection Magic Weapon didn't have any effect at all. Under the severe pain, the Jiedan realm master's eyes were blurred, a sharp blade wiped his neck and brought out a thick blood colour.

The Remaining Jiedan realm master was startled greatly, from

the beginning they started tracking Yang Chen, even when they have met Yuanying stage monster beast in the seabed, they had not been in such a situation. Everybody returned distressed and desperate, but it was only a superficial phenomenon, among them none had died.

In just a short while, there were two companions who were killed. How could this be accepted? That scared the wits out of the Jiedan realm master, he did not want to end up like them, so he rushed directly to the sea level, and then slammed against the water surface, rushing out of the sea.

Everyone on the sea was watching when the water splashed, making them shocked. They became panicked. It was also discovered by the Yuanying ancestor in time, and he stopped everyone, calming them down again.

However, the bloody spray that slowly came from the sea, together with the two corpses quickly floated up, letting the group of people know exactly what had happened.

“That kid is below us!”

The Jiedan realm master who escaped this time had already seen Yang Chen’s figure, and hurriedly shouted.

As soon as they heard this, the other people’s faces seemed to have no more shocking expressions, and all of them were replaced with surprises. After tracking him for more than a year, they had fought hundreds of times with sea monsters. There was almost no trace of him. This time they had finally found him here.

Ask Inner Heart Pill was huge stimulant, making all the people excited. Two of their companions had died but it had happened underwater, and not everyone was good in water. However, Yang Chen was not a water cultivator. How long could he stay before he started to suffocate? After he appeared, he would be completely imprisoned by everyone. Ten Jiedan realm masters and a Yuanying realm ancestor, it would be impossible for a younger

generation in the foundation stage to have any other result.

Everyone became excited, but no one would belittle the opponent. The bodies of the two Jiedan realm masters had already explained everything. But that still happened underwater, unless Yang Chen did not come out for a lifetime, just daring to show his head would seal his fate.

The magic weapons of all the people were bright, and the leading Yuanying realm ancestor held a round things in his hands, he wanted to throw them directly into the sea. When the other people saw them, all of them flew away at a rapid speed. At the same time, they launched their own protection magic weapons and watched the sea below with vigilance.

That was the Tenth Water Divine Thunder, only a master of the Yuanying realm could refine it, in this sea, it was more powerful. Yang Chen wanted to hide under the water. if a Tenth Water Divine Thunder explodes underwater, Yang Chen wouldn't escape the shocked wave, and may even be seriously injured.

This Tenth Water Divine Thunder could affect a great area, and even if Yang Chen had a shuttle, he could not instantly escape. Obviously, the other party simply would not give him this opportunity.

When the Tenth Water Divine Thunder was drowned into the water, Yang Chen noticed that something was wrong. With his current cultivation, it would be hard to resist, plus the Golden Bell protection, it may be possible, but he would still be affected. The only thing that he could do was to try escaping from it.

The other party was simply trying to force him out. Yang Chen was very clear about this. But at this moment, they had already taken care of it. At full power, he rushed out of the sea.

It didn't wait for Yang Chen to rush out of the water, soon the Tenth Water Divine Thunder exploded below.

Boom!

The huge sound accompanied by an incomparable shock wave, Yang Chen directly hit the sky from the sea.

Within a radius of ten miles, the sea blasted open, bringing up the water up to the sky. Huge sounds, even if Yang Chen had already prepared and covered his ears, he was still shocked and had a creaking headache.

The People in the air didn't wait for Yang Chen to gain balance, two flying swords struck out, like ghosts, smashing towards his legs. Until this time, the other party was still attacking with the idea of capturing Yang Chen alive.

Chapter 240: Who Is Crueler And Merciless

In the air, Yang Chen was really unable to escape. However, it seemed that Yang Chen himself did not think about avoiding it. Under the sea, the two guys' flying swords struck on the golden bell. Yang Chen was still vivid, he didn't believe that with these people's cultivation bases, they could break through the defence of the Golden bell.

And it was as Yang Chen expected, the two flying swords tried to make cuts on his two legs, one after the other, but they could only make a clear and squeaky noise, he remained unharmed.

“Be careful, this kid has a body protection magic weapon!”

This situation was immediately seen and someone shouted when he saw it.

“Snort, body protection magic weapon?”

A cold and violent voice said, the Yuanying ancestor was very disdainful to Yang Chen and shouted: “Break for me!”

A red light like a sword was sent from the hands of the Yuanying ancestor and went straight to Yang Chen's chest. The Several Jiedan realm masters around him were shocked. One of them hurriedly shouted: “Ancestor he must live!”

As if he suddenly remembered the fact that they wanted Yang Chen alive. The red light from the Yuanying ancestor suddenly stagnated, and then it seemed that the light became weaker, but the speed was not reduced, still hitting Yang Chen's chest.

Yang Chen's body had been restored to balance by two flying swords, but he was immediately faced with another blow. This attack was not an attack by a Jiedan realm Master, but a magic weapon attack by a Yuanying realm ancestor.

Seeing that the red light had hit Yang Chen's body, but his face was strangely revealing an unpredictable smile.

The Yuanying realm ancestor felt strange, the attack made a deep bell sound from Yang Chen's body.

Buzzzz, the dull bell sound came from the place where Yang Chen's chest was hit by the attack of the Yuanying realm ancestor. An invisible shock wave that could not be seen was spread out and spread around.

Wherever it went, whether it was a person or an object, all of them began to tremble with the dull bell's sound.

Except for Yang Chen, there was no other voice in the ears of all the people. It was completely filled with that sound, and the buzzing sound was endless.

This sound seemed to have penetrated everyone's body and got into their Sea of Consciousness. As the bell began to tremble, their body swayed involuntarily, and they couldn't grip anything in their hands.

The flying swords in the air seemed to be hit by a huge force. A series of them fell, and the owners of the flying swords could not establish any connection with them. Everyone stayed in place, and constantly trembled, and could not do anything else.

“The Tenth Water Divine Thunder explosion was very crisp!”

Yang Chen's body shape appeared directly next to the Yuanying ancestor, accompanied by Yang Chen's calm but unconcealed angry voice: “the Taste of this bell is not bad, right?”

In fact, Yang Chen himself was also affected by the bell, but the impact was simply negligible relative to other people. Even so, he could only use one martial art before his spiritual power could no longer be condensed, and weapons such as flying swords could no longer be used. This bell almost dissipated his Spiritual Awareness completely.

However, for Yang Chen, even if his spiritual power could not be used at all, it would not matter. If Yang Chen could not use

spiritual power, his enemies were also unable to use theirs.

However, for a Yuanying realm master who couldn't use spiritual power, tragedy would inevitably occur when he was faced with Yang Chen, who had cultivated the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, having strength exceeding 200,000 jin.

Yang Chen had no concept of holding back. These people came to capture him. Yang Chen would naturally not be soft hearted. When his big hand stretched out, he directly grasped the back of the head of the Yuanying stage ancestor, while his other hand grabbed his shoulders and arms and began to exert force.

Under the horror of the Yuanying realm ancestor, and the surrounding Jiedan realm masters, a horrible scream of pain in creepy voice was suddenly heard.

The Yuanying Ancestor that originally was aloof, whose head was connected to his body, was pulled out of the body by the hands of Yang Chen. No matter how much spirit power that had tempered the body of the Yuanying ancestor, it was as weak as tofu for Yang Chen, and he directly separated it into two sections.

The screams ended abruptly, and the fleshy bones were connected to the whole head, Yang Chen directly threw it to the roots of the Blood Phantom Vine in the medicine garden. The other side of the body was raised in the hands of Yang Chen, very skilfully he took off the Qiankun bag, and finally it also became blood for the Blood Phantom Vine.

As easily he put away the Qiankun bag of the Yuanying ancestor, Yang Chen's eyes turned towards the other Jiedan masters.

For people who had cultivated, there were many ways to kill people. However, it was when using flying swords and other weapons. How could Yang Chen tear a Yuanying ancestor's head off with his hand?

Not to mention that everyone was still affected by the bell, even

if there was no such influence, watching the scene of Yang Chen tearing off the head of a Yuanying ancestor scared them to the soul.

“There’s someone responsible for every grievance. For every debt, there is a debtor, you and I were not resentful in those days, no recent hatred, nor pursuit. Why you must for no reason? Thus, delivers you to start off!” while speaking, Yang Chen did not stop, the people around the Yuanying ancestor was directly pulled by him, and was punched one by one, and instantly there were six heads which had exploded.

Until this moment, everyone was being gradually weakened by the influence of the bell, finally the spiritual power could be used again, but the remaining four Jiedan masters didn’t have the courage to attack Yang Chen. Even the Yuanying ancestor was not his opponent, the moment from which the spiritual power could be controlled again, the thought of escape took precedent in the minds of the four people.

However, the moment the Jiedan masters were able to use their spiritual power, Yang Chen recovered earlier than them. His mind moved, Wan Qian and the six women appeared directly around them, and the Five Sides Profound Women Formation surrounded the four Jiedan realm masters.

Originally facing Yang Chen had been chilling, now suddenly there were five more Jiedan masters surrounding them, and there was also a Yuanying master on the side as a deterrence. the little bit of courage the four people had gained was now lost. Awkwardly Yang Chen put them under restriction one by one, and they were afraid to even move around.

As soon as they got restricted, Yang Chen had already taken over the girls and appeared in the shuttle with them as captives. The four Jiedan masters were shocked but after seeing the surrounding situation, they finally understood why Yang Chen could hide under the sea.

What made the four people a little uneasy was that after Yang Chen restricted them, he did not ask any questions. He just checked and seized their Qiankun bags slowly and looked at what he was gaining. But the more this was the case, the four people's hearts were more and more uneasy.

“Your surname?”

Finally, when Yang Chen checked the Qiankun bag one by one, Yang Chen took one of them to sit in front of him and asked.

“Liu!”

He didn't seem to think that Yang Chen would ask such a simple question, and the captive subconscious directly answered with one sentence.

“What grudge do you have with me?”

Yang Chen asked again. However, this time, this Jiedan master was no longer open, just staring at Yang Chen.

Brush, a flash of light flashed, the Jiedan master's head flew directly in the air, from the headless neck blood spurted crazily. In the hands of Yang Chen, he held the hilt of the Bright Ray sword.

He didn't look at the flying head. Yang Chen's hand caressed the Bright Ray Sword, just like touching the skin of his lover, patiently and meticulously.

Waiting until the blood had sprayed out, Yang Chen slowly and steadily sent the body into the medicine garden to be used as fertilizer. Then he placed the Bright Ray Sword on a table beside him.

“Actually, I don't want to know your purpose.”

As Yang Chen would collect all the blood and send it to the medicine garden. the shuttle would not get bloody at all. So, he was unafraid of blood spurting everywhere. He lazily said “Because your purpose, I know of it already.”

“Hunting me, you need nothing more than a few reasons. Revenge, or killing me to keep my mouth shut or murdering me because of some treasure I possess.” While continuing his tone, Yang Chen tilted his legs. “Killing me needs nothing more than just these few reasons, right?”

This was actually the truth, even if the remaining three guys were not happy, but they couldn't help but admit, Yang Chen's reasoning was not wrong. Killing people for no reason, except for the Demon Sect juniors or the Monster Race, Dao cultivators generally would not do it unless it was the last resort. Of course, those who blame themselves for their self-destruction were not counted, but these people are obviously not that kind of people.

“Which ancestors were you working for, if any of you tell me, you would get a chance to live.” Yang Chen smiled and said: “I noticed that you didn't want me to die. It's easier to guess, certainly it was not because of revenge, otherwise you would have tried to kill me, right?”

“Speaking of which, it seems that if a foundation stage younger generation can make a Yuanying ancestor with more than a dozen Jiedan masters come after him, then could only be about some alchemy crafts.” Yang Chen looked at his prisoners in front of him, and curiously asked: “What do you want? Ask Inner Heart Pill? Heaven Seizing Pill? Which one?”

The three did not have the slight reaction, they did not know whether it was intentional or not, but Yang Chen's words were like poisonous snakes, ruthlessly plunging into their ears, disintegrating their persistence slowly.

“Since it's a shackle, I don't want you to die.”

Yang Chen's words really hit the hearts of the three. If you were asked a thousand and ten thousand, if one really wanted to slay, one would just do it, and not wait till now. It was not easy to cultivate to the Jiedan realm. If there was an opportunity, no one

would be willing to die.

“This predecessor, I don’t know whether you can tell me, still who sent you to deal with me?”

Yang Chen’s head turned to the leftmost Jiedan realm master and he asked him very seriously.

“Humph!”

This Jiedan realm master gently snorted, seemingly wanting to express his arrogance and displeasure.

Later, everyone saw a flash of a sword light, the guy who had just snorted, had his head detached and flown from his neck. He had been beheaded by Yang Chen’s sword.

The remaining two Jiedan realm masters’ faces became unsightly. They had heard that Yang Chen was a secular world Executioner, and it really was a well-deserved reputation. No one would have thought that Yang Chen turned out to be so ruthless; irking his displeasure while conversing by making a slight mistake or expressing one’s emotions, can make this executioner immediately start.

The remaining two Jiedan realm masters were all used to life and death, but when they faced Yang Chen, they still couldn’t help but tremble. These imperial Jiedan realm masters, faced with a descendant of the foundation period, could not even dare to look at him.

“There’s someone responsible for every grievance, for every debt there is a debtor.”

Yang Chen slightly sighed and shook his head saying, “I am not a bloodthirsty person, but I am also not a soft persimmon. If you want to get away with it, or want to keep the face of your predecessors, then feel free to try me.”

“You will never gain happiness!”

In excessive fear, one of the two remaining Jiedan realm masters suddenly went mad and shouted at Yang Chen.

“As you wish!”

Yang Chen did not even give the other a chance to regret, the moment his mouth closed, the sword fell, the screaming guy's head flew up and as the other old man was high, the spouting blood sprayed on him.

“The guy who traced me is very smart, he didn't come with you.”

Putting the blood dripping Bright Ray Sword to the side, Yang Chen said to the remaining the guy: “His Spiritual Awareness Imprint, still stays in my Sea of Consciousness .”

The remaining guy looked up suddenly and did not seem to understand why Yang Chen said so. But Yang Chen actually knew that the person who was tracking him was not among them, and he was somewhat surprised.

“This also means that you do not absolutely have to say anything.”

Yang Chen sneered aloud, “At the worst, if you don't talk, I will have to look for him personally. Perhaps, he is your senior and has more information than you?”

As he said, Yang Chen's hand had once again touched the hilt of the Bright Ray Sword. This action showed that the fate of the remaining guy was sealed; his body could not help but tremble.

“I will talk! I will talk!” Yang Chen's hand had just lifted that the remaining guy began begging for mercy. He looked distressed, there was no trace of the bearing that a Jiedan realm master should have.

“I am listening!”

Yang Chen said coldly, but his hand did not leave the hilt.

“Yes...”

Just saying a word, the Jiedan realm master became startled as if he saw something strange, and then said: “Yes...”

After saying these two words, the face of the Jiedan realm master showed a stunned look, his body suddenly trembled sharply.

Yang Chen sighed and immediately understood. He didn't want to think about it. He picked up the Jiedan realm master and threw him out of the shuttle. Then the shuttle sped up and rushed forward.

Only after flying more than 20 zhang, the body of the Jiedan realm master suddenly blew up in a huge explosion. He turned into a pile of minced meat.

Chapter 241: Being Tidy Has Many Benefits

The Jiedan realm master exploded to death. The power of the explosion was also not small. Even if Yang Chen had already driven the shuttle to escape more than 20 Zhang, he still felt the powerful explosive force.

Although it was not as powerful as the explosion of the Tenth Water Divine Thunder in the sea, if it was to explode in the shuttle, it may bring some damage to it. Yang Chen could now do sacrificial refining of the shuttle, but it couldn't be repaired. Once it got damaged, it would not be worth the gain.

This was clearly the practice of some people ready for death. When joining certain organizations or going out for a certain task, they were restricted by the high-ranking people in the organization in advance. Once they wanted to reveal secrets, the restrictions would activate, leading to their bodies exploding. The Jiedan realm master was obviously restricted.

However, looking at the shocked eyes of the Jiedan realm master before his death, it seemed that he was unaware of his predicament. Yang Chen estimated that he did not know when he was restricted by those people, otherwise he would not look like that.

In this way, Yang Chen really held the people behind the scene in high esteem. Being able to be so ruthless to your own, clearly, they were not ordinary people. This kind of technique was usually prevalent in the Demon Sect. In the Dao Sects, unless it was a person ready for death, this method wouldn't be used, and ordinary people would rarely encounter it.

For the death of these people, Yang Chen really did not care. Without them, he could still dig the planner behind them.

As Yang Chen said before, the guy responsible for tracking was not among these people. So far, the people with the Yuanying

realm ancestor had died, but the Spiritual Awareness Imprint in the Sea of Consciousness of Yang Chen was still there, which could only be explained that he was still not dead.

When the person was alive, Yang Chen could track the whereabouts of the other person. Maybe the guy who planned this time would never dream, he could actually move the imprint in his own sea Consciousness, not to think that Yang Chen could rely on the Spiritual Awareness Imprint and in turn track the person who was tracking him.

However, Yang Chen did not intend to start doing this now. Since the other party could put restriction in these people without making them aware, it would be equally possible that he could restrict the person who was tracking him. Before Yang Chen had means to solve this restriction, he was not prepared to take this risk.

Looking at the Spiritual Awareness Imprint in his Sea of Consciousness, it was once again wrapped up by Yang Chen's threads of Spiritual Awareness and did not reveal the slightest of gaps. It was impossible for the other party to trace his position again. But this Spiritual Awareness Imprint was still kept by him. One day when Yang Chen's cultivation base became strong enough, this would serve as the clue to finding these people to settle accounts.

The bodies of the group of Jiedan and Yuanying realm masters had become the flower fertilizer of the blood demon vine. What surprised Yang Chen was that Xiao Tian woke up before the battle, just in time to catch a glimpse of it.

The three Restricted Dragon Qi were a bit abnormal. So far, it seemed that it still had a full-fledged, yet undigested appearance. Even the fragments of the flying swords that Yang Chen prepared for it had not been looked at. It was on the blood demon vine sword and was still not moving. Yang Chen estimated that it was still digesting.

Yang Chen no longer alarmed Xiao Tian, letting it be free in the medicine garden. He drove the shuttle and flew in the direction of the Blue Cloud Sect. Of course, at sea, it was still convenient on the sea floor, hiding his whereabouts and not attracting attention.

When there was a time that Yang Chen had nothing to do, he would sit and cultivate in the shuttle.

Before he started gathering the Tenth Water True Essence, he had been drinking a mixture of the Mysterious Coral Liquid and the wine distiller's yeast. Drinking, sleeping, and then waiting to remove the impurities in his body. He did not cultivate any cultivation arts. Now that the impurities in his body have gone down about seven or eight times, this was the first time he had started cultivating under such circumstances.

The Three Purities Secret Art was good, but it was a Spiritual Awareness Secret Technique, and the impact on the body was not great. However, now with the Three Purities Secret Art, Third Layer, Yang Chen has been practicing to a very familiar level and his Spiritual Awareness had reached the point of re-consolidation.

However, this kind of condensing was a one-off effort. Normally, it took hundreds of years. Fortunately, Yang Chen now had the Spiritual Awareness of a Yuanying realm, middle stage master. His Spiritual Awareness would not increase for the time being and affect Yang Chen too much.

Yang Chen was now holding at least two things that could both increase his cultivation base and Spiritual Awareness. The Sect had a collection of more than one hundred kinds of flames for him. Among them, there were many kinds of Third Grade flames. Once Yang Chen had completely absorbed them, another change would immediately occur in his Sea of Consciousness, it would also multiply exponentially.

The other thing in Yang Chen's hands was the Tenth Water True Essence. This was a must-have for the cultivation of the Tenth

Water True Secret Art cultivation in the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art, and it was also a relic that could cause changes in the Sea of Consciousness. After absorbing the Tenth Water True Essence, it was true that there would be a miniature ocean in his Sea of Consciousness. As for Cultivation Base and Spiritual Awareness promotion, it was simply an obvious matter.

However, Yang Chen did not intend to do these two things in a short time. So far, his cultivation has grown far beyond Gao Yue, Shi Shanshan, Sun Qingxue and Gongsun Ling. Haste brings no success, it was the most basic truth. Everyone understood that Yang Chen would not make these simple mistakes.

A sharply elevated cultivation required more time to consolidate the realm. There was no way to do such. If he didn't do this, he would have to pay. No power was worth this price. What Yang Chen needed now was to consolidate his cultivation with peace of mind, so as not to cause any major problems.

When Yang Chen cultivated the Three Purities Secret Art and immediately began to cultivate the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art, he immediately noticed the changes in his body.

The speed of the spiritual power in various pockets of his body's meridians was almost 30% faster than usual. When fighting, Yang Chen didn't notice it or had the extra energy to manage those things but now in the state of cultivation, he immediately found these anomalies.

The speed of his spiritual power circulation had increased. Moreover, before he had always thought that some of his meridians had obstacles, caused by his cultivation being too low. Almost all had disappeared. Spiritual power flowed through his body, without any feeling of being restricted; it was so comfortable.

Moreover, after the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art One Heavenly Circulation was completed, Yang Chen himself was able

to clearly perceive it. Compared with the past, after this One Heavenly Circulation, the increase in spiritual power was also slightly more.

The speed of the circulation increased, there was no hindrance in his meridians, and the spiritual power also was increased slightly, seemingly not a big change, but after a long time, it would be absolutely enviable crazy gap.

The Three Purities Secret Art did not bring Yang Chen many surprises, the true pleasant surprise came from the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique and the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art.

The body of Yang Chen, because of Old Demon Yi's Demonic Art, had absorbed several thousand Divine Immortal Life Essences, and was already formidable to the extreme. Without any other assistance, he could achieve the strength surpassing 30,000 Jin.

But this Demonic Art had its drawbacks; the essence of life absorbed was too much and too mixed, resulting in many impurities in the body. This was a hidden danger, but unexpectedly Yang Chen actually had the good luck to get so much Mysterious Coral Liquid.

The impurities in his body were almost exhausted. During the cultivation of the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, the sudden burst of power in his muscles filled his body with a feeling of madness, which almost scared Yang Chen.

He Knew that there would be benefits, but he did not expect it to be this strong.

After removing almost all the impurities from his body, the feeling of the Body Refining Technique transforming his muscles and the refining of his body was clearly reflected in Yang Chen's Sea of Consciousness. Just as Yang Chen himself magnified countless times in his Sea of Consciousness, letting his soul be separated and watched it happen.

Under the effect of the refining, his bones were more compact and firmer, and his strength was greatly increased. His Muscles were also like people who were constantly adding strength to Yang Chen. As for the most critical muscles, they were even more amazing. Just looking at their increased size, one would know that his strength was definitely enhanced.

Not only that, the shortcomings of the current stage of the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique seemed to make Yang Chen look different in the eyes. The places that were strengthened were not uniform enough, and some places were too much, at a glance.

Up to now, Yang Chen knew that the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique would not only increase his strength in the early stage, but he would have a kind of barbaric body shape, also that at the later stages the body could be restored to the original normal shape.

At first, this kind of refining technique was too focused on the muscles and bones, naturally there would be some imbalances. The inflated muscles would of course become the real nemesis. If Yang Chen had no such ability, it would have been impossible to restore his original body shape except for the step-by-step cultivation of the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique to the extreme.

But now, Yang Chen already knew where the problem was, and his current body had become more adaptable to the refining effect of technique. If he spent a lot of time focusing on certain parts, he could readjust his uneven body.

In this way, Yang Chen could achieve the later stage's effects in the early stage of the Yellow Turban Reinforcement. This was not just a change in body shape, but it also meant another incredible increase in physical strength.

Only this time, cultivating it, Yang Chen felt that the effect of

power improvement was much higher than before. It seemed that no matter what type of cultivation, the body was still the most basic and most important.

After One Heavenly Circulation this time, the effect of the technique was 50% better than usual. The strength that broke out of his muscles made Yang Chen feel a little surprised. If he followed this situation, in less than hundred years. It was estimated that Yang Chen could reach the highest-level.

One should know that the high-level Yellow Turban Strongman, even in the Heavenly Court where spiritual qi was almost everywhere, would take at least several hundred years to reach. Moreover, they were not mortals when they began cultivation.

Yang Chen did not know how to evaluate his own Heaven Defying luck. The old dragon king was really powerful, no wonder he had a separate treasure house. Those magic weapons that relied on luck to win, but also really could not be compared with these things that Yang Chen had already in his hands.

With these good things, Yang Chen's first thought was of course of his Master. There was that Mysterious Coral Liquid too. When he would go back, he would let his Master drink the Mysterious Coral Liquid. Bathing with it was also good. He had a big lake of it after all.

As for others with good relations with Yang Chen, Master Ancestor, Palace Master, Old tree monster, other elders, Senior Sister, Senior Brother, everyone could have a big cup first. If they were sick it would be used to treat illnesses, if not then to build up their strength. He was the disciple of Pure Yang Palace, their welfare simply was a big deal for him.

In the past, when Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan went to take the Howling Celestial Dog Blood Essence, he was very appreciative of Shi Shanshan's tea making skills. However, Yang Chen liked wine and tea was only something that he tasted occasionally. Now that

he had a wine cellar, the size of a lake, it seemed necessary to brew some refreshing wine to modulate.

The Mysterious Coral Liquid was good but every time one drank it, a lot of sleep was needed which was inconvenient. It was better to drink wine for the taste.

That bottle gourd, Yang Chen had decided to call it the wine jug. What would tens of thousands of years of wine in a large lake be called, if not a wine jug? This was true; when Yang Chen brewed wine it could be put in, when he wanted to drink, he could pour it out at any time.

If Blue Cloud Sect had an auction, he would have to collect a large amount of raw materials for brewing. At the same time, he would also look for Little sister Sun Qingxue. If it was convenient, he would also give her a cup of Mysterious Coral Liquid, which was definitely good for her cultivation.

Along the way, Yang Chen cultivated until he approached Blue Cloud Sect. He took away the shuttle and summoned an ordinary flying sword to make use of as a mount. Then he slowly flew the flying sword to the gate of the Blue Cloud Sect.

This was not the first time Yang Chen came here. The last time he came to invite elder Hua Wanting, the people of Blue Cloud Sect were very cordial with him.

At the gate, he asked to find Sun Qingxue through a message without saying anything else. After a few hours, Yang Chen saw Sun Qingxue rushing over.

“Brother Yang it is good to see you!”

Sun Qingxue still had her young face. When she saw Yang Chen, her face instantly became filled with a smile, while saying hello.

Yang Chen had come alone to find her, lifting Sun Qingxue's mood. This Elder Hua's proud disciple, Blue Cloud Sect's current genius, like a young miss in love, called Yang Chen, making him

nervous and embarrassed.

“Little Xue!”

Yang Chen had a kind of younger sister love for Sun Qingxue. Although she was a little embarrassed now, it did not prevent Yang Chen from seeing that Sun Qingxue was very happy. Of course, there was another reason for her happiness. The future, Snow Dance Fairy Maiden, famous all over the world, had such an expression in front of him.

When he thought about it, he felt an indescribable satisfaction.

“Just passing by the way and decided to pay a visit.”

Soon after seeing Sun Qingxue’s happiness, he was replaced by a headache, seeing Sun Qingxue’s happy appearance, Yang Chen also said nothing to disturb her, and could only find these words, “won’t you invite me in?”

Sun Qingxue brought Yang Chen into the sect gate with joy and leaps. Introducing the famous scenery of the Blue Cloud Sect to Yang Chen. He was happy and looked at it with joy from his heart.

“Will there be a Blue Cloud Sect auction in recent times? Would I have the qualification to participate?”

After a long day of rest in Sun Qingxue’s small courtyard, Yang Chen took the opportunity to ask.

Chapter 242: Better Wine

“Auction?”

Sun Qingxue was stunned. She didn't think that Yang Chen wanted to participate in the auction. She replied: “It will take place after ten days or so. What does Brother Yang want to buy? Maybe I can help?”

“There is no specific goal.”

Yang Chen was not in a hurry. Ten days, he could still wait. Blue Cloud Sect often had some good things to auction, he didn't know what he would see this time. However, there was nothing in particular to be hidden from Sun Qingxue: “I am planning to buy some raw materials for brewing. If there are any miscellaneous books or anything, I can also take them.”

Yang Chen's love of miscellaneous books was notorious. The last time he treated elder Hua Wanting, he directly asked for 20,000 volumes. At that time, Sun Qingxue was present and was very clear about it.

“There may not be many books in the auction.”

Sun Qingxue shook her head and said very directly: “There will definitely be a cultivation method, alchemy manual and a refining technique in the auction, it is impossible to auction the miscellaneous books.”

Yang Chen did not have such an idea to buy miscellaneous books at the auction, just to play this dice. He came to Blue Cloud Sect, just to look at what was good, but there was really no fixed goal.

“There is a place to sell the raw materials for brewing. You don't have to wait for the auction Brother Yang.”

Sun Qingxue immediately began to ask Yang Chen for another request: “In the inner market of Blue Cloud Sect, there is a world-famous wine, the unique wine of our sect; ‘Blue Cloud Immortal

Class'. If you like Brother Yang, I will buy some for you."

Blue Cloud Immortal Class was made by a low-level disciple of Blue Cloud Sect who had no hope of cultivating. After improvements by some masters, it became the unique wine of Blue Cloud Sect. All the people not of the sect and those in conflict with Blue Cloud Sect cannot enjoy it. Yang Chen had visited here twice, because the situations were unbecoming for such festivities, he could not taste this kind of wine.

Originally based on Sun Qingxue's Foundation Stage disciple status, she was not qualified to purchase it. But now because Sun Qingxue was elder Hua Wanting's disciple, she could get some Blue Cloud Immortal Class. It was really not a problem.

Moreover, with Sun Qingxue's current aptitude, if she needed to buy some Blue Cloud Immortal Class, a large number of people would be willing to buy it for her.

Of course, Yang Chen now had the qualification to purchase some of it, even the qualifications to participate in the Blue Cloud Sect auction, let alone buy Blue Cloud Immortal Class.

In his previous life, Yang Chen also heard about the name of the Blue Cloud Immortal Class, but he had never had a chance to taste. Now it was just as Sun Qingxue said that Yang Chen could have a taste.

"Well, let's go and see how this Blue Cloud Immortal Class tastes like!"

With interest, Yang Chen immediately stood up.

Sun Qingxue laughed in front of Yang Chen, leading the way for him. The two drove their flying swords and soon came to the inner market of the Blue Cloud Sect.

Blue Cloud Sect was wealthy being a top-notch martial art school, and even the inner square was so lively. Pure Yang Palace was relatively inferior, there were even rare auctions in Blue Cloud

Sect. In just even the number of disciples, Pure Yang Palace had a long way to go.

There were many disciples in the Foundation realm in the market, but there were also many Jiedan masters and even the occasional Yuanying ancestors. The Sect encouraged disciples to exchange some of the things they got and learn from each other. Almost all the major sects were the same.

Sun Qingxue took Yang Chen and soon came to a shop that looked very unremarkable. It was inconspicuous, very small shop, inside there were three jars and a simple wooden counter. Apart from these, there was nothing else, not even a stool for sitting.

The owner of the shop was a middle-aged man who had a Foundation realm, middle-stage cultivation, which was very common. He was dressed very neatly and was holding a spoon while pouring wine into a small jug.

However, compared with the crudeness of the shop, outside there was a long queue. Almost every person was holding a wine-drinking instrument or a bottle gourd, a vial or a jade pot, with anticipation on their faces.

“Well, today seems we will be unable to catch up.”

Looking at this situation, Sun Qingxue's brow wrinkled: “Blue Cloud Immortal Class only sells three jars every day, and with this waiting line, what can I do?”

It was not easy for Yang Chen to come to Blue Cloud Sect and even rarer for her to have a drink with him, but to catch up with so many people, Sun Xiaoxue was very embarrassed. She couldn't go in front of these people and there was no one she knew to replace in the line.

In the air, there was a scent of wine, the closer it was to the store, the stronger the taste. Yang Chen looked up and sniffed a few mouthfuls and snorted.

His action was like a standard drunkard. Someone in the queue next to him suddenly smiled. It was estimated that they have done similar actions before.

However, the drunkard was still a drunkard, no one was willing to care. One day, three jars, each person couldn't exceed one jin (0.5 kg). It was counted that only one hundred people could taste this wine every day. No one wanted to give their valuable enjoyment to others.

Sun Qingxue had seen the line, from back to the front. What disappointed her was that there were no acquaintances among the long line. And the line was obviously more than one hundred people, at least three hundred, it seemed that the share of the next three days of wine had also been booked.

Inside the Blue Cloud Sect, there was no need to say that it was impossible to cut the queue. Perhaps they had a strong backing on the outside, but it could still not be done. Here, the powerful people did not dare to break the rules. This was the discipline of the Blue Cloud Sect.

Seeing that there was no way for Yang Chen to taste the wine, Sun Qingxue almost cried out in a hurry. Yang Chen could hardly come once, but he had encountered such a situation, how could she accept?

“Don't worry, Qingxue!”

Yang Chen looked at Sun Qingxue's anxious look and was moved. He immediately sighed and said: “I have already smelled the wine, and it doesn't matter if I can't drink it.”

When Yang Chen said this, Sun Qingxue became anxious, her brows were wrinkled, she suddenly said: “I am going to find Master to think of a way!”

Just one jin (0.5 kg) of liquor, Yang Chen had not paid attention to it. Moreover, this Blue Cloud Immortal Class was really also or-

dinary. After tasting the distiller's yeast that was in the bottle gourd of the old Dragon King had left behind, this Blue Cloud Immortal Class in comparison was already unable to excite his liquor worm.

“Don't!”

He jokingly said, because of liquor she wanted trouble a Great Ascension stage Expert! This was too outrageous, Yang Chen blurted out: “This liquor's flavour is ordinary, it cannot be that good. Wait for me to brew some peerless delicacies wine personally, I will give you a taste!”

“Don't say a word!”

Sun Qingxue hadn't heard what he said, but the people in the line heard it, and loudly scolded.

Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue, as if by prior agreement looked in the direction of the sound, even those who were waiting for the alcohol could not help but curiously looked over there.

It was a beautiful restaurant, completely different from the simple shop here. The four-story restaurant was very magnificent, and people came in and out from time to time.

The person who cultivated was also a person, they also had a desire for food and drink, but most of their time was spent on cultivation, they did not pay much attention to this aspect of enjoyment. It was not abnormal to think that some people liked enjoyment, and the person who spoke out was on the third floor of the restaurant and was like that.

“Boy, Blue Cloud Immortal Class is world-famous, can it be that you can slander it?”

The voice that just spoke, scolded again.

“I am coaxing my younger sister, what's that got to do with you?”

Yang Chen didn't pay attention to this person and replied straight back with a single sentence.

Sun Qingxue's anxious appearance had been seen by everyone in the queue, naturally knew why Yang Chen would say that. Strictly speaking, it was really the words spoken to coax a child which couldn't be taken seriously. So, no one said anything. The guy upstairs only heard Yang Chen say that the Blue Cloud Immortal Class was common and shouted, he didn't see why Yang Chen was saying this.

When he heard Yang Chen's words, the person in the restaurant seemed to realize that he was impulsive.

However, Yang Chen's words made him not be able to bear it. He thus, ignored Yang Chen's words and replied: "if Blue Cloud Immortal Class is ordinary, what kind of liquor do you dare to call a good wine? Boy, if you don't give me an explanation today, this old man must ask your elders to discuss that!"

They were in the Blue Cloud Sect, so the person upstairs could not kill. If it was outside, maybe Yang Chen's head would be used to compensate.

"This type of liquor, only a frog at the bottom of the well that has not seen the world will regard it as a treasure."

Yang Chen coldly snorted: "Explain? Why do I need to explain?"

"On the name of this old man Jiu Xian!"

The person upstairs could no longer resist, Yang Chen repeatedly degraded the Blue Cloud Immortal Class and even the people who admired the Blue Cloud Immortal Class counted that the person upstairs wouldn't take this anymore.

Not to mention the person upstairs, those who lined up to drink alcohol downstairs, watching the debacle, were also quite irked. What? A frog at the bottom of the well? They were so many people wishing for it, were they all frogs that have never seen the world?

Everyone saw a sudden flower, and a middle-aged man appeared in front of everyone. This Yuanying ancestor's aura did not spread outside, but an invisible power forced Yang Chen, which seemed to make him feel a tremendous pressure.

It was a pity that this wouldn't work for Yang Chen. The power that Jiu Xian sent out was simply like throwing a stone at the sea, he didn't react at all.

When she heard the name of Jiu Xian and then saw his appearance, Sun Qingxue knew it was not good. She hurriedly pulled the clothes of Yang Chen forwards and said in a low voice: "elder brother Yang, Senior Jiu Xian, is a guest of the Sect."

Sun Qingxue, although her Master was a Great Ascension realm expert, for these guests, she was still very respectful and could not help but remind Yang Chen.

"Senior Jiu Xian is addicted to alcohol like it is his life, he goes around the world to drink good wine, as long as any liquor can earn his praise, immediately the sale price rises sharply."

To be honest, Sun Qingxue was a little anxious. Yang Chen provoked Senior Jiu Xian dissatisfaction. Seeing that there would be conflicts, it must be that Yang Chen, this Foundation realm younger generation would suffer. All of this would be attributed to her instead, how could she calm down. She looked anxious beyond words.

"The old man doesn't know the little girl."

Jiu Xian seemed to be directed at Yang Chen. Who told him that Blue Cloud Immortal Class was ordinary, "Boy, today, no matter what you say, because of this, you will go to Blue Cloud Immortal Class wine and apologize, or you will come up with evidence of Blue Cloud Immortal Class being ordinary. Otherwise, don't blame this old man."

"Jiu Xian? Is it self-proclaimed?"

Yang Chen took such kind of people, who rushed to find abuse, insignificant. He sneered, “How many types of good wine have you drunk to dare be called Jiu Xian? The beautiful mouth wants to deceive the liquor to drink, when I am a child?”

Let him come up with evidence to prove that Blue Cloud Immortal Class was ordinary. To put it bluntly, it was to ask Yang Chen to come up with a better wine. This remark has indeed been suspected as cheating. Moreover Jiu Xian, seemed to have been cut off by Yang Chen, how could he care about a mortal guy who claimed to be a wine celestial.

Jiu Xian was already a Yuanying ancestor, but he was also unable to speak for a long time after Yang Chen’s words. Dignified, Jiu Xian, had become a rogue to sip wine, how could the heart of Jiu Xian bear it.

“How rude!”

Someone screamed from the side. The people who lined up were all good wine drinkers, and they had all heard the name of Jiu Xian. And Yang Chen reprimanded him this way. How could people not be filled with indignation?

“Good! Good! Good!”

Jiu Xian was angered and laughed, pointing to Yang Chen, and even said three good words.

“This old man has not come out for a long time, it seems that there is a group of exceptional descendants. Today, this old man does not lie to you. If you can take out a cup of wine that is better than Blue Cloud Immortal Class, out of this old man’s possessions, you can pick one.”

“Are you sure?”

Yang Chen’s eyebrows got erected and he asked. A cup of wine for a magic weapon of a Yuanying ancestor, this sale was worth doing.

“It’s hard to chase after a word!”

Jiu Xian raised his head and said proudly. He had this capital pride, the world good wine, which of them had he not drunk, the Five Elements Sect five phase disorder liquor and Blue Cloud Immortal Class shared this honour. They were both at par, almost the same, to say that the other surpassed Blue Cloud Immortal Class, it certainly was impossible: “All people on the scene, can testify.”

“Good!”

Yang Chen nodded.

“However, if you can’t get it, what should you do?”

Jiu Xian did not give Yang Chen a chance to escape and immediately asked. The people beside them were also pushing the waves and urging Yang Chen loudly.

“What do you want?”

Yang Chen did not care, asked directly.

“I can forgive a younger generation, if you can’t get anything decent.”

Jiu Xian fully showed the generosity of his seniority at this moment. He waved his hand and said very generously: “As long as you are in front of everyone and apologize to Blue Cloud Immortal Class, admit that what you said was nonsense!”

The people around, listening to Senior Jiu Xian, one by one cheered. It was as if they had already won.

“Senior, are you sure you will not regret it?”

Yang Chen suddenly asked with a smile.

“Why would I regret?”

Jiu Xian had already determined that Yang Chen was looking for an opportunity to escape.

Where would he give him the opportunity, “This old man will never regret it!”

“Senior are you not afraid. Once you have tasted the taste of my wine today, you will never taste it again?”

Yang Chen’s smile was getting more and more happier.

Chapter 243: Wine Qi Can Also Intoxicate

Jiu Xian thought that Yang Chen had said, meant that once he lost, he would not bring out more. He smirked in his heart, Yang Chen was really a person who couldn't understand good wine, could it taste more delicious than the Blue Cloud Immortal Class, how could it be compared with it.

After hearing the words of Yang Chen, Jiu Xian was startled and looked at him, suddenly having a sense of confidence. A good wine drinker wasn't afraid of drinking wine.

As Yang Chen said, once he tasted the delicious wine today, he would never taste it again, but what could he do?

Seeing that Yang Chen was so determined, it seemed that he had no fear of it. For a while, Jiu Xian felt a sense of loss.

But soon Jiu Xian understood, that he had almost fallen into Yang Chen's evil scheme. If Yang Chen could take out a delicious wine that was more delicious than Blue Cloud Immortal Class, why would he still line up here?

Understanding this clue, Jiu Xian directly shook his head and sneered: "That is the future, today this old man really has to wait for a taste of your wine."

"Little Xue, go find some water!"

Yang Chen did not say anything more at this moment and directly directed Sun Qingxue.

Sun Qingxue was anxious, thinking about how to resolve the situation between Yang Chen and Jiu Xian. Listening to Yang Chen's words, she couldn't help but become awkward. Once Yang Chen couldn't get it, wouldn't it be very difficult? She couldn't help but screamed: "Elder brother Yang!"

"I haven't lied to you?"

Yang Chen smiled softly and seemed to know why Sun Qingxue was anxious.

When she heard this sentence that Yang Chen had said several times to make her heart felt at ease. Sun Qingxue didn't know what it was, but she suddenly felt relieved. When Yang Chen said this, that kind of confident appearance made Sun Qingxue seem to return to the memory of the execution ground with her whole family, she then seemed to return to the small courtyard where the master was riddled with Blood Phantom Vine.

So, Sun Qingxue had no doubt again, she directly rushed into the restaurant. As a Blue Cloud Sect's disciple, it was not a big problem for her to go in for a glass of water. After a while, she walked out with a large basin of clear water.

The folks of the restaurant were also smart, and they have heard the movement outside. They did not hesitate to move a table out and bring a set of chairs to the front of Jiu Xian. Jiu Xian was impolite, sitting directly in the chair unceremoniously, waiting quietly.

Sun Qingxue put the large basin of water on the table and then naturally walked behind Yang Chen. Yang Chen did not talk much nonsense, but also sat on the opposite side of the table.

From his Cosmos bag, Yang Chen took out a large jade wine glass, almost three or two. Later, Yang Chen thought about it and it seemed to be a pity. He took the glass back and replaced it with a small cup of two quantities and put it on the table. At the same time, a jug was pulled out and placed next to it.

This action was very obvious. The meaning of his expression was very clear, he couldn't bear to drink a large glass of the wine, so he would only use a small cup.

Seeing this look, even Jiu Xian was looking forward to it. The way Yang Chen cherished it, could there really be a better wine?

In the eyes of the public, Yang Chen injected the clear water into the jug. This action coursed a doubt in the people watching. Was this going to be wine or drinking water? The people on the side began to talk about it.

There was such a big movement here, and other people who bought and sold in the market square had also come around. Although not everyone was good at drinking wine, but a well-known wine drinker senior and a younger generation's bet, it was still much worth seeing.

After completing everything, the pot had already been filled with more than half of the clear water. Yang Chen stood up and bowed his head to the people around him. He loudly reminded: "Friends with shallow alcohol capacity, please take a few steps back, so that you wouldn't get affected."

What did that mean? Have they been reminded of drinking yet? This was too much to look down on! Everyone had such an idea in their minds. Arrogant! Did he really think that alcohol qi could make people drunk?

The way the people were acting, Yang Chen didn't care. He had already warned and if others didn't listen, it was not his business. At most, some people would be smoked and drunk like the drunkards flailing around this area. It wasn't a big deal.

Jiu Xian had been irritated by Yang Chen's move. The more Yang Chen was like this, the more he felt that he was right, the alcohol qi could make people intoxicated, what kind of strong liquor was this? Before Yang Chen took out the wine, Jiu Xian had already begun to sit uneasily, without the image of a senior.

In the long-awaited hands of Yang Chen, he didn't know when a blue-yellow gourd appeared. Yang Chen held the gourd's waist, opened the gourd cover, and carefully began to tilt slowly over the jug.

A drop of viscous liquid slowly appeared from the gourd's mouth,

and then reluctantly lingered on the gourd's mouth for a while, which then completely separated from the gourd and slammed into the water in the jug. Immediately, Yang Chen was like hiding a treasure, quickly covering the gourd and taking it away.

From the time the liquid appeared, the eyes of the people did not move. The strange thing was that although Yang Chen was very solemn, but everyone couldn't smell a trace of wine, was this the wine that Yang Chen talked about?

Senior Jiu Xian was also wondering, but soon he no longer doubted Yang Chen's words. Among the jug, there was a faint smell of wine. He sat down closer to it and smelled it most clearly.

This wine's smell faintly spread around, and everyone could smell it. Slowly, the wine was getting stronger and more fragrant. There were a lot of good wine drinkers here. At this moment, a series of sounds like sucking of the nose was made, one after another, it was interesting.

However, the exudation of the wine taste did not stop at all. As time went by, the fragrant smell quickly filled the entire market. There were a few with shallow cultivation, and their face had already begun to appear red, they were actually intoxicated and a little bit drunk just by the alcohol qi.

The original street had a flavour of Blue Cloud Immortal Class, but now, the noses and minds of the people were filled with this mellow wine, and there was no such thing as the Blue Cloud Immortal Class.

The performance of the senior Jiu Xian was even worse. Although he was sitting neatly, his nose was swaying in a row, as if he wanted to completely absorb the smell of this fragrance into his nose. If it weren't for so many people watching here, maybe Jiu Xian couldn't hold it anymore, and the jug would be taken up and drunk already.

Yang Chen finally picked up the jug and shook it gently in his

hand, so that the wine yeast dissolved completely. With his movements, some people in the city finally fell, whistled and snored.

However, no one cared about this. Everyone's eyes were moving with the jug in the hands of Yang Chen. After a while, he grabbed the jug and gently picked a small cup on the table.

After filling it, Yang Chen rushed to the opposite side of Jiu Xian and made a request for action.

“Senior, please!”

Yang Chen had made a series of tricks, which had already wet the appetite of Jiu Xian, it should be remembered that before the gambling, it was said that in addition to this glass of wine, there would be nothing else.

When he smelled the wine, Jiu Xian knew that he had lost miserably. In this world, there was such a great wine, just the smell, could make people intoxicated.

However, the wine was in front of his eyes, smelling the flavour, he restrained himself, grabbed the little jade cup, looked at the quantity which was not enough, and could not help but feel some reluctance.

Under his nose, he smelled it for a while and enjoyed the rare flavour. Senior Jiu Xian couldn't bear it anymore. He took the wine glass and sent it to his mouth.

On the tip of his tongue, he immediately felt the most delicious stimulation. It was just the wine made from just a drop, that was, just enough to moisturize the tongue. He contained it in his mouth for a long time, Jiu Xian was reluctant to swallow it into his belly.

A burning sensation passed directly from his mouth to the soles of his feet and back to the top of his head, then changed to a cool feeling. Between the cool and warm, the spiritual power of his whole body seemed to have burned up, his pores opened naturally,

a burst of alcohol qi spurted out and then under the control of Jiu Xian, it was smashed back into his pores.

Senior Jiu Xian was no longer able to maintain his posture and sit respectfully, he closed his eyes and look up to the sky, the intoxication and enjoyment appeared unobtrusive in the eyes of the audience.

The people who lined up to buy wine, were stalking their heads one by one and kept sucking their noses. The sound of sucking on the scene did not stop, as if everyone wanted to absorb all the wine qi that was in the air.

“One more cup!”

Senior Jiu Xian finally opened his eyes again and put the glass on the table, but he was not willing to let go, still holding it in his fingers, and said to Yang Chen.

Yang Chen was not stingy, he gave a full cup of wine to Jiu Xian, looking at him with a smile.

However, at this moment, Jiu Xian had no interest in Yang Chen’s previous talk. This glass of wine was simply a jade liquid, and all the wine worms buried in his body were hooked on it. It seemed that a small hand had been extended in his throat. It kept rushing and wanting the wine to be poured into his mouth immediately.

After making a long intoxicating sigh for a long time, Jiu Xian finally sent this small glass of wine into his mouth. With the action of Jiu Xian, the sound of swallowing water was heard on the scene, and Sun Qingxue behind Yang Chen was immediately shocked.

Sun Qingxue did not expect it at all. Yang Chen’s drop of wine turned out to be so delicious. When she was a child, she was from a good family and she had a lot of wine. Although she didn’t like the things in the cup, she could also find out whether the wine was good or bad.

The wine qi made several drinkers drunk, Sun Qingxue was so close, but she was fine. Obviously, her drinking capacity was also good. But she still couldn't imagine, so many people simultaneously swallowing their saliva unexpectedly.

They were all from Blue Cloud Sect. Their behaviour made her very embarrassed. In front of Big Brother Yang, could they not keep the face of Blue Cloud Sect?

However, looking at Jiu Xian of the Yuanying realm making such a face, she could not blame those who were the same. This kind of wine was a delicious food that people craved to have!

After giving the two cups to Jiu Xian, Yang Chen no longer intended to give him anymore. He turned and directly put the jug into the small hand of Sun Qingxue, "little Xue, take it."

"Brother Yang, this is too expensive!"

Sun Qingxue also knew how to understand the value of this jug, and hurriedly shoved it back.

"Oh, it is not that precious, this is just the distiller's yeast that the clear water melts."

Yang Chen would not have her reject it, and directly shoved it back.

"First take the solution, wait for the day for me to let you taste the special brew that is the top-grade delicacy."

After these words, the people listening around and Jiu Xian, were all stunned. This kind of wine was actually not that precious? However, Yang Chen's words were very reasonable. The distiller's yeast that the clear water melts, was certainly inferior to the distiller's yeast that was specially-made as a liquor to hydrate, this was general knowledge.

This also meant that there was something even more delicious. The eyes of Senior Jiu Xian had already lit up, he was staring at Yang Chen, just like staring at a peerless treasure. However, while

watching Yang Chen, he didn't forget to let the corner of his eye follow the jug in Sun Qingxue's hand.

The special drink was of course wonderful, but it wasn't enough? Now, it was only the jug in Sun Qingxue's hand that could solve it. Senior Jiu Xian had begun to rack his brains to find a way, how to get a cup of wine from Sun Qingxue's hand. He was strong enough to grab it? As a Senior and as a guest of the Blue Cloud Sect, he can't do anything like that. It seemed that only way was to use things to exchange for it.

“Senior, this wine, how is the taste compared with Blue Cloud Immortal Class?”

At this time, Yang Chen said such a sentence, and suddenly let Jiu Xian immediately recall the taste of the two glasses of wine, he couldn't help but swallowed his saliva.

He wanted to shake his head and reject it, but Jiu Xian looked at the jug in the hands of Sun Qingxue and couldn't help but admit. Finally, there was only one point: “I lost!”

Jiu Xian was also trustworthy, directly throwing his own Cosmos bag to the table, “look inside and take whatever you want yourself!”

Under his control, the mouth of the Cosmos bag had been opened, waiting for Yang Chen to pick it himself. This was a bet. Under the eyes of the public, Jiu Xian would never reconcile, not to mention the large jug of wine next to it.

This bet Yang Chen made was righteous and had no polite thoughts. He opened the Cosmos bag directly and began to look at the things inside.

As a senior of the Yuanying realm, there were many good things in his Cosmos bag. However, those so-called high-level magic weapons, Yang Chen did not keep them in his eyes. On the contrary, a small thing thrown at the corner of the Cosmos bag by

Jiu Xian caught his attention.

It was a wooden sign with a very irregular shape and a pattern of twisted characters. It looked very ancient, and if there wasn't spiritual power to support, it might have decayed.

“This?”

Jiu Xian looked at Yang Chen who actually picked such a broken wooden card, and thought that it an accident, could not help but scream, “are you sure?”

“Of course!”

Yang Chen replied affirmatively.

“Weird!”

Jiu Xian stared at Yang Chen with a strange look. He said, “this is what this old man got by chance. No one knows what the patterns are. If you want it, take it!”

Chapter 244: Good Things, Of Course, Must Come in Doubles

For Yang Chen to pick something, if he didn't take his own magic weapon and collect several kinds of fine wine, Jiu Xian would really have not minded, but he just took a wooden sign, which was strange, but it allowed Jiu Xian to settle down.

As a result, he said nothing.

Regardless of the usefulness of the wooden sign that Yang Chen took, the eyes of Jiu Xian closely stared at the jug in Sun Qingxue's hand with an expression of desire, revealing such a speechless appearance.

Sun Qingxue was originally a witty and intelligent person. So, she got what was going on. Yang Chen gave her the rest of the wine, just to let her exchange some good things from Senior Jiu Xian. She rolled her eyes, and immediately calculated in her heart. She opened the lid of the jug, brought the mouth up to gently take a sniff, and suddenly shook her head. She asked: "Brother Yang, is it more delicious to use wine than to use water?"

"Naturally!"

Seeing Sun Qingxue asking this question, Yang Chen knew that the little girl already knew what he wanted to do, thus, he responded with a good answer.

"That's the case, then this wine is really a pity."

Sun Qingxue shook her head. "I still don't want to drink this, I will wait until when your wine is good!"

"Little girl! Give it to me!"

Jiu Xian saw that the jug was about to fall out and was shocked. He hurriedly slammed forward: "Don't dump it!"

Sun Qingxue and Yang Chen sang a duet, Jiu Xian couldn't be

blamed if he couldn't see it. But the taste of the wine was matchless. With this amount of wine, about two cups, still allowed him to again taste the flavour. His wine worm had just been hooked up, there was no wine to quench his thirst now, how could he stand it?

“This way, little girl, what do you want, you say it, I want to exchange this jug of wine with you!”

He knew that Sun Qingxue was waiting for him to play this game, but Jiu Xian still said it directly, as he was addicted to the alcohol. Which could be seen with a glance.

Sun Qingxue's eyes dribbled, Yang Chen did not prompt her that this Jiu Xian had any good things. It seemed that there was nothing in his Cosmos bag that was too suitable for her, so she opened her mouth and said, “Senior Jiu Xian, this younger generation junior does not want anything from your Cosmos bag.”

When she said this Senior Jiu Xian felt a bit embarrassed. He just threw the Cosmos bag to Yang Chen, knowing that there were not many good things in it and he was afraid that Yang Chen would chose the good things that he regarded as treasures.

Fortunately, Yang Chen chose to take a wooden sign that he didn't know the purpose of. But that allowed Sun Qingxue to drive senior Jiu Xian to a corner.

His old face was red, he looked at Yang Chen, but found that he was holding the wooden sign with ecstasy with a lost look. He did not pay further attention to him; his face became awkward.

Looking around, he thought about it and looked at Sun Qingxue, who was smiling across her face. Senior Jiu Xian finally took out a green and glossy branch from his bosom clenched his teeth and gave it to her, “This is from when this old man went out to gain experience some time ago, I obtained this Eternal Spring Wood. Small girl you have the wood attribute spirit root, you will need it.”

Eternal Spring Wood was a good material, Sun Qingxue had just picked it up, and her face had already blossomed with a smile. The jug in her hand was not held back anymore, she sent it directly to him. Her reply was very respectful and thankful: “Thank you Senior Jiu Xian!”

“It is nothing!”

Senior Jiu Xian took the pot of wine and was about to drink it, but suddenly thought of something, he took the small jade cup on the table, poured it with the wine and just smelled it for a long time.

He was reluctant to drink the rest of the wine, so he solemnly sealed the wine pot with a Talisman and collected it. Now Senior Jiu Xian realized what Yang Chen said at the beginning. After drinking this wine, drinking other wines would be boring, but there was not much to drink, for those who were addicted to alcohol, it was simply torture.

He knew that he shouldn't have placed that bet and tested this wine, consequently there wouldn't have been so many problems. The key was that he wouldn't be able to forget about this wine. For now, it would be good to slowly relish this pot, but where would he go for more?

He suddenly looked at Yang Chen and Jiu Xian's eyes brightened, this distiller's yeast was poured out from the gourd by Yang Chen, certainly there was more of it. He could not ask for it, he could only try to get close with Yang Chen, and in the future ask for more.

“Young Brother what is your honourable name?”

Needing the favour of this boy, the words of Senior Jiu Xian were also polite, and the honorific had also changed from a kid to younger brother.

The people watching next to them couldn't help but snicker, but

those who lined up to drink alcohol were heartbroken. They really wanted to drink some of that wine and also wanted to know who was that little brother? Everyone raised their ears to know who this unfamiliar person was.

“Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen!”

The other party was polite, Yang Chen was also polite and directly handed out his origins.

When they heard him say Pure Yang Palace Yang Chen, the scene became noisy. Yang Chen’s name had been heard by many people in the Blue Cloud Sect. Especially after the hundred thousand mountain incident, the Ask Inner Heart Pill was only legendary among the top levels, but the Thunderbolt Pomegranate was known by everyone like thunder reverberating in one’s ears. Yang Chen at the hundred thousand mountain battle, with hundreds of Thunderbolt Pomegranate directly broke the Big Dipper Heavenly Thunder Formation. Even if many people didn’t know about the Thunder pomegranate, they needed to pay attention to Yang Chen.

“It turned out to be Virtuous Nephew Yang!”

Senior Jiu Xian began to act close, calling him Virtuous Nephew Yang! It seemed that he had a feeling of friendship with a Senior of the Pure Yang Palace: “One day this old man will go to the Pure Yang Palace for a few days and will have to worry virtuous nephew about it.”

“This junior welcomes the Senior to the sect!”

Yang Chen also began to speak with courtesy.

The purpose of Jiu Xian was to know the origin of Yang Chen, so he could find him later. Now that the purpose had been reached, he would not say anything more. After a few words, he returned directly to the restaurant. Others had also remembered the name of Yang Chen. It was estimated that many alcoholics would come to his door in the future.

Sun Qingxue got the Eternal Spring Wood and was ecstatic. Holding the small branch of the tree, she was unable to put it away and showed off to Yang Chen, “elder brother Yang, why did you pick the wooden card? You knew that there could be a good thing with him, why did you not ask for more?”

“Oh, some people must be content!”

Yang Chen smiled, he was happy for Sun Qingxue, suddenly he remembered something, and reminded Sun Qingxue, “This Eternal Spring Wood combined with the immortal good wood has better effect.”

“I know!”

Sun Qingxue carefully closed the Eternal Spring wood, and then smiled at Yang Chen sweetly: “You also said that you must be content with yourself. This is already very good. Moreover, the immortal good wood is not something I can’t get, but I won’t be greedy for the time being.”

Seeing that Sun Qingxue was already so happy, Yang Chen didn’t know why, but his heart was gratified. As if Sun Qingxue was happy, he was also happy. He couldn’t help but say: “This immortal good wood is not easy to find, but, little Xue, you are lucky, I have one exactly here.”

Yang Chen did indeed have Immortal Good Wood. It was the compensation that the Greatest Heaven Sect sent for the sheltering of Chu Heng after the “incident” in the Desolate Valley. At that time, Yang Chen already had the Penglai Divine Wood, he had not put this Immortal Good Wood in his eyes.

The Immortal Good Wood and the Eternal Spring Wood belonged to long-standing wood species, but one was dead while the other had life, one was Yin and one was Yang, and the two formed a circle. The Yin and Yang were the best supplements for wood spiritual root cultivators. The combination of the two could almost make it possible for wood spiritual root cultivators of the Peak

Foundation stage to enter the Jiedan realm more easily.

Sun Qingxue had already taken the Three Revolutions foundation stage pills given by Yang Chen. The First Wood spirit power had already included the aura of the Penglai Divine wood. Combining this Eternal Spring wood and the Immortal Good Wood, it would definitely be the best auxiliary for Sun Qingxue.

When she heard Yang Chen's words, Sun Qingxue jumped up ecstatically. Yang Chen came to her three times and gave her three surprises. The first time he saved her life, the second time he let her take Elder Hua as her master, this time he brought her the Eternal Spring and the Immortal Good Wood. To put it, Yang Chen was just a bringer of good fortune for Sun Qingxue.

If no one had been watching, she wanted to hug the neck of Yang Chen and shout out in joy. During cultivation, one's opportunities were very important, but Yang Chen had brought such a chance to Sun Qingxue, even if this would get Shi Shanshan angry, Sun Qingxue wanted to become his Dao Companion.

Yang Chen's ignorance of his own concern was to make his own troubles even more serious. His little sister, now, had become more and more determined.

Originally, he was planning to buy some raw materials for brewing in the market, but he did not expect such a matter to take place. Of course, a drop of wine was exchanged for an Eternal Spring Wood and a particular strange wooden sign, still Yang Chen felt that it was worthwhile.

Others couldn't see the purpose of the wooden sign, but could Yang Chen not see it? This was clearly the key to a separate secret plane, Senior Jiu Xian actually treated it as an ordinary object and allowed Yang Chen to pick it up. If he let him know the truth, he didn't know if whether he would regret it or not.

This secret plane was similar to the Pure Yang Palace's Secret Pavilion restricted area. The pattern on the surface was a kind of

unfamiliar text, 10,000 years old, and Yang Chen just got a piece of jade slip in the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave. He saw that it was an introduction to this language.

This was a secret plane of a small martial art sect, the sect had long since disappeared, but the secret plane had remained. This key had also flown to the present, but no one knew what it was, and Yang Chen luckily got it cheaply.

Even if it was a small martial art sect, sometimes there would be some amazingly good things with them. What's more, the secret plane was 10,000 years old, even if there was nothing else, there would always be some elixir that have been maturing since.

This kind of good thing, Yang Chen, of course, would not mention on the spot. This secret key also gave Yang Chen a goal to pursue with Sun Qingxue.

There were not many twists and turns in the purchase of raw materials for brewing. With the performance of Yang Chen before, everyone knew that he wanted to brew a specially-made liquor water to dissolve the distiller's yeast, which was very much anticipated.

The only trouble was that the quantity needed by Yang Chen was too big. He directly emptied all the stocks of the stores in the city. This made everyone surprised and think in their minds about how much wine Yang Chen was trying to brew.

“I will not only brew one type.”

Yang Chen explained to Sun Qingxue. She was not worried about this, she was still immersed in the joy of getting the Eternal Spring and Immortal Good woods.

Compared with the winery of a huge lake, Yang Chen couldn't afford to buy the raw materials for it in the Blue Cloud Sect. And there were many other things to consider. For example, brewing required good water which required Yang Chen to find water that

was suitable for wine making. Of course, he would do so in the future, not now.

After Yang Chen took a turn in the city, Sun Qingxue and Yang Chen returned to Sun Qingxue's small courtyard. Yang Chen also gave one of the Immortal Good Woods he had saved to Sun Qingxue, holding two rare woods. She directly jumped up happily in the yard. There were no outsiders here, only Yang Chen was there, she was not afraid of being seen by him.

“What made you so happy?”

A majestic voice interrupted Sun Qingxue's ecstasy and then a figure appeared in the small courtyard.

“Master!”

Sun Qingxue heard the sound and wasn't panicked at all. After seeing the figure, she went straight and flew into the arms of the coming person. After being spoiled for a while, she said, “Master, guess what I got today?”

“Senior Hua, how do you do?”

Yang Chen stood up when elder Hua Wanting appeared, he had to follow the etiquette as the younger generation.

Hua Wanting saw Yang Chen's gesture and slightly nodded in return, but she did not come over, just watching her apprentice acting spoiled.

“You used Yang Chen's wine to exchange an Eternal Spring wood from Senior Jiu Xian?”

Waiting until Sun Qingxue finished acting like a spoiled brat, Hua Wanting smiled and replied.

“Master, how do you know?”

Sun Qingxue was very dissatisfied, it wasn't easy to show off in front of her Master. But when she had the chance, her master has already known about it. This was very disappointing.

“The things that happened in the market can be passed around quickly.”

Hua Wanting’s gaze turned to Yang Chen: “My Sect’s Blue Cloud Immortal Class had suddenly become an ordinary item. It would be difficult if I didn’t know!”

“Predecessor, I just wanted to console Little Xue, it was Senior Jiu Xian who escalated it!”

Yang Chen could only spread his hands and act innocently, he could not say that he really ruined the reputation of the Blue Cloud Immortal Class.

“No matter, it is only a wine.”

Hua Wanting as a master of the Great Ascension stage, of course, she would not put this little thing in her mind, she came to see how her apprentice and Yang Chen were getting along.

“Master, you must have not guessed, what else did I get.”

Sun Qingxue continued to open her mouth and let her master guess what benefits she had gained.

“Are you not satisfied with the Eternal Spring Wood?”

Hua Wanting smiled and said: “You don’t want to add another Immortal Good Wood, right?”

“Ah?”

Sun Qingxue was dumbfounded on the spot, looking at her Master as if she was looking at a monster: “Master, how do you know that I still got an Immortal Good Wood?”

“What? You really got an Immortal Good Wood?”

Hua Wanting was stunned on the spot, Sun Qingxue actually got an Immortal Good Wood? How could this be?

With the Eternal Spring wood and Immortal Good Wood, and Sun Qingxue’s aptitude, condensation of Dan was simply a matter

of time. Even her master, could not help but be happy for her. No wonder she would be so happy, it turned out that it was like this.

“It was given to me by big brother Yang.”

Sun Qingxue once again proudly showed Yang Chen’s credit to her master.

Yang Chen found that Hua Wanting looked at him with her softening eyes, just like watching a son-in-law.

Chapter 245: How Is This Possible

For Sun Qingxue, Yang Chen treated her as a younger sister. There were many good things that he had given to her. This was the case with the Three Revolutions foundation stage pills, as well as the Immortal Good Wood.

However, now Yang Chen was a little hesitant, whether he should give the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid to Sun Qingxue at this time. Perhaps Sun Qingxue would not have any knowledge of it, but Hua Wanting would know. Once Hua Wanting had other thoughts after seeing the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid, Yang Chen was afraid that this kind of good intention would bring him more misfortunes.

Sun Qingxue was happy to show her own things to her Master, but it had to wait until she reached the peak foundation stage to be able to use them. So, she had a little regret, which naturally appeared on her face.

At this moment, this little girl's tenderness and excitement was mixed with a little grievance, Yang Chen suddenly had a clear understanding. Sun Qingxue's gratitude was pictorial. It was purely good for himself. There was no need to guard against this.

Even if Hua Wanting did know that Yang Chen had the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid, also knew that Yang Chen could refine the Ask Inner Heart Pill, compared with the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, the latter could make Hua Wanting to be more tempted. Since Hua Wanting now had this attitude towards Yang Chen, there was no difference in taking out the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid.

"That was only through a good opportunity, I didn't know it beforehand."

After thinking about it, Yang Chen's face once again showed a smile. A jade cup appeared in his hand, directed at Sun Qingxue:

“This is also a gift that I want to give to you.”

“What is this? Another kind of wine?”

Sun Qingxue jumped over and looked at the jade cup in the hands of Yang Chen and asked in surprise. However, looking at the gift that he gave to her, the smile on her face was not broken.

“Take it and don’t say anything, just drink it.”

Yang Chen did not divulge, just smiled and the jade cup was sent in front of the eyes of Sun Qingxue.

Sun Qingxue looked at the cup of purple liquid with fluorescent light and widened her eyes, her eyes were full of doubts. It seemed that it was something strange.

Hua Wanting heard Yang Chen’s gift to Sun Qingxue and was very happy in her heart. Sun Qingxue was her apprentice, she favoured her a lot; she was not allowed to be wronged or to suffer.

Although Elder Hua Wanting believed that Yang Chen would certainly not harm Sun Qingxue, but still she subconsciously looked at what Yang Chen gave to Sun Qingxue.

Looking past the cup and seeing the purple liquid, Elder Hua Wanting became startled. In her memory, there seemed to be nothing like this purple liquid, that also burst with fluorescence. She used her Spiritual Awareness to investigate it, but there was no spiritual power in it, what was this?

Suddenly, the name of something got raised from the bottom of Hua Wanting’s heart, quickly grasping the meaning of something suddenly.

No way? Was this thing the legendary Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid?

It was beyond the control of Hua Wanting for being shocked, the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid was really too precious, even if it was other people who had a few small drops, how would they put

it in such a large cup? But Yang Chen's jade cup, was almost three or two time as large. And so much of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid was placed there, which was so unreal.

If ordinary people had a few drops of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, all of which would be regarded as treasures. Unless it was as a last resort, they would add one or two drops in the process of extremely important alchemy or refinement. This peerless treasure, Sun Qingxue should drink it? Was that not a ruthless thing that only the most ruthless creatures would do?

“Hold on a minute!”

Looking at Sun Qingxue who had already planned to take it out and drink it, Hua Wanting couldn't help but hurriedly stop her.

Was she kidding, this Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, drinking it could not only clean up the body's impurities, but for Sun Qingxue who had the wood spiritual root, the role was relatively small. However, if the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid was used in alchemy or refinement, it may be possible to refine any peerless medicine or Peerless Grade Magic Weapon. It would be a pity if this was wasted like this!

“Master, why?”

Sun Qingxue turned her head and looked at her Master with doubt. She never doubted that Yang Chen would harm her, but she wondered why her master would make such a move.

And now the expression of Hua Wanting was solemn, this was something that Sun Qingxue had never seen on her master's face before. Quickly, a thought was raised in the bottom of Sun Qingxue's heart; was it possible that this purple liquid, was an extraordinary thing?

“Yang Chen, this is too expensive, we can't take it!”

Hua Wanting did not explain to Sun Qingxue but said to Yang Chen. She didn't know how he had gotten it but no matter which

martial arts sect he sent it to, so much Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid would definitely be regarded as a treasure. He couldn't easily give it away.

Elder Hua still had a little extravagant hope, that Yang Chen still did not know what it was and what it was used for, just thought it was an ordinary juice that was a little good for the body and brought it to Sun Qingxue. In this case, she could persuade Yang Chen to take it back.

It was not that Elder Hua was not tempted by this Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid. It was really that the Pure Yang Palace and Blue Cloud Sect had a close cooperation. The long-term interests of the Hundred-Thousand Mountains were more important than the Peerless Grade Magic Weapon or some Peerless Grade medicinal pill that could be achieved by using the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid.

Of course, if she could use something else to trade some of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, the result would be even more perfect. However, it must not be in the current way, Yang Chen did not know what it was, he should not give it to Sun Qingxue to drink.

“It is just some Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, it isn't a big deal.”

Yang Chen opened his mouth and said, letting Hua Wanting to become so scared that she almost jumped. Just some? Not a big deal? The vocabulary used by Yang Chen was so shocking to the ears of the Elder.

“Is it very precious? Master!”

Sun Qingxue did not know, so she asked her master with doubts.

“It is 10,000 times more precious than you think!”

Hua Wanting replied without hesitation.

“Ah!”

Sun Qingxue did not expect such a result, such a valuable thing, she did not dare accept it. When she again picked up the jade cup, she planned to return it to Yang Chen.

Looking at the performance of Hua Wanting, Yang Chen's heart sighed. Blue Cloud Sect could become a first-class major sect and it was not a fluke. Even with the temptation of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, Elder Hua could still reject it; this disposition alone, must be higher, compared with Wan Qian by god knows how many times.

“Yang Chen, do you not know the specialty of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid?”

Elder Hua looked at Yang Chen, still insisted on returning it, “and you still won't take it back!”

“Thank you for your care.”

Yang Chen was still very grateful, but he also had his own plans: “However, senior do you think that while this thing is in the hands of this younger generation, can this younger generation still retain it?”

Indeed, once people knew that Yang Chen had the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, the enemies that Yang Chen had to face would never end. Even if Yang Chen had tens of thousands of people, it would be impossible to fight against the entire Cultivation World.

Hua Wanting became increasingly confused. In this case, why did Yang Chen show this kind of treasure in front of her? Although there was no opening, the issue has been revealed in front her eyes.

“Since I can't keep it, why not use it immediately and not let others have any other thoughts on it.”

Yang Chen smiled slightly and said his reasons.

Listening to this almost absurd reason, Hua Wanting did not know what to say. From Yang Chen's words he was obviously

aware of the preciousness of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid; it was precisely because of this that Yang Chen made such a decision.

Of course, Elder Hua didn't know that Yang Chen's bottle gourd had too much of it, which could even be used for bathing and swimming. For a time, she could not find any reason to refute him.

She thought of taking it for herself, but this was the gift that Yang Chen gave to her apprentice Sun Qingxue. As an elder, she couldn't be so cheap and greedy.

"Moreover, if this younger generation junior had relied on this Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, my Alchemy Technique would have little advancement."

Yang Chen said again, this time it sounded more like a reasonable point.

"As long as this younger generation junior has an Alchemy Technique in hand, and am without these things, what is the difference?"

At this time, even Hua Wanting could not help but be moved by Yang Chen's arrogance. But thinking about it, what he said made sense. He was still in the Foundation stage, and he could already refine the Ask Inner Heart Pill, Heaven Seizing Pill and the Black Tiger Yuan Replenishing Pill. If he had always relied on foreign objects, it would indeed be like what he had said and his Alchemy Technique will likely not improve.

Yang Chen pointed out the fundamental reasons why he would make such a decision. Hua Wanting couldn't help but admire his master. He had such an excellent disciple, would there be any worry that his sect won't progress?

Fortunately, the gift that Yang Chen sent was to her own disciple. After Sun Qingxue drank, it would indeed be a great advantage for her, this was beyond doubt.

The excellence of the disciple was the glory of the master. Elder Hua also understood this and finally stopped interfering. Pointing at Sun Qingxue, she nodded and motioned for her to drink it according to Yang Chen's method.

Elder Hua still wanted to leave some of it for the needs of the Sect but seeing that Yang Chen didn't want to keep it, she couldn't do anything like that. In the end, it was still advantageous to Sun Qingxue, which was also indirectly advantageous to the sect. Elder Hua was comforting herself like this, and then watched helplessly as Sun Qingxue drank the entire cup of Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid.

"It has no flavour or taste!"

After drinking, Sun Qingxue naughtily said, making Hua Wanting really not know what to say. The Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid quickly started taking effect, Sun Qingxue felt like seeing clouds in front of her eyes, and only muttered a sentence. "I feel so sleepy!"

She then fell in her master's arms. Hua Wanting was prepared, and quickly caught her. There was a flash and their figures were no longer in the room, leaving only her voice that was reverberated, "Yang Chen, you can rest here, wait for her to wake up and look for you."

Hua Wanting was watching her, so she would definitely not have any problems, Yang Chen was very relieved. In the room of Sun Qingxue, he leisurely rested for a few days and did not go out every day. He only cultivated the Three Purities Secret Art Yin-Yang Five Phases Secrets and Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, other times, he would be holding a jade slip. Looking at the roots, very regularly.

Although the name of the wine was well known in the Blue Cloud Sect, but no one had come to disturb Yang Chen, exactly like how Elder Hua had told him. Yang Chen was also happy to take a break

for reading and cultivation.

During this period, Elder Hua Wanting had also been there twice. Her courtyard was next to the Sun Qingxue's Courtyard. The master and disciple were close to each other, thus, it was convenient for Sun Qingxue to ask for advice. In fact, even though Elder Hua was not around, but she still knew exactly what Yang Chen was doing.

Elder Hua somewhat sighed with emotion. Young people like Yang Chen who could be so calm, even among the outstanding disciples of the Blue Cloud Sect, were rare. At least even Hua Wanting herself could not give the cup of Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid to Sun Qingxue as casually as Yang Chen did, more so given to people who had nothing to do with his own sect. This was even more rare.

The only explanation was that Yang Chen deeply cared about Sun Qingxue. Anyway, Sun Qingxue had already expressed her intentions to be a Dao Companion to Yang Chen. Yang Chen said that he would consider it. However, such a large cup of Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid seemed to have explained Yang Chen's attitude. For this lover, who Sun Qingxue chose herself, Elder Hua was more and more satisfied.

Yang Chen not only was a life-saving grace for Hua Wanting, but also was so calm at such a young age. His Alchemy Technique almost had no equal in the world, his future was boundless, such planning by Sun Qingxue. It seemed that Little Xue's vision was quite good.

If Yang Chen knew that when he only planned to give Sun Qingxue a small gift, he would also be associated with so many matters, he would definitely have felt ashamed in the face of Hua Wanting. He was not reluctant to give more of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid; the key was that Yang Chen was afraid of getting misunderstood. He had already planned to secretly give more to Sun Qingxue. No one would know, and there wouldn't be

so many troubles.

Because of the big cup of Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid that she drunk, Sun Qingxue slept for ten days. Naturally, her body would also discharge a lot of impurities. At this moment, there was Elder Hua Wanting to take care of her, so there was nothing to worry about.

When Sun Qingxue appeared again in front of Yang Chen, she had a different expression. Hua Wanting had already explained to Sun Qingxue what the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid was and how much precious it is. In the face of Yang Chen, Sun Qingxue was extremely grateful.

“Thank you, Big Brother Yang!”

This expression of gratitude, was definitely from the heart of Sun Qingxue. At the same time, it was also mixed with an unusual joy. This Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid that Yang Chen was willing to give her, indicated her status in his heart. Sun Qingxue couldn't ask for anything more, it was enough to have this much.

“Why are you being so polite, after becoming so good-looking!”

Yang Chen stared at Sun Qingxue and looked at her up and down. He was very satisfied and nodded. After removing the impurities in her body, Sun Qingxue's skin was whiter, energetic and more youthful. Sun Qingxue's words of thanks, Yang Chen would not put in his heart.

“It seems that the auction of the Blue Cloud Sect will start soon?”

Yang Chen saw that Sun Qingxue was somewhat shy, and naturally changed the topic, “would you care to take me there?”

“The auction will open tomorrow, and I am already prepared.”

Sun Qingxue said and took out a piece of a jade slip and handed it to Yang Chen: “These are the things to be auctioned tomorrow, Big Brother Yang, take a look, whatever you want, I will buy it for you.”

Chapter 246: Our Agreement Has Not Been Fulfilled

The auction inside the sect was very formal. Preparing the list of items in the auction in advance could also make the people in sect make preparation in advance, which was very thoughtful.

When Sun Qingxue came back, she didn't have to leave again. This was her room, her courtyard. Seeing Sun Qingxue who was looking at him with anticipation, Yang Chen explored into the jade slip with his Spiritual Awareness.

Originally, Yang Chen did not have any specific goals, but after roughly sweeping through it, he found out that there was somethings good in this auction that made him feel tempted.

The auction actually had the Earth Pole True Fire, the Earth Pole True Fire! This was a fifth grade flame just like the True Sun Fire, True Moon Fire and the Southern Bright Trigram Fire. Yang Chen already had the True Sun Fire and the Southern Bright Trigram Fire, both are fifth grade third fire spirit powers. In addition to the Earth Pole True Fire, this fifth grade fourth fire spirit power would complement each other.

If in his past life, Yang Chen had a True Sun Fire, he would certainly did not dare to expect more. But this time was different, since Yang Chen wanted the Yin-Yang Burning Heavenly Fire, it would require a lot of Fire Seed, Fifth Grade and higher Fire Seeds were rare, so if he bumps into with great difficulty, Yang Chen must obtain it at all costs.

There was no other special surprises, but there was still a Spiritual Spring that made Yang Chen very tempted. This was a Spirit Spring that was collected from the roots. The water was clear and it was a good water for cooling alchemy or refining equipments. However, Yang Chen was not tempted to use it in alchemy or refining, but felt that if the water quality was good, it

could be used for wine making.

If people knew Yang Chen's intentions, it was not known how many people would knock him over to the ground and then step on his face and swear at him. Although Spirit Spring was not a rare thing, but if it was only used for wine making, isn't it really a waste?

Of course, everyone can't imagine how much the amount of wine that Yang Chen wanted to dilute was tens of thousands of years of wine and as huge as a lake. The Spiritual Spring may not be enough.

The two items alone were enough to make him spend money. The other ingredients and magical herbs did not spark Yang Chen's interest the slightest bit. There were actually a few techniques that seemed quite interesting. But if he were to buy them in the Clear Sky Sect's auction, it would not seem appropriate. Hence, he gave up on that thought.

"Yang Da Ge, is there anything you need?" Sun Xiaoxue had been waiting for Yang Chen's decision saw that Yang Chen had put down the jade slip, and hurriedly asked.

"Yes!" he said, nodding. It seemed that his luck was quite good after all. He could even come across such a good item like the Earth Pole True Fire. It seemed that his luck had turned.

Nevertheless, the Blue Cloud Sect was willing to auction the fifth-grade flame off, instead of trading it for contribution to the sect. This meant that the sect was too rich and arrogant. Otherwise, it could only mean that the owner of the flame lacked spirit stones. If he had handed the flame to higher authorities, he would gain some contribution points from the sect but he wouldn't make any spirit stones.

No matter what, since Yang Chen had already seen it, it was not necessary to compete with others.

“What do you want Big Brother Yang? I buy it for you!” Sun Qingxue listened to what Yang Chen wanted, very happily, and immediately yelled that she wanted to buy it for Yang Chen.

“You?” Yang Chen looked up and down at Sun Qingxue, and then asked very strangely: “How many spirit stones do you have? Is it enough to buy it?”

“I can ask Master to borrow some spirit stones first.” She looked at him in a diffident manner. Her master was an elder of the Great Ascension stage but as a disciple at the foundation building stage, she did not have much savings. She still couldn’t afford something from the auction by her own merit.

“Forget it, your Big Brother Yang, have a lot of money.” Yang Chen reached out and gently stroked Sun Qingxue’s small head very intimately, Sun Qingxue seemed to enjoy it too, and does not dodge.

“What do you want?” Sun Qingxue asked curiously.

“You know that I want to brew some wine, right?” Yang Chen said with a smile: “There is a Spirit spring, which should be good for winemaking. When i look at the water quality, you can buy it if appropriate.”

Although it was written down on the jade slip, he could only verify the quality of the actual item once he had seen it. Some of the qualities of the water were suited to refining tools while others might be used for concocting pills. But most of them could be used as drinking water. Of course there were some exceptions to this and Yang Chen was worried about just that.

“Okay! Good!” Sun Qingxue was hoping that there was something that Yang Chen would need from the sect. Whether the item was expensive or not was another issue. Anyway, an Alchemist Master of Yang Chen’s level would have spirit stones in abundance. It was painfully apparent from how he treated the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid like a normal juice.

Sun Qingxue had treated him like he was one of theirs and was no longer being modest with him. If she could afford it, then she would buy it. If she could not, then Yang Chen would purchase it himself. There was no difference.

On the second day of the auction, in the early morning, Sun Qingxue took Yang Chen to the auction venue. To be honest, Sun Qingxue had only come to this kind of auction with her master for a few times. She wasn't qualified enough to participate. It was not because of her status, but rather her financial background.

It seemed that the auction was very well-received. By the time they arrived, many people were already there. There were a few disciples standing guard at the entrance of the auction, verifying the identity of each visitor. There was no other way. The sect was big and there were thousands of disciples there. They could not possibly recognise each and everyone of them. Hence, they could only rely on their identity cards for verification.

Unsurprisingly, Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue were stopped from entering by the two young disciples who were on duty. "I'm sorry, fellow dao disciples. Those who are not involved in the auction can't be allowed entrance."

The two guards then ignored them. Sun Qingxue took her sect identification out swiftly and displayed it to the two guards.

"Junior apprentice sister, this is a high level auction. Disciples at the foundation-building stage are not allowed to enter." The guard only looked at Sun Qingxue's identity card and immediately knew her identity, but still stopped Sun Qingxue.

"What?!" Sun Qingxue was shocked. When did the auction change to a high level auction? And since when did the auction restrict people from entering? She then thought of an idea and tugged at Yang Chen's arms, "He is an honoured guest of the sect and is qualified to enter the auction. I am just following him inside to observe the auction, is that fine?"

From the moment they had arrived here, Yang Chen had sensed that the atmosphere was out of the ordinary. As soon as Sun Qingxue tugged at his arms, he could feel the unfriendly gaze from the other people's eyes towards him. It looked like the main problem was not due to some high level auction, but was because of her intimacy towards him.

“The sect's honoured guest?” The guard was still smiling politely. Nevertheless, he insisted on carrying out his duty and instructed, “Please show the token that has been given by the sect, the one that proves his status as an honoured guest of the sect.”

For some important guests, the sect would issue an identity token. Blue Cloud Sect was too big. Even people in this sect couldn't recognize each other clearly. It was normal for outsiders to not be recognized.

Therefore, this VIP token does have its usefulness.

However, Yang Chen became embarrassed at this moment. At the time, when they talked about the conditions with the Blue Cloud Sect's Sect Master, everyone cares about the safety of Hua Wanting, but no one remembers this issue, but they only verbally approved the qualification of Yang Chen. But this VIP token had never been given to Yang Chen.

Later, although Yang Chen went to the sect once again, but he was directly invited by Elder Hua Wanting, he also did not have the opportunity to get the VIP token, at this moment, the disciples were full of smiles and stretched out their hands, but Yang Chen couldn't bring anything out.

“It seems like I forgot to bring it!” Yang Chen certainly couldn't say that the Blue Cloud Sect's Sect Master did not give it to him. He could only use such a reason to meditate. However, everyone was a cultivator, and almost all of their belongings are kept in their Cosmos bag. This excuse was too rotten. Even Yang Chen felt a little embarrassed.

Looking at the appearance of Yang Chen, there seems to be a look of sorrow in the eyes of the disciples. There was a burst of laughter around at the same time, and then a voice came out: “Can’t get the token? What kind of honored guest, are you pretending?”

When the sound came out, it was immediately followed by a burst of laughter, and it seemed that people around it had begun to watch with excitement. And a few people who were interested have begun to push forward.

Sun Qingxue’s face became very difficult to look at. She was very familiar with this voice. It’s clear that they often wanted to get close with her, and Sun Qingxue has never given them face. She didn’t think that they would come and disturb her at this time.

Especially in front of Yang Chen, they made such a big embarrassment, Sun Qingxue almost cried out. With these many onlookers, it was clear that they were taking the opportunity to humiliate Yang Chen. The root was this problem was herself.

However, the reason the other party spoke of was very justified. In this high-level auction, only Jiedan stage masters and above could enter. Sun Qingxue had not reached this level, and didn’t have the qualification to enter. And Yang Chen, the so-called VIP, had no identity token, so the refusal was justified. Even if the Blue Cloud Sect’s Sect Master came over, he couldn’t blame anyone.

They didn’t know who leaked that Yang Chen did not have the identity token, but it was clear that this time the arrangement was indeed flawless. And in front of so many people, it was true that Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue’s face would be lost.

Yang Chen’s aim in the auction was to buy things. If he went in, and he could only watch and he can’t participate. The what was Yang Chen going to do? He thought it was an opportunity this time, but he didn’t expect to encounter such a trouble. It seemed that this time he could only returned empty-handed.

“Since the rules are so, then we will not go in.” Yang Chen

thought about it, a Earth Pole True, it was really not worthy of Yang Chen being submissive. Since they won't let him in, then he won't go in. This was Sun Qingxue's master's door, and Pure Yang Palace and Blue Cloud Sect have recently cooperated closely, and Yang Chen couldn't go overboard.

Sun Qingxue had become so angry that her apricot eyes became round and biting, and if the sect disciples was forbidden to fight, she may have already started. She has also heard that Yang Chen wanted to settle the quarrel and make peace with the parties involved, she turned and bowed her head and said to Yang Chen: "Brother Yang, let's go, Master can definitely take us in."

Immediately, a Jiedan master who was qualified to enter the auction site came over and smiled at Sun Qingxue and Yang Chen. "„Sister Sun, does not need to trouble Elder Hua, Senior Brother can lead you to go in? Your friend can also go to have a look together, but, cannot buy thing casually."

"I don't want to trouble Fellow Daoist!" Yang Chen didn't want to make trouble, and flatly refused.

"Wait a minute!" The guy who spoke did not expect Yang Chen to react like this. He thought that Yang Chen was not allowed to enter this auction, but now people turn around and leave, can't you watch it without much fun?

"Does Fellow Daoist have other matter?" Yang Chen looked at the performance of the other party with a sly look. He was very angry in his heart. He had already given the Blue Cloud Sect face, and the other party had to be so unruly. If they went too far, it could not be blamed on Yang Chen for being impolite.

"Fellow Daoist is a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace?" The disciple of the Blue Cloud Sect knew the origin of Yang Chen, but pretended to ask a question, and then did not wait for Yang Chen to answer, and immediately continued: "in the Pure Yang Palace there are no auctions of this size and scale. Fellow Daoist do you

not want go in and open your eyes?”

When these words were spoken, there was a sneer around them, and there were also a few people who deliberately shouted.

“This is a good opportunity, Fellow Daoist have to go in to have a look!”

“There aren’t many opportunities for such an eye-opener! Don’t miss it!”

... A series of voices was continuously heard, all of them were a group of people who seemed to be in the early stages of the Jiedan realm and the late stage of the Foundation Stage, they were surrounded by the sounds. As for the disciples who were on duty, they looked around with lively eyes and smiles, staring at this side, without saying a word.

“Open eyes? Are you belittling my Pure Yang Palace??” Yang Chen’s voice slightly brought a little anger, this was not a provocation to himself, but disrespect to the Pure Yang Palace. Yang Chen eyes was staring at other’s eyes, and suddenly asked “Is this the meaning of your own Fellow Daoists, or the meaning of the Blue Cloud Sect?”

Yang Chen’s questioning, let all the people shut their mouths. This question was not answered well, but it was a big problem. Although the Pure Yang Palace was a second-rate sect, it was now working with Blue Cloud Sect and Green Jade Immortal Island. Not to mention being disrespectful to their allies. Even without this partnership, Pure Yang Palace was not so easily bullied.

“In the Pure Yang Palace, indeed, there is no auction of this scale!” The Jiedan master accompanied with smile, but he refused to admit his mistake: “My humble self have good intentions, this Fellow Daoist should not misunderstand. If you don’t want to, Then please return back.”

“That’s the case, but it is necessary to see the precious items in

the auctions!” The other side advised Yang Chen to go back, but Yang Chen did not intend to leave.

“Oh? Do you want to go in with me?” The Jiedan master was surprised, but this ending was not exactly what he wanted? So he asked with a smile.

“I don’t need to bother Fellow Daoist!” Yang Chen sneered: “There is a way to do it.”

“Won’t you just depend on the identity of Elder Hua?” In the crowd next to him, a voice with doubt was immediately heard, and suddenly it caused a burst of laughter.

“Sect Master Lu, our agreement has still not been completed?” Yang Chen stood in the same place and shouted loudly. The huge voice was like Huang Zhonglu, and it spread far and wide.

Chapter 247: Ether The Rules Are Wrong Or The Lord Is A Villain

Yang Chen's voice, with the help of the Golden bell's power, reinforced his voice with the help of the barely able to use Golden bell. An invisible sound wave carried an unrivaled momentum and madly flew around.

Within the radius of a hundred li, the sound of the voice was sometimes low and sometimes deep but it clearly spread into the ears of everyone.

No one thought about it. Yang Chen didn't do it himself, nor did he let Sun Qingxue go to ask Elder Hua Wanting for help, but sent a question directly to Lu Zhenyu, the Blue Cloud Sect's Sect Master.

If he just shouted a few times in this place, then it wouldn't be too much. If there was a lot of trouble here, then it would be stopped by the high-ranking disciples who were at the auction site. It might be a good show.

But now, Yang Chen actually shouted out the name of Lu Zhenyu, and even said that their promise has not been fulfilled, and his words even had such a big momentum, even if there was a master here who tried to block, it was too late.

The auction site was in the interior of the Sect, which is located at a distance of tens of li from the sect master's residence. Yang Chen's voice could definitely reach the ears of the Sect Master.

"Who is so bold? Daring to be so unruly in the Blue Cloud Sect?" Yang Chen's voice has not yet settled, and immediately there was a dignified voice which shouted. Everyone's eyes were in front of the scene, and a young woman's figure appeared at the door of the auction house, carrying an overwhelming pressure and appearing in the eyes of everyone.

Boom, the invisible pressure, directly impacted on the bodies of everyone at the entrance in an instant, whether it was the disciples or the people who were watching the excitement outside, all of them were prostrating at the same place, and they had no possibility of retaliation.

Sun Qingxue standing near Yang Chen was also the same. The woman who appeared was too strong, she was definitely a master of the Dacheng stage. The imposing momentum had made it so that everyone could not withstand it.

The only exception was Yang Chen, who stood still in the same place and stood up straight. With a relaxed look on his face, it seemed that he was faced with something trivial.

“Greetings Martial Aunt!”

“Greetings Martial Aunt!”

“Greetings Martial Aunt!”

.....

A series of voices sounded, all of which were the sounds of greetings. The momentum made the people kneel down, which reduced it by more than half, but the frightening pressure still remained. Before the woman spoke, no one dared to get up.

The woman’s gaze was naturally rested on Yang Chen. At this time, Yang Chen calmly greeted the woman

“Greetings Senior!”

The person who came here was an acquaintance that Yang Chen had seen before, Blue Cloud Sect’s master of the Dacheng stage, Shi Yanhe. When killing in the backstage of the 100,000 mountains, this Elder Shi was also one of the people involved, and Yang Chen had a casual acquaintance with her. Today, he didn’t expect that Elder Shi was unexpectedly here to oversee the auction house.

For Yang Chen not to react to her own Dacheng stage pressure,

Shi Yanhe thought it to be very unexpected. But on this occasion, she couldn't ask more questions, just nodded to Yang Chen in return.

However, Shi Yanhe immediately discovered that the voice was very familiar. It was the guy who just shouted. She couldn't help but frown and asked: "Yang Chen, have you just shouted here?"

In fact, it was not only Shi Yanhe, those who gathered to watch the fun, and those who had wicked intentions on Sun Qingxue and Yang Chen, which do not know the identity of Yang Chen? A few days ago, in the square market the reputation of the wine and the bet, it had already spread in the Blue Cloud Sect. Those people didn't mention Yang Chen's name at all, that was, if they had to take any responsibility, they could evade by saying that they didn't know Yang Chen's identity.

Of course, the initial agreement between Yang Chen and the Blue Cloud Sect was clear to the top ranking members, but some ordinary disciples were not so clear about it. Deliberately holding Yang Chen without an identity token, some people were indeed unaware of it, but those who come up with this method know absolutely.

"Indeed!" Yang Chen did not deny it. It was even more impossible to deny it, It was very simple to admit.

"Today my sect auction congress, actually has neglected a honored guest!" Shi Yanhe fortunately opened her mouth, and what she said, directly shocked the many people who surrounded here. Even Shi Yanhe called Yang Chen as a honored guest, they just laughed at him, isn't it a big trouble? A few guys lying on the ground, their figures had begun to tremble slightly.

Shi Yanhe was very polite, Yang Chen did not attack, but smiled slightly, and then said "The younger generation just wants to ask face to face, when Sect Master Lu said what he said the matter has been complied with, but what he promised, it has not been

fulfilled.”

“If the Sovereign has said something and the matter has been complied with, the promised thing, of course, counts!” Shi Yanhe did not even have to wait for the lord to come forward, and gave a positive answer directly.

After answering Yang Chen, Elder Shi seemed to remember the sects disciples who were crouching on the ground, and screamed at the crowd: “You all get up!”

The sound was not loud, but it was heard very clearly and had penetrated into the ears of everyone. With the words of Shi Yanhe, the remaining power of on their body disappeared without a trace. Everyone was under a light pressure, and dared to get up, but after standing up, they were all standing in a well-behaved manner, they did not dare to make a single noise.

“Kept his promise?” Yang Chen suddenly smiled “Not necessarily?”

“What’s the matter?” When Yang Chen said this, Shi Yanhe’s face could not help but change at once. Yang Chen actually questioned the commitment of the Blue Cloud Sect’s Sect Master, which was simply a big joke. But she didn’t know what was going on, she immediately yelled and asked.

Although Shi Yanhe was to oversee the auction house, she was not always concerned about the movements around her. When people who dared to make trouble in Blue Cloud Sect have not appeared yet. Most of the time, the elders would still be immersed in their own cultivation, and only come out when something happens. At the moment, Elder Shi was shocked by Yang Chen’s loud shout. Elder Shi just appeared, and didn’t know what had just happened.

Now, Elder Shi Yanhe was so angry, which disciples dared to stand up and talk, all of them wanted to shrink their bodies to the most hidden corners and keep silent. And the few people who have

just provoked the incident, their figure was already like a sieve, it kept shaking nonstop.

Apart from being fear inspiring, Elder Shi in addition to being an elder of the Dacheng stage had another identity, that was, the Law Enforcement Elder of the sect, and the disciples who made mistakes would be punished by Elder Shi. Among the disciples, who hasn't heard the name of Elder Shi and could not help but shrink back? who would dare to face Elder Shi who have gotten angry.

"Little Xue, you!" Shi Yanhe didn't even have to look at it and knew that it was definitely the presence of these people who made a disaster. No one would open their mouth, then she would name them directly.

Sun Qingxue was also oppressed by the imposing pressure of Elder Shi, and she did not dare to move. She couldn't do anything about it, with the huge difference in level, she couldn't ignore the pressure like Yang Chen, and now she has not yet become the Snow Dance Fairy Maiden who was famous in the world. In front of the Law Enforcement Elder Shi, she also had the appearance of a frightened disciple.

Elder Shi named Sun Qingxue to speak, and Sun Qingxue did not dare to neglect it, she described the conflict in detail. About how even when the disciples began to cause trouble, Yang Chen was leaving and everyone repeatedly tried to provoke him and everything else that occurred.

Of course, after all, Sun Qingxue was a disciple of the Blue Cloud Sect. She only described the behavior of the Jiedan master who jumped out. As for the guys who helped around, there was not much to say, just a few words.

"Yang Chen, could Little Xue's words be true?" After Sun Qingxue finished explaining, Shi Yanhe immediately asked.

"It is true!" Yang Chen certainly would not dismiss the

explanation of Sun Qingxue, and nodded.

“Liu Shichang, could Little Xue’s words be true?” When Yang Chen nodded, Shi Yanhe immediately turned to the Jiedan master who had just begun to raise his head, and asked.

“It’s correct!” The Jiedan master was Liu Shichang, in front of Elder Shi, how would he dare to play tricks, and honestly nodded. When he said this sentence, he was already pale and his body was trembling nonstop, he appeared to be on the verge of collapse.

“According to the rules of the sect for the auction, you didn’t bring your identity token today. It was not a problem to stop you.” Shi Yanhe also became a bit puzzled, This was an issue that really brought headaches.

These rules of the Sect for the auction were kept by the disciples, and they were obviously not mistaken. Yang Chen did not have an identity token. Naturally, he could not enter. It was estimated that if Shi Yanhe was present at the time. It was also estimated that she would make the same decision.

However, Shi Yanhe knew that Yang Chen had the qualification to participate in the auction. To put it bluntly, Yang Chen just did not have the identity token. However, Yang Chen was not a person of the Blue Cloud Sect. If they wanted to scold him, it was not appropriate.

In the eyes of Shi Yanhe, Liu Shichang was indeed wrong. He should not have talked about the Pure Yang Palace like that. As for the rest, Elder Shi didn’t think that the sects disciples were wrong. At present, it was the time when Blue Cloud Sect and Pure Yang Palace had cooperated, and Yang Chen had the ability to refine the Ask Inner Heart Pill, but he cannot overwhelm the disciples too much.

“Liu Shichang’s words are not proper, he shouldn’t have said that. He would apologize to you.” Shi Yanhe immediately decided: “However, Yang Chen does not have an identity token, in

accordance with the rules. You can't participate in this auction. .”

“The rules of the sect are clear to this younger generation junior.” Yang Chen listened to Shi Yanhe's words and smiled a little. He said “Sect Master Lu promised that this younger generation junior had the qualification to participate in the auction, but never gave this younger generation junior any tokens. So, if it is against the rules of the sect, it might be...”

After Yang Chen's long speech, he never continued again, but everyone who was present understood that his next words would definitely be that Sect Master Lu's words were not counted and his promise was invalid.

Shi Yanhe was shocked. She never thought that the lord had promised Yang Chen but he unexpectedly did not give him an identity token. At that time, Shi Yanhe probably guessed a few points, and she understood that this was definitely a mistake.

This must be credited to Elder Wan Qian, he had earlier decided to kill Yang Chen, where will be thoughtful for Yang Chen. The collection was collected by Elder Wan Qian, and this identity token was also given to Yang Chen, but there was no intention to kill, so there was no such thing.

Later, Wan Qian disappeared, and Sect Master Lu certainly did not pay much attention to such a small matters, and it had evolved into the present scene. Either the rules were wrong, or the lord was a villain who's promise don't count, Elder Shi had to choose one and whichever would be embarrassing.

Yang Chen was not a member of the Blue Cloud Sect so he does not understand the rules inside Blue Cloud Sect,so It was excusable. And because of their rules, what they promised , no one has implemented it. In the eyes of outsiders, wasn't this taking advantage of others? They took the benefits and promised other people's conditions, and now take their own rules and do not honor their promise, what else would other people say?

“That may be a mistake , it is possible.” Yang Chen did not let Elder Shi stay awkward for a long time, and immediately said to complete his sentence, which made Shi Yanhe a little relieved.

“The person who is responsible for the management made a mistake, I will supervise it in detail, and for this matter i will give you an explanation!” With this step of Yang Chen, Shi Yanhe immediately followed up. But at this moment, Shi Yanhe still had to maintain the face and reputation of the lord. So It could only be the fault of the person responsible for the management, not the mistake of the lord.

“Senior, what Sect Master Lu promised, would it be complied with?” Yang Chen then asked again,he had to chase after the qualification of the auction: “This Junior can still enter the auction and join this auction right?”

“If I said something,or I promised something, of course, it counts.” There was a voice coming from the side, it was Blue Cloud Sect Lu Zhenyu ,Sect Master Lu, it was not known when he had appeared here.

“Greetings Sovereign!” All the ordinary disciples kneeled down and bowed to greet,only Shi Yanhe and Yang Chen were standing up to greet. Shi Yanhe was the apprentice sister of the sect master, she only needed to salute, there was no need to kneel down and worship him. Yang Chen was a guest. Although his age was small, there was no need to worship him.

“All the disciples here, except Sun Qingxue and Liu Shichang, should go to the law enforcement hall to receive a hundred whips,and face the wall for half a year.” Sect Master Lu just arrived and directly announced the punishment of everyone present “Liu Shichang You receive five hundred whips, and would not receive any monthly contributions for five years, face the wall for ten years!”

All the disciples, together with the disciples who have just been

guarding the auction, were counted. It seemed that Sect Master Lu had already understood the ins and outs of the matter, and even the small means of temporarily adjusting the auction level was known to him. Those who participated in the matter, did not dare to say anything, all of them accepted the punishment of the Sect Master.

“Yang Chen, I promised you that you can participate in my sect auction, you can naturally participate.” Sect Master Lu immediately turned to Yang Chen “From now on, Pure Yang Palace Yang Chen can come to my sect to participate in the auction, there is no need for you to bring any Identity token with you!”

The latter sentence, also travelled a hundred li, and just like Yang Chen’s first question, it had the same effect, so that everyone has heard the decision of the sovereign.

This voice made countless people horrified. For Yang Chen alone, the lord actually revised the rules of the auction, and set a new rule for him alone. Yang Chen’s position in the eyes of everyone has suddenly reached countless steps higher.

As for those who have just participated in teasing and ridiculing of Yang Chen, they looked even more ashen. If they knew this before, they wouldn’t do such a stupid thing.

Chapter 248: The Pure Yang Palace Is Deeply Concealed

This time, Sect Master Lu's words were very alarming, and many people became shocked. Yang Chen under the public eye, accompanied by Sun Qingxue was swaying in the direction of the auction accompanied by the host, and walked into the auction house.

The matter was finally finished with the punishment of the disciples, Yang Chen entered the auction site and ended all of it. But the follow-up things did not end there.

There were several elders who appeared with the Sovereign, including Sun Qingxue's Master Hua Wanting. Although she was a master of the Dacheng stage, but when the lord came forward, she couldn't interject.

This matter was originally the mistake of the Blue Cloud Sect . At that time, no one thought that when everyone was busy taking care of Hua Wanting, and was busy celebrating the promotion of Hua Wanting to the Dacheng stage. No one gave Yang Chen the identity token. Wan Qian, who should handle this matter, has been missing for many years. Her whereabouts were unknown, They can't find anyone to take this responsibility.

Sect Master Lu punished a large number of people with a stern punishment. At the same time, he gave Yang Chen a special rule, quickly quelling the dissatisfaction of all parties and handling it quite well. Of course, the main thing was to calm down Yang Chen's dissatisfaction.

However, the root cause of the incident was a group of male disciples headed by Liu Shichang, who admired Sun Qingxue and wanted to be the Doa Companion of Sun Qingxue ,but Sun Qingxue wouldn't agree which provoked the anger of the people. Among them, there was the shadow of Liu Shichang's master Shangguan

Xian.

Shangguan Xian was also a master of the Yuanying stage, and she was sworn friends with Wan Qian. She was also one of the people who knew that the sect master did not give Yang Chen the identity token.

This time, she also revealed the news by chance, letting Liu Shichang think that he seized the weakness of Yang Chen, just to humiliate Yang Chen in front of Sun Qingxue. However, he did not expect that Yang Chen would have directly alerted Sect Master Lu.

Liu Shichang was punished, and no one said anything. It was indeed that he was wrong. However, Sect Master Lu did not seem to want to let Shangguan Xian go free.

“Sister Shangguan!” When he watched Yang Chen enter the auction site, and the disciples went to the law enforcement hall collectively, Sect Master Lu cried out.

“Sect Master!” Shangguan also knew that Liu Shichang had faced a misfortune, and it was related to herself. She did not dare to say anything more. She called the sect master respectfully and walked out.

“Go and see what Yang Chen wants to buy.” Sect Master Lu directly told her “No matter what he buys, what price is called, the spirit stones will come from you, and it is the gift of the sect to Yang Chen.” ”

Sect Master Lu using such punishment was also justified. Since Shangguan Xian have known that they have made mistakes in the past, she didn’t inform the sect to correct it, but leaked it to her disciples to use this loophole to embarrass the distinguished guest. Shouldn’t she also be punished?

Shangguan also knew that she has gone too far this time. She did not dare to shift the responsibility onto others even by a little. She directly agreed to it and quickly entered the auction. The lord only

wanted her to spend some spirit stones, and has not let her loose face in front of the many disciples. It was already very good to maintain her face. How could she have other thoughts?

“Sovereign, this way of handling the issue, isn’t it being too courteous to Yang Chen?” Waiting until the figure of Shangguan Xian could not be seen, someone whispered: “He is only a junior in the Foundation Stage.”

“He is now in the late stage of the Foundation Stage, and he can already refine the Ask Inner Heart Pill, Heaven Seizing Pill, Black Tiger Yuan Replenishing Pill.” Sect Master Lu looked at the gate of the auction house, and inscrutable said “Who knows What can he refine when he reach the Jiedan or above stages ?”

When these words were spoken, everyone became silent. Others were not clear about it, but the strength of the Ask Inner Heart Pill was understandable to all. Such a genius Alchemy Master would be the object all parties would fight for. The higher the courtesy of Blue Cloud Sect, the easier it was to establish a good relationship with Yang Chen.

“In addition, Blue Cloud Sect and Pure Yang Palace have just started cooperation this time. What Liu Shichang said was inappropriate.” Sect Master Lu then said “The courtesy of Yang Chen is also an explanation for the Pure Yang Palace. After all, the cooperation will last for a long time. And couldn’t be regarded as important just for the moment.”

From the perspective of the overall situation, there was no more reason for rebuttal. Everyone accepted these two points and nodded silently.

“Apprentice sister Hua how about the matter between Little Xue and Yang Chen?” After Sect Master Lu said this, she turned to Hua Wanting to ask.

“It looks very good.” When she heard this, Hua Wanting’s face suddenly showed a smile: “This time, Yang Chen came over and

got a pair of Eternal Spring Wood and immortal good wood for Little Xue on the first day. Using it for Solidifying Core would increase it to ninety percent, And on that day he gave me another scare.”

“It can make junior sister so shock, we are waiting to hear what was so shocking in the end.” Nearby Shi Yanhe heard what Hua Wanting said and also became curious, asked with a smile.

“Senior Sister, Sect Master, and sisters, who among you have seen a large cup of Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid?” Hua Wanting looked around at everyone, first she made a restriction around them, then asked very plainly.

“How big is the cup?” Shi Yanhe asked a little carelessly.

“About three or two glasses, big a cup.” Hua Wanting also replied casually.

“Three or two cups.” Shi Yanhe may not be too concerned about what it was in the beginning. After hearing the three or two cups, she instinctively repeated, and then suddenly seemed to be a cat whose tail had been stepped on, her whole body became fired up “What? Three or two cups? Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid?”

The people next to her have long become completely sluggish, and the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid, when was two cups used to describe it? Wasn't it described with drops? Three or two cups, how many drops would that be?

“You said that he has three or two cups of Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid?” Shi Yanhe's eyes suddenly lit up: “He will participate in the sects auction, does he want to want to auction the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid?”

Even the master of the Dacheng stage was shocked by the name of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid. Nothing could be done about it, as this was a rare and precious material, no matter when it was,

It was a good thing that people can not help but be attracted to.

“Auction it? No!” Hua Wanting shook her head directly, and slowly said with a kind of anxious hate that she couldn’t grasp her confession ” can you guess what he did with the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid?”

“Sister, you are sincerely hanging our appetite, how could we know how he used those Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid.” Shi Yanhe’s words expressed everyone’s thought, including Sect Master Lu who at the moment was having such a thought “He is so good in alchemy, could it be because of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid?”

“No! Not that!” Hua Wanting gently shook her head and said “These Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid, he gave it to Little Xue to drink.”

“What?” All the masters of the Dacheng stage, the Blue Cloud Sect’s Sect Master and Elders, almost said the words in unison. Everyone’s eyes are full of disbelief, completely unbelievable: “How is it possible?”

“I watched Little Xue drink it.” Hua Wanting also smiled bitterly: “How could it not be possible!”

To the top ranking members of the Blue Cloud Sect, the news of Elder Hua, sounded out like thunder. What kind of high class family, would think of the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid as a drink? If these Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid fell in the hands of the Blue Cloud Sect, they could used for unlimited things “Ah!”

“Sister, you watched those two young people to ruin such a rare treasure?” Sect Master Lu also had a bitter smile: “You couldn’t take it on the spot?”

“Hmm!” Hua Wanting sighed and said the things at the time, and then sighed: “He is good for Little Xue. Is it that as an elder and her master, if I still have to seize things from him a junior won’t it be

inadequate?”

“Yes, but after all, it is the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid!” The elder opened her mouth, with sadness on her face, it seemed that she had lost something that she loved dearly.

“Not right!” Sect Master Lu said suddenly “Where was Yang Chen before coming to the Blue Cloud Sect?”

“I heard that he was going out to sea!” With Elder Hua Wanting’s relationship with Sun Qingxue, she would naturally pay attention to Yang Chen, and probably knew that he had been out to the sea before.

“Going out to sea? This is right!” Sect Master Lu nodded slightly and said: “He must have discovered a group of one millennium Mysterious Coral, otherwise how could there be so many Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid.”

Everyone had a look of a sudden realization, this explanation was reasonable. If he found a group of one millennium Mysterious Coral, it would explain why Yang Chen has so many Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid, and would explain why Yang Chen would rather let Sun Qingxue drink it than to use it for alchemy.

As long as this group of one millennium Mysterious Coral was still there, Yang Chen could collect a lot of Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid every other year, of course, it was best to strengthen the body at first.

“Really, he is very good to Little Xue!” Sect Master Lu immediately reached another conclusion, killing Yang Chen was willing to misunderstand the conclusion.

“A group of one millennium Mysterious Coral, sovereign, we want to..”. Shi Yanhe was not a good person, as the master of the Law Enforcement Hall, the people in the Sect knew her character, it was needless to say that she had many foreign means, and immediately asked.

When these words were spoken, Hua Wanting's face changed. The others became spirited and waiting for the decision of the lord.

“No!” Sect Master Lu's head shook and said “Since he can be so good to Little Xue, this matters we must urge Pure Yang Palace Master Zhang Jiao. At that time, without hurting, we can still divided the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid in the same old way.”

“Is he a fool or a madman?” Shi Yanhe still didn't understand Yang Chen's approach “If there is such a good thing, is it not good to hide it, he didn't give it to his sect, but to an outsider?”

“How do you know that Pure Yang Palace doesn't know?” Sect Master Lu then analyzed and said “Maybe it was told to Yang Chen that Pure Yang Palace has a long-term cooperation with us. There are Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid, who knows pure How many magic weapons and high-level medicinal pills will there be in the Pure Yang Palace? How many hidden and powerful disciples will there be? In the future, all the disciples will be bound, and the relationship with the Pure Yang Palace must be maintained, remember!”

The people frequently nodded, Yang Chen was even more powerful, and it was impossible for one person to take all the good fortune in the world. There was no such thing as a singular shot. The 100,000 mountains has already stated that the Pure Yang Palace has begun to slowly reveal its shackles and was embarking on the road to raising.

“If this is the case.” Shi Yanhe suddenly sighed: “the Pure Yang Palace really has a concealed it's hand!” Shi Yanhe could not help but sigh, even the Blue Cloud Sect, may not have held so many Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid,that they could drink some.

“There is also anyway, I will wait and see if Yang Chen wants to buy anything.” Having decided how to treat Yang Chen and the

Pure Yang Palace, Sect Master Lu looked at everyone, and suddenly proposed.

Everyone had no objection, the group then entered the auction floor and occupied the largest box. They discussed it for a long time outside, that they have already started auctioning.

“What did Yang Chen buy?” asked Shi Yanhe when she entered.

The Sect Master and all the Elders arrived, naturally they wanted to know what they missed. Soon everyone learned from the auction site that Yang Chen spent 50 pounds of Middle grade spirit stone before buying a vein of Spirit Spring.

“What did he buy the Spirit Spring for? Alchemy?” The first reaction of the elders was for alchemy, Yang Chen’s alchemy level was already very deep in people’s hearts. So the first thing the ones around him would guess is alchemy.

“That Spirit Spring is suitable for alchemy.” Carefully looking at the introduction, everyone also recognized Elder Shi’s guess. If they knew that Yang Chen bought the Spirit Spring for winemaking, it was not known what they would do.

This auction would sell a lot of things, but Yang Chen seemed to have no interest in the other things in the auction except for the Spirit Spring. There were more than a dozen things in succession, no matter whether it was a magic weapon or other materials, Yang Chen did not make a move.

“Let me hear what this little guy wants.” The auction house in sect, for these big shots, it was almost undefended, if they wanted to know anything, there was nothing to stop them. The words of Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue would quickly spread into the ears of everyone.

“If i buy this Earth Pole True Fire, my Dan fire can be more than one, and I will have more choices in alchemy.” No surprise, Yang Chen stopped for a while and immediately began to express his

intentions.

“fire? interesting! All the things he bought were related to alchemy. It seems that the little guy is bent on alchemy wholeheartedly. “Elder Shi was very supportive of this choice of Yang Chen. They also appreciated Yang Chen’s speech.

No one has found that when they started to discuss outside, and when they were talking now. There was such a thin Spiritual Awareness thread near them that no one would ever pay attention to. He heard what they said, all their words, Even under the restrictions of Elder Shi, it was passed into Yang Chen’s ears without any hindrance.

It seemed that one of the purposes of exposing the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid has been reached, which made Yang Chen very satisfied. In addition to giving it to Sun Qingxue to clean her body, he wanted the Blue Cloud Sect to be unclear about the Pure Yang Palace. At the moment, the effect looked good. Pure Yang Palace was not as strong as Blue Cloud Sect and Green Jade Immortal Island, and could only use this way to add some Mysteries.

“Notify all the disciples at the auction site, including those of the guest, they are not to argue, let them give up the Earth Pole True Fire to Yang Chen!” Sect Master Lu boldness was astonishing, decided to win over and be on good terms with Yang Chen, and almost spared no effort to support him. And considered it as payment for when he gave Little Xue the Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid

The order of the sovereign was immediately passed down. Apart from Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue, everyone was notified soon. No one would violate the intentions of the Sovereign, and even the guests were no exception.

There was a mysterious smile on Yang Chen’s face.

Chapter 249: Find The Message Channel

Who would have thought that Yang Chen, a younger generation junior, could actually listen to the group of masters of the Dacheng stage, relying on his Spiritual Awareness thread to pass through their restriction and clearly understand the things they discussed?

Of course, it was a bit exaggerated to say it passed through the restrictions. After all, Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness thread was first laid out. The restrictions of the several masters was only laid on this, and does not prevent Yang Chen from plainly understanding their movements.

Everything was based on one point, the role of the Three Purities Secret Art and powerful Spiritual Awareness thread. The Grand Supreme Elderly Lord cultivation method was not really what some ordinary Spiritual Awareness cultivation would be comparable to.

Someone was to pay for himself, but Yang Chen couldn't go too far, otherwise there are things that could make Liu Shichang's master Shangguan Xian lose a lot of spirit stones.

In order to make everyone to focus on his alchemy image, when leaving the auction, Yang Chen's body has only three more things. One was the Spirit Spring, the other was the Earth Pole True Fire Fire Seed, and the other was the material of the alchemy that was finally auctioned, which was not expensive.

Even so, he got the three things after he spent nearly ten pounds of the Top Grade spirit stone. There was nothing he could do about, even if no one competed with Yang Chen for the Earth Pole True Fire Fire Seed, but the base price was still there, just that one, was eight jin of the Top Grade Spirit stone, when Yang Chen opened his mouth to shout the price, he directly increased the base price by one jin. It has been a very cheap increase.

This ten jin of Top Grade Spirit stone was enough to hollow out

Shangguan Xian's pocket. Don't look at her as the Yuanying stage master of Blue Cloud Sect's. After centuries of accumulation, she had just this net worth.

When Yang Chen learned that someone had already paid the bill, the fake smile on his face made people want to give him a punch. They have never seen such a guy who acted indifferent while actually getting a profitable deal. Fortunately, this time, everyone could bear it.

The Spiritual Spring was received directly into the gourd. The gourd was really powerful. The spiritual springs with such roots were directly loaded into it. Only a small pond was displayed in it, but it was able to flow out of the spring water.

At the time of the auction, the auction site gave each customer a cup of spring water for them to check to see if they were suitable for their needs. Both Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling tasted it and felt it was good. This was taken.

He didn't hurry to absorb the Earth Pole True Fire Seed, and it was not even absorbed into the Profound Spirit Furnace. Anyway, it was also very safe in the Achievement Ring, Yang Chen does not want to expose his own Profound Spirit Furnace in the Blue Cloud Sect.

The purpose for coming to the Blue Cloud Sect has basically been fully realized. Now, he would give an account to the Palace Master Zhang Jiao, and he would go around with Sun Qingxue and gain experience.

However, before leaving, Yang Chen still met an interesting guy.

The Wine Immortal took the initiative to find him, and there was no such thing as a meeting. He put directly out a wine and placed in front of Yang Chen: "Little brother, I found something to match the taste. You taste these wines and see which one is most suitable for reconciliation, Your distiller's yeast."

It has been almost ten days since then, and the wine that has been turned into a small pot has already entered the belly of the wine Immortal. After tasting that kind of wine, the wine immortal couldn't still drink the so-called wines of the past, and only remembered the taste of the small pot of wine.

He heard that Yang Chen said that it was more appropriate to use alcohol to melt it than to use water. The wine immortal immediately searched around. Also, he was able to find a place. In just ten days, he even found a dozen kinds of wines that he felt was appropriate.

Sure enough, he was not a wine person, but it was very close to Yang Chen's appetite. Yang Chen did not refuse, picked up the wine, pour it one by one, and started tasting it one by one.

The wine immortal looked at Yang Chen and looked forward to it. The point in his heart was intended to be seen by Sun Qingxue, which means that he would find a suitable wine to melt the distiller's yeast, and then he could taste another wine.

Finally, Yang Chen tasted it, and then he chose two out of it. This action made the wine immortal very surprised and happy. There are two kinds of wines, which means that he could have two flavors of wine to taste.

"These two are barely okay, the others can't do it." Yang Chen didn't have much bad feelings about this gambling good Senior. It was just sharing two drops of distiller's yeasts. For a distiller's yeasts as huge as a lake, it simply could only be regarded as a drop in the ocean.

Moreover, Yang Chen had another consideration for [Jiu Xian](#). Senior Wine Immortal was a loose immortal, and from the news that Yang Chen learned these days, his reputation in various sects was not bad. Five Elements Sect and Blue Cloud Sect even gave him the qualification of an official guest. With his identity he was very familiar with some of the latest news in the cultivation world, and

sometimes even better than those who specialize in inquiring about the news.

As long as Yang Chen tempted him with fine wine, he would get some news from the wine immortal. And the wine immortal was a Yuanying stage master, letting him use the news or some other things to change for the wine, the wine immortal absolutely like it.

This time, Jiu Xian learned cleverly, and every kind of wine was made with jars instead of small hip flasks. After Yang Chen selected, he directly took out two large jars. Looking at the quantity of the jar, each jar could hold at least forty jin.

The wine immortal took out the jar, and he was a little embarrassed to look at Yang Chen. Yang Chen did not divulge on this small point. In every jar, he dropped a small drop of distiller's yeast as before. Of course, this time was a little bigger than the last time, but it just meets the needs of a jar of wine.

Soon, the fragrance of the wine spread. The wine immortal couldn't help but inhale the smell of the wine flavor in the air, but Yang Chen did not move, and he did not have the intention to open his mouth.

Yang Chen took two big jade cups, all of which were as big as three or two cups, and gave one to Sun Qingxue. The little girl had a good alcohol capacity. At the time, she was not drunk with the alcohol qi, and she could drink some.

"Senior feel free!" Yang Chen held a jar of wine and poured some for himself and Sun Qingxue, respectively, and made a gesture to the wine immortal. Of course, the wine immortal was his own person, immediately took out a cup, and then filled it, and gently touched it with Yang Chen.

Of course, Sun Qingxue would not stroke Yang Chen's face, but also picked up the glass and touched it with Yang Chen. The three of them were in the small courtyard of Sun Qingxue, slowly savoring the wine.

“Sure enough, it’s delicious! It’s better than the last one.” After drinking a sip of the wine, the wine immortal’s face had satisfied look and sighed again.

“It’s still a little bit worse.” Yang Chen smiled and said: “When this younger generation junior brews some auxiliary wines, then I will ask the senior to taste them.”

“Is there better?” The eyes of the senior the wine immortal lit up on the spot. A good wine person, can’t listen to fine wine, can’t see wine, and now he started scratching his ears. If it was not that Yang Chen still needed to brew, it was estimated that Jiu Xian would directly ask for it.

“Of course, these wines have lost some key things and steps in the brewing process...” Yang Chen nodded and explained “Where the wine is the ultimate, but the spirits are not enough. With my distiller’s yeast It is still a line.”

Yang Chen was not afraid to talk much, the more the wine immortal listens, the more greedy he would become. Especially after he tasted these two great wines, the result would be even worse.

“What’s missing?” The wine immortal, immediately asked, “do I need to find the spiritual wine brewed by the martial art sects?”

“The secret will not be passed on, Senior, the secret will not be passed on!” Yang Chen stretched out a finger and shook it in front of his eyes. He smiled and said: “This is the secret of this younger generation junior, and it will never be easily leaked.”

The wine immortal was even more anxious, but it was not too good to force it. He could only accompanied it by a smile and asked Yang Chen: “This little brother, when you brew, can you let this brother open his eyes?”

A Yuanying stage Senior, was like a child with a grin, squatted in front of her, showing the appearance of a smile and pleading, so

that Sun Qingxue could no longer hold back, and laughed out.

“Not at all.” Yang Chen also laughed out, but he was much deeper than Sun Qingxue, and he was not on the spot: “However, what does the seniors plan to use to trade?”

When Sun Qingxue smiled, the wine immortal was a little embarrassed, but he heard Yang Chen’s tone, and immediately became refreshed. Whether or not he was in line with his Yuanying stage Senior’s identity, he went forward and asked anxiously: “You want do you want?”

“What does the senior have?” Yang Chen would not take the initiative to say what he wanted, so his purpose would not be too strong, maybe it would be self-defeating. Let the wine immortal say it out, that’s appropriate.

The wine immortal was a bit guilty on the spot. He had a good life, most of his things were related to the wine, and there were really not many other things. Even his cultivation dase was due to drinking, just like Shangguan Feng, liked to do business, obsessed with it, and cultivated as nature slowly. For this reason, besides the things related to wine, there were not many things on the wine immortal.

The reason why there was the Eternal Spring Wood, was because of the other characteristics of the Eternal Spring Wood. The wine glass made by Eternal Spring Wood could maintain the original taste of the wine to the utmost extent and would not volatilize. But it was not used by him, but he traded it with Sun Qingxue.

Suddenly, Jiu Xian remembered one thing, and suddenly slapped his thigh fiercely, shouting loudly: “You would certainly like this!” He said, taking two steps, smiled and asked: “If I have some news about a high-level Fire Seed, i don’t know if i can exchange it for your wine?”

“You can! Of course!” Yang Chen’s eyes also lit up on the spot. When he questioned Dan Fang from the beginning, he let go of the

words, allowing everyone to use a Fire Seed to exchange for a medicinal pill, and the Pure Yang Palace has been vigorously Collecting Fire Seed, of course, it was fine to exchange it with the wine immortal.

“I know where there is a nether world fire and Earthly Fiend fire..” When he heard that Yang Chen agreed to exchange, the wine immortal immediately reported the names of the two flames: “Fifth Grade Fire Seed, how many wines can you exchange it for?”

“It’s just news, not a fire Seed .” Yang Chen smiled and corrected it. He also brought the wine immortal to the news side more and more: “The news of the Fifth Grade Fire Seed, four hundred jin, what do you think?”

“Deal” Jiu Xian was overjoyed, four hundred pounds of Yang Chen’s fine wine, save a little drink, drinking a pound a day, could support him for more than a year. The two kinds of fire seeds news was eight hundred pounds, which would last more than two years. It was a long time, enough to find some other news.

“Right, can other news be exchanged?” After discovering that the news could be exchanged for wine, the wine immortal immediately realized that he had other sources of information: “Alchemy materials, various kinds of Pill furnaces, would these be ok?”

“Yes!” Yang Chen nodded again, which made the wine immortal happy to the extreme. He doesn’t have many other things, but on the news he had a lot of information, no matter how much was wanted. Doesn’t this mean that he could always find Yang Chen for wine in the future?

“However, Senior, this younger generation junior have not yet brewed the auxiliary wine.” Yang Chen hurriedly interrupted the pleasure of the wine immortal, and the ugly words said in the front: ” if you want the alcoholic wine to be ready, you need to wait at least one year later.”

“No problem, it is OK to use these two for the time being.” The

wine fairy certainly knows that brewing takes time, but he was almost inseparable from Yang Chen's wine now. If these days were broken, it would be a big trouble. can want the short remaining life "In addition, Senior, we can have words first." Yang Chen once again agreed with the wine immortal "If you use some of the news of the past to perfuse, don't blame this younger generation junior for not appreciating your kindness."

"That is natural!" The wine immortal did not dare to boast, and patted on his chest to ensure: "Which one you feel is inappropriate, you can not count."

"Good!" Yang Chen finally no longer had other requirements, but seemed to think of something in general, and curiously asked "How will the senior send his own news every time? What if this younger generation junior does not decide?"

"It's easy!" Jiu Xian was involved in exchanging news among cultivators. Of course, he has his own way: "Every big market has a Wine Immortal House, which is my brother's industry. There is nothing else in it. If you want the news, go inside and ask the shopkeeper, bring the things, and leave it to the shopkeeper."

When he said this, the wine immortal directly handed over a small jade card "Hold this, just look for the shopkeeper, he will tell you what to do."

After receiving the jade card, Yang Chen could not help but felt awe. The wine immortal looked like a game dust, but this arrangement was definitely a big deal. No wonder he could easily navigated between several major gates. No one was a fuel-efficient lamp that can live in this world.

"Well, this younger generation will go out and practice in the near future. If the senior need it, you can exchange some to satisfy your cravings." Yang Chen also did not forget to remind the wine immortal "When this younger generation returns to the sect, after brewing, I will leave some of it to the sect, even if this younger

generation junior is not in the sect, the senior can also exchange for it.”

This was to let the wine immortal and the Palace Master Zhang Jiao to trade, what news was needed, would be decided by the Palace Master Zhang Jiao. A very easy trick, the news of the wine immortal would be exchanged with the Pure Yang Palace.

“Good!” Jiu Xian felt that this arrangement was good, otherwise if Yang Chen had a retreat for decades he could die. After he applauded, he suddenly remembered a question: “What is the name of this wine, does it have a name?”

“Jade Dragon Wine!” Yang Chen is too lazy to name something too elegant, and directly gave this.

Meanings: Jiu Xian ⇒ Wine Immortal

Chapter 250: Cultivating Sun Qingxue

The name doesn't matter, the key was to have a name. Yang Chen just thought that what the old Dragon King left behind should have a dragon character, but he didn't want to be so obvious, so he took one very easily.

“Good, Jade Dragon Wine the jade dragon.” The wine immortal was a guy who doesn't care about the name. It doesn't matter how poetic the wine name was. Just drink it in your mouth and taste delicious. Nothing else.

“I will tell you where the nether world fire is, in exchange for four hundred pounds of the jade dragon wine!” The wine immortal was really like the gambling character that Yang Chen values. The transaction was not cheap, even the eighty jin could be deducted by three people.

Yang Chen certainly does not care about this wine, directly gave him five drops of the distiller's yeasts, letting him find the right auxiliary wine himself. The wine immortal almost laughed out happily. This time, eighty pounds of wine, three people can not drink it all, almost all of them were cheap.

Among the Cosmos bag of Jiu Xian, there were eighty pounds of jade dragon wine and five drops of distiller's yeasts, and in Yang Chen's mind there was news about the nether world fire.

If he could get the fire seed of this nether world fire, the Fifth Grade flames of Yang Chen would reach five. There were two kinds of Fifth Grade flame that have not yet been absorbed. These two kinds of Fifth Grade flame, together with more than one hundred and twenty-three kinds of Third Grade Fire Seed, were enough to make Yang Chen's fire attribute Cultivation Base go straight into the peak of the foundation stage, and even had the success of the Solidifying Core.

Both sides were happy, and each felt that they have achieved

their goals. Yang Chen was also in a good mood. Sun Qingxue was also very happy. Taking this opportunity, Yang Chen sent an invitation to go out with Sun Qingxue to gain experience together.

The sect has this meaning. Sun Qingxue would not disobey Yang Chen, there was almost no hesitation. Sun Qingxue agreed to Yang Chen's invitation.

However, when they bid farewell to Master Hua Wanting, the two were kept by Elder Hua.

"Where do you want to go to gain experience?" This was her only disciple, so Elder Hua have always pampered her, although it was not her first time to go out, but Elder Hua was still very worried, and wanted to know clearly.

With the care of the elder, of course, it must be made clear. However, Yang Chen just casually said two ordinary places, and did not inform the destination they intended to go.

In fact, so far, Sun Qingxue did not know where they would go, she only knew that Yang Chen invited her, and then she agreed. As for where they would go, Sun Qingxue does not care, as long as she could be with Yang Chen.

Yang Chen was very astounded by the simplicity of Sun Qingxue, but also remembered the sultry Snow Dance Fairy Maiden of his previous life, it was simply not the same person.

In front of Yang Chen, Elder Hua gave Sun Qingxue a large variety of magic weapons of various types, and all kinds of medicinal pills which almost took into account the dangers she might encounter. It was as if Elder Hua was packing and travel bag for her child who was going on a long journey, although this was essentially the case.

Then, together with Yang Chen was also tens of thousands of people, they must take care of Little Xue, and could not let her be in danger, etc., when Yang Chen heard this he became stunned. Was

this a master of the Dacheng stage, it was clearly a mortal parent.

With Sun Qingxue, he finally left the Blue Cloud Sect in the urging of Elder Hua with great difficulty. Their flying swords flew for a long time, and they changed to Yang Chen's shuttle. Until they completely left the Blue Cloud Sect site, Yang Chen made a sigh of relief.

"Master is just worried about me." Sun Qingxue seemed to understand what Yang Chen was hiding, and only said with a smile. Being so favored by her Master, Sun Qingxue felt very happy.

"But if you have been growing up under the care of your Master, your mentality will be weak." Yang Chen had a different opinion. In this world of the Law of the jungle, it was not easy to correct Gongsun Ling's ideas. As a result, the Snow Dance Fairy Maiden who had no problem in the past life turned out to be a flower in a greenhouse.

His previous life Sun Qingxue was weak because of her Master, and everything could only be won by himself. Not only have he had to resort to magical power to abolish himself, he have to rehabilitate it. Everything he need to do was to get it through the madness of Sun Qingxue.

But in this life Sun Qingxue became the disciple of Elder Hua Wanting, so this life was different. No matter what was there, there was nothing to be bullied, no one would be scornful. This kind of life was indeed very easy to cultivate people who were small and tender seedlings.

"Little Xue, have you killed people before?" Yang Chen suddenly asked.

Sun Qingxue shook her head. She was a disciple of the Blue Cloud Sect. No one dared to provoke her. The last time she came out was to go directly to Pure Yang Palace, and then wait for Yang Chen, there was no chance to argue with others.

“Have you killed a Beast before?” Yang Chen asked again.

Still shaking her head, Yang Chen could not help but sigh in secret. He thought that the master of the Dacheng stage was a good master, but he did not expect that she would be a doting parent compared with Gao Yue unexpectedly. Now Sun Qingxue was the former Gongsun Ling of his previous life. The school has relied on the aptitude to improve and cultivate. The final result could only be a failure in Crossing the Tribulation.

Yang Chen had to bear the temper and say his own worry and possible consequences to Sun Qingxue, with unprecedented earnestness.

“I know all of this.” What surprised Yang Chen was that Sun Qingxue was very clear about these. This made Yang Chen feel a little confused, if she knew why would she still maintains her present appearance?

“I just don’t want Master to worry.” Sun Qingxue laughed. “In the past few years, Master has taught me a lot and gave me a lot of love. I just don’t want to worry her these days.”

Hua Wanting was entangled in the Blood Phantom Vine for hundreds of years, so it was not easy to escape, and also got a qualified disciple. Of course, when she became her heart and liver, so she held onto her dearly afraid of falling.

However, Sun Qingxue, who was a big-time official bureaucrats as a child, knew that this was because of the experience of Hua Wanting, and also because she has just been promoted to the Dacheng stage and her mood was unstable. As long as this time has passed, Hua Ting would realize the problem and Sun Qingxue would return to the normal track.

Sun Qingxue’s analysis made Yang Chen stunned and he had to admit that although he had already thought very highly of Sun Qingxue, this time he still thought Sun Qingxue was simple. He did not say anything else, just because she can analyze these from the

character and cultivation stage of Hua Wanting, made Yang Chen hold her in high esteem.

It seemed that his initial concern was uncalled for. While growing a sigh of relief, he could not help but sigh, the Snow Dance Fairy Maiden was the Snow Dance Fairy Maiden, his thoughts were worthless.

“Yang Da Ge, you can tell me now, where are we going to practice this time?” Looking at Yang Chen who began to worry about her, Sun Qingxue was very happy, and now she began to ask his destination.

“Let’s go here!” Since Sun Qingxue has a lot of thoughts in her heart, she only used her filial piety to cooperate with Hua Wanting for decades. Yang Chen also let go of his heart and took out the wooden sign he got from the wine immortal. The wooden sign was placed on the table.

“Where?” Sun Qingxue looked at Yang Chen in an incredible way. She really didn’t understand what he meant.

“This wooden sign, to be precise, is the key to a Secret plane.” Yang Chen smiled. He knew Sun Xiaoxue would be surprised and didn’t feel strange: “A secret plane that has not been discovered in a long time.”

What a secret plane was, Sun Qingxue was of course clear about it. There was a secret pavilion in the Pure Yang Palace, and the Blue Cloud Sect also has similar places. Unless you have made great contributions to the sect, it was impossible to enter. The secret plane was the sects inheritance left behind, it would belong to whoever discovered it.

“Only the two of us?” Sun Qingxue was still sober from the inconceivable thing, still questioning.

“Of course!” Yang Chen replied with a smile “If there are more people, maybe we would not get the things inside.”

In a secret plane, if there would be many things, no one would know. If he brought someone else, they must share their profits. If he encountered a person with a bad character, maybe there will be some things that are not evenly divided. If he was a master, it was really hard to say who the last thing would belong to.

Yang Chen was trusting of Sun Qingxue, and Sun Qingxue was also extremely trusting of Yang Chen. There would never be such problems between the two. But it would be very hard to say that if they were to add outsiders. So, they were just two.

“Us?” Sun Qingxue didn’t seem to be sure. In Sun Qingxue’s mind, this was what Yang Chen wanted to give to her. The secret key was what Yang Chen won as a gamble from the wine immortal. He knew that this was the key to a secret plane. It was because Yang Chen had a broad knowledge. Sun Qingxue did nothing at all, so he takes up one by one, and Sun Xiaoxue would gain from it.

“Of course!” Yang Chen smiled and looked at Sun Qingxue’s hesitation. He seemed to know what she was thinking. He raised his hand and touched the head of Sun Qingxue “Don’t think about it, think about this, if the secret plane have a guardian beast, what would you do?”

When it came to fighting, Sun Qingxue has no previous experience. After all, she has not experienced fighting before, whether it was with a person or a monster. Under this circumstance, Yang Chen did not dare to take risks casually. He casually found a place where low-level disciples go to gain experience , and took Sun Qingxue to hunt down low-level monsters to practice.

Nothing could be done about it, the experience of combat, is not something that could be thought face-to-face or could be fully passed down, without actual combat, no matter how valuable an experience was, it could only be a theory, it was impossible to compare with practice.

Sun Qingxue's cultivation was not bad. Now, she was in the Foundation Stage Middle Stage, she has been cultivating for more than ten years. But even if her aptitude were good, in front of these low-level monsters, there was still a lot of mistakes. If Yang Chen had not been taking care of her, maybe Sun Qingxue would be caught in the hands of these low-level monsters.

The place that Yang Chen chose was known to many people. Most of the talented people in the Qi Refining Late Stage or Qi Refining peak would gain experience here. The two Foundation stage experts of Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue were here, and it appeared very nondescript.

However, neither of them had the same gaze. They were not here to rob the monsters, but to give Sun Qingxue some simple combat experience.

Soon, the two left here. However, some people still recognized Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue. Among them were some disciples of the Blue Cloud Sect. Next, the news was sent back to the Blue Cloud Sect, and reached the ears of Elder Hua Wanting.

When she heard that Yang Chen took Sun Qingxue to such a low-level place to fight, Hua Wanting immediately realized that she had made mistakes in training Sun Qingxue. Fortunately, Yang Chen was now giving her a remedy. If this delayed Sun Qingxue, then her master couldn't be redeemed.

At the same time, Hua Wanting regretted it, and she became more optimistic about Yang Chen. This young man not only saved her life, but also took Sun Qingxue to accumulate combat experience. It seemed that Sun Qingxue's chosen Doa companion seems to have an insightful eye.

Sun Qingxue was worthy of being the Snow Dance Fairy Maiden of his previous life. In a few days, she has mastered the essentials of fighting with those low-level monsters. Then the two changed to a place which was suitable for the foundation stage cultivators

to gain experience and started fighting again.

Of course, Sun Qingxue was the one mainly fighting, Yang Chen was watching on the side, and at the same time giving her directions. Yang Chen himself, never got involved, even if he got involved, it was only when Sun Qingxue was in crisis, when it was impossible to protect herself. But it was only to take Sun Qingxue out of danger, but never to help Sun Qingxue to eliminate her opponents.

At the beginning, Sun Qingxue would often encounter dangers, but soon, this situation will become less and less. Sun Qingxue was like a dry sponge. She absorbed all kinds of combat experience in a crazy way. The speed of growth made Yang Chen feel scared.

In just four or five days, Sun Qingxue could basically win a fight with the monster that was equivalent in strength to the Early Foundation Establishment, and began to fight with the monsters in the middle foundation stage, and did not fail. This was Sun Qingxue's own cultivation realm. At this speed, maybe a few months later, Sun Qingxue could challenge the early Jiedan stage monsters.

However, this level of monsters, their Spiritual Wisdom was not open, and could not be compared with those fellows Kui and Xie Sha those willy old foxes, not to mention the old tree demon. Low-level monsters were low-level monsters. They only knew how to use their instincts to fight and were very easy to deal with.

For Yang Chen, the biggest enemies were still people. Sun Qingxue was able to kill the beast again, and if she encounters a sly cultivator, even if his cultivation was lower than her, she may still suffer. This principle was also applicable to Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, even if they have practiced more in the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave, they still have to learn to deal with people.

Fortunately, Sun Qingxue was just beginning to learn. Maybe in the near future, Hua Wanting would change her mind and focus on

cultivating Sun Qingxue emphatically. Sun Qingxue has the opportunity to re-emerge as the Snow Dance Fairy Maiden of his previous life.

After two months of combat experience, Sun Qingxue grew incredibly, and she was able to fight the monsters in the late stage of foundation establishment, and she was not defeated. It was no longer meaningful to stay here. Yang Chen decided to leave.

“The next step is to go to the secret plane?” Sun Qingxue recently became addicted to fighting, especially after a series of hard battles to defeat the opponent, the sense of accomplishment was very pleasant. When She heard that Yang Chen was about to go to the secret plane, she was a little surprised and a little bit sad.

Chapter 251: Treasure Hunt

The groundwork has been done , and Yang Chen decided not to waste time. Sun Qingxue couldn't compare with Shi Shanshan. At least when Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan went to find the Howling Celestial Dog Blood Essence, Shi Shanshan didn't need Yang Chen to point out anything in the battle. The two cooperated quite well.

This secret plane clues was found by Yang Chen from the ancient texts on the wooden sign. From the age point of view, it was already very ancient. However, the Formation of keys displayed by the secret key was not very advanced. This could only be explained that the secret was not a high-level place.

Perhaps it was a small martial art sect that was broken down after being destroyed. So no one has ever found the secret plane. Since it was a small martial art sect, naturally there would not be too many good things.

What Yang Chen was only looking forward to now was that the secret plane may grow some medicinal herbs for a long time because of its age. Otherwise, Yang Chen didn't expect anything at all.

In addition to this, Yang Chen was trying to make Sun Qingxue gain a little more experience from this expedition, more experience, and had no idea of wanting to make a fortune from there. The secret plane that really had good things would definitely be searched for by many people. How could it be left up till now?

Of course, the most important thing was that Yang Chen had to complete the entrustment of the head of the palace, and Sun Qingxue had to gain experience. But Yang Chen did not realize it at all. It seemed that Sun Qingxue was becoming more and more obsessed with himself, not the effect he wanted.

As for Yang Chen's attitude toward Shi Shanshan and Sun

Qingxue, he did not have the experience of dealing with this feelings. Secondly, these two are super-powerful people who would be famous in the world, and not want to offend them.

The location of the secret plane was not a famous the mountain. “Obviously, the good places have been occupied by some famous big family factions. A small martial art sect that was destroyed only used to stay in some corners.”

The speed of the flying shuttle was very fast, but it took almost a month to reach the destination. According to this calculation, this place has been within the 100,000 mountains, to the edge of the Dao Sect’s domain.

“This place is really desolate!” A few ragged hills, not even trees, almost all of them were bare rocks, just a few stone mountains. Looking at all this, Sun Qingxue’s first sentence after leaving the flying shuttle was this sentence.

“The bustling place is not for us.” Yang Chen smiled and put away the flying shuttle. After standing, he began to look around.

On the secret key it was only said that the secret plane was here, but the specific location was not known, Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue needed to look for it carefully. They just needed to find the entrance to the formation and they could use the key to enter it.

Speaking of it, it was the same as looking for the Howling Celestial Dog Blood Essence. He only knew the approximate location and the entrance needed to be found. However, this secret plane, and the valley where the Howling Celestial Dog Blood Essence were stored, was completely incomparable.

For the first time, Sun Qingxue participated in this kind of expedition. Her interest was very high, and she was looking for it at every inch in the mountains. Yang Chen did not dispel her enthusiasm, simply accompanied her, so they began to search every place.

What surprised Yang Chen was that he thought that on this bare and unobstructed place it would be easy to find the secret plane entrance, but he and Sun Qingxue looked for two days, and the surrounding hills had been turned over and there was nothing.

“Is the secret land already opened?” Sun Qingxue even had such doubts.

“Come on let search slowly.” Yang Chen was very patient and persuaded. Sun Qingxue and Shi Shanshan still had a disparity, at least in their mood.

At that time, Shi Shanshan accompanied Yang Chen to find the Howling Celestial Dog Blood Essence in the valley, and didn't find it for three months, but did not say a word of doubt. Of course, this required a long period of practice and experience, not just a few months to solve.

For the following time, almost all the hills were searched inch by inch, but unfortunately, the entrance to the secret plane has not been found.

“Think carefully, what other places have we not looked at?” This time they search more carefully and spent more than ten days. Yang Chen saw Sun Xiaoxue was still a little impatient, and still reminded patiently.

This time looking for the secret plane, was based on Sun Qingxue. Yang Chen basically cooperated. Even if he saw it, he wouldn't take the initiative to say that, he wanted Sun Qingxue to understand something, even if it was a million years ago. There was still some means to hide the secrets of the small sects that have been destroyed.

All this Yang Chen did was to let Sun Qingxue have more insights. This was the experience of dealing with people. Although it was not directly faced, she still could understand some people's hearts. At least the secret plane could be hidden in this unobstructed place, which was to fully understand the character of

most people.

For now, Sun Qingxue was caught in a misunderstanding, thus ignoring something, resulting in a search for ten days without finding a clue.

There were a dozen hills in total here, and the height of the flight could be seen at a glance. In Sun Qingxue's view, there was really not much to miss.

However, since Yang Chen reminded her, Sun Qingxue also had an unyielding momentum. She once again surmounted her strength and searched around again. This place was thousands of acres of the size, after careful inspection once again, there was an unexpected discovery.

"It seems that the two ponds at the foot of the mountain have not been checked." Sun Qingxue finally reached a conclusion.

The two ponds she said was basically inside the shady hills. She didn't know how many years it have existed here. The water level was stagnant, it has not flowed.

The two ponds were not big, and there was no living thing in them. This was a shaded place. The sun couldn't shine here. It looks like it has been lying here, and it has already stinked. This was why when Sun Qingxue came here to explore with Spiritual Awareness and did not look carefully.

"Then how are you going to search it?" Yang Chen smiled and looked at Sun Qingxue, waiting for her further action.

He didn't know how many years of dirty water have been stagnant here. For Sun Qingxue was a beautiful woman with a drop of fragrant scent, it was really disgusting to look at it. But it was undeniable that if the secret plane was really hidden under the water, it could indeed make many people afraid of this point and ignore it.

"I will go down and see!" Yang Chen had been watching. Sun

Qingxue was afraid that Yang Chen would look at her as a worthless person. After squatting for a long time near the stinking pond, she finally bit her teeth and planned to jump into the stinky pond to take a closer look.

“Okay!” When Yang Chen heard Sun Xiaoxue make this decision, and she has already planned to go down. This showed the behavior of Sun Qingxue “You have this determination, you don’t have to go on.”

“Why?”

Sun Qingxue did not understand.

“Because you can’t find it,” Yang Chen explained with a smile.

“Why?”

This made Sun Qingxue even more surprised. She really couldn’t understand, “there are only two places that have not been carefully searched. How can they not be found?”

“The entrance is not here, how can you find it?” Yang Chen smiled and replied “Since you have the determination and action to go on, it’s enough. You don’t really have to go inside, and turn yourself into a stinky girl.”

“You are the stinky girl!” Sun Qingxue could only scream at Yang Chen with dissatisfaction, but still couldn’t figure it out “Why is the entrance not here?”

As he said, Sun Qingxue’s Spiritual Awareness quickly swept toward the water. Although her Spiritual Awareness was limited, and the Spiritual Awareness in the water would be greatly reduced, but with the stinking pond in front of her she quickly searched the bottom.

Flying to the edge of the other pond, the Spiritual Awareness explored it, the same was the case, it was easy to explore the bottom of the pool.

“Is there any abnormality in the exploration of the Spiritual Awareness?” Yang Chen was on the side, laughing and watching Sun Qingxue doing all this, then asked.

“There is nothing unusual!” Sun Qingxue said begrudgingly. If you don’t look at it carefully, that was, if you don’t go down and see it yourself, and use the Spiritual Awareness to check it. There was really nothing wrong with it.

It was reasonable to say that this was the wrong place, it was that the entrance was not here. But how did Yang Chen determined it?

“These two ponds are probably tens of thousands of years old and have not dried up. Don’t you feel it strange?” Yang Chen reminded again.

“There is water out there.” Sun Qingxue immediately thought of what she had missed. There was a water outlet indicating that there was a water vein that should be alive. How could it be stagnant?

“Yes, if you check carefully, you should find out this doubt.” Yang Chen continued to point it out, but never meant to do it.

Sun Qingxue came close to the pond. Enduring the stench of the stagnant reservoir, her Spiritual Awareness explored it, and soon found a very secret water outlet in a remote corner. The result of the investigation along the water outlet made Sun Qingxue very frustrated, she could not find out anything.

“People can easily find this point, and then search down the water.” Yang Chen stood a little further and explained to Sun Qingxue “However, the more curious you are, the more you will be cheated.”

“How would I be cheated?” Sun Qingxue asked.

“If your Spiritual Awareness is strong enough, you will find that there is spiritual fluctuation below the water veins.” Yang Chen smiled and said: “Then someone will be like a little fool, endure

stench, and jump into the stinking ditch. Excavate everything, and finally found that the following is an ordinary stagnant water formation, nothing else.”

“What’s the point of doing this?” Sun Qingxue asked very puzzledly, and her thoughts had begun to be considered with Yang Chen’s instructions.

“It doesn’t make much sense.” Yang Chen smiled and said “Everyone has been killed. This thing is purely disgusting.”

She thought that she couldn’t help but jump into the stinking pond. Although she knew the smell, she still have to be in the water. If Yang Chen had not stopped her, maybe she would now be a stinky girl that came out of a stinking water. Thinking of this, Sun Qingxue could not help but have a cold.

It was not easy to adjust herself and return to normal. Sun Qingxue was curious and asked: “if it is not in the water, not in the mountains, where is it?”

“In fact, you still overlooked a place.” Yang Chen left Sun Qingxue and returned to the top of the mountain without being able to smell the stench, and said.

“Is there a place i ignored?” Sun Qingxue almost screamed. It was almost a month or so, and she had already searched here three times and there was still a place she ignored. But Sun Qingxue’s unyielding character was shown again “Don’t say it, I will think about it myself.”

It couldn’t be help but known that Sun Qingxue’s experience was still insufficient. Even if she has been patiently searched for a whole month, she still hasn’t found any abnormality. In the end, Sun Qingxue could only admit defeat to Yang Chen and return to his side, waiting for him to explain.

“You were looking very detailed, but you only payed attention to the ground and the water.” Yang Chen smiled and gave Sun

Qingxue a cup of jade dragon wine, letting her relax, and then said: "Have you found anything abnormal in the sky? "

Sun Qingxue looked up at the sky, the sky was clear, there was a little wind, and there were a few white clouds in the air. Everything looked normal. What was wrong with it?

"Do you think the weather here is not normal?" Yang Chen asked again, it seems to be more reminders.

"Abnormal!" Sun Qingxue replied quickly. In the past month or so, there were sunny days, cloudy days, and rainy days. The winds also blew often here, and there was really no abnormality in the weather.

"You don't know, there is a cloud in the day, it almost never disappeared?" At this time, Yang Chen no longer kept her guessing, directly speaking his doubts.

Sun Qingxue had been looking for the secret plane with all her heart and mind, and would not pay attention to the changes in the weather. Now that Yang Chen reminded her, she was not sure. However, since Yang Chen said so, he must have his reason. Sun Qingxue also did not refute, nodded directly, and acknowledged it.

"There is a large area, there are always clouds." Yang Chen looked up at the sky and circled his hand: "More or less, there will always be clouds, and it is concentrated in that area, which is not very normal."

Yang Chen discovered this after half a month of searching. At the beginning, Yang Chen also suspected it to be under the water, but Yang Chen's fascinating Spiritual Awareness discovered the bottom of the water vein before discovering that it was a trap. After discovering the trap, Yang Chen began to pay attention to the surrounding environment, so he quickly noticed the abnormality in the sky.

Now there were a few clouds floating in the sky, and as the breeze

keeps changing shape, it moves its position. But as Yang Chen said, there will always be clouds in a large area. Even if the wind blows away, new clouds would soon appear.

“Don’t tell me that the secret plane is hidden in the sky?” It was such a clear reminder that if Sun Xiaoxue couldn’t guess it again, that would be stupid.

“Let go and check it out!” Yang Chen summoned the flying shuttle, and flew with Sun Qingxue to the height of the clouds.

After a big circle in the area suspected by Yang Chen, Sun Qingxue found a clue.

There were a few points here that have spiritual power fluctuations. You could find them within two feet. There were several floating formations that were constantly moving. In the middle of the formation, some water vapor was generated continuously, and it looked like clouds underneath.

These formations were very delicate, and if they were not close enough, they simply couldn’t detect it. Here in the desolate region It was not easy people would pass through here. It has been undetected for thousands of years. It was really normal.

Chapter 252: Accident

The ingenuity of the hidden place was that the formation was so that if you use Spiritual Awareness to explore from the bottom up, nothing could be found. Even if it was a master of the Dacheng stage, it was impossible to find out.

In this way, if someone wanted to stand on the ground and use Spiritual Awareness to discover the anomalies of the sky, it would be impossible. This was one of the reasons why this secret plane could last for so many years.

The formation making a few water vapor, was a camouflage, in order to cover the real Mysterious entrance to the secret plane. Exploring from top to bottom, Yang Chen's formidable Spiritual Awareness quickly found the entrance.

According to the method on the wooden sign, Yang Chen made several Secret Technique on the wooden sign, and the simple and crude wooden sign glistened fiercely, and then Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue appeared in a large open space.

The vacant space was not large, it was, a few thousand acres, which was equivalent to the area of the dozen or so hills. In the middle of the open space, a palace stood alone. There was nothing left around, except for the stone in sands, there was nothing.

As soon as he entered this strange place, Yang Chen wanted to take out the Bright Ray Sword directly. After a few months of roaming, the dragons have not been exhausted, but they have always been attached to the bright ray sword. Yang Chen took the bright ray sword and felt a peace of mind.

After several months of combat experience, Sun Qingxue also accumulated some combat experience, and also summoned the body protection Magic Weapon and a flying sword, standing next to it.

The two had not had time to figure out the situation around them, and Yang Chen had already felt a killing intent. Just a short distance from the left side, a long gray blade cut from the top of their head.

Yang Chen's right hand was raised, and the bright ray sword had already picked up and met the long blade. Hmmm, there was a soft bang, when the bright ray sword and the long blade intersected, making a slight noise. Then, the long blade was accidentally broken into two segments, and a green juice was sprayed from the long-bladed part to the surrounding environment.

"Be careful, Big Brother Yang!" Sun Qingxue behind him screamed and rushed forward. She was behind Yang Chen, but at the moment she came to the right side of Yang Chen.

Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness has also found the situation there, there were three long gray blades that cut down to Yang Chen, when Yang Chen was about to face the long blade, but at this moment it had turned towards Sun Qingxue.

Ding dang dang, there were three loud noises, the three long-blade swords first cut through Sun Qingxue's flying swords, and then without the strength reducing continued to strike on Sun Qingxue's body armor.

Everything happened quickly and within a flash, and Yang Chen did not even have time to make a reaction, and it had already happened.

Sun Qingxue's flying sword was directly broken, and the body armor was struck by three heavy blows. A crack appeared in an instant. Fortunately, Sun Qingxue was not injured because of the armor on her body.

After the heavy blow, Sun Qingxue directly leaned on Yang Chen's body, and Yang Chen also took out the secret key in a moment, and a Secret Technique was made. The two people

immediately left the secret plane and appeared in the sky outside.

“Where is the injury? Where is the injury?” Yang Chen was almost scared to death, the four long-blade blades that have just appeared, each hit had the level of a Yuanying stage master, Sun Qingxue only had the strength of the Foundation stage, how could she resist.

“I’m fine, Big Brother Yang!” Sun Qingxue was still shaken. At that time, she saw three long-blades cuts towards Yang Chen. Sun Qingxue rushed up without thinking about it. She stopped in front of Yang Chen and never thought about herself. Could she block it? Even with her own estimates she did not know why she made such a move, perhaps in the heart of Sun Qingxue, Yang Chen was the most important person.

Yang Chen had already probed her with his Spiritual Awareness, and his naked eye has also looked up and down around her. Sun Qingxue really had no scars, so he could rest assured.

Thanks to this protective armor, this was one of the magical weapons that Elder Hua gave to Sun Qingxue before she left. The armor that has been refined by a master of the Dacheng stage was indeed extraordinary. Even if Sun Qingxue only had a foundation stage cultivation base, facing the attack of the Yuanying stage she was still unscathed.

The only pity was that this armor sacrificed a lot of protection strength in order to enable Sun Qingxue to use it. After blocking these three hits, it has already broken and had no protection strength.

“Dare to hurt you, Little Xue, you wait, I will get you revenge!” After Sun Qingxue almost recovered from her fear of serious injury, Yang Chen’s first reaction was anger.

Sun Qingxue, at that time, she actually stayed in front of him and blocked the attack for him. Yang Chen was very grateful. Because of this, Yang Chen also made a vow of killing of the culprit who

almost hurt Sun Qingxue.

Gray long blade, Yang Chen saw it clearly, it was a few huge gray praying mantis forearms. These insects was estimated to be the guardian beasts of the secret plane, and it was not known how many years they have lived in the secret plane. Anyway, these attacks have already reached the Yuanying stage. Now it was sealed in this secret plane and cannot be released.

The guardian beast of the secret plane was to kill the strangers who come in. Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue were strangers. There was no doubt about this. Therefore, as soon as they entered, they were immediately attacked.

After shouting, Yang Chen's figure disappeared directly in the same place, leaving Sun Qingxue outside the secret plane. Sun Qingxue was shocked, but she didn't have the key, so she couldn't get in. She could only watch Yang Chen enter the secret plane and there was no other way but to wait anxiously outside.

"Die!" After rushing into the secret plane, Yang Chen did not hesitate any more, and directly slashed the sword to cut the arm of a grey praying mantis with the bright ray sword.

Hmm, there was another sound. This time it was not the forearm, but one leg. However, the grey praying mantis had a formidable life force, but he didn't care at all. The huge forearm in the air was high and swung towards Yang Chen.

The other few were not far behind, the insects don't have the idea of bullying too much. They only knew how to eliminate strangers who came in.

A few gray shadows flashed quickly, the speed of waving the forearm was terrifying. Even the eyes could not capture the trajectory of the waving, they had already reached Yang Chen's body.

Dang dang, after a series of sounds, accompanied by a long, long

and long groaning sound, in addition to Yang Chen in the secret plane, there was no other creature there.

The attack of the several guardian beasts caused the golden bell to ring. The consequence of the golden bell ringing was that, except for the master Yang Chen, all the creatures were shocked and fell to the ground, and they could not get up for a long time.

How could Yang Chen let go of such an opportunity, his body shape flashed, and he appeared in front of the several huge bodies. The bright ray sword was lifted high and fell heavily. Five triangular gray heads were instantly cut down by Yang Chen. The green blood was sprayed everywhere, and at least half of the large open space was dyed dark green.

There was no other thing for the time being, but Yang Chen still didn't feel relieved. He turned around first, and his Spiritual Awareness carefully probed again. After confirming that there was no guardian beast inside, he went out of the secret plane.

Sun Qingxue had long waited with a distressed heart, Yang Chen's cultivation was not much stronger than her own. Just a few blows have already let her know the level of those guardian beasts, which was almost at the level of the Yuanying stage, Yang Chen rushed in alone. Furious and rare.

When she thought of Yang Chen, who had rushed in for revenge because she was almost hurt, Sun Qingxue felt sweet. However, the huge gap between the two sides made Sun Qingxue almost anxious that she wanted to vomit. Now she can't get into the secret plane, she could only keep praying, and pray that Yang Chen should not have an accident.

When Yang Chen's figure suddenly appeared, Sun Qingxue couldn't help herself, and immediately rushed into Yang's arms and burst into tears. Although, it had been only about ten breath of time, but Sun Qingxue felt like it was a long period of more than ten years.

Yang Chen has never encountered such a squabble. He also panicked between the moment. Both his hands were placed on both sides of his body, almost like a stiff, and they did not dare to move. He let Sun Qingxue hug his neck and cry in his arms, but he didn't know what to do.

Sun Qingxue's body was very soft and warm. Maybe this time she cried so that she completely released all the pressure. It was a long cry.

Slowly, Yang Chen's body was not so stiff, his hands have reacted, lifted up in the air, he hesitated for a moment, he didn't know if it was time to take a look at Sun Qingxue. Finally, he gently put his hand on the back of Sun Qingxue and gently patted her a few times.

"Well, Little Xue, isn't this all right?" Yang Chen said softly.

With Yang Chen's soft and authoritative tone, Sun Qingxue finally stopped crying, and her hands slowly loosened from Yang Chen's neck and began to wipe her tears.

When Sun Qingxue completely stopped sobbing, she suddenly realized that she had just done something, and her face became red, her head hurriedly faced down and never dared to lift it up.

This fright was not unexpected by Yang Chen. Yang Chen calculated that there would be a guardian beast, but did not expect that, as soon as they entered, they would be attacked by the guardian beast.

In the past, Yang Chen did not enter a secret pavilion. Even the secret pavilion of Pure Yang Palace he did not go in. He only knew that there were good things and guardian beasts inside. However, he still felt that the guardian beast must verify the entrants identity before they attacked.

Yang Chen had a secret key in his hand. He should be the master of the secret plane. Even if the guardian beast does not recognize it,

at least there would be a time for preparation. Whoever it didn't know would be attacked.

This was Yang Chen's calculation error, and it has almost led to a major matter. If Sun Qingxue didn't have the protective armor given by Elder Hua Wanting, then Sun Qingxue would have faced more unfortunate event.

Otherwise, how could Yang Chen be afraid after a burst of time, he could predict the serious consequences after Sun Qingxue's accident. Not to mention the anger of Elder Hua, once the cooperation between Blue Cloud Sect and Pure Yang Palace was affected, it would not be simple to solve.

Apart from calling it luck, Yang Chen did not know how to describe the scene. He thought that he was just convincing Sun Qingxue, but was he also trying to convince himself?

It seemed that even if there was his past life memories as his ultimate weapon, sometimes he must be careful, otherwise it would be a situation of eternal annihilation. This was the most direct lesson that Yang Chen got from this.

"It should be okay now, let go, let go in and see!" After the two of them calmed down for a while, Yang Chen sent an invitation to Sun Qingxue again.

Sun Qingxue certainly had no objection, but she carefully changed into a protective magic weapon, and indicated to Yang Chen to open the secret plane. Yang Chen did not have any opinions on this. She was careful not to make a big mistake. Although Yang Chen had probed it again, but who knows if there was any fish missing, Yang Chen did not dare vouching for that easily.

As soon as she entered the secret, Sun Qingxue saw the five huge praying mantis. The body color of these praying mantis was almost exactly the same as the surrounding environment. At first, they could not find them at all. Now the green blood was flowing all

over the floor, and naturally it was clear to see the outline clearly.

“How is it possible?” Looking at everything in front of her, Sun Qingxue directly covered her mouth with horror.

Just a few hits from only two or three praying mantis, had shattered the body armor that Hua Wanting gave to Sun Qingxue. Their sturdy shackles could be seen. Even with Sun Qingxue’s knowledge, she could judge the cultivation of these praying mantis, was at least at the level of the Yuanying stage.

However, Yang Chen yelled from the wrath for revenge and came in and went out, it was only a dozen breath of time. Five of such powerful praying mantis of the Yuanying stage became corpses, and they were still completely unified.

However, Yang Chen only had a Foundation Stage Late Stage Cultivation Base. At best, it was a little higher than Sun Qingxue, but it was not much higher. How could he kill five Yuanying stage beast in this short period of time and beheaded them?

Sun Qingxue couldn’t be blamed for being shocked, even if Hua Wanting was here, she couldn’t do what Yang Chen did. She could definitely kill them, but if she wanted to be as clean as Yang Chen, it would be impossible.

Sun Qingxue’s shock was also because she found a huge gap between herself and Yang Chen. What was impossible in her opinion was so simple in the hands of Yang Chen. Maybe they were in the foundation stage, the gap was not big, but once the gap grew with their cultivation base, Sun Qingxue does not know if she would be embarrassed to see Yang Chen again.

After this moment, Sun Qingxue was so eager to have more powerful strength and more extensive insights. Perhaps this was the only way to keep up with Yang Chen’s footsteps and not be too much far behind Yang Chen.

Of course, Yang Chen did not know that the revenge and his

anger would make Sun Qingxue feel like this. He was still thinking about what good things would be in the palace in the middle of the secret plane.

“These bodies, you take three and I will take two, it is divided.” The body of the Yuanying Yao beast, that was a good thing, using it in alchemy refining was possible, it could not be wasted.

Sun Qingxue would not refuse Yang Chen, what Yang Chen said was what she would do, she obediently took away the bodies of three big praying mantis. Until now, her heart was still full of doubts, she didn't know how Yang Chen did it.

The two walked carefully to the front of the palace. There was no accident at all, everything was calm.

“Guess what good things are there?” Yang Chen smiled and chatted with Sun Qingxue when he swept his Spiritual Awareness and explored the interior of the palace.

“As long as there are no more accidents.” Sun Qingxue glanced at Yang Chen, and whispered.

Chapter 253: Entering The Secret Plane To Make A Fortune

In the secret plane, it seemed that there were only five big praying mantis to be the guardian beasts, and there was no other living things. Until both of them entered the palace, there was no movement.

Sun Qingxue seemed to be just a little bit afraid of things. Even when she entered the palace, she still carefully guarded herself with the defensive magic weapon and did not dare to have the slightest thought of misbehaving.

Yang Chen was also the same, but he was much better than Sun Qingxue. After all, the Golden Bell would appear as long as it was motivated, and would actively absorb the attack, which made Yang Chen have a lot of advantages.

The palace was very large, and there seemed to be an underground Spiritual Pulse, which lead to a lot of spiritual power in the secret plane than outside. It was for this reason that when they came, those big praying mantis could live up till now.

However, what was strange was that this martial art sect has been destroyed for a long time, and those praying mantis who have lived for tens of thousands of years were still in the Yuanying stage. This was a bit confusing. Since it was impossible to advance to the Dacheng stage, they still lived such a long life, which was obviously not normal.

But now was not the time to pursue these reasons, they have entered the main hall, they searched around, there was nothing to plunder.

The entrance to the palace was a hall with several doors around it. In the hall, it was empty and there was only one well. A thick spiritual power overflowed from the well, which was clearly a

spiritual pulse passage. However, there was no dust-proof formation here. There was dust everywhere, and when one's foot step down, and there would be several inches of hòu.

There were no labels on the several gates, and it seemed that they could only be inspected one by one. Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness swept over and he signaled that Sun Qingxue should keep her flying sword. At the level of the foundation stage, it was indeed a little tiring to control the flying swords on the side of the defense.

This time, Yang Chen had been honing Sun Qingxue. Naturally, Sun Qingxue was the main choice. Sun Qingxue opened the first door on her right hand happily, and Yang Chen first went in and blocked Sun Qingxue behind his body.

This room looks like a study, and the surrounding wall was full of bookshelves.

However, there were only a few hundred pieces of jade slips that were covered with dust on the bookshelf.

There was originally a painting on the wall next to it, but now it was empty, only a broken scroll, which was decayed and could not be seen.

Sun Qingxue curiously walked to the side of the bookshelf and reached for a piece of jade slip. As soon as her hand touched the bookshelf, the bookshelf directly turned into a pile of dust. Crashing away. Fortunately, Sun Qingxue has been using the defensive magic weapon and reacted in time, and was not surrounded by the powder.

Fortunately, the jade slip had no such problem. Sun Qingxue with some helplessness explored the contents of the jade slip with her spiritual awareness, but found that she did not understand what was recorded. The curved text was like the one on the secret key.

She thought about it, and Sun Qingxue handed the Jade slip to Yang Chen. During Yang Chen's investigation, she went straight up and collected all the jade slips scattered in the bookshelf powder, and sent them to Yang Chen.

"These are the inheritance of this martial art sect." Yang Chen shook his head after reading a few articles: "The ancient cultivation, there are still many fallacies, there is no reference value!"

Just as in the Immortal's Cave, these cultivation methods were somewhat outdated and could no longer be compared with the current system of cultivation. Not even the reference value.

"I don't want to use it anyway, Yang Da Ge, you take it away!" Sun Qingxue knew that she didn't know about these, and gave all of it to Yang Chen. It must be known that the cultivation methods, in the middle of Blue Cloud Sect Hidden Pavilion, were hundreds of thousands of cultivation methods, why would there be the need to use the one's from 10,000 years ago.

Yang Chen also indifferently collected them, these things, that was, as antiques still have some value. If someone wanted to organize the changes in the cultivation methods, these were valuable materials, but if he wanted to cultivate it, it was nothing short of looking for trouble.

The two searched for a while in this room and found nothing worth taking away. Then they turned back to the hall and continued to enter the second portal.

As soon as they entered the door, the front was a huge Xiuji with two cauldrons, and there was almost no need to ask. This was definitely a pill room. On the other side of the wall was a small stone cell, which should contain things inside, but these things were covered by dust, and it was impossible to see what it was.

"Brother Yang, you are familiar with alchemy, you have a look!" Sun Qingxue looked at this scene and directly pushed Yang Chen to

the front.

Yang Chen was not polite, on alchemy, no one has ever seen more than he has, and he has come to the forefront.

Going to the side of the great cauldron, and reached out, Yang Chen touched the body of the cauldron and searched it with his Spiritual Awareness, and soon there was a result, and said to Sun Qingxue “This alchemy furnace, the level is average, but the material is not bad, you put it away!”

If Yang Chen would say that the material was good, then the material must be good. Sun Qingxue elegantly walked forward, and received the giant cauldron into her Cosmos bag. Then she watched Yang Chen walk to the front of the stone small grid over there, and reached out one by one.

Most of these plaids were buried in dust, and most of them were medicinal materials. However, it took tens of thousands of years here to become a powder, and together with the dust, it could not be separated.

He found a few lattice in succession. For a thousand years, even the rare elixir had turned into dust. Apart from the big cauldron in the room, there was nothing worthwhile to take.

The third door, which looked bigger than the other doors, seemed to be leading to the room of the owner. However, when Yang Chen entered, he saw a pair of big eyes squinting almost in front of him. Yang Chen became startled, the bright ray sword was quickly held in his hand, and Sun Qingxue was stopped outside.

He was just about to start, but found that the other party did not move. When he looked at it again, he found out that it was just a big body of a praying mantis. When his Spiritual Awareness explored around, Yang Chen soon discovered that there were more than 20 large bodies of praying mantis in this room.

This was the only dust-free room here, more than twenty praying

mantis were all lined up, almost all in the same position. Under the support of six feet, the huge body stood steadily like a stone.

“God!” Sun Qingxue followed, and saw this scene, could not help but make an amazed voice.

Yang Chen now knew why the five praying mantis outside were in the Yuanying stage. Presumably, the original guardian beast gave birth to a small praying mantis when it felt that its life force would be exhausted. Then the praying mantis grew up from generation to generation and grew up to the Yuanying stage. No wonder Yang Chen was attacked when he came in. It turned out that these praying mantis simply did not know the rules.

These twenty bodies of the praying mantis, Yang Chen saw that were all in the Yuanying stage. In this closed secret plane, they simply couldn't be promoted to the Dacheng stage, so their life force was naturally not that long.

To be sure, these dead bodies were all females. Yang Chen knew a little bit of the habits of the praying mantis. It seemed that after mating, the females praying mantis would eat the male praying mantis to ensure the nutrition of the next generation.

What made Yang Chen strange was that, could it these mothers could not advance because they had eaten the same Yuanying stage praying mantis. Or was it because of eating the male praying mantis, so it would there have the cultivation base of peak Yuanying stage? In short, this was already a mystery and cannot be solved.

“Take half of it, you pick first!” Yang Chen waved his hand, and once again worked with Sun Qingxue on sharing it.

The body of a Yuanying stage Yao beast was very precious, even if it was Sun Qingxue, this little girl who doesn't know much, it was also very clear. Sun Qingxue didn't think like Shi Shanshan who allowed Yang Chen to tell her what to take. She didn't act polite with Yang Chen. She started directly, and then counted the right

ones. Then she took the twelve and left the thirteen left to Yang Chen.

“Why don’t you take one more?” Yang Chen asked strangely.

“I just got one more.” Sun Qingxue said, in front of Yang Chen she did not hide her thoughts “This is exactly the same as us.”

“Go back and don’t give it to others easily. Take it to Elder Hua and let her handle it.” Yang Chen nodded. He didn’t say anything on this issue. He just urged Sun Qingxue, who had no experience would be deceived by others “If you can refine the shackles, you will have a few more Yuanying-level shackles.”

The body of the Yoa beast in the Yuanying stage, not to mention that the body of this beast was a treasure, just the monster core alone, it was priceless. If the two come in and didn’t gain anything. And they have these praying mantis corpse, they would already be full of gain.

These complete Yoa beast corpses were the best raw materials for refining puppets. The puppets could even keep their cultivation base. In this respect, Yang Chen would not get involved in others issues, and he was afraid that the Blue Cloud Sect would not have a few refining methods. The only regret was that Yang Chen became angry and cut the five living fellows heads off.

With this huge harvest, the rest was not important. After the enthusiasm of the two people, they were very casually transferred to the next door.

This room was a location for refining, and all the scattered around it were refining materials. Presumably, the savings of the entire sect of the past years were all here, almost covering the entire room.

Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue had to dig out the materials one by one under a thick pile of dust to let Yang Chen distinguish.

There were a lot of good things, but unfortunately, besides the

metal attribute and the earth attribute of the materials, other wooden attribute and Water Attribute have decayed and rotted, there was not much left.

The two didn't care. there was something to take, and the materials were very good. Sun Qingxue was very happy. Blue Cloud Sect set a lot of rules, Sun Qingxue did not go out to practice, although she had a master of the Dacheng stage, but they were not rich. With these things, Sun Qingxue also became a smug figure of a small rich woman.

Only the last door was left, and Sun Qingxue's interest was not diminished, she pushed the door to directly open it. A flash of fire suddenly soared from the gate to the outside. If it wasn't for Yang Chen's hand, Sun Qingxue almost would be hit by the flame.

"What is this?" Sun Qingxue was also shocked and turned around, but found that Yang Chen looked at the flame that had been retracted and smiled, could not help but curiously asked.

"Pure Flame True Fire!!" The smile in Yang Chen's eyes was not hidden at all. Looking at the flames, Yang Chen almost laughed loudly.

"Fifth Grade Fire Seed?" Sun Qingxue's eyes also lit up. Yang Chen used eight hundred pounds of jade dragon wine to inquire the whereabouts of two kinds of fires seeds from Jiu Xian, the Nether world fire and the Earthly Fiend fire, but it was just Fifth Grade Fire Seed. There was actually a Fifth Grade Third Fire in front of them. Was this not the luck of Yang Chen?

She learned that this was the kind of fire seed that Yang Chen needed. Sun Qingxue couldn't help but be happy for Yang Chen. In this room, it seemed that there was only such a flame, it seemed that Yang Chen was none other than the person who would have it.

However, Yang Chen's happiness was far more than just finding a Fifth Grade Third Fire. Although the Pure Flame True Fire could

be as good as the True Sun Fire, but one thing was that the True Sun Fire was really invincible. Pure flames true fire usually had a Third Fire True Essence with it.

This was a strange relationship, although the pure flame true fire was not the highest level of fire seed, but it could be associated with the most original source of Third Fire True Essence.

Yang Chen thought that he could only find the Third Fire True Essence in the spirit world, and complete the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art. He did not expect that in this secretly discovered secret plane, there would be such a big thing waiting for himself. Now that he saw it, he estimated that the Flame True Fire and Third Fire True Essence,, it should be the real reason why this unfortunate martial art sect was destroyed!

It was a pity that the enemy's luck was not good. They didn't find what they wanted, but this time it was cheaply found by Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue.

“Yang Da Ge it is a fire Seed, it is naturally for big brother Yang.” Yang Chen has not opened his mouth, but Sun Qingxue had already handed these things to Yang Chen. Even if her sect needed it, it was not as big as the need of big brother Yang's. This was Sun Qingxue's idea.

“Protect me!” At this time, Yang Chen was not polite with Sun Qingxue, and directly ordered in a sentence. Then he took out the obsidian jade futon and placed it on the wellhead in the hall. He began to collect the pure flames true fire and the Third Fire True Essence on the floor of the room.

Sun Qingxue said nothing, she took out her flying sword and began to wait around. In fact, in this secret plane, they have already looked over it. Except for this room full of fire, there was no one in the other rooms, and there would be no enemies.

It was simple to gather the pure flames true fire. After all, Yang Chen didn't absorb it now, he was just gathering it. So long as he

could preserve the fire seed, preserve the pure flames true fire. The real trouble was to gather the Third Fire True Essence.

With Yang Chen's current cultivation base, it was indeed a slightly insufficient. Fortunately, there was an underground Spiritual Pulse, which could provide a steady stream of spiritual power, which made Yang Chen's progress almost smooth.

Just refining and conserving the Third Fire True Essence Talisman, Yang Chen has been refining for more than four months. When it came to gathering the Third Fire True Essence, it took a long time. This action had lasted for five years, and this has only collected the Third Fire True Essence that flowed from the fire pulse under this room into the jade bottle.

Chapter 254: Chased By A Dacheng Realm Master

When he finished gathering the Third Fire True Essence into the jade bottle, Yang Chen couldn't believe that he had such a good luck. In a few years, he not only received the Tenth Water True Essence,, but also got the Third Fire True Essence. The smoothness was simply unbelievable.

In the past five years, Sun Qingxue had also been cultivating. After a period of battles, Sun Qingxue seemed to have a lot of experience on how to fight the monsters on the same level as her. During the practice, she also comprehended many parts of it that she didn't comprehended before. In just two years, it seemed to let her cultivation reach the upper level of the foundation stage.

Although Sun Qingxue still stayed in the middle stage of the foundation stage, the overall small level was upgraded. Compared with the previous years she spent in the Blue Cloud Sect, it was definitely better to build up experience. Sun Qingxue has even made up her mind, she would continue to carry out such battles in the future to enrich her experience.

The gathering of the Third Fire True Essence was more difficult than that of the Tenth Water True Essence. There was the jade cup, and the Tenth Water True Essence would be collected automatically, but the Third Fire True Essence could only be collected by himself.

In the previous years, it took scarface a decade to collect the Seventh Metal True Essence when in the realm of Yuanying stage. Yang Chen's previous life's fire was extremely good. With such experience, it still took him five years to complete it with the help of the spiritual pulse.

“Yang Da Ge!” Watching Yang Chen finally put away the jade bottle, Sun Qingxue knew that Yang Chen must have completed all

the gathering work. She didn't know how, Yang Chen completed this, but Sun Qingxue was very happy, and called Yang Chen cheerfully.

“Have you found any good things?” Yang Chen also smiled at Sun Qingxue. During these five years, Sun Qingxue continued to look for treasures in the palace. At least the entire palace was cleaned spotless by Sun Qingxue, and it was no longer like the scene when the dust covered everything by a few inches thick.

“No!” Sun Qingxue also laughed. There were fifteen corpses of Yuanying stage praying mantis, and it was already a big profit. Sun Qingxue didn't expect more benefits. The process of searching was just a pastime when she was bored and alone. Although there was no gain, Sun Qingxue still had a happy look with a smile.

“Keep your current state of mind!” Yang Chen smiled and reminded: “At any time, don't be confused by the things outside you.”

“I know, Big Brother Yang!” Sun Qingxue in front of Yang Chen, was absolutely well-behaved, if not that Yang Chen had memories of his past lives, and knew how the Snow Dance Fairy Maiden was so powerful, and now saw the performance of Sun Qingxue , he wouldn't believe that this was the same person.

Everything here had been searched and scraped, and the only thing left was the underground Spiritual Pulse. This thing could not be moved, Yang Chen allowed Sun Qingxue to cultivated on top of it, and then fully replenished the spiritual power of the net bottle medicine garden, then the two finally had to embark on the road of leaving.

In the vicinity of the entrance, Yang Chen took the key of the secret plane and he reminded Sun Qingxue that both of them should be ready to launch their protective magic weapons. Then Yang Chen activated the key for them to leave, and the figure of the two people appeared in the air outside. .

When they appeared in the clouds, Yang Chen suddenly noticed a bit of hostility, and did not want to think about it, Yang Chen called out the flying shuttle, and collected himself and Sun Qingxue . The shuttle instantly draws an arc and disappears into the sky.

Between the electric light flint, a huge and unparalleled spiritual awareness swept over directly and swept over the flying shuttle. Brush, a figure appeared in the sky lazily, and seemed to be amazed, then rushed in the direction where the flying shuttle escaped to.

When the spiritual awareness swept over, Sun Qingxue felt like she was in an ice cave, her whole body became chilly. She was only swept by it, but her whole body had been suppressed by the powerful Spiritual Awareness and she could not move, even her small finger could not be lifted.

Until the flying shuttle escaped the scope of the spiritual awareness, only then was Sun Qingxue slightly eased from the shock and fear, but still asked with infinite fear: “Yang Da Ge, who is that?”

“I don’t know!” Although Yang Chen was not affected by the spiritual awareness, he was also shocked by the other’s cultivation “It may be those that destroyed the martial art sect previously. They were waiting here, they wanted to know where the secret plane was.”

This guess was a very reasonable. The place was originally a very remote place, and spiritual power was not enough here. Therefore, there was no such reason for there to be such a terrifying expert here. The only explanation was to wait to see if anyone was looking for the secret plane.

“But, the martial art sect has already been extinct thousands of years ago!” Sun Qingxue asked incredulously. It was incredible that the enemies from 10,000-year-ago was still in the present.

“It may not be the people of that year, but their descendants.” Yang Chen also knew that it would be impossible for that person to live for about thousands of years . He guessed: “they know that there is something they need, so I have been guarding it.” .”

“What was the cultivation of that person just now? Big Brother Yang!” Sun Qingxue was really frightened this time. She had never really faced the extreme pressure of a master, and she was almost scared. If Yang Chen was not there, maybe she would have fallen into the hands of the other party.

“The Dacheng stage!” Yang Chen also felt somewhat unbelievable, the other party turned out to be a master of the Dacheng stage, which made him unbelievable “Master of the late Dacheng stage !”

“The late Dacheng stage?” Sun Qingxue’s face had revealed an unbelievable look. When she thought that a master of the late dacheng stage was actually chasing them, two foundation stage younger generation juniors unexpectedly. This sounded so incredible that it felt like a bit of an illusion.

“His cultivation base has reached the bottleneck, and he needs the Third Fire True Essence to really break through the bottleneck, and then he can achieve the peak dacheng stage and even ascend.” Yang Chen had found the main point from the little bit of clues “he had never been able to find the secret plane. So, he couldn’t get the Third Fire True Essence.”

Just after saying this sentence, the incomparable spiritual awareness had been swept over again. Sun Qingxue had fallen into a state of confusion and could no longer speak.

Although Sun Qingxue had already suffered the pressure of Shi Yanhe, but Shi Yanhe was still facing the disciples from her sect and showed mercy, but the other side obviously had no such idea, but directly releases the strongest spiritual awareness he could release, if one does not pay attention to the spiritual awareness,

the person would be wounded as result of being shocked by the spiritual awareness.

Bang, he didn't want to think about it. Yang Chen shot directly and knocked out Sun Qingxue. Then the shuttle was almost driven to the limit by Yang Chen, and madly fled in the direction of the Blue Cloud Sect .

Sun Qingxue, who was unconscious, would not feel the fearfulness of the other party, nor would she have to bear the terrifying pressure . But Yang Chen has already begun to complain, and the other party had been chasing them up wildly.

After Yang Chen's cultivation was upgraded, the speed of the flying shuttle was much faster than when he was in the early foundation stage. Even if it was Wang Yong, it would be impossible to catch up with the speed of the flying shuttle.

However, the opposing dacheng stage master seemed to be only a bit slower speed than the flying shuttle, and could catch up with it. It seemed that he knew that Yang Chen may have already got the Third Fire True Essence and chased after him unreservedly.

Now the direction of Yang Chen's shuttle flight was where the Blue Cloud Sect was. The other party was a master of the late dacheng stage, his identity was uncertain, but one thing was clear, that was, the other party wouldn't care about their identity.

The only way was to escape to the Blue Cloud Sect. Maybe the location of the big sect could make the other party slightly convergent. This was also Yang Chen's hope of survival. Otherwise, if the other party caught up, the other party would never leave Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue alive as witness.

Fortunately, the speed of the flying shuttle was fast enough, at least compared to the speed of the chasing dacheng stage master. Moreover Yang Chen left first. This opportunity allowed Yang Chen to escape the opponent's poisonous hands, and the gap was getting bigger and bigger.

The chasing dacheng stage master apparently did not expect that the two juniors in the Foundation Stage did not care about his terrifying pressure, and still fled desperately. This made this dacheng stage master simply annoyed, when did two younger generation juniors of the foundation stage dared to be so arrogant in front of him?

It was originally discovered that Yang Chen took away the Third Fire True Essence that he had dreamed of. Now the other party even dared to run away in front of him. The Dacheng stage master was angry that his lungs wanted to blow up. If he was to let the two little kids to escape. What face would he have in front of his fellow daoists?

Even if it was only for the sake of his face, the dacheng stage would have to hunt them down to the end, not to mention the fact that the Third Fire True Essence was really a rare treasure that would allow him to break through his bottleneck, even if there was any sect, he does not care about those sects.

The terrifying pressure constantly appeared in the shuttle, and Yang Chen was almost invisible in front of the formidable spiritual awareness. To his surprise, Sun Qingxue had already fainted, but Yang Chen did not seem to be affected by him.

This discovery made the dacheng master very confused, but this did not prevent him from checking on Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue.

Sun Qingxue's Qiankun(Cosmos) bag was like an undefended open space in front of such a master, allowing the other spiritual awareness to come and go. Soon, the dacheng master concluded that Sun Qingxue did not have the key to the secret plane, nor did she have the Third Fire True Essence.

What made the dacheng master strange was that Yang Chen's body only had the key to the secret plane, but there was no Third Fire True Essence. This discovery made the anger of the dacheng

master slightly weaken a little. As long as Yang Chen did not take the Third Fire True Essence, he had a chance. But what he was scared of was that Yang Chen could ruined the secret key in anger, which was not worth the loss.

The sects that was destroyed was a very strange sect. They even invented a symbolic text to record everything about them. The dacheng stage master didn't know this rune, and even if the key was obtained, it would be impossible to open the secret plane.

With the master's cultivation base, he was able to forcibly open the secret plane, but there would be only one result after the forced opening, that was, the space inside would collapse and nothing would be left. This was why he dared not venture into the secret plane.

He discovered that Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue could enter and exit the secret plane. This discovery made the master very amazed, but before he could further react, Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue had once again entered the secret plane. It took five and a half years, and they had not come out once.

He waited until Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue appeared with great difficulty, Yang Chen actually summoned a shuttle to escape. The only explanation was that Yang Chen has already discovered his presence.

This was also good, the master of the dacheng stage thought, if it was very simple to get, then there would not be much meaning to it. It was this kind of cat-and-mouse-like game that was what the master liked.

Yang Chen was just using his foundation stage cultivation base to control the shuttle, how long could it last? The master of the dacheng stage was very confident, and his spiritual awareness kept track of Yang Chen and the shuttle, far behind.

Fortunately, he got several pieces of Top Grade spirit stones. Yang Chen thought in his heart, but he did not dare to neglect it.

In his hand he was already holding a Top Grade spirit stone, waiting for the consumption of the other Top Grade spirit stone.

This pursuit continued for a whole month. A month's time was enough for Yang Chen to escape to enough distance. The gap between the two had further widened.

In front of the blue cloud sect site, Yang Chen directly flew to the core site of the sect. Such a movement, immediately shocked at least three Yuanying stage masters sitting in the mountain gate.

“Who is so daring to rush into the Blue Cloud Sect?” A sound of screaming sounded in front of Yang Chen. Several figures appeared directly on Yang Chen's escape route.

“Be careful, there is a master chasing after us!” Yang Chen certainly would not entrap these Yuanying stage masters of the Blue Cloud Sect, and directly noticed them from afar. However, the shuttle did not stop at all. When it rushed to the nearby master, a light turning point bypassed the three Yuanying stage masters, and still rushed toward the Blue Cloud Sect's main hall.

“Bold!” A master of the Yuanying stage just screamed, and suddenly he noticed the trace of the spiritual awareness behind them, and his face changed.

“Get out of the way, don't stop my way!” The master who chased them into the Blue Cloud Sect shouted, and there was no means of avoiding it. The man was still in the air, waved his big hand, and the three Yuanying stage masters felt that they were pushed by a powerful force. The formidable strength pushed them to the side and flicked away from the side.

The flash of the shadow rushed past, the huge and fearful pressure let the three know who has just passed. After understanding, the three became shocked. A master of the Dacheng stage had rushed into the sect.

“Danger! Warning! Notify the sect!” No matter what kind of

demeanor, one Yuanying stage master waved his arm and shouted loudly.

The following guardian disciples dared not to be slow, and rushed to release the warning.

This time, like a horse cell, the Blue Cloud Sect moved up and down, suddenly flying out were countless figures, crazily in this direction.

The first one was a master of the Dacheng stage. She was also one of those who participated in the Battle of the 100,000 mountains that year, Blue Cloud Sect law Hall Master Shi Yanhe . As soon as she lifted off, Yang Chen's shuttle had already sped off, leaving only Yang Chen's remnant voice "Senior be careful, that is a master of the Dacheng stage ."

Chapter 255: Escape

The master of the late dacheng stage, Shi Yanhe, who had come out, was shocked. Although she was a dacheng stage master, she was only a middle dacheng stage master. In the face of the master of the late dacheng stage, she could not have the ability to resist.

However, blue cloud sect was blue cloud sect. In addition to the masters, there were various kinds of guardian formations. Shi Yanhe's little hand waved gently, and on the entire site of blue cloud sect, there was a bright light, and Shi Yanhe's figure disappeared into the fog that had just appeared in a large group.

Bang, the master chasing after them directly hit the newly-launched blue cloud sect mountain guarding formation and made a loud noise. The blue cloud sect's mountain guarding formation, after a flash of light, it easily returned to normal.

The chasing master had already broken through the outermost mountain guarding formation and flew directly to the side, regardless of whether he hit the formation.

"Fellow daoist who are you, what is your reason for coming to my blue cloud sect?" Shi Yanhe heard clearly, just in the middle of the shuttle was Yang Chen, then there must be Sun Qingxue with him. Her spiritual awareness suddenly came out, and it ran into the other side's spiritual awareness. The chasing person could crush her own, so Shi Yanhe was only polite and asked the other party's name.

"Old man Luo Yuan!" The speed of the master pursuing them did not decrease, but his spiritual awareness has already passed this thought "Hand over the kid who just fled in, and this old man will turn around and leave!"

"That is the honoured guest of this sect, please forgive me but the blue cloud sect will find it hard to fulfil your wish!" Blue cloud sect was also one of the best sects. If they became scared, and surrender

Yang Chen, then the blue cloud sect would not have any face again. On their own sect domain, he came to take away their guests, the blue cloud sect could not afford to lose this person.

“Then don’t blame this old man for being impolite!” Luo Yuan’s figure did not slow down at all, and now he had crashed into the second layer of the mountain guarding formation. The almost unbreakable mountain guarding formation, in front of Luo Yuan, was like a thin layer of paper. A big hole appeared in it immediately after the collision. Although it recovered quickly, Luo Yuan had already rushed into the formation.

Yang Chen had already rushed to the side of Elder Hua Wanting at this moment. the Blue Cloud Sect alarm signal rose from all directions, and there were still people who couldn’t stay quietly, all were flying into the air to investigate. Elder Hua just met with sect master Lu , and they saw Yang Chen’s shuttle flying fast to the front.

“Senior, take!” With Yang Chen’s words, Sun Qingxue’s body suddenly appeared in front of Elder Hua. Hua Wanting was shocked, and subconsciously reached out and took Sun Qingxue into her arms.

Seeing that Sun Qingxue has been in a coma, Elder Hua and sect master Lu were about to ask questions. But Yang Chen had already drove the shuttle to the far distance, leaving only his voice “This younger generation junior will take the guy away!”

What happened in the end, everyone was confused, but immediately, everyone became nervous. The second layer of the mountain guarding formation was actually broken, although he had not yet entered the core area, but this was already a shame that blue cloud sect has never had since the opening of the sect.

“Bold!” Sect Master Lu screamed, and he had already rushed out with the two masters of the Dacheng stage. It was Elder Hua and another elder who had taken part in the 100,000 mountains war.

The two masters of the Dacheng stage, together with elder Shi Yanhe who had already greeted them, the three elders were in three position, and directly surrounded Luo Yuan. Luo Yuan was even more powerful. Under the encirclement of the three masters of the Dacheng stage, he had to stop his body movement, but his spiritual awareness was still sweeping unscrupulously, tracking Yang Chen's shuttle.

"Fellow daoist why are you acting so chaotic, are you trying to bully my blue cloud sect?" Elder Hua screamed at Luo Yuan.

"Who is that little girl?" Luo Yuan stopped in the same place, pointing from far away to Sun Qingxue, who had been rescued by another elder.

"That is my poor disciple!" Elder Hua did not expect the other party to ask Sun Qingxue's identity, but at this moment, she couldn't conceal her, and did not hide her identity "what has my poor disciple done to offend you, for you chase them like this?"

"It is only a blue cloud sect's outstanding disciple, then I will write it off!" Luo Yuan was also a resolute person. He immediately knows that there was no benefit in the blue cloud sect. Moreover, watching Sun Qingxue's posture, it was clear that she had been following Yang Chen, and did not play a great effect. The key was on Yang Chen, and he couldn't be entangled here, and immediately drew a clear line with the Blue Cloud Sect.

"Forgive me for any offence!" After finishing this sentence, Luo Yuan's figure flashed and immediately flew backwards. He already felt that Yang Chen's shuttle escaped far away, and then he was afraid that he could no longer catch up, and he couldn't help but disappear quickly.

In the distance, there were two loud noises, it was Luo Yuan who smashed two large mountain guarding formation and his figure disappeared instantly. Leaving a group of people who didn't know what happened, the Blue Cloud Sect people, looked at each other in

dismay.

“Little Xue, what happened?” Hua Wanting flew back to Sun Qingxue and carefully explored for a moment and found that she was not injured on her body. And anxiously asked.

“I don’t know, when I and Yang Da Ge just came out from the secret plane, we were chased by him.” Sun Qingxue only remembered that when they came out from the secret plane, they were chased. What happened later, she didn’t know, she only knew that she woke up in the arms of an elder. At that moment, her master asked, and Sun Qingxue replied in a hurry.

“Secret plane? What secret plane?” Everyone was shocked, it actually involved a secret plane, Hua Wanting was surprised and asked.

Sun Qingxue was about to answer, but she was stopped by sect master Lu. The sect first dismissed the siren and appeased the group of disciples. Then it allowed the people to return to the sect main hall. After placing a few restrictions, they began to discuss “Little Xue, you can explain what happened.”

Here was her master’s sect, and Yang Chen never said to hide it from her master’s sect. In front of her master, Sun Qingxue said everything that happened when she went to the secret plane with Yang Chen.

When they heard that Yang Chen took Sun Qingxue to explore a secret plane, and also collected the corpses of Yuanying stage praying mantis and a Third Fire True Essence. Everyone felt inconceivable, If the fifteen corpses of the Yuanying stage praying mantis that Sun Xiaoxue brought back were not in front of everyone, no one could believe that this was what the two juniors of the foundation stage did.

“Yang Chen killed five big praying mantis in the ten-breath period?” If this matter was not heard from Sun Qingxue, who knew. Who would believe it? How could it be that the five

Yuanying stage praying mantis were killed by a junior in the Foundation Stage? But the corpse that had their heads cut off was here. No one can tell why, but It must not be Sun Qingxue who cut it.

“Why did the master of the late dacheng stage chase you?” This was what everyone really wanted to know, but there was no reason for it in Sun Qingxue’s description. The two younger generations had not offended anyone, It’s very strange to chase them.

This secret key was won by Yang Chen from the hands of the wine immortal. Jiu Xian lost convincingly and this had long been known by everyone. It gave Yang Chen the chance to collect the Third Fire True Essence. It seemed that it has not hindered other people. Why did the master of the late dacheng stage risk falling out with the Blue Cloud Sect, to chase Yang Chen?

Since Sun Qingxue has been let go, it was estimated that it was because of the face of the blue cloud sect, and the second reason was that Sun Qingxue does not have what he wanted. If this was the case, then the reason could only be, either that Luo Yuan wanted the secret key or that he wanted the Third Fire True Essence.

The possibility of wanting the Third Fire True Essence was even greater. With the Third Fire True Essence, he may be able to break through his bottleneck of the late dacheng stage and enter the peak of the dacheng stage and even ascend. Only for this reason could they reasonably explain why Luo Yuan would offend the blue cloud sect irrationally.

Yang Chen must have known this, so that was why he left Sun Qingxue to run. The reason why he did not stay was to eliminate the embarrassment of the blue cloud sect. If Yang Chen stayed, the blue cloud sect and Luo Yuan would inevitably have a big fight.

If Luo Yuan insisted on taking away Yang Chen and Yang Chen as an extinguished guest of the blue cloud sect, the blue cloud sect

certainly would not easily consent to it, and fighting would be inevitable. And if because of Yang Chen's reason, the blue cloud sect became enemies with a late dacheng stage master, even if everyone would not say anything at first, but afterwards, it would definitely make many people have different opinions, and maybe it would affect the cooperation of the Blue Cloud Sect and the Pure Yang Palace.

Yang Chen's departure was to save the blue cloud sect from being embarrassed. At the same time, it seemed that the blue cloud sect owed him. Even though this was not the case, in the future cooperation, the blue cloud sect would inevitably take care of the Pure Yang Palace.

Of course, Yang Chen himself had made two calculations, but it had nothing to do with the Blue Cloud Sect. If the other party couldn't flatter in the Blue Cloud Sect, he would definitely go to the Pure Yang Palace to chase Yang Chen. At that time, whether the Pure Yang Palace could block Luo Yuan's attack was hard to say. Yang Chen would never bring the disaster back to his sect.

But if Yang Chen had been running away like this, and the other party couldn't catch up, then it had nothing to do with the Pure Yang Palace. If one-on-one, one could not catch up with a younger generation when in the late dacheng stage, would he have the face to go to his sect to make trouble?

This matter would now be known not only by the blue cloud sect, but also by several parties. At that time, if Luo Yuan went to find the Pure Yang Palace, the blue cloud sect would have a reason. As a master of the late dacheng stage, he couldn't catch a foundation stage junior, and now he have to come to his sect to cause trouble, and if the two sects joined hands and attacked. Luo Yuan definitely wouldn't be their opponent.

Now Yang Chen had only one thought, desperately fleeing, with Luo Yuan, desperately running away. When he couldn't escape anymore, he could use the power of the bloody river in his sea of

consciousness, and he would seriously hurt Luo Yuan.

Although the golden bell has always been on the body, Yang Chen couldn't gamble that this protective magic weapon could protect himself. A Yuanying stage master's attack, Yang Chen could still manage it, but the attack of the master of the Dacheng stage, and also in the late dacheng stage, Yang Chen could not guarantee that the golden bell could protect him. One accident could result in death, and Yang Chen has not yet reached a time of being tired of living yet.

Countless people have seen this terrifying moment, a flash of light flashed in front of them, everyone had not seen clearly what it was in the end, there would be an overwhelming pressure on the scene, and everyone would be suppressed by it without being able to do anything, everyone became terror-stricken, and then they watched helplessly for the stream of light to fly over, and it took a long time for them to return to normal.

No one knew what these two lights were, but one thing was certain, that was, there was a top master involved. As for if he was running, or if he was chasing, no one could say clearly. If he was chasing, then who was the guy who fled, so powerful, he could escape under the chase of this master. If he was the one escaping, then it was even more terrifying. What could make such a master panic and escape?

In the midst of the crazy chasing, Luo Yuan was getting more and more surprised. What kind of magic weapon was this shuttle, it was so swift, he had been chasing for so many days, it was almost two months, and Yang Chen had no physical exhaustion.

“Junior, hand over the secret key, and i will leave you with your life!” Luo Yuan was surprised, but also could not help but have another thought, he spread his spiritual awareness to catch up with Yang Chen, and said in the ears of Yang Chen .

“Why?” How could Yang Chen agree, Luo Yuan wanted the

secretly key, absolutely for the Third Fire True Essence inside the secret plane, even if Yang Chen gave him the secret key, he would not get the Third Fire True Essence, when the time comes, it would cause trouble for himself, how could he possibly comply “Catch up with me first and ask again!”

“Junior, give me some face and stop!” Hearing Yang Chen’s screaming, Luo Yuan almost bursts his lungs from anger, catching up and ask again? Could it be that Yang Chen could still escape for a lifetime? Under this wrath, Luo Yuan also refused to care about others and directly launched an attack with his spiritual awareness.

At the beginning, Luo Yuan did not launch a spiritual awareness attack because he did not know the runes on the key of the secret plane, and also needed Yang Chen to point out and he was afraid that a spiritual awareness attack would make Yang Chen a fool, and then he would not be able to obtain anything from him.

But now Yang Chen turned out to not be concerned about his face, even if Yang Chen would be severely wounded , Luo Yuan would still attack. Fortunately, Luo Yuan who was in the midst of anger, still remembered to withdraw a few points of his spiritual awareness, Yang Chen may have a clear chance.

What surprised Luo Yuan was that after his own attack of the spiritual awareness was sent out, it was like a mud cow entering the sea, and did not stir up even a little bit of waves. How could this be? Not to mention Yang Chen, a junior in the Foundation Stage, even if he was a master of the Yuanying stage, he would be injured when he confronts his spiritual awareness.

Luo Yuan was already furious at this moment. A series of miscalculations made Luo Yuan unable to bear it anymore. He fully launched his spiritual awareness attack on Yang Shen.

Bang, an almost fully formed spiritual awareness directly rushed into the shuttle and flew into Yang Chen’s mind, avoiding it was

inevitable.

Yang Chen's state, Luo Yuan could easily see that he was sitting in the shuttle at the moment, and his spiritual awareness attacked his body. Yang Chen's figure did not shake, and he still sat firmly in the position. Even, the movements of the shuttle had not been hindered, and it still maintains the high speed of movement, and there was no tendency to weaken at all.

This time, Luo Yuan did not know what happened, but he looked at the speed of the shuttle at high speed, and the instinct followed, and there was a blank in his mind. Could it be that Yang Chen was a master of the dacheng stage as him? Otherwise how could there be no reaction to his spiritual awareness attack?

Luo Yuan was amazed here, but Yang Chen endured tremendous pressure there. Luo Yuan's two spiritual awareness attacks made Yang Chen taste the pain. If it was not for the support of the formidable Three Purities Secret Art, Yang Chen may have already fainted.

Chapter 256: Chasing To The Sea

The powerful strength of the master of the dacheng stage could be imagined when a full-scale attack was launched. The last time Guan Yuying had only used his spiritual awareness to shock him, Yang Yang was injured and vomited blood. Guan Yueying was only a master of the Yuanying stage, this time Luo Yuan was a dacheng stage master.

Although Yang Chen's cultivation base had improved a lot compared to that time, and although Yang Chen's spiritual awareness had become much higher than that at that time, the huge difference in this level still made Yang Chen want to scream twice and vomit blood again. A blood rushed into his mouth, but Yang Chen did not dare to spit it out. If Luo Yuan behind him found himself vomiting blood, he might attack wildly again.

The violent spiritual awareness almost ruined Yang Chen's Sea of Consciousness. If there were not the Penglai Divine Wood and the huge bull skull to support him, and there wasn't a layer of Fifth Earth and a layer of Seventh Metal, perhaps his sea of consciousness would be directly affected.

This was the case, knowing the sea of consciousness was just maintaining it frame and never restoring it. And the injury on his body was equally serious, and the intense pain almost made Yang Chen faint.

Fortunately, Yang Chen's performance deceived Luo Yuan and let Luo Yuan think that Yang Chen was not hurt by his spiritual awareness. From Yang Chen's performance before, Luo Yuan instinctively felt that Yang Chen seemed to have a Secret Technique, and was not afraid of spiritual awareness attacks.

It would be in vain to attack a person who was not afraid of the attack of spiritual awareness. Luo Yuan immediately stopped this inefficient method. Moreover, launching a spiritual awareness

attack was not without any price. The scope of his own consciousness was immediately reduced. If you launched a few more, he might lose the trace of Yang Chen.

Luo Yuan's spiritual awareness attack was different from the spiritual awareness mark. After the attack, he cut off the connection with his body, so Yang Chen couldn't rely on the spiritual awareness to hurt Luo Yuan. There was no other way than for him to escape.

After a few dozen days, the sea appeared ahead of them. Luo Yuan was a fire cultivator, and maybe he would be restrained in the sea. Yang Chen was just dying to push the shuttle forward, and he dared not have the intention to stay.

Fortunately, as long as the shuttle had enough spiritual power to fly quickly, and the Top Grade spirit stone also provided the shuttle with an abundant spiritual power, the shuttle would fly all the way.

On the road some people experienced Luo Yuan formidable strength, each and everyone was panic-stricken. The people who were on the road, began to blame their mother's for giving birth to them with only two legs, making them unable to run fast enough. They were afraid that Luo Yuan would take his anger on them and treat them as his targets.

Yang Chen's Sea of Consciousness had already been condensed once when he and Gao Yue Spiritual Awareness had double cultivation. Fortunately, there was a time when this time, under the attack of Luo Yuan, the sea of consciousness was able to maintain a situation of barely falling apart. The strength of the masters of the Dacheng stage, made Yang Chen simply chilly.

Because it had been within the scope of Luo Yuan's spiritual awareness exploration, Yang Chen did not even dare to swallow a healing medicinal pill. He could only reluctantly rely on his own cultivation base to slowly repair the injury.

The injury of the spiritual awareness was even heavier, and the Three Purities Secret Art was not almost able to operate. Fortunately, Yang Chen endured the pain, and forced the Three Purities Secret Art to revolve, once, twice, three times, and finally he reluctantly completed one heavenly circulation. In the process of performing the technique, Yang Chen almost fainted in pain, but still relied on his strong perseverance to stay awake.

The Three Purities Secret Art was absolutely formidable, and this was beyond doubt. After cultivating the Three Purities Secret Art, his sea of consciousness that was about to fall apart seemed to have been strengthened again. The flame entities and illusionary that have been almost smashed had gradually turned into a slightly restored appearance.

Yang Chen did not dare to neglect, and kept running the Three Purities Secret Art incessantly. This was the key to keeping his life. Otherwise, if the other side were to once again attack with his spiritual awareness, he could only be nursing his hatred in the dwelling place of the dead.

In the midst of crazy escape, after three days and three nights, and after a series of Three Purities Secret Art cultivation, Yang Chen finally found out that his sea of consciousness had finally restored its original appearance, it was even stronger than the original. The support of the Penglai Divine Wood was more stable, and the Blood Phantom Vine were more densely entangled. As the Fifth Earth layer became deeper and deeper, the Seventh Metal layer became more dense. The dense and numerous flame entities and phantom were also getting brighter and brighter.

After experiencing this heavy blow to his sea of consciousness, it became a blessing in disguise for Yang Chen, and once again let his sea of consciousness concise again, even Yang Chen himself did not expect this.

Of course, everything was still credited on the formidable sea of consciousness formed after the cultivation of the Three Purities

Secret Art, otherwise Yang Chen would have no chance at all.

Luo Yuan in the pursuit was also more and more surprised. Yang Chen's performance was not like a junior in the foundation stage. Now Luo Yuan was also unable to back down. The attack of his spiritual awareness seems to have no effect on Yang Chen. A flying sword couldn't catch up with Yang Chen's speed. If it wasn't because of his own powerful Spiritual Awareness, he also wouldn't be able to detect the traces of Yang Chen, maybe he would have already lost track of Yang Chen. Even so, the distance between the two was slowly getting bigger. One day, Yang Chen would certainly escape the cover of Luo Yuan's consciousness.

The shuttle was still in the direction of crazily escaping, Yang Chen in the shuttle, did not move for a time. This situation had made Luo Yuan more and more skeptical, was it that Yang Chen has lost consciousness, and the flying shuttle was flying by itself.

However, just when Luo Yuan was almost unable to resist the temptation, Yang Chen suddenly turned his head and looked at him. This action allowed Luo Yuan to give up his temptation. However, his heart has risen with more anger, a younger generation of the foundation stage, dared to be so arrogant in front of himself, even if he were to chase Yang Chen to heaven, Luo Yuan would not give up.

The resilience of his spiritual awareness made Yang Chen finally have the capital to resist the attack of Luo Yuan. The injury on his body was not so important. After cultivating the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, in the past few days, when the Three Purities Secret Art repaired the wounds of his sea of consciousness, his physical injury had been spontaneously improved, and there was even no need to take any healing medicine.

Luo Yuan was still chasing after him. The speed of the shuttle was much faster than that of Luo Yuan. It was still not possible to completely lose Luo Yuan's tracking. Chasing and escaping, there

was no other way than to escape.

Luo Yuan was also doing everything he could to chase Yang Chen, as long as he got the secret key from Yang Chen, after entering the secret plane to collect the Third Fire True Essence, he would be able to break through his current bottleneck and enter the peak of the dacheng stage and to ascend. For this purpose, he would not hesitate to be an enemy of the world, what about a little Yang Chen?

As the gap between the two continued to grow, Yang Chen finally saw the trace of the sea far away. After some calculation, this chase and escape, it had taken more than two months.

Luo Yuan's mind has been mixed with anger and surprise. He never thought that a junior in the foundation stage could escape his pursuit, and from the current situation he also had a chance to escape.

The endless sea was Yang Chen's best refuge now. The speed of the shuttle in the water was the same as in the air, but the other was different. Luo Yuan was a fire cultivator. In this sea, he would be naturally restrained, especially in the water, whether it was spiritual awareness or other attacks, it would be affected.

The shuttle drew a perfect curve and plunged into the sea and rushed toward the bottom of the sea.

Looking at this scene, Luo Yuan was a bit dumbfounded. If he chased it and entered the water, his own formidable cultivation base would be restrained, before he could not catch up, so it means he couldn't catch up now. If he didn't chase it, wouldn't it be that the hard work of so many days was in vain, and wouldn't he still be ridiculed by the people of the blue cloud sect?

Soon Luo Yuan found a way. Yang Chen was at the bottom of the sea and could not do anything but come out. There were so many powerful monsters in the seabed that there was always one that could force Yang Chen to escape. Luo Yuan was still in the air, but

his spiritual awareness penetrated the sea, firmly locked the position of the shuttle, and followed closely in the air.

Yang Chen of course also noticed this point. For Luo Yuan not to enter the water, Yang Chen had already had made psychological preparations. In this way, his next plan could be slowly realized.

Unlike Elder Wu Xiong, Luo Yuan did not refine a magic weapon for riding. He thought that as long as his sword controlling technique was strong, he could use it. Now he finally tasted the bitterness.

Since Luo Yuan started chasing to catch Yang Chen, he had not got a rest for so long. However, Yang Chen was not tired in the shuttle, and could even spare time to cultivate carefully. The two were different from each other, and their natural spirit was completely different.

As long as Yang Chen runs into more than a few powerful monsters in the sea, he may be able to stimulate Luo Yuan and those monsters. One or two may not be Luo Yuan's opponents, but as long as there were more opponents, maybe Yang Chen would have a chance to take advantage of it.

The dacheng stage was really terrifying. As long as he made a move on him, Yang Chen had no possibility of surviving it. This was different from those of the Yuanying stage. Yang Chen did not dare to use his life to gamble that the Golden Bell could withstand Luo Yuan's attack. So he could only use this kind of roundabout means.

This idea would be as a last resort. This method could only be used when Yang Chen wanted to abolish his own life. Fortunately, Yang Chen was young now, and he was not afraid of the other party and his consumptions.

So far, more than half of the piece of the top grade spirit stone has not been consumed, and Yang Chen had six pieces of the top grade spirit stone remaining. According to this consumption

speed, it was enough to spend several years with the other party chasing after him. Even if he was a master of the dacheng stage, if he does not eat or drink and spend a few years using his full power to control the flying sword to chase him, would he be able to take it?

However, what surprised Yang Chen was that there were no rare monsters on the way, even the monsters of the Yuanying stage, when the monsters in the sea found that Yang Chen was using high-speed to rush over. They were all happy to prepare a big meal, but once they came into contact with Luo Yuan's terrifying spiritual awareness, they immediately fled far away, and they didn't dare to show their heads, which made Yang Chen disappointed.

Just like the old tree demon, there was no foolish beast that could cultivate to the Yuanying stage, even in the sea.

This time, Yang Chen became scared. There was no monster which dared to kill Luo Yuan, who was behind him. Isn't this a big trouble? Wan Qian's cultivation base was not worth a glimpse in the eyes of the other party. When he appears, he would be simply torn apart. The dome of the temple was not necessarily able to withstand the bombardment of the master of the dacheng stage. Yang Chen had no other way, only running away.

In the hustle and bustle of the sea, Yang Chen had already ran for two months with Luo Yuan. Almost hundreds of thousands of miles on the road, but Luo Yuan was still chasing after him. If you move forward, he would go to the area where no one has ever been. What was there, even with Yang Chen's past life which had tens of thousands of years of memory, it was not clear to him.

The only thing that could be affirmed was that there would definitely be a monster in the dacheng stage, and even a powerful monster on the same level as Luo Yuan. But Yang Chen also had to think about the effects of provoking the beast. Maybe by then Luo Yuan would not have caught up with himself, and the powerful

monster had already killed himself.

However, Yang Chen still couldn't stop. Yang Chen just hesitated a little for a few days . The distance that was finally opened was caught up again by Luo Yuan. It seemed that Luo Yuan's idea was to fight to death with Yang Chen. Seeing who can't hold it first, would fall to the bottom.

Death was death, Yang Chen bit his teeth and continued to move forward. When he encountered a powerful monster, he would release the long bloody river , and then he would kill Luo Yuan and the monster together. However, this was the final plan. If It was not related to his own life and decades of hard work. Yang Chen would not use it.

No one had ever penetrated the sea so far, it was not as an adventure, but a life and death situation. While Yang Chen was running away with his teeth clenched, Luo Yuan was also gnashing his teeth. Who knew that a little guy in the foundation stage was so powerful, just under his nose, he run away from him for a few months and went so deep into the sea.?

Giving up? Luo Yuan still couldn't afford to lose this person. Even where the little guy in the foundation stage dared to go. The master of the late dacheng stage had retreated. If this rumors were to spread, the surname Luo would never be respected again.

In the depths of his heart, Luo Yuan also admired Yang Chen in front of him. Although he did not know the identity of Yang Chen up til now, he was able to speak in front of him as a foundation stage junior, and he was strong. Up to now, he was worth admiring. At least Luo Yuan himself also believed that he was a genius in cultivation, but at the time when he was in the foundation stage, he had no such performance as Yang Chen.

Yang Chen in front also noticed that Luo Yuan had chased him up. At the same time he hated Luo Yuan, he also tried his best to find out how to get rid of Luo Yuan's pursuit.

Now that Yang Chen knew that Luo Yuan has been able to catch up with himself because he has been within the scope of Luo Yuan's spiritual awareness exploration. The extent of the exploration of a master in the late dacheng stage was not known to him, but Yang Chen knew that the time in the Immortal Falling Well, Wu Xiong could cover thousands of miles.

With this understanding, Yang Chen knew that if he wanted to get rid of Luo Yuan's pursuit with the speed of the shuttle. He was afraid that it would take more than ten years, unless there was a way to make Luo Yuan's spiritual awareness unable to find himself.

Spiritual awareness being unable to detect him. Yang Chen's first thought was the formation of the secret plane. If you explored it from the bottom up, you couldn't find it. However, Yang Chen did not carefully study how the formation was arranged. This method would not work.

Suddenly, Yang Chen's mind flashed and he remembered the jade cup that he obtained in the treasure house of the Dragon Palace. It seemed that in addition to being able to consolidate the Tenth Water True Essence, another characteristic of the jade cup was that it was impossible to detect with spiritual awareness.

Chapter 257: Killing With A Borrowed Knife

The master of the Pure Yang Palace had received the news from blue cloud sect, Yang Chen was being chased by a master in the late dacheng stage, and his whereabouts were unknown. The other party's name was Luo Yuan, but Blue Cloud Sect has rarely heard of his name.

The cause of the incident from Sun Qingxue was not very clear, but after the analysis of Blue Cloud Sect's masters, it was likely to be related to the secret key and the Third Fire True Essence.

After hearing the news, the first reaction of the master of the palace was anger, the things that his pure yang sect disciple does not steal and got, why should he be chased because of it?

“Check, check it out for me, find me who this bastard is?” For the first time, the head of the palace did not have the prestige of the head of the palace, and he was like a fierce father whose child was being bullied ” I will give ten Ask Inner Heart Pill to anyone who kills him, and destroy his whole family!”

This often unknown masters of the Dacheng stage were often born from aristocratic families. These people usually didn't control the right and wrong of their big sects, just the rise and fall of their own family, and their reputation was usually manifested in a small area, and many people were not very clear about them.

Listening to the Blue Cloud Sect's statement, Luo Yuan did not catch up with Yang Chen for the time being. Yang Chen had a magic weapon with a very fast speed, and the other party could not catch up. But he had not been left behind, still chasing after him.

This statement made a few high-level executives of the Pure Yang Palace reassured a lot, and boldly promised the price of ten Ask Inner Heart Pill for anyone who would be able to kill Luo Yuan and his family. He dared to chase and kill the Pure Yang Palace disciples, if there was no reaction from the Pure Yang Palace, then

what kind of sect would they have opened!

What about the other party being in the late dacheng stage? Ten Ask Inner Heart Pill, it was estimated that there would be at least five dacheng stage masters going after him, and would rather hold the name of more bullying, but also have to find this venue back.

The only pity was that they didn't know how Yang Chen's situation was now, which had worried many people.

The blue cloud sect was very sorry. They brought the news and also brought the apology of the blue cloud sect. At least Yang Chen left Sun Qingxue after returning to the Blue Cloud Sect before he left. However, with the formidable strength of the blue cloud sect, they did not provide a helping hand to Yang Chen. This was contrary to the duty of allies. In the next decade, the income from the 100,000 mountains, blue cloud sect would give up 20% to the Pure Yang Palace as an apology.

Pure Yang Palace couldn't do anything about blue cloud sect in this matter. After all, Yang Chen was not a disciple of the Blue Cloud Sect. It was normal for people not to be willing to be enemies to a master of the dacheng stage. However, Yang Chen was their genius disciple who had fallen into this danger, which really made them awkward.

After the event, blue cloud sect also felt that they didn't handle things properly. They started searching for the whereabouts of Yang Chen in the world. This was also in line with the procedure of the Pure Yang Palace. Everyone was anxiously waiting for the news of Yang Chen.

However, what surprised everyone was that the last two people who saw the trace of the two appeared to be at the seaside. Judging from the direction of Yang Chen's escape, it was indeed directed in that direction. In other words, Yang Chen actually rushed directly into the sea without any hesitation, which made many people felt it was strange.

Yang Chen was now thinking about the jade cup. Spiritual awareness couldn't explore it, which meant that it was impossible to mark with spiritual awareness. How can this be used for its own purposes?

Luo Yuan was still chasing after him, and Yang Chen didn't dare to distract himself with using spiritual power to refine it. Moreover, if there was a situation like the one with the golden bell, wouldn't Yang Chen serve himself to Luo Yuan?

However, this characteristic of the jade cup was the best way Yang Chen could think about for now to deal with Luo Yuan. Once Yang Chen could master it, it meant that he could get rid of Luo Yuan's tracking immediately, and Yang Chen wouldn't be forced this way.

Using a drop blood to recognize the master? In Yang Chen's mind it was the oldest and most rudimentary method of recognizing the master. It was the easiest way to temporarily let the magic weapon and the user to understand each other's mind without spiritual awareness. This method, would it work for the jade cup?

He didn't want to think much about it. Yang Chen made a direct stroke on his hand and forced a drop of blood to drip on the jade cup.

Inside the jade cup, there were already a lot of Tenth Water True Essence. For so long, even if it was not at sea, it was still a little bit condensed.

As the drop of blood went down, the bottom of the jade cup instantly became red. The Tenth Water True Essence melted the whole blood of Yang Chen and evenly spread it to bottom of the whole jade cup.

Ssshhh, in Yang Chen's mind it was like a flash of light flashed past, and countless complex information went straight into his mind. It contained the uses of the jade cup and the method of further refining it.

Yang Chen was also a bit stunned. Who would have thought that such a high-level magic weapon, would use such a low-level way of recognizing the master? It simply made Yang Chen feel that it was a little bit unreasonable.

With the refining method, Yang Chen was no longer afraid of the lack of spiritual power in the refining process. At the moment, according to the contents recorded in the jade cup records, a new round of refining began.

Using the drop of blood to recognize the master was only to let the jade cup belong to himself, but in the case of using a strong spiritual power, it was still possible to seize it. And after refining it would be different, it would completely belong to Yang Chen.

During the escape process, Yang Chen began to concentrate half of his thoughts on refining the jade cup. This jade cup, the old dragon king had given it a name, called the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup. In addition to shielding spiritual awareness and consolidating the Tenth Water True Essence, if his cultivation base reached a certain level, it could even have the ability to turn the river into overwhelming energy.

Of course, Yang Chen now only wanted to shield himself from the spiritual awareness. According to the method provided by the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup, Yang Chen began the process of refining with his spiritual power.

Luo Yuan in his dreams wouldn't expect it, that Yang Chen in his desperate pursuit, was still leisurely refining a magic weapon. He was now urging his full force to make the flying sword go faster, but it was always a line behind the shuttle, and could only watch as Yang Chen escaped farther and farther.

But this also aroused Luo Yuan's interest. He wanted to see if Yang Chen would rather rush to the unknown sea to become feed of the monsters, or stop and hand over the secret key to him.

This chase and escape, went on for another half a year. It had

been half a year since they went deep into the unknown sea area. On this road, for the time being, Yang Chen encountered only a few Yuanying stage monsters. When they felt the spiritual awareness of Luo Yuan who was chased after him they would run far away, there was no thrill.

After half a year, Yang Chen finally completed the successful spiritual power refining according to the method recorded in the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup. At this point, the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup was truly a personal item of Yang Chen.

At this point, Yang Chen finally felt relaxed in his heart, while first renovating the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup with the Universe Treasure Raising Secret Art, and also pondering, how to test the power of the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup. He wanted to test it in front of Luo Yuan to see if he could shield himself from his spiritual awareness.

Luo Yuan was desperately chasing, but he had some admiration for this younger generation junior in the foundation stage . It was not a master who had persisted for a year of restlessness after his sleepless pursuit, but it was this later generation junior who had done it, and he could not help but to admire him.

Luo Yuan, who was chasing him, suddenly found that Yang Chen at the bottom of the sea was suddenly lost from his sight. Under the shock, Luo Yuan immediately increased the intensity of the exploration of his spiritual awareness and probed in the direction of Yang Chen's disappearance.

However, during the ten breaths period, Yang Chen's trace appeared again within the scope of Luo Yuan's spiritual awareness exploration, which made Luo Yuan release a long breath. Perhaps it was just that there were certain things at the bottom of the sea that blocked his own spiritual awareness and exploration.

Yang Chen noticed the sudden increase in the intensity of the exploration of Luo Yuan, and quickly removed the Sea Pouring

Jasper Cup, letting himself reappear within the scope of Luo Yuan's exploration again.

This little experiment made Yang Chen convinced that Luo Yuan could not find himself after he launched his Sea Pouring Jasper Cup. With this discovery, Yang Chen completely felt relaxed in his heart.

Now there was no question of whether Yang Chen could escape. If he wanted to escape, he could do it at any time. However, with this big life-saving treasure, Yang Chen's mind had more and more ideas .

His present Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art, Yang Chen was still missing two kinds , one was the Sixth Earth True Secret Art», the other was «Third Fire True Secret Art».

Although Yang Chen was a fire cultivator in his previous life, he did not get the «Third Fire True Secret Art» this formidable cultivation method.

Luo Yuan chased after Yang Chen, 90% of it was for the Third Fire True Essence, and the Third Fire True Essence, besides certain formidable fire attribute Monster Beast,if cultivators wanted to absorb it for refining, the most straightforward way was to cultivate the «Third Fire True Secret Art».

In other words, Luo Yuan behind him was likely to have the «Third Fire True Secret Art». This was simply a great joy for Yang Chen.

Moreover, even without this reason, Yang Chen would not let Luo Yuan off. Even if Yang Chen succeeded in escaping this time, Luo Yuan would still be able to get news about himself from the blue cloud sect when he went back. When the time came Pure Yang Palace was sure to be in unrest and disorderly.

Yang Chen did not want to bring this big trouble back to the Pure Yang Palace, saying that he could only take care of Luo Yuan in this

unknown sea area. However, it was not an easy task to deal with the master of the late dacheng stage. Yang Chen had only one way, that was, to use another or more masters of the Dacheng stage to deal with Luo Yuan, killing people with a borrowed knife.

In the unknown sea areas, it was said that there were many dacheng stage monsters that had never been seen before. As long as Yang Chen met some, within the same distance that the two sides were about to approach each other, he would successfully launch the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup escaping the exploration of the two sides and could easily make the two sides fight.

At that time, Yang Chen could hold his arms to see the killing of the two masters of the Dacheng stage. When the time came, it would be that Yang Chen would become the fisherman.

After making this decision, Yang Chen rushed to the depths of the unknown sea. Anyway, he could leave at any time, he was not afraid of anything. In the sea, was there anything more reliable than the magic weapon that the east sea Dragon King was serious about?

Luo Yuan certainly didn't know Yang Chen's plan, but as he was increasingly rushing into the deep sea. Luo Yuan's mind couldn't help but be nervous. He was no longer as relaxed as the first time he started to chase Yang Chen.

Up to now, Luo Yuan still can't understand why when he had attacked him with his spiritual awareness, the attack fell on his body but it was not useful at all.

Yang Chen was just a junior in the foundation stage. Could he have such a magic weapon? But this had also strengthened the interest of Luo Yuan's pursuit. As long as he could catch up with Yang Chen, wouldn't these secrets all become Luo Yuan's own? Maybe he could get a good flying magic weapon, but he could also have a more powerful method of spiritual awareness cultivation.

The idea itself was not wrong, but the premise was that he could

catch up with Yang Chen and could also force Yang Chen to say these methods. Whatever he thought now, it was just a fantasy.

Both sides had their own ideas in their minds, but no one wanted to give up first. Everyone maintained this chasing and escaping posture and continued to fly deep into the unknown sea.

No one thought that such a chase would take a full five years, and they were already millions of miles into the sea. In the meantime, it was not that they had not met monsters in the dacheng stage, but it was because they basically had the cultivation of the early dacheng stage. It was easily settled by Luo Yuan, and even allowed him to harvest the bones of many dacheng stage monsters.

Just this harvest, let Luo Yuan become satisfied. The bones of the dacheng stage monsters were not found anywhere, anytime, and, among these bones, there was a complete dacheng stage monster's Monster Core .

With these Monster Core, Luo Yuan could completely learn from Elder Wu Xiong in the absence of the Third Fire True Essence, and collect the medicinal materials of the Heaven Seizing Pill, and then gather together several alchemists who could refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, and refine the Heaven Seizing Pill once more.

If Luo Yuan knew that the later generation junior that he was pursuing was one of the alchemy masters who refined the Heaven Seizing Pill in the past, it was not known what expression Luo Yuan's face would make.

But at present, Luo Yuan was still desperately chasing Yang Chen, for fear that he would flee. Otherwise, Luo Yuan would spend a certain amount of time to refine the bones of these dacheng stage beasts into puppets. The beast puppets in the middle of the sea. Their speed would definitely be able to catch up with the current shuttle's speed.

Yang Chen was also secretly complaining. The several dacheng stage monsters that he encountered before were relatively weak,

and not Luo Yuan's opponent. He doesn't know where he came from, he was so powerful.

However, Luo Yuan did not find out that Yang Chen was able to escape his spiritual awareness. In front of the dacheng stage masters, he only thought that he would be distracted, so he could not determine the position of Yang Chen. But as soon as the battle was over, Yang Chen's whereabouts would be found, which would allow him to continue to pursue him with confidence.

There are more nights to go, and they would inevitably encounter some. In this sea, after all, there were countless powerful monsters that existed in the extreme areas.

Yang Chen did not feel the existence of the monster, but he noticed a hint of Wind Tribulation flavor. Yang Chen had experienced it himself, he had suffered a Pill Tribulation of the Heaven Seizing Pill, which made Yang Chen's impression very deep.

In the thousands of miles ahead, there was a powerful monster that would soon be faced with a Wind Tribulation, a thousands of miles away, it would only takes a day to reach there.

Luo Yuan was more powerful, but in terms of knowledge, he would not even amount to one percent of Yang Chen. He followed Yang Chen, and stupidly fell into the territory of the monster crossing tribulation.

Chapter 258: Huge Encounter

This was the domain of a huge blue-ringed octopus. On its domain, there was no longer anything that dared to provoke its majestic existence. There was only one classification of the creatures that could survive here, and that was its food.

For many years, the blue-ring octopus had become accustomed to an environment where there was no rival. Even if a few guys who didn't know anything were to break into it, they would be instantly torn by the huge wrist of the blue-ring octopus. This was also the poison that was contained in the thin spikes on the wrist.

It would soon be faced with tribulation and ascend. The blue-ringed octopus had been nesting on the bottom of the sea. It had already felt the aura of the coming of the heavenly tribulations. The aura in the sky was full of great energy. It was always reminding of it, maybe in the next moment, the Wind Tribulation would come.

At this time, suddenly a small bug broke into its domain at a high speed, and the blue ring Octopus did not pay attention to it. However, the blue-ringed octopus doesn't even need to move, but somewhere on the huge wrists that stretched far away, with a little glimpse of its spiritual awareness, and found that the strength of the bug was too low, it was even not enough to give him a tickling sensation, the tribulations was imminent, this little bug, this elder was too lazy to pay attention to it.

Under the pressure of the strong tribulations, the blue-ring octopus did not even open its main spiritual awareness, it must concentrate on coping with the wind tribulations that may occur at any time.

But that doesn't mean it lost control of the territory.

In fact, when it's huge body was spread out, it was already hundreds of thousands of feet, and each big sucker on the wrist

could send out spiritual awareness to look around. The hugeness of the submarine mollusks couldn't be judged by common sense on land.

But after dozens of breaths, it had to start to pay attention. A strong aura rushed into his territory with an imposing momentum, and looking at the direction, it came straight to its body.

Yang Chen did not find the body of the blue-ring octopus. After he found that the signs of the wind tribulations, he immediately retracted his spiritual awareness, for fear that there would be any move to agitate the powerful beast to be in tribulation.

In the realm of tribulations, the blue-ringed octopus has long used bright blue rings to warn the surrounding creatures. The octopus was very good at concealing its body. Its body was now perfectly discolored into a huge hill on the bottom of the sea. Even if someone stands on its head, it was impossible to find that under his foot was not a real mountain, but a huge blue ring octopus.

Although he couldn't find the body of the monster crossing Tribulation, Yang Chen was able to judge the other side's whereabouts from the signs of the wind tribulation, so the direction of choice was directed at the octopus. Luo Yuan behind him did not know this, followed by Yang Chen's pace, directly rushed to the blue ring octopus.

The appearance of Yang Chen would not let the blue ring octopus have any vigilance, but Luo Yuan was different. The powerful strength of the late dacheng stage, the blue ring octopus would immediately put him into the guy who wanted to advantages of it.

Provocative, this was a naked provocation look at this old man who would soon be faced with tribulation, did not dare to distract, so therefore wasn't this cheap? The beast to be faced with tribulation has already had the mind of not losing any wise man, and Luo Yuan would be directly defined as it's enemy of life and

death.

Luo Yuan was still firmly in the position of chasing Yang Chen, and he does not care about the spiritual awareness emitted by the thousands of feet of the seabed from time to time.

These spiritual awareness were very weak and small, but at most it was at the level of late Yuanying stage. This level of monsters Luo Yuan had not put in his eyes, and directly rushed over.

In the experience of Luo Yuan before, when these weak monsters met his spiritual awareness and probably judged their level and immediately left. Only those who had just entered the dacheng stage, thought that they would defend their domain would be bold to face him, and then killed by his flying sword, plainly become more and more spoils.

This time it must be the same, but Luo Yuan did not expect even in his dreams, that ignoring this weak spiritual awareness, this time were two fatal mistakes.

Yang Chen's figure suddenly disappeared within the scope of his spiritual awareness exploration, and there was no aura of him. This situation was not the first time and Luo Yuan thought that it was not strange.

There were also many mountains and dark trenches on the seabed. After Yang Chen enters this area, there may be such a situation. Usually Yang Chen would appear again soon.

But what made Luo Yuan wonder was that this time, Yang Chen did not appear. It has passed the normal time by almost 100% interest, and there was still no trace of Yang Chen.

Perhaps the submarine gully was relatively long, but in order to be on the safe side, Luo Yuan had increased the scope of his spiritual awareness exploration, and might soon find Yang Chen's figure.

A huge hill appeared on the bottom of the sea, which made Luo

Yuan feel relieved. Perhaps Yang Chen was under this mountain and had not rushed out.

Luo Yuan would not believe that the huge mountain peak under the sea was the head of the blue ring octopus that was here. In order to find Yang Chen, he deliberately increased his spiritual awareness. At such a close distance, he has been completely regarded as a provocation by the blue ring octopus.

Boom, an overwhelming spiritual awareness, violently erupted from the huge mountain peak, firmly locked Luo Yuan who rushed forward. The eight huge wrists on the bottom of the sea have been madly picked up, and they were directly entangled in the air.

The collision of two spiritual awareness was like detonating a huge bomb on the sea. In the sound of the thunder, hundreds of miles of sea water stirred up the old high, and eight towering pillars appeared directly from the bottom of the sea, and Luo Yuan was surrounded. From the air, it became a huge cage and rolled over to Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan, how would he think that there would be such a huge monster in this place, just the collision of the spiritual awareness, let him know that the strength of this monster was never under him.

What made Luo Yuan fearful the most was that the other side was a sea creature, which was its home and it occupied the advantage. In terms of attributes, the water could subdue fire, and he could be subdued by the other party. The most important thing was that he has been sleepless and chasing Yang Chen for more than five years, and there have been several battles in the middle. He had never recovered, but the other party has been submerging in this place.

During this period, Luo Yuan had never been able to take care of Yang Chen, even if there was no Third Fire True Essence, he also had the opportunity to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill. Thinking of

this, Luo Yuan almost turned away without hesitation. In the face of such a terrifying underwater monster, he would be a fool not to.

However, it was already a little late to run at this time. Perhaps when he was thousands of miles away, and he didn't come in, he would have had the opportunity to leave. Now, apart from the battle, there was no choice for him!

The towering pillars were the weapons of the blue-ring octopus, and countless suckers. At this moment, it's spiritual awareness were completely released, and the strength of gathering together, even with the strength of Luo Yuan, he could not help but be shocked, and his mind almost fell.

He stopped thinking about it. The flying sword at the foot of Luo Yuan flew out and went to the huge wrist in the direction of his escape. The flying swords flew out for a while, it had become extremely huge, but compared with those huge wrists, it was still like a small toothpick.

Scoffs, the flying sword pierced the wrist of the roll easily, but the part that was pierced only flowed out some blue juice, but it immediately re-grew. The flying sword just left, no longer than a few breath of time, the wound on the wrist had completely recovered.

After such a shot, several wrists behind him had been entangled. The flying sword was still cutting the wrists in the distance, Luo Yuan became startled, and rushed to use a Secret Technique to fight out, there was a huge circle of fire which appeared in this moment, and he was firmly in the middle.

Above the ring of fire, quickly flew out a large fireball and attacked the surrounding wrists. A series of explosions, the closest to the wrist, appeared dozens of black fireball explosions.

This wrist was almost instantaneously taken back under the sea, but the surrounding wrists were not taken back at all, still maintaining the original trend and entangled with Luo Yuan.

The flying sword controlled by Luo Yuan had been changed from a thorn to a cross, but the wrist was too big. Even Luo Yuan's flying sword couldn't cut it off.

Finally, he cut off half with great difficulty. When he was about to have another sword in the same position, Luo Yuan was shocked to find that the half-cut arm that had just been cut off, in such a time, had been restored to the original appearance, which made him feel a big panic.

He couldn't hurt the other person, if it became a little hurt, the other side would be recovering immediately, but he had been surrounded by a huge wrist. Once he was dragged into the sea, there would be only one outcome, except for perishing, there would be nothing else possible.

At the moment, Luo Yuan's heart was full of remorse. As soon as he had seen a junior in the foundation stage, he had pursued him for five and a half years. He was a master of the late dacheng stage, and he had to do things like killing people and getting goods. Those who were already shameful could no longer have any face. Even the younger generation of the foundation period did not get it, but it was also thrown into the family.

If he was chasing after him, he would have to catch up with Yang Chen. Why was it that he was at this point in danger? If he knew this before, why would he bother to chase Yang Chen?

Only now, it was too late to regret, there was no regret pill in the world, Luo Yuan could only take the scalp out of the solution, trying to kill a bloody path from the cages of several wrists.

The flying swords here was full of energy, the huge head of the octopus under the sea violently sent out a powerful and unparalleled spiritual awareness shock, Luo Yuan's attack on Yang Chen during their chasing saga was similar, the invisible spiritual awareness seemed like it turned into a sword, and cut straight to Luo Yuan's body.

At the same time, a poncho with a poisonous black water, violently rushed from the sea to the old high, directly wrapped Luo Yuan in it. The fire circle around Luo Yuan was instantly quenched when it touched these black waters, and there was no longer any sparks.

The black water had not stained his body, but Luo Yuan smelled a strong scent, the toxin contained in the aura, had already let Luo Yuan become slightly dizzy. If he was to make this black water drip onto his body, it would be enough to kill him. But he stopped thinking about it, a body armor instantly appeared outside Luo Yuan's body, and it made a burst of light, blocking the black water from the light.

However, the horror of Blackwater was far beyond the expectations of Luo Yuan. After being immersed in the light, it began to smack and erode the light.

A sudden pain appeared in his mind, the blue ring octopus's spiritual awareness attack had also hit Luo Yuan.

The spiritual awareness of the two was very powerful. Under such a fierce collision, Luo Yuan almost could not control his flying sword. Even so, Luo Yuan felt the sizzling in his mind, and the pain was difficult to bear.

Luo Yuan was greatly startled, if this situation continues, losing his life was only a matter of time. At this time, where the other ones were taken care of, the body of a monster at the beginning of the dacheng stage was thrown directly from his Qiankun bag, and then the body was directly exploded under the control of Luo Yuan.

The explosion of the body of the monster, the power of it was huge, even the blue ring octopus, also had three wrists directly blown off by this terrifying explosion. The huge wrists carried the broken arm that was blown off and quickly retracted underwater.

However, the black water around Luo Yuan did not weaken. It

still sizzled and eroded the glare of the armor of the body. At the same time, the other intact wrists were not obstructed, and still entangled with Luo Yuan.

Luo Yuan, who was trying to escape from the three wrists that was blown away, suddenly slammed into the spiritual awareness of the blue-ringed octopus again, and his mind became dizzy, but he could no longer escape the entanglement of the wrists and actively landed in the sea.

Entering the sea, Luo Yuan knew that it was not good, but it could not be helped. The water was definitely the world of blue-ring octopus, which it was better in than the air.

After a while, the three wrists that had just been blown up had already recovered. The eight wrists were like eight huge dragons. They were entwined in the side of Luo Yuan. From time to time, they attacked. In the blink of an eye, Luo Yuan was already poorly coping with it, and he was in a difficult situation.

A fierce, clear voice appeared in his ear “Senior, is chasing me very cool?” It was not known where Yang Chen was, but he said with a glimpse of his Spiritual Awareness thread.

Luo Yuan, who was already in an extremely difficult situation, heard the sound of Yang Chen and immediately remembered that all of this was caused by Yang Chen. If it wasn't for Yang Chen, how could he a master of the late dacheng stage become like this?

However, this kind of fierce battle, the moment he got distracted by his anger, a heavy wrist slammed on Luo Yuan's body, the body protection armor on his body, almost with no incident, directly turned into pieces.

“I am fighting with you!” In the end, Luo Yuan was still a master of the late dacheng stage. Under the circumstances that he knew that he was likely to be defeated, he also broke out with desperate courage.

At this time, the position of Luo Yuan's fall was not far from the huge head of the blue-ringed octopus. At this moment, Luo Yuan no longer allowed to keep his hands and directly released the bodies of all the dacheng stage monsters in his Qiankun bag. There have been more than a dozens of seizures along the way.

“Explode for me!” Luo Yuan screamed, a dozen or so corpses, just in the distance from the blue ring octopus head, exploded. A huge explosion appeared directly on the head of the blue-ringed octopus, and it opened a deep crater.

Chapter 259: Karma Ties

Affected by this, the blue-ringed octopus was even more furious. The tentacles were madly beaten twice, and Luo Yuan, who lost his armor, was only able to summon two other armors and it was instantly crushed.

The three pieces of armors were all broken, and there was no more of it to be used. Then, the next tentacles pumping was directly struck on Luo Yuan's body.

In the water, Luo Yuan who was a fire attribute cultivator was almost restrained, and it was impossible to run from the monsters in the water. Luo Yuan had no choice but to rely on his strong cultivation base to meet these three angry attacks.

Pū, a stream of blood was spouted from his mouth, and the surrounding sea water instantly turned into a blood red. The tremendous strength made Luo Yuan's bones broken by more than half, and his whole body was unable to float in the sea.

A few tentacles appeared quietly behind Luo Yuan, and rolled him up directly. On the other hand, Luo Yuan's body made a squeaking sound and directly fainted.

If it weren't for the formidable cultivation base of Luo Yuan, such injuries would have already killed him. But at this moment, his life and death was not his own to decide, but the angry blue ring octopus, the next moment he could be twisted into a beach of bolognese, and eaten as a tonic.

“Senior, your ascending is near, and being seriously injured, this younger generation is willing to help the senior!” Yang Chen's idea was directly passed to the blue ring octopus through the collision of his spiritual awareness and the Beast Controlling Secret Art.

The blue-ringed octopus's place was here, and the tribulations was coming, but a guy rushed over to make trouble, it's head was

blown up and had a huge opening on its forehead, which led to a great reduction in its strength. As a result, there was no certainty about the tribulations.

Yang Chen's idea, made the blue ring octopus greatly startled. Immediately it realized that this was the idea of the little shrimp that first came in. What was strange was that Yang Chen's idea was very clear, but the blue ring octopus does not even know where Yang Chen was.

There was such a skill, and it also had a beast's aura. Compared with Luo Yuan, it was easier for the blue ring octopus to accept this. The blue-ringed octopus just passed a thought over "How would you help me?"

"This younger generation junior has a bottle of Tenth Water True Essence, maybe a little supplement could cure Senior's injuries." Yang Chen's thought was passed over again, but the blue ring octopus still couldn't find Yang Chen's trace.

This kind of thing, such as Tenth Water True Essence, was not always available even in the sea. The blue-ring octopus certainly knew its good quality, knowing what the Tenth Water True Essence was. If there was a bottle of it, it could immediately restore the injury on its head. Maybe it could even further improve its cultivation base.

"What do you want?" The wise man speaks simply. Immediately, the blue-ringed octopus realized that if Yang Chen was talking like this. He must have something he needed, and it asked him straightforwardly.

In the world of the beasts, this exchange was not a problem at all, it was perfectly justified. There was nothing that could not be, this was the case.

"This younger generation junior only wants what he has." Yang Chen was also polite and directly raised his request. The things on Luo Yuan's body may have the Third Fire True Secret Art that he

wants. This was a must have for him, otherwise if it was missed, Yang Chen would definitely regret it for a lifetime.

“Take it!” The blue-ringed octopus’s tentacles were huge, but they were very flexible. They quickly took Luo Yuan’s Qiankun bag from his body and placed it directly in an obvious position.

Whozz, a flash of light flashed, the Qiankun bag lost its trace, but in the original position, there was a jade bottle covered completely with a Talisman.

A tentacle directly rolled up the jade bottle, and then sent it to the huge mouth of the blue ring octopus. The Talisman flew directly, and the jade bottle oozed an aura of the Tenth Water True Essence.

At this moment, there was no doubt from the blue-ringed octopus. The tentacles picked up the jade bottle and it was thrown directly into the mouth. At the same time, the body of Luo Yuan on the other tentacles was not wasted, the tentacles were stretched forward, and Luo Yuan’s body was also sent directly to the mouth. The body of the master of the late dacheng stage was definitely a great complement to the monster.

Compared with the time when Yu Kuixiesha(is there a better name) absorbed the Fifth Earth True Essence, the speed of the blue ring octopus when absorbing the Tenth Water True Essence was almost hundreds of times faster, only a few hours later, the body of the octopus exuded an aura of the Tenth Water True Essence.

The huge body of hundreds of thousands of feet was shrinking rapidly, and in a short period of time, it has been reduced by at least ten times. When monsters themselves passed through the Yin Fire Tribulation and entered the dacheng stage, their figure would shrink by a lot. But the blue-ringed octopus actually was hundreds of thousands of feet long, and it could be imagined how great the body at that time was.

The hugeness of marine life was by no means capable of being

measured by the size of terrestrial creatures. Even if it was reduced by ten times in size, the body of the blue-ringed octopus still had tens of thousands of lengths, and it was still a huge behemoth.

The deep pit on the head that was blown out by the bodies of more than a dozen dacheng stage monsters, has disappeared without a trace, and the improvement of the cultivation base could even be seen by Yang Chen.

“Senior, crossing such a tribulation, I am afraid that it is not very good to be big.” Yang Chen’s thought once again reached the mind of the blue ring octopus.

“What do you want?” The blue-ring octopus didn’t even ask Yang Chen what he meant. And asked the question that Yang Chen wanted to hear most.

“Making a good karma ties!” Yang Chen’s words made the blue ring octopus felt that it was very unexpected, did he want to help just to form some ties? This seemed a bit unreasonable.

“Maybe one day, this younger generation junior would also ascend, maybe senior would take care of me then.” Yang Chen’s thoughts came again, and along with this thought, there was a Transformation Secret Art.

“That is a deal!” The blue-ringed octopus saw the value of the Transformation Secret Art at a glance, and agreed to it directly.

Such a huge size was also a weakness of the blue-ring octopus. The bigger the figure, the more troublesome the control was, and the larger the scope of the Wind Tribulation, the less resistant it was.

The Transformation Secret Art could make the monster have a human figure, even if it was a powerful human figure, it was tens of thousands of times smaller than the body shape of the blue ring octopus. The benefits for the blue ring octopus were simply unbeatable.

The more powerful the beast, the more the Transformation Secret Art was. It took almost a month for Yu Kuishesha to master the Transformation Secret Art, it was almost two or three days until the old tree demon did. But on the side of the blue ring octopus, this speed was refreshed again.

Just a few hours later, the huge body of the blue-ring octopus began to change again. The eight huge tentacles quickly contracted and quickly turned into limbs. The huge head of the hill also began to shrink, and the body of tens of thousands of feet suddenly It became a normal human form, the scene was more and more shocking by the minute.

When all the changes were completed, a beautiful woman appeared in Yang Chen's eyes.

On the body of the beautiful woman, there were some gorgeous blue rings, just like the tattoo on the body. It looked pleasing to the eye, but it also had a very strong warning.

It seemed that she had not been accustomed to the human body. She was very curious to see the beautiful from reaching the bottom of the sea from time to time. After waiting for a long time, it seemed that she got used to the new body and then realized that something was not right.

There was no half-length silk on her whole body. It doesn't matter when she was originally a monster, but now it was a bit awkward. After the beauty looked down at herself, she shook her body slightly. Then, a set of aqua blue palace dress appeared on her body, covering the beautiful body that made people heart beat.

"Maybe the senior could look at these things, they should be helpful in the wind tribulation." Yang Chen's thoughts came again, and the scene of the time when he faced the Heaven Seizing Pill Tribulation soon appeared in the mind of the beautiful woman.

It seemed that she did not expect such a memory picture from

Yang Chen . It was as if the beautiful woman got a treasure, she closed her eyes and remembered the picture that Yang Chen passed over for a long time. Then opened her eyes.

“Thank you!” This time, the beauty opened her mouth to talk, it was a sincere thanks. With the picture of the Heaven Seizing Pill Tribulation, it was almost like she had half of the experience of the tribulations, and the combination of the Tenth Water True Essence and the Transformation Secret Art, plus these, had already given her about 90% chance of success.

Even before the injury from Luo Yuan, the beauty did not have a 30% chance of crossing the tribulation, but now, she had 90% chance, which was exactly from what Yang Chen gave her. The monster was unaware of good or bad intentions, the first reaction of the beauty was gratitude.

“This younger generation junior is Yang Chen, how is this senior called?” At this point, Yang Chen could finally feel confident and bold. The world of the beast was far simpler than humans, especially in the mortal world.

“Lan, Lan Ying!” said the beautiful girl in the court lady style of dress, her voice was very crisp and sweet, and passed over in the sea, it was interesting to listen to.

“I pay respect to Senior Lan Ying!” Yang Chen rushed to Lan Ying and then greeted her with a sigh of relief “I wish the success of the Senior in crossing the tribulation and ascending!”

“Thanks for your words!” Lan Ying also slightly bowed to return a courtesy to Yang Chen, and then she surprisingly asked “Are you not a calf?”

“This younger generation junior had the chance to learn the cultivation method of the beasts.” In a sentence, it explained the current situation of Yang Chen.

In fact, now, whether Yang Chen was a beast, Lan Ying didn't

care. Regardless of what Yang Chen was, Lan Ying was very grateful.

“That master was after you?” Lan Ying had of course found that Yang Chen was the insignificant little bug that first rushed into her territory. It was easy to guess the answer when Luo Yuan came in.

“This younger generation junior is afraid so!” Yang Chen did not deny it and acknowledged with a bow, and then he expressed his gratitude “Thank you for your help.”

“Don’t worry about it!” Lan Ying waved her hand, it was no longer meaningful to say what was the cause and effect. The important thing was that if there was no such thing, maybe Yang Chen would not give her the Tenth Water True Essence and Transformation Secret Art, relative to Yang Chen she got more.

“You are so versatile, but it is rare to be able to run to my domain!” Lan Ying interestingly looked at Yang Chen, and strangely asked.

“Actually, this younger generation junior had lost his way.” Yang Chen said this words, Lan Ying could not help but become stunned. It was really rare for people who were lost to be so far away. Of course, Yang Chen was not really lost, but it was easier to let Lan Ying accept this.

“Would you like me to point the way back for you?” Lan Ying head glimpsed, and a fascinating look appeared on her face, and asked with a smile.

“Senior if you are willing to give pointers, this younger generation junior can’t ask for more!” Yang Chen also smiled and said. To tell the truth, even if Yang Chen had been in this sea area, it would take more than five years to get back to the familiar world without knowing it.

“I don’t know which direction you were coming in from.” Unexpectedly, Lan Ying also didn’t know the direction Yang Chen

came from, but she immediately pointed to the another direction “But starting from here, there may be less in this direction. The two-year journey is a large land, all of which are demons.”

“Demon Beast Continent?” Yang Chen’s face slightly changed.

“Well, yes, it is said that is the name it is called, most of them are demon and monster, and there are very few of your Doa sect people.” Lan Ying became startled, it seemed that Yang Chen knew this name unexpectedly “I used to go there when I was young. In a few days, there was nothing else besides killing and killing. It was very boring and I came back.”

The Demon Beast Continent, Yang Chen knew that many powerful guys in the spiritual world ascended from there. In his previous life, Yang Chend hid here and there and did not dare to go to this place. He couldn’t think that this accident brought him here directly.

“Thanks senior for pointing!” Knowing the approximate location, Yang Chen also solemnly thanked Lan Ying.

“With your current cultivation base, I am afraid if go there..., there are so many fierce individuals there.” It was very strange for Lan Ying that with Yang Chen’s cultivation base he could escape here. It was necessary to know that Luo Yuan was worse and was also a master of the late dacheng stage. It’s a breeze to chase down a little guy in the foundation stage.

However, thinking of Yang Chen’s move could make her unable to find his ability, Lan Ying felt relieved. If he could not defeat them, he could run away to escape.

“On this road, there are a lot of powerful guys, whether you go to the demon continent or go back to your original place, I am afraid it will be a little troublesome.” Lan Ying smiled and said “My old self has a reputation here, take this, at least in the millions of miles, there will be no guys who dare not give me face.”

When she said this, Lan Ying handed over a blue-and-white bead, it was crystallized by Lan Ying with her own demon power. It had Lan Ying's Spiritual Awareness Imprint, and it was the representative of Lan Ying's status.

"Many thanks senior!" Yang Chen respectfully reached out and took it. With this bead, in the waters of this million miles, Yang Chen could almost walk sideways, he no longer had to worry if the monsters would threaten him.

This was a big gift. Moreover, even without this, the blue pearl itself was an extremely rare demon power crystal. It could be felt at the beginning, it was not just a symbol of the body.

"This younger generation junior still has a presumptuous request, but also ask the senior to answer." Yang Chen unceremoniously put away the beads, so that Lan Ying seemed to be more assured to hear Yang Chen talking, very casually asked "What request?"

"When senior is facing the tribulations, this younger generation junior like to attend the ceremony!" Yang Chen very officially requested from Lan Ying.

Chapter 260: Close-up View Of The Ascension Ceremony

A close look at a dacheng stage master's tribulations and ascending, this was what many cultivators dreamed of. Although Yang Chen faced tribulations in his previous life, he had not really seen it from the perspective of a bystander, so he made such a request.

Moreover, if Yang Chen could observe it at close range, the experience from Lan Ying would definitely give great reference to the masters of the Pure Yang Palace, even if it was Yang Chen, it was also very tempting.

For some people to watch the ceremony when they were crossing tribulation, unless they were close relatives or fully trusted people. Otherwise, no one would agree. The reason why Yang Chen said that this was a presumptuous request, it was because of this reason.

Once it was a hostile person, attacking at the time of tribulation would at least reduce the success rate to an unpredictable level. Yang Chen certainly understood this truth, so after saying this request, Yang Chen immediately said something.

“Senior, this younger generation junior gave the senior the Tenth Water True Essence, and gave the senior the Transformation Secret Art, even let the senior to observe the scene of the Heaven Seizing Pill Tribulation, and improve the cultivation base of the senior after the calculation of yours.” Talking with the monster, sometimes directly needed one point, no need to turn so many bends, Yang Chen also knew this.

“I didn't say I disagree.” Lan Ying smiled and showed a huge self-confidence in her look: “But also, I don't look down on you, but with your cultivation, even if I am crossing tribulation, if want to plot against me it would not be an easy thing.”

After the morning of Yang Chen's acceptance of the bead of Lan Ying, it seemed that the attitude of Lan Ying had changed. Perhaps it was because of the bead, Lan Ying could find Yang Chen's position anytime and anywhere, no longer the uncontrollable state that Yang Chen could disappear under her spiritual awareness detection.

Yang Chen also knew the deep purpose of Lan Ying for giving him this demon power crystal, but he didn't say anything, and directly installed it in his own Qiankun bag, so that Lan Ying could find his position at any time. This was a double insurance. Without this, Lan Ying would not fully trust Yang Chen.

"Thank you for your understanding!" Yang Chen hurriedly thanked her. Lan Ying said that she agreed to his own courtesy.

"However, when I am crossing tribulation, I can't maintain your integrity." Lan Ying followed by saying "How close you can come, would rely on your strength."

When the old tree demon passed the Yin Fire Tribulation, even the elders of the Pure Yang Palace could not come too close. This time, the Wind Tribulation was more than a hundred times more powerful than the Yin Fire Tribulation. With his cultivation of the foundation stage, if he desired to observe it at close range, it was indeed difficult.

However, this was not a big problem for Yang Chen. The deeper the cultivation base of the person who was crossing the tribulation, the smaller the scope of control over the Wind Tribulation. Second, in the deep sea, the power of seawater transmission was limited. Yang Chen had a golden bell body armor, plus in this thick sea water, he believed that he could endure.

Anyway, as long as he was not too close, Yang Chen still has a chance to observe this rare wonder of this world.

Before Lan Ying, was still somewhat disturbed, over the lack of grasping of the tribulation, had been conserving her strength, and

waited for the tribulations. At the moment, after these few things were given to her by Yang Chen, it made her full of confidence, just waiting for the coming of the tribulation, but this was expected to come.

The changes in the sky quickly spread to the bottom of the sea. The fierce spiritual shock made Yang Chen unable to stay in the same place again. He took the shuttle and quickly retreated, and he retreated until he felt that it was almost the same. Then he stopped and his spiritual awareness completely recovered. His eyes fixed closely at the movement over there.

Despite being in the deep sea, the mighty power of the Wind Tribulation was still shining like the day where Lan Ying was located. Even if Yang Chen was so far away, his current eyesight could still see it clearly.

The first Wind Tribulation began to fall, and Lan Ying seemed to very easily handle it. Although it took a long time to absorb the Tenth Water True Essence, it had completely transformed her body. It's just this change that made her cultivation base increase by at least half.

Looking at how Lan Ying so easily handled the first Wind Tribulation, Yang Chen knew that he judged well, and made a distance forward to make himself see more clearly. As long as his spiritual awareness didn't spread out, he won't be affected by the Wind Tribulation. Yang Chen was sure of this.

The second Wind Tribulation, Yang Chen found that if he relied a bit too far ahead, he would have rushed into the scope of the Wind Tribulation.

The silent Wind Tribulation, compared to the mammoth Thunder Tribulation, he did not know how many times greater it was. Even if Yang Chen had already had the experience of crossing tribulation, he was still shocked by how terrifying it was. With his current cultivation, it was indeed a bit of a big burden to observe

this level of tribulation at a close range.

Fortunately, the powerful power of the golden bell helped Yang Chen to easily block the aftermath. Yang Chen did not take the risk of direct exploration into the scope of the tribulation. The Wind Tribulation did not affect Yang Chen, but the aftermath that was swept over, and did not hurt much.

Even so, this kind of Wind Tribulation from the inside out still washed Yang Chen's body all over again. At that moment, Yang Chen even thought that he was also affected by the Wind Tribulation, and in his heart, he almost released his spiritual awareness.

Fortunately, Yang Chen's mentality was strong, and he resisted the discomfort and resisted past it. After the Wind Tribulation has passed through his body, it felt that his whole body was up and down, as if it had been meticulously massaged once, and his whole body became comfortable.

He didn't withstand the power of the Wind Tribulation, but he enjoyed the process of squatting to a Wind Tribulation that he almost didn't have. Of course, he felt very comfortable afterwards. At the same time, it was also a process of condensing his cultivation base and discharging his impurities.

After discovering this, Yang Chen stayed in the place and stopped acting, waiting for Lan Ying to begin to pass the third, fourth, until the ninth Wind Tribulation.

The power of the following Heavenly Tribulation was getting bigger and bigger, but Lan Ying had always been more than enough to handle it. Only in the last one, did the relaxed look of Lan Ying changed a little.

This time, it was also the most powerful. The whole body of Lan Ying seemed to be burned up. In the blazing fire, the body of Lan Ying seemed to be more exquisite. After a dazzling radiance of light, the surroundings suddenly recovered its calm, as if nothing had happened.

Lan Ying in the distance, the blue palace dress on her body had disappeared without a trace, but the body was not damaged. The nine wind tribulation, only let her lose a set of clothes, she was also a strong person among the strong.

“You are so lucky!” Lan Ying body swayed, it was not known where the change set of blue palace dress appeared from, then slowly floated in front of Yang Chen: “I believe, I can be in the spirit world waiting for you.”

“Congratulations to the senior!” Yang Chen was face full of smiles, it was a completely happy look, congratulating Lan Ying.

“Speaking of which, it should be I that should be thanking you for your help.” Lan Ying was also a full smile, and bowed to Yang Chen. This was not the exaggeration of Lan Ying. The power of the tribulation was clear to her. If there was no Tenth Water True Essence and Transformation Secret Art from Yang Chen, this time it may have ended badly, Lan Ying returned the courtesy immediately.

“Bring my demon power crystal!, ... floated to the side of Yang Chen, Lan Ying reached out and asked Yang Chen for the demon power crystal.

Yang Chen did not dare to neglect, hurriedly took out the blue bead from his Qiankun bag and handed it over.

Lan Ying took over the beads, and the demon power was emitted. For a long time, the bead emitted a strong ray of light. It was only a moment of time, the bead became a small circle, but the demon power above it was more pure.

“With this, it is estimated that you will not have anything to worry about in the sea, and those fellows will not dare to provoke you.” Lan Ying said as she handed back the bead.

Yang Chen fully believed in this sentence. After all a demon crystallization that has been tempered by a master who has passed

the Wind Tribulation and ascending, if the monsters in the sea dared to provoke, then they were purely seeking death. Not to mention the sea, he was afraid that even if he was to return to the earth, there were not many people who would have this guts.

“If you want to go to the Demon Beast Continent, it is best not to violently reveal your dao sect disciple status.” She would be ascending soon, Lan Ying spoke a little more persuasion “The demons there, no matter where you are from, when they meet the dao sect disciples, they will only kill you, they will nothing else ...

“Thank you for your reminder senior!” Yang Chen thanked her again, and saw the blue light around her body. He said again

“Congratulations to senior”...

In the surrounding sky, a violent wave of spiritual power came, and the body of Lan Ying had become more and more blurred, slowly disappearing in front of Yang Chen.

On the bottom of the sea where the two were located, a high beam of light rises up and went straight into the sky. With the light column as the center, the huge spiritual power dissipates like a wave and spread around. He believed that within a million miles of the sea any life in it could feel it.

Yang Chen had no idea how to describe his own trip to the sea. On the surface, it seemed that Yang Chen was very distressed, and it was difficult to escape from the chasing of the master. But now, Yang Chen really knew that after the bitter taste came the sweet taste.

Luo Yuan who was chasing after him, whether he was a master of the late dacheng stage , or from an aristocratic family, had now become Lan Ying’s meal, and was dead.

The powerful blue-ring octopus Lan Ying, with the help of Yang Chen, successfully passed the Wind Tribulation and ascended to the spiritual world. As Yang Chen said, this was a good karma of

the future. Ascending to the spiritual world, and there were several acquaintances, that kind of benefit was not something that mortal people could imagine

Nothing else was said. It was the crystal of the demon power of Lan Ying, together with Yang Chen's Beast Controlling Secret Art, it was absolutely possible for Yang Zhen to communicate with most of the monsters. The guy who could help the monsters to ascend, even if the monsters hated the Dao Sect(s) people, would they hate him?

Luo Yuan's Qiankun bag was already in the hands of Yang Chen. Before when Lan Ying was here, Yang Chen was also embarrassed to rummage it. Now that Lan Ying had ascended, and there would be no monsters around for a short time to disturb him, he just looked to see if there was something that he wanted.

What Yang Chen was most concerned about was that Third Fire True Secret Art. Originally, he did not expect to have clues. However, Luo Yuan's pursuit made him test his doubts. In the secret plane, there was no other thing besides the Third Fire True Essence, which could make a guy in the late dacheng stage concerned so much. Of course, the focus of the search was also other cultivation methods like jade slips.

What surprised Yang Chen was that Luo Yuan's Qiankun bag had only a dozen pieces of jade slips. After Yang Chen's exploration with his spiritual awareness, he was disappointed.

Some of these jade slips were recording of pill recipes. Two of them were recording of some refining materials and techniques. The rest seemed to be Luo Yuan's cultivation law. Among them, there was no such thing as the Third Fire True Secret Art that Yang Chen wanted.

Could it be that Luo Yuan was not looking for the Third Fire True Essence? How could this be? Was it true that the Pure Flame True Fire was not worth making a master of the dacheng stage risking

the fallout with the Blue Cloud Sect?

However, there was no such thing as a Third Fire True Secret Art in the Qiankun bag in front of him. Maybe Luo Yuan had already memorized the Third Fire True Secret Art, and destroyed the material it was recorded on?

This was quite possible, it could be seen that Luo Yuan was able to wait around a small martial art sect that had been annihilated for tens of thousands of years. It must have been the same thing that was passed down from the ancestors. This kind of thing was destroyed by Luo Yuan. The possibility of falling was really too low.

In any case, Yang Chen wanted to find the Third Fire True Essence, but he couldn't find it. Under this situation, Yang Chen could only give up. However, as a master of the late dacheng stage, there were still a lot of good things in the Qiankun bag. There was no such thing as a Third Fire True Essence, but these things were also able to interest Yang Chen .

The flying sword that could cut the tentacles of Lan Ying by half was in it. It was already a Life Source Flying Sword. When Luo Yuan was caught in a coma by Lan Ying, the flying sword automatically flew back to Luo Yuan's Qiankun bag, but now it was obtained by Yang Chen.

A powerful Third Fire Flying Sword, with good materials and exquisite refining, made Yang Chen stunned. This was the highest-grade flying sword that Yang Chen had seen in the mortal world. Even the flying swords in the dome hall couldn't match this one.

With Yang Chen's standard, this flying sword could be applied to the Third Fire flying sword in the Yin Yang Five Phases flying sword that Yang Chen needs. As long as Yang Chen relied on the basis of this flying sword, he would be able to refine it!

However, Yang Chen would not do that. Yang Chen's fixed flying sword was the bright ray sword that his master refined. The bright

ray sword was of great significance to Yang Chen, and Yang Chen would never easily replace it.

Even if this Third Fire Flying Sword was destroyed, and the material of this flying sword is used to supplement and perfect the bright ray sword, Yang Chen would never give up the bright ray sword. Of course, this was the intention of Yang Chen after seeing this flying sword. If Luo Yuan was alive, and he found that his most precious flying sword had become a perfect material for a low-level flying sword. It was not known how much blood he would spit out.

While Yang Chen was looking into Luo Yuan's Qiankun bag here. The head of the Pure Yang Palace was now making a decision that could not be decided easily.

Pure Yang Palace had found that Luo Yuan was a master of a long-standing family, but this didn't not dispel the anger of the Pure Yang Palace. Who ever dared to chase the Pure Yang Palace disciple, should be prepared to bear the anger of Pure Yang Palace.

"Luo clan, destroy the sect!" The master of the palace announced this decision categorically. Even if Luo Yuan came back one day, the Pure Yang Palace should let Luo Yuan know that it was not without any price to chase the Pure Yang Palace disciple.

Chapter 261: Returning To Pure Yang Palace

Yang Chen had already looked through Luo Yuan's Qiankun bag. In addition to some advanced materials, there were some spirit stones.

It could be seen from the things inside the Qiankun bag. This guy was someone who had a heart for cultivation, and he was still a very determined person. Otherwise, he would not be able to wait around the small sect for so many years, and also followed Yang Chen, chasing him for millions of miles in a five-year journey.

Originally, Yang Chen regretted that he could not find the Third Fire True Secret Art, but after a while, Yang Chen adjusted to it. How many secret manual there was, was no more exciting than being able to live. As long as people were still alive, there would always be opportunities in the future.

If he couldn't afford it and let it go, it would be the correct mentality. Otherwise, if he stick to a foreign object, he would push himself into a corner.

It was kind to say that Luo Yuan was like this. When he believed that there was only something that could make himself breakthrough his cultivation base, he actually puts a shackle on himself. There should be many kinds of solutions, but he was limited to one direction, and the final road would only get narrower and narrower.

Yang Chen, who had his previous life experience in cultivation, would never let himself fall into the limits of this cultivation path.

After Lan Ying ascended into the blue sky, Yang Chen began to decide whether he should return to his original road, or if he should go to the Demon Beast Continent to make a turn.

He had never been to the Demon Beast Continent before, but

Yang Chen still heard some major events from some of the fellows who ascended from there. If he calculate it now, there was really nothing big happening in the recent Demon Beast Continent, and it would take hundreds of years to happen.

Yang Chen deliberately wanted to go to the demon continent to hone his skills, but after weighing the balance, he still gave up this plan for the time being. His own cultivation was not enough to hold sway in the demon continent. Secondly, when he was chased for so long, his master would definitely be anxious, he had go back and let her master feel better.

Looking for the direction, Yang Chen called out the shuttle, still rushing in the direction at the highest speed. On this road, it would take at least five years to reach the land, Yang Chen was not planning to waste time.

The formerly collected Tenth Water True Essence was given to Lan Ying. On the road, he must use the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup to collect some and use it for his own cultivation. Moreover, during the past five years of escape, he had been spending it in tension, and he had not cultivated to improve himself. He would just have to cultivate on the way back.

Presumably after this cultivation of chasing and returning, his current cultivation could be consolidated very thoroughly. After going back, he could concentrate on cultivating, and attack the peak foundation stage and even the Solidifying Core..

With the demon power crystal of Lan Ying, Yang Chen could rest easy in the sea. However, since there was the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup, Yang Chen directly collected the demon power crystal.

Anyway, other monsters couldn't find him with spiritual awareness, and he doesn't have to hold the demon power crystal that was condensed by an ascended expert. Perhaps he would encounter a strong guy who was courageous to make a move, maybe he would even try to snatch it, it would not be great.

Along the way, after the waves were received, Yang Chen received enough water to really care about the things in the ocean. After setting the direction, Yang Chen sat cultivating in the shuttle. After the cultivation, he read the jade slips that was obtained, which was very fulfilling.

Time flew, and five years came in a moment. In front of Yang Chen, he had already seen the land that appeared in the distant horizon. For ten years, Yang Chen has been in the sea for ten years and finally returned to the original world.

Back on the land, Yang Chen did not stop, and rushed directly to the Pure Yang Palace. His master was estimated to be flustered by now, he should let her know firstly that he was still safe.

“Yang Chen?” Everyone in the Pure Yang Palace, upon seeing Yang Chen firstly, rub their eyes as if by prior arrangement, confirming whether he was real, and then they became surprised and screamed.

Being chased by a guy in the late dacheng stage, everyone thought that Yang Chen would never come back. Unexpectedly, after more than a decade, Yang Chen actually appeared in front of them.

Yang Chen refused to talk to the people until he met his own teacher, and rushed to the small courtyard of Gao Yue. He haven't seen his master for more than a decade, and he didn't know how his master was doing now.

From far away, Yang Chen felt his master's aura. After the aftermath of the wind tribulation, Yang Chen's scope of exploration had not changed by much, but the sensitivity had increased rapidly. It used to be a very subtle aura ,Now it's like a torch in the dark. Bright.

“Master!” Yang Chen's voice rushed directly into the ear of Gao Yue that was retreating, giving her a very unreal feeling.

Since knowing that Yang Chen was chased by Luo Yuan who was in the late dacheng stage, Gao Yue's heart has been hanging in the air and never let go. This had been the case until now.

Until the day before more than five years ago, the head of the palace was angry and issued an order to kill his family. Gao Yue has never had a moment that she wanted to kill so much, her anger could reach sky, letting her become the first person to enter the Luo clan, all the family members seen in front of her eyes, were like enemies she hated to the bone, an object of killing.

On the day of the killing of the big family in the Luo family, Gao Yue's performance even made many people who were familiar with her afraid. Her previous temper was a little bit hot, but it was a little mild and suddenly she became a god of killing. When she came out from the Luo family, Gao Yue's whole body was blood red.

After returning, Gao Yue retired and did not see outsiders. Only she knew that she was in retreat, but she had no retreat.

It seemed that she still had a lot of words, she wanted to tell Yang Chen and there were many things that she wanted to share with Yang Chen, but it seemed to be all too late. Everyone understood that a kid who was in the foundation stage was chased by a master of the late dacheng stage, what would be the result.

If she knew this early, she wouldn't have been guarding against Yang Chen like she did. Although Gao Yue had already felt that her heart had been stolen by her own apprentice after she had a double cultivation with Yang Chen, she had always forced herself to suppress herself and did not show it.

If Yang Chen could appear in front of herself again, Gao Yue would tell Yang Chen that no matter what Yang Chen wanted to do, she would not hesitate to agree.

"Master, I am back!" Yang Chen's voice once again appeared in Gao Yue's ear. This time Gao Yue listened clearly, it was real, not a

dream.

“Yang Chen!” Gao Yue didn’t even have time to open the door . She broke the door directly and rushed out. Standing in front of Yang Chen, looking at Yang Chen with a smile on her face in the yard,her tears could no longer be helped but flow out.

“Master, you are thin!” Looking at Gao Yue’s almost faltering figure, Yang Chen said with a distressed heart.

“Yang Chen!” Gao Yue finally confirmed that standing in front of her was really Yang Chen,it was not a dream, not an illusion, but a real Yang Chen, she don’t know how, but her heart suddenly loosened, people seem to be tall when floated into the sky, her legs could no longer hold her weight and fell softly.

“Master!” Yang Chen was shocked. He hurried forward and helped the soft body of his master. With both of his hands, his master was lifted by her waist and rushed into the room, carefully placed her on the bed.

Because of the surprise, Gao Yue had fainted. Yang Chen carefully diagnosed and found that it was just a psychological attack. It was not a big problem, and he was relieved.

Sitting on the edge of the bed, Yang Chen directly peeled off a Profound Yang Fruit and gently sent it into the mouth of Gao Yue. Then, a large cup of Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid was carefully poured into the mouth of Gao Yue.

His master was definitely anxious, just let her take a chance to sleep a long time, and Yang Chen of the province also had to explain the origin of Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid everywhere.

Listening to his master’s breathing had slowly become normal, Yang Chen took a deep breath and was completely relieved. At this time, Yang Chen had time to carefully look at his master’s pretty face.

Compared with a decade ago, Gao Yue lost a lot of fat. For a person who cultivated, it was not easy to change the face. Gao Yue was as thin as the average person. It was obviously the result of psychological and physical exhaustion.

Looking at his master's face that finally calmed down, Yang Chen's heart was filled with tenderness, and he could not help but put his hand on his master's pretty face.

The figure of his master's maid appeared outside the door, and Yang Chen turned to the maid and smiled and said hello. The maid just heard the movement and came over. Suddenly, Yang Chen and her greeted each other. It was like she was immobilization by witchcraft. She stood in the same place, stunned and could no longer move.

Shaking his head, Yang Chen smiled a little. It seemed that he suddenly came back to make many people feel unbelievable. This also showed how correct it was to get back in time. If he went to the demon continent before coming, he wouldn't know how his master would look like by then.

After a while, the maid responded and apologized to Yang Chen again, but the color of her face also showed that she was happy to see Yang Chen return safely.

Yang Chen told her to guard his master, then he got up and went to visit the Palace Master Zhang Jiao. In the past ten years, it had been enough to make the palace master extremely anxiously.

Almost the same as most people who saw Yang Chen's reaction. When Yang Chen appeared in front of himself, the first reaction he made was to blink and rub his eyes.

He could not be blamed for it, this thing was really amazing, being chased by a master of the late dacheng stage, not to mention that Yang Chen, was a junior in the foundation stage, even if he was a master of the Yuanying stage, he was not necessarily able to come back alive. After thinking about it for ten years, Yang Chen

was still living in front of him, how could he not be surprised?

“Greetings Palace Master Zhang Jiao.!” Yang Chen was still the same as before, so that the head of the palace was quickly awakened from his state of shock.

After all, it was a master of the Yuanying stage, and his mentality was also high, and the speed of acceptance was also fast. The Palace Master Zhang Jiao even refused to say anything. Now he stepped forward and took Yang Chen to look at him up and down. After a long time, he believed that he was not mistaken, but he couldn't help but ask “Are you okay?”

“This disciple is fine!” Yang Chen smiled and replied “Thank you for your care!”

“It's okay if you are fine!” The Palace Master Zhang Jiao finally responded, and his face smiled and blossomed immediately “Come, come and ask all elders to come to the chamber of deliberation !”

Soon, the elders rushed to the Chamber of Deputies, and when they saw Yang Chen, all of them were shocked completely. Yang Chen's return made the elders not know how to describe their feelings. In particular, Yang Chen's master ancestor Wang Yong was simply so happy that he almost jump up, without the demeanor of a Yuanying stage master.

“Yang Chen,where is Luo Yuan who chased you?” After the people sat down, they immediately asked questions that everyone wanted to know.

Although the Pure Yang Palace destroyed the Luo clan, but never relaxed one day, Luo Yuan was a master of the late dacheng stage. Once he returned, and he found that his family was destroyed and would never give up. Pure Yang Palace even wanted to use the resources of the 100,000 mountains, and hire a master.

“The disciple is back.” Yang Chen smiled and replied in an understatement: “He naturally can't come back anymore.”

Boom, although the vague people already had this hunch, but when they heard the news from Yang Chen, they were still full of shock, no one dared to believe.

It's not that everyone doesn't trust this disciple. It's really a big gap between the two, so big that people can't believe that there would be any miracles.

When Elder Wu Xiong was in Immortal Falling Well, he could control a flying sword of a certain foundation stage to kill the flying sword master without even having to come forward. The huge difference in this level was definitely not compensated by luck.

Luo Yuan was very unlucky. He encountered a foundation stage junior whose spiritual awareness cultivation base was in the middle of the Yuanying stage. Not to mention Yang Chen's flying sword, and being able to track Yang Chen's location, it's already a good fortune. Even the attack of his spiritual awareness had no effect on Yang Chen. His own flying sword could not catch up with the speed of the shuttle. It could be said that he was consumed by Yang Chen.

Chapter 262: Rewards

“What?” The people have not recovered completely from the shock of the trap set by Yang Chen for the late dacheng stage master, and they were unable to sit still by the news of Yang Chen.

“Are you sure of it.” The master of the palace waved his big hand, blocking the noise of the elders, and directly told Yang Chen.

“Yes, palace master!” Yang Chen did not scorn, and began to talk.

Now all the high-level members of the Pure Yang Palace seem to have been twisted into a rope, and all the elders voted in favor of Yang Chen’s murder and revenge on the Luo family.

Only for this point, Yang Chen would inherit those feelings and repay it, now the elders, including Gui Shanyou, no one could stop the master of the late dacheng stage, this showed clearly that everyone puts Yang Chen’s safety above all else. Even at the risk of destroying the sect, they wanted to avenge Yang Chen.

Another point was that Pure Yang Palace and several other sectarian alliances have mastered the 100,000 mountains for more than a decade. In the past ten years, several sects have completely controlled this place, and the income has gradually stabilized. They could free their hands and busy themselves with other things.

The Blue Vault Mountain Immortal’s Cave was originally prepared by Yang Chen for the sect. It was originally thought that he would take a while to report it to the sect. Now the time was ripe, and Yang Chen would also take it out.

Naturally, the excuse was that he saw the record in an ancient book, so he found the place. As for going with Gao Yue, Gongsun Ling, Yu Kui and Xie Sha, he was completely curious at the time. As for why the few people have not reported it to sect so far, it was also the meaning of Yang Chen.

No one would investigate why the people did not report it at that time. Yang Chen had already said very clearly that he was afraid for the sect. What everyone was interested in was the layout of the Immortal's Cave.

When Yang Chen could be graded, each level had a corresponding safety line, ample spiritual power, a large number of houses, and also a large number of monsters, which could be used as a battlefield for disciples. The elders suddenly looked like golden eyes, hated they could not to start now, go to the cave.

After controlling the 100,000 mountains behind the scenes, Pure Yang Palace began to enter a stage of rapid development, and their resources and manpower began to enrich. The high-level members were also worried about the fact that the mountain gate of Meiqing Mountain was too small to carry more and more disciples. It was impossible to think that a mountain gate that was more than ten times larger than the current Meishan Mountain would be delivered to them out of the thin air.

The elders could no longer use shocked to describe their feelings. It seemed that in addition to their shock, they have an extra layer of embarrassment. Such a large number of masters did not achieve these things, but a disciple of the foundation stage had considered it, and even had completed it, this was why the big shots were so embarrassed?

“Yang Chen, you speak honestly.” An elder, Gao Shiyan, who hadn't talked to Yang Chen before, asked: “What is your cultivation base now?”

When they heard the question of Elder Gao, everyone seemed to be confused. They all looked at Yang Chen curiously, waiting for Yang Chen's answer.

“This disciple now has a Foundation Stage Eight Layer Cultivation Base, Elder!” Yang Chen honestly said that he was at the highest level of Fourth Fire spirit power.

Yang Chen said the truth, several elders turned out to have an expression of disbelief. It was no wonder that it was simply impossible to build a foundation Stage Eight Layer and want to escape from the chase of a master in the late dacheng stage.

“The disciples have had some other adventures, so there is a very fast magic weapon in my hands.” The shuttle had appeared many times, and Yang Chen does not have to hide it. He directly summoned the shuttle, letting the elders to inspect it.

In the Chamber of Deliberation of the Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen did not have to worry about the elders who would be eager to come after his magic weapon.

The elders took the shuttle first, and after careful exploration, they were handed over to another elder. The shuttle turned a big circle in the hands of the elders, and then returned to Yang Chen’s hands.

At this time, there was no one who didn’t believe in Yang Chen’s words. As soon as their spiritual awareness explored the shuttle, everyone knew that if it was them who utilised it, the speed of the shuttle would be unbelievable. Such a flying tool, a master using flying sword not being able to catch up could be understandable.

“If every disciple of the foundation period has your ability, then we can do nothing with these old bones, as long as we practice.” The speaker was Gao Shiyan, who was just beginning to ask questions. His words have caused the unanimous approval of several elders.

“Thank elder for your praise!” After Yang Chen’s modest statement, this again threw a message.

“The disciples have sorted out some of the jade slips found in the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal’s Cave, and they have been marked according to the categories.” As he said, Yang Chen took a lot of jade slips out of his Qiankun bag: “This is ten thousand years before. The inheritance of the former sect, the disciples did not

dare to specialize, but also asked the palace lord and elders to dispose of them.”

Looking at the tens of thousands of jade slips that suddenly appeared on the ground floor of the Chamber of Deputies, the top level members of the Pure Yang Palace was once again in shock. He completely got the inheritance of an ancient martial art sect, this was simply something that was only in the legend, and it was a good thing to open the protagonist mode plus super plug-in, which could even fall on the head of the Pure Yang Palace?

“Most of these are cultivation merit law.” Yang Chen briefly introduced: “However, the theory of these cultivation merit law are from thousands of years ago, and there are still some small differences, and only the elders can identify those which could be cultivated directly. Those which need a little modification before being cultivated.”

Although Yang Chen could do the same thing, but Yang Chen does not want to pull himself too high, and second, Yang Chen does not want to fall into this tedious work. The sect has a research martial arts hall, it was the professionals who could do this, and it was appropriate to give it to them.

“In addition, there are a large number of jade articles about the alchemy refining formation and other aspects. This disciple is still sorting it out.” Yang Chen did not take it all at once, but left a part “When this disciple have sorted it all out, i will hand it over to the sect.”

“There are a lot of miscellaneous books. These estimates have to wait for a while.” Yang Chen does not converge in front of the elders, and there was no fear in him “This disciple will study slowly, and the time may be longer.”

This was what Yang Chen discovered. These things were originally owned by Yang Chen. Even if Yang Chen didn’t bring it out, everyone couldn’t say a word. Now Yang Chen gave it all, and

for the group of high-level executives, it was another surprise.

When Yang Chen came back, he immediately made a series of surprises, and even let a few well-informed high-level elders not be used to it.

A mountain gate suitable for the development of the Pure Yang Palace for at least several thousand years, the inheritance of a martial arts sect, these two points, have already let the Palace Master Zhang Jiao and Elders not know what to say.

Only Wang Yong, was happy and had a self-satisfied face, no one was more happy than him. The achievement of the disciple was the glory of the master ancestors. Now among all the elders, was there any master ancestor who were more glorious than his old self?

“You made great credit, you don’t need to ask!” Wang Yong waved his hand and directly set the tone for the actions of the disciple. If this was not a big credit. Then what was? There was no reason for others to be dissatisfied.

“And remember that he have done a great job, no, two!” The head of the palace was also unambiguous, giving a positive answer directly.

As for the sect, the danger of facing extermination was no more because of Yang Chen’s revenge on Luo Yuan, Yang Chen had returned and the other party had been dealt with. What was that still called?

However, great achievements were rewarded, but everyone couldn’t think of how to reward Yang Chen. Speaking of it, it could be regarded as a happy trouble. Other martial arts sect all had headaches. Their disciples were not advancing, but the Pure Yang Palace had a disciple who’s great contribution had coursed headache.

“I don’t think we have to reward him with anything.” Gao Shiyan, the old man who just spoke, suddenly interjected.

“What do you mean?” Wang Yong narrowed his eyes on the spot. His own grand disciple, made a great contribution, not to be even rewarded, how did this say about the past?

“Easy about Yang Chen’s rewards, all should be canceled.” Gao Shiyan, regardless of Wang Yong’s attitude, said from his own mind “This kind of great merit, since it can not be rewarded, simply do not reward. Later, if Yang Chen wants to use any of the sect resources, he could do it at any time, as long as the sect can get it, he can take it away. He does not need to inform anyone in advance to discuss it, he can use it directly. Why do we have a headache about his reward?”

“I see it!” Wang Yong listened to this explanation, and immediately agreed.

The words of Gao Shiyan was clearly to promote Yang Chen to the level of an elder of the Pure Yang Palace. Only the elders and the head of the palace could enjoy such treatment. It was estimated that Yang Chen’s current cultivation base was too low and his age was relatively small, so he was not clear about it.

“What do you think?” The Palace Master Zhang Jiao did not say much, but turned his head and asked the other elders.

The other elders also slightly nodded their heads at the moment, and no one had any objection. This was something that they couldn’t do anything about, what this disciple did was really something people couldn’t say anything about. Thinking about Liang Shaoming who used to serve the interest of outsiders, and Yang Chen’s loyalty, which even more serve as a contrast.

“Then it is decided!” The Palace Master Zhang Jiao saw that everyone had no opinions and made a decision directly. In fact, he also made a difficult award for Yang Chen. Since Yang Chen has made such a big contribution, he would give him the corresponding identity.

The Palace Master Zhang Jiao thought about this before, but he

didn't want to initiate it at the beginning. The proposal of Elder Gao was just the meaning of Palace Master Zhang Jiao.

This time, it was Yang Chen's turn to be surprised. Of course, he knew what this so-called reward was not a reward, but at the moment all the elders were in support of it, and Yang Chen couldn't even say a word of rejection.

"Yang Chen, your safety is related to the development of my pure yang sect." The Palace Master Zhang Jiao was not polite to Yang Chen, He directly admonished "if there was such a thing in the future, be careful, whatever was the problem?,go straight back to the Pure Yang Palace, and the sect will take the responsibility for you, without having to escape to the sinister places in the depths of the sea."

Why did Yang Chen escape to the sea, to put it bluntly, that was, he was afraid to bring trouble to the Pure Yang Palace. Yang Chen was clear about this point, and the high-level members of the Pure Yang Palace were also clear about it. Yang Chen would rather risk himself to die, and he was not willing to bring danger to the sect. Such a disciple, no one could blame him for anything.

"Yes, Palace Master!" The sect's love, Yang Chen certainly would not refuse it. However, at the same time as the promise, Yang Chen also suddenly thought of a problem. He had a shuttle, he could escape when necessary, and these high-level members of Pure Yang Palace needed to have more security protection.

"Palace Master, elders!" Yang Chen bowed to the Seniors who were present, and said with great solemnity: "This disciple still have some other gains and want to give them to the elders!"

After he said this, Yang Chen waved, a huge body of the praying mantis appeared in front of everyone. The abnormality of the preservation of the corpse was excellent, even the monster Core was completely preserved, and did not move at all. If it was not motionless and there was no living aura on it, maybe everyone

would think that this was a living monster.

“The place here is small, and it can’t be put down.” Yang Chen said with some regrets “In the secret plane, this disciple found more than a dozen corpses of Yuanying stage praying mantis, and they were well preserved. If each of the elders refines one into a puppet, In terms of safety, there are some guarantees for safety, and at the same time, it can enhance the combat power of my Pure Yang Palace.”

From the beginning of Yang Chen’s taking out of this corpse, everyone has already fallen into a sluggish state. Where was their Senior’s demeanor?

Yang Chen’s surprises was simply not finished, It could be said that it’s a wave of unrest. The master of the late dacheng stage was taken care of , and they became happy, and suddenly there’s a complete mountain gate, and then it was a martial art sect inheritance. When everyone had not completely digested and absorbed it, Kacha, a dozen or so preserved corpses of the peak Yuanying stage praying mantis appeared in front of them, so that everyone could refine one to ensure their safety.

Even from joining the Pure Yang Palace to growing up to become elders, these elders present have not had so much shock. If they have to say something, it was also brought by Yang Chen. Heaven Seizing Pill, Ask Inner Heart Pill, 100,000 mountains, which one out of these was not related with Yang Chen?

This was the body of the demon beast of the peak Yuanying stage, the monster core was intact, the body was complete, and it was the natural care that could be achieved after being carefully taken care of. Of course, in fact, it was exactly the same. In the secret plane, the only room without dust was the room where these corpses were stored.

If everyone refines a peak Yuanying stage puppet, which was as simple as instantly doubling their combat power, and even more

than enough. After really doing this, the high-level combat power of the Pure Yang Palace would be doubled directly. What kind of scene would it be like?

Now everyone had only one kind of thought in mind, was Yang Chen still a person? Which of these many things could be done by a disciple of the foundation stage? Or to put it another way, was there anything that Yang Chen couldn't do in this world?

“Yang Chen, if you say that you killed s Great Principle Golden Immortal one day, maybe I will believe it too.” Wang Yong looked at the body of the praying mantis and couldn't help but say with emotion.

“Isn't that for certain?”on Yang Chen's face suddenly appeared an inscrutable smile.

Chapter 263: The Beauty Of Love

No one would take Yang Chen's joke seriously. However, what Yang Chen said that it was necessary for every elder to refine a puppet. Even if it was a master of the Yuanying stage, he could refine it.

Originally, the Pure Yang Palace had eight Yuanying stage ancestors, and later Lin Yunfeng died, but they got Zhu Chentao in addition, so it still eight. The Pure Yang Palace was not polite to Yang Chen, and wanted about eight corpses. As for the cultivation method technique for refining puppets, the Pure Yang Palace still does not lack this thing.

Although Yu Kui and Xie Sha were also masters of the Yuanying stage, their cultivation was different from that of Dao Sect members. It was said that Yang Chen could only find a solution.

There were countless things sent out in a blink of an eye, but Yang Chen didn't have the slightest distress. This was how he thought about the Pure Yang Palace, and with the decision of the Lord and elders, the things of the Pure Yang Palace were not much different from those of Yang Chen's, as long as he could use it, it could be freely used.

This kind of treatment, even a few elders couldn't enjoy it, because their merits were not enough. But with Yang Chen's young age he was already above these elders.

What was rare was that no one would have any dissatisfaction. After all, Yang Chen's things were actually taken out, no one could write it off.

Refining was not too difficult for Yuanying stage masters, although the corpse of the praying mantis used to be in the peak of the Yuanying stage, but after all, the monster core was still there, which made it even easier.

It was possible to double the Yuanying stage fighting power of the Pure Yang Palace in a short period of time. This was more important than anything else, and even surpasses the urgent need to go to the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave.

Of course, Yang Chen would definitely insist that he would not leave at least until his master woke up. He thought everyone knew this, and so no one had taken the initiative to mention this. In the end, Yang Chen took the initiative to talk about the situation in the Immortal's Cave.

“Please elders also prepare. When you go directly to the cave, you can collect it, move it back, and put it elsewhere. It's better to be overseas.” As he said, Yang Chen handed out a piece of jade slip. The method of collecting the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave was recorded above.

This Immortal's Cave was still very difficult for Yang Chen to collect. His cultivation base was not enough to collect it. However, the power of several elders in the Pure Yang Palace were able to collect the Immortal's Cave in a stable manner.

In this way, the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave would be truly grasped by the Pure Yang Palace, and the Pure Yang Palace disciples could more easily enter the Immortal's Cave to cultivate. Of course, the disciples who could enter the Immortal's Cave must also be loyal disciples who have undergone numerous tests.

It was also a great joy to hear and listen to the overseas Immortal's Cave collection. Only in this way, the improvement of the strength of the people was becoming more and more important, and refining had become a top priority. Once someone was in danger in the process of collecting, they would be able to come in handy.

The Palace Master Zhang Jiao and several elders united several masters of the Yuanying stage, directly retreating, to refine the whole body. Yang Chen returned to his master's small courtyard.

As soon as he entered the courtyard, he saw a white-clothed Gongsun Ling. Upon seeing Yang Chen, Gongsun Ling's eyes released an extraordinary splendor, and she stood up with her teeth clenched. She couldn't help it anymore. She rushed over and rushed into Yang's arms.

Yang Chen's defense was not enough. When Gongsun Ling's body was in his arms, he felt that it was not right, but he could not push Gongsun Ling away at this time. He could only let Gongsun Ling hold his neck and stick tightly to his own body.

Before Yang Chen felt embarrassed, Yang Chen had already heard the cry of Gongsun Ling. This time, Yang Chen became more and more helpless. He didn't know what to do. He could only stand in the same place and listen to Gongsun Ling crying. For a long time, he remembered to gently hold the slender waist of Gongsun Ling with both of his hands, and gently patted Gongsun Ling on the back for a few times.

"I'm fine." Yang Chen's voice finally stopped Gongsun Ling's crying. But Gongsun Ling still held Yang Chen and refused to let go, as if she was afraid that he would disappear from her eyes in the next moment.

Yang Chen had to comfort her for a long time, which made Gongsun Ling lose herself. However, Gongsun Ling, who put down her arm, was already flushed at the moment, and she was too shy to look up at Yang Chen.

He haven't seen her for more than ten years. Gongsun Ling had also lost a lot of fat. However, her cultivation base had a great improvement. It must be that there was a lot of hard work in these days.

In this case, if Yang Chen was not stupid, he could see what was going on. The beautiful flavour was heavy, but Yang Chen does not dare to comply with anything, but at this moment, how would Yang Chen speak out?

On the contrary, it was the appearance of Gongsun Ling, that was what Yang Chen thought of, he directly took out a cup of the four seas mysterious coral liquid and sent it to Gongsun Ling “Senior Sister, drink it.”

“What is this?” Gongsun Ling was really attracted by the purple four seas mysterious coral liquid, and whispered.

“Don’t worry, it’s good to drink.” Yang Chen brought the jade cup of four seas mysterious coral liquid to the small and cherry mouth of Gongsun Ling, and didn’t say much, just let Gongsun Ling drink it.

Gongsun Ling did not insist, this Yang Chen’s hand, and slowly drank this big cup of four seas mysterious coral liquid.

“Senior Sister, you will have me in the future. After you have slept, you don’t have to worry about anything.” Before Gongsun Ling just drank and didn’t fall asleep, Yang Chen said this words to Gongsun Ling.

Listening to Yang Chen’s words, Gongsun Ling closed her eyes in a smile. Like Chen, Yang Chen was holding her up from the waist and settled Gongsun Ling into the room next to him.

The Master and Senior sister, naturally had their servants to take care of them. This time the two women fell asleep, at least for ten days, after that Yang Chen, went straight to the Hall of Fame and went to look for Gui Shanyou and Yu Kui and Xie Sha.

Under the help of the Ask Inner Heart Pill, the old tree demon body had completely absorbed the Penglai Divine Wood. Now Gui Shanyou was much more powerful than before the avatar was lost. His aura was more and more peaceful, and he looked like a person who had attained enlightenment.

Lan Ying’s demon power crystal, Yang Chen temporarily lend it to Gui Shanyou, let him investigate it for a period of time. Although they were not the same, they belong to the same monster

lineage, Gui Shanyou could learn from it.

Yu Kui and Xie Sha were even simpler. Two corpses with their heads cut off their heads. Although they were decapitated, the monster core was complete and directly plugged into the two.

The power absorption of monsters, sometimes it was easier than that of Dao Sect cultivators. The two guys directly swallowed into their belly the two huge corpses of the praying mantis and their monster core, as long as they were thoroughly digested. It was easy to get the power contained in the monster core.

Of course, this method was not unlimited, and it could only be done if the attributes match. Moreover, even if the attributes match, it was impossible to completely absorb the power of the other party, and there would always be a lot of waste.

Fortunately, the praying mantis were also monsters of the earth attribute, and they had the same attributes as Xie Sha, which was not a big problem.

After absorbing the two corpses and the monster core, the cultivation of Yu Kui and Xie Sha could increase a large section, at least to break through a small level and enter the middle Yuanying stage. This had already made the two fellows very satisfied. In the desolate valley, how long would it take to have such a cultivation base?

However, this kind of absorbing power was not completely flawless. After all, it was not the strength of self-cultivation. It took a lot of time to fully adapt. At the same time, it would inevitably lead to some impurities in the cultivation base.

But now Yang Chen had the four seas mysterious coral liquid, and he doesn't care about this little shortcoming. If the Pure Yang Palace's head and the other Yuanying stage masters were not retreating, Yang Chen would directly let the three people in the Hall of Fame to drink it and fall into a deep sleep.

In short, a person, who had a good relationship with Yang Chen, was beneficial to almost everyone. Yang Chen did not bother to turn around, Du Qian, Shangguan Feng, Wang Yuan, and his original four slaves, he gave all a small cup of four seas mysterious coral liquid, watching them take it, he turned back to his master's small courtyard and waited.

His master and senior sister had not yet woken up, but there have been a lot of grease and debris on their bodies. Yang Chen did not let the servants disturb the two, just told them to be ready to wash those things.

While quietly cultivating, Yang Chen waited for his master and his senior sister to wake up. Soon after ten days, Gao Yue snorted in bed and woke up.

Originally, she had been blaming herself and felt remorse. Gao Yue's mental condition was very poor. After this sleep, she had gained a lot of energy, and the vibrant Gao Yue once again appeared in the eyes of Yang Chen.

"Master, you woke up!" At the first glance of Gao Yan, Gao Yue saw Yang Chen's smiling face and heard Yang Chen's happy voice.

Gao Yue sat up and was about to talk. She suddenly found herself filthy. She frowned directly and hurriedly drove Yang Chen out, then told her servant to prepare a bath.

These things Yang Chen had already told them to prepare, and it didn't take long. Gao Yue was refreshed, and she couldn't take too much. After rushing through it, she appeared in front of Yang Chen.

Yang Chen had never seen her master just after bathing, her whole body was fresh and can't help but widen his eyes and couldn't move it away.

At the moment, Gao Yue had been filled with happiness. Yang Chen had returned to her side safely and innocently. Everything

before it seemed to be no longer a problem. Although Yang Chen's eyes seemed to be somewhat rude, Gao Yue was still full of joy, and even gave Yang Chen a slightly sullen look.

For the previous Gao Yue, it was impossible to make such a look. But now it was completely different. Gao Yue was the first to discover that Yang Chen had such an important position in her heart, even surprising herself.

If it was not the fact that Yang Chen almost died, Gao Yue still does not know if this would be the case. But in any case, Gao Yue was never willing to see such a situation reappear.

Pulling Yang Chen, she carefully looked up and down twice, Gao Yue was convinced that Yang Chen was really safe and sound, she was sour in her heart, almost falling into tears.

“How did you get back?” This was what Gao Yue was eager to know.

Yang Chen once again told his story once more. Listening to Yang Chen that with the master of the late dacheng stage actually broke into the unknown sea, and also to provoke a monster that was about to face tribulation and ascend, Gao Yue had become shocked. She was relieved to hear the final result.

When the two were talking, Gongsun Ling also woke up. Then there was a chaotic washing. Every woman does not want her body to appear filthy in front of Yang Chen.

Gao Yue also noticed that Gongsun Ling and her performance were exactly the same. They all fell asleep and after their body had a lot of impurities, she immediately understood that there must be some reason for this. However, Gongsun Ling was washing and would come out soon. She was not in a hurry to ask Yang Chen.

“Since hearing you are missing, your Senior Sister Gongsun has been wearing white clothes.” Gao Yue suddenly said such a sentence, making Yang Chen stare blankly.

“The Green Jade Immortal Island Fairy Shi, Blue Cloud Sect Fairy Xue, is said to be the same, all of them are wearing white, and both of them are covered with veil.” What did mean Yang Chen? Gao Yue had not asked. And said this news.

“This is... what do you mean?” Yang Chen felt a little bad in his heart, but still asked.

“They are maintaining moral integrity for you.” Gao Yue bowed slightly, with quite a bit of a feeling “White clothing, is a mourning dress.”

This time, Yang Chen thoroughly understood, and his mind became blank, and suddenly did not know what to say. The three women actually did this, and both Shi Shanshan and Sun Qingxue were veiled. Obviously, they did not want others to see their faces. This practice made Yang Chen feel moved.

“Yang Chen, how did you come back?” Just when Yang Chen was moved, Gongsun Ling had already rushed out after washing. She asked this question after she came out directly.

Yang Chen could only say it once again, and Gongsun Ling who listened to it also exclaimed.

“Yes, Yang Chen, what did you give me to drink, how did I sleep a lot, and why did i look like that after waking up?” Gao Yue asked about the four seas mysterious coral liquid that Yang Chen gave her after fainting. When Gongsun Ling was awake, she felt that something was wrong and immediately asked.

“Nothing, it only some of the four seas mysterious coral liquid .” Yang Chen replied in an understatement.

“Four seas mysterious coral liquid?” Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling were not the kind of people who were not well-informed like Sun Qingxue. When they heard the name of the four seas mysterious coral liquid, they suddenly exclaimed. Gao Yue did not know, but Gongsun Ling was clear about it, that a large cup of four seas

mysterious coral liquid, that was a full half a jin,he actually just let them drink it?

“Such a big cup?” Gong Sunling’s face had already revealed a shocked look. Even Gao Yue, from the expression of Gongsun Ling, could guess that she didn’t drink less than Gongsun Ling.

“What are these things?” Yang Chen looked at the two beautiful faces and the look of surprise on their faces. His heart suddenly filled with a lofty ambition: “Any day, that master and Senior sister want to bathe with the four seas mysterious coral liquid, just come to me.”

Chapter 264: Advancing In Cultivation

For Yang Chen's words, the two women had become completely speechless. The precious four seas mysterious coral liquid was used for bathing? That was something that could only be done by a family of black sheeps.

Do not believe? But clearly, the two had already drank a big cup. Gao Yue does not know how much, but no one would believe that it was less than Gongsun Ling.

In addition to being shocked, the two women were left sluggish and almost completely unable to accept such a thing. At the thought of them, they even drank so many four seas mysterious coral liquids. While the two women were shocked, they could not help but have some surprises. After the conditioning of the four seas mysterious coral liquid, their future cultivation would definitely surprise them.

Although they don't know how many of the four seas mysterious coral liquid was obtained by Yang Chen, at this time, both women also advised Yang Chen to use it carefully. Whether it was wasted or known to others, it was not a trivial matter.

For the high-level members of the Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen sent corpses of praying mantis to be refined as puppets. For those around him, Yang Chen would not be stingy. On the spot, he took out two corpses of the praying mantis, and instructed them to take it and refine them into a self-defense puppet.

The two women seemed to have been shocked by the series of events, only knowing that they instinctively had to accept what Yang Chen sent, but did not know what to say.

Next, it was Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling who said what happened when Yang Chen was absent. Of course, they were all related to Yang Chen.

The Blue Cloud Sect felt that there was a flaw in what they did, and gave up 20% of the income of 100,000 mountains in the next ten years. Then Shi Shanshan and Sun Qingxue wore the mourning clothes and the veil to show filial piety for Yang Chen.

The most important thing was finding out the origin of Luo Yuan, and the Palace Master Zhang Jiao and all Elders clenched their jaws and ordered for the extermination. At that time, all the experts of the Pure Yang Palace did their best, and the Luo family was completely extinguished. There was no trace of blood left behind.

On the day of the killing, the most ruthless was Gongsun Ling. What surprised Yang Chen was that Shi Shanshan and Sun Qingxue both participated in the action of destroying the Luo clan. The two women also became two female evil comets, and the people that just died under their hands, there were more than three hundred people.

Luo clan was also a well-known and famous family. They had been developing in a remote place. The whole family was close to more than 2,000 people. In that battle, they were all killed.

After this act by the Pure Yang Palace, many sects were scared. Especially after hearing about the cause of the killing, there were many people who all privately restrained their own sects or disciples. Pure Yang Palace dared to risk the destruction of their sect to offend a master of the late dacheng stage, showing their determination to protect their disciples. They shouldn't be offended easily.

Yang Chen still didn't know about this. Hearing these details was even more moving. Suddenly, he felt that he had to apologize to Shi Shanshan. He had already given Sun Qingxue, his master and senior sister the four seas mysterious coral liquid, but he didn't give some of it to Shi Shanshan. After the event of the Immortal's Cave, Yang Chen decided to take a trip to Green Jade Immortal Island and give her a share of the four seas mysterious coral liquid.

After talking about these things, the two women invariably asked Yang Chen's future plans. Looking at the cautious posture of the two women, it seemed that Yang Chen had to plan very carefully.

“After Palace Master Zhang Jiao and Elders have gathered the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave, I plan to run Green Jade Immortal Island and Blue Cloud Sect to explain things.” Yang Chen thought about it and replied: “And then come back to cultivate. This time I went out and found out that my cultivation was still too low.”

Unconsciously, Yang Chen claimed to be a disciple when facing Gao Yue, and had now changed to the master. But no one cared, it seemed so natural.

This time, the distress made Yang Chen feel that his cultivation base was insufficient. Not to mention anything else, just meeting a master of the late dacheng stage, there was no other way to protect himself except running. Once the other party caught up regardless of the shot, Yang Chen would not be fortunate.

Although the golden bell had strong a protection, it also needed Yang Chen's own cultivation base to support it. It was only a passive protection, and it was still unable to resist the attack of a late dacheng stage master. Although the shuttle was fast, but if the enemy killed him, there was no way to think about using it.

There was also a key point, after Yang Chen learned about the location of the demon continent from Lan Ying, he was able to go to the place where the strong experts were, which was the biggest stimulus.

Even if he had a cultivation base of the Jiedan stage, Yang Chen would dare to go to the demon continent. It was a pity that he was still a Foundation Stage Eight Layer of Fourth Fire properties and Third Fire Foundation Stage Seventh Layer. The others were still in the Foundation Stage Middle Stage. These days he had enough time to consolidate his cultivation base. Next, Yang Chen would

fully attack the Jiedan stage.

“You are the same, even if there is a Yuanying stage puppet by your side as protection, at least after the Solidifying Core, the safety will have a certain guarantee.” For the two women, Yang Chen had not had too many requests for the time being, but the Jiedan stage for them, there must be no problem for them. With the Yuanying stage puppet, as long as they didn’t provoke any master of the late dacheng stage, there would be no major problems in their security.

The two women listened to Yang Chen’s words and looked at him. They didn’t say anything, just nodded silently. Nearby Gongsun Ling remembered something, and suddenly asked: “Are you not refining a puppet?”

“I have a shuttle.” Yang Chen smiled. “If the other side can’t kill me, I can escape. If The other party can kill me with a single strike, then having the puppet will not change anything.”

Yang Chen could certainly refine the puppet, but it would not have the intelligence of a living person, but it was inconvenient to tell the two women that, and could only find an excuse.

Gongsun Ling’s words also made Yang Chen’s heart feel a lot of care. Since he had the Face Changing Pill, he would let Wan Qian master and disciple take it and change their face, so that even if other people saw them, they could not recognize their true identity. This was more insurance than veiling.

“Okay, I am going to retreat with you!” Gao Yue did not have a slight objection to Yang Chen’s decision, and she spoke freely about her plan.

“Me too.” Gongsun Ling suddenly became timid at the side, and said the same thing she would never say on any ordinary days. Seeing that Yang Chen and Gao Yue’s eyes looked over, although Gongsun Ling felt shy, she still stood up and raised her chest out “Not until i reach Jiedan stage I will not go out!”

Gao Yue's face suddenly exposed a strange smile, reaching out to hug Gongsun Ling, she smiled and praised "Okay, just do it, if you don't reach the Jindan stage don't go out!" Yang Chen was next to them, but was completely removed from the decision making .

"Master , Senior Sister, you must refine the puppet first. I will go through some things and explain them to the sect." Yang Chen would naturally not say no at this time. He just nodded and stood up. "Wait for me to come back!"

Du Qian, Shangguan Feng, Wang Yuan and the four former slaves all drank the four seas mysterious coral liquid, and should have woken up at this time.

This time, Yang Chen did not visit them one by one, but let people invite them to his small courtyard.

After drinking the four seas mysterious coral liquid, everyone had found the changes in their body, to Yang Chen, everyone was even more grateful. It seemed that apart from Shangguan Feng and Ho Lin, others were not very clear about what they were drinking.

"Yang Chen, what was it that we drunk?" Du Qian and Yang Chen's relationship was established when they entered the division. He was also Yang Chen's Senior brother, and with Yang Chen he did not have so much politeness, after he saw Yang Chen, he just asked directly.

"A little bit of four seas mysterious coral liquid only." Yang Chen replied with an understatement.

Despite guessing the answer, Shangguan Feng and Ho Lin still exclaimed. The Other had insufficient knowledge in this area. They didn't feel how it was. When they heard the exclamation of the two people, it didn't feel right. They rushed to ask the two people what it was.

After hearing Ho Lin's answer, the group of people were directly stunned. These precious things, whether used for alchemy or

refining, were the best products that made people shake their heads. They were actually drunk by them.

“These have some small benefits for the body, and they are also helpful for everyone’s future cultivation.” Yang Chen’s face still had a superficial smile, as if it was just a trivial matter: “My friends are not many, what are these benefits? Of course, I have to think about everyone.”

The few in front of him, when dealing with the Luo family, were the most powerful ones, Yang Chen certainly would not overlook it.

Even if Yang Chen said this, everyone thought that the gift was too heavy, and everyone wanted to thank him, but they were stopped by Yang Chen.

“You all wanted justice for me, what can this things be considered as?” Yang Chen directly waved his hand “No matter what, everyone will have to improve their cultivation first. Senior brother Du, will you soon reach Solidifying Core?”

“Well.” Du Qian nodded. “I did not have much confidence originally. Now that you have this, it is definitely no problem.”

Simple meeting, Yang Chen did not reveal much, just let everyone cultivate more in the near future. Everyone understood everything, so no one asked. After bidding farewell to Yang Chen, they return to their residences and started seclusion.

Chapter 265: Immortal's Cave Of Pure Yang Palace

In order to be on the safe side, on this trip they even went with the body of the old tree demon, to ensure that when collecting the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave, they would never be disturbed and obstructed, if necessary, the Pure Yang Palace does not mind once again showing the determination of the Pure Yang Palace.

Everyone was riding Yang Chen's shuttle, and knew that Yang Chen's shuttle was very fast, but no one had ever experienced this flying magic weapon that was faster than everyone's flying sword. Fortunately, Yang Chen's shuttle was big enough to hold many of them.

When they were approaching the Blue Vault Mountain, the eight Yuanying stage praying mantis puppets and the eight peak Yuanying stage masters directly exterminated the monsters above the Jindan period in the surrounding thousand li waters.

The masters of the Pure Yang Palace, regardless of the indulgence, as long as the more than the level of the monsters appeared in this range, they were all considered to be enemies obstructing the Immortal's Cave, and all were killed, none could escape. At the same time, it was also a process in which the elders and their respective monsters should be properly trained.

Until all the surrounding climate monsters were wiped out, the people were concentrated on the island where the Blue Vault Mountain was located, waiting for Yang Chen to open the Immortal's Cave.

Although he had already heard about the situation of the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave, Yang Chen was completely shocked by this complete cave when the people actually entered the dwelling place of Buddhist immortals.

There was sufficient spiritual power, large space, strict grading, enough monsters to support around, clear safety zone, full-featured sect architecture, everything showed that this was a perfect sect dwelling place of Buddhist immortals.

The scale was ten times larger compared with the scope of the present Meiqing Mountain range, and it still had a separate area. If added up, it was enough to add up to dozens of Meiqing Mountains.

There was such a dwelling places of Buddhist immortals, even if the scale of the current Pure Yang Palace was ten times larger, it was still more than enough.

The powerful protective array formation around the Immortal's Cave, it was not known how many times it was stronger compared to the mountain guarding formation of the Meishan Mountain. The spiritual power expenditure of the protective array formation, was enough to match the current spiritual power expenditure of the entire Meiqing Mountain. The two sides were not at all on the same level.

Even if there were dozens of Tenth Water Yin Thunder explosions like what Liang Shaoming did, it would never hurt the cave. In order to test, before entering, Yang Chen even let Gui Shanyou attack the outside of the Immortal's Cave once with full power, and the Immortal's Cave did not change at all. The strength of the protection was evident.

This time the old tree demon was there, and finally some people entered the sect of the dacheng stage masters. What surprised everyone was that a large number of jade slips were also found in the palaces of the dacheng stage masters.

The jade slips obtained were directly handed over to Yang Chen, and after he had read it first, he would classify into other categories and classify it into the Pure Yang Palace Hidden Pavilion. Some important cultivation method, similar to the Yellow

Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, even must belong to Secret Pavilion.

After a simple visit to the Immortal's Cave, apart from Yang Chen and the old tree demon, headed by the head of the palace, the people began to collect the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave according to the method described Yang Chen on the jade slips.

The Immortal's Cave was originally a magic weapon of the heavenly level. As long as they had strong strength and correct methods, it could be gathered. Even so, the process of gathering would continue for a full three months before it was finalized.

It was only this process of collecting, and when it was all completed, the hands-on eight Yuanying stage masters, were invariably aware of the improvement of their cultivation base.

A dwelling place of Buddhist immortals level magic weapon was collected and distributed to the body of eight Yuanying stage masters. If it was for a person, it may be possible to directly upgrade Zhu Chentao, who had the shortest time to enter the Yuanying stage, to the peak Yuanying stage.

This was an upgrade, and the collective level of the Pure Yang Palace was once again raised to a small level. Wang Yong, who was the strongest, had even reached the limit of the peak stage. As long as the time was right, he could enter the dacheng stage.

The group of people once again happily returned to the Meiqing Mountain by Yang Chen's shuttle, but this time, except for the Yuanying stage masters and the old tree demon of the Pure Yang Palace, the younger disciples all returned, namely Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, these people who have been to the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave.

Although there was no exclusive place of cultivation for the time being, for Gao Yue and Gong Sunling, it seemed that being with Yang Chen was enough. Moreover, some of them were still able to ask the Palace Master to allow them to enter the Immortal's Cave

to cultivate at any time, without hindering them.

Yang Chen also said to the head of the palace, all the pieces of magic weapons found in the Immortal's Cave would all be given to him. Those were the most suitable food sources for Xiao Tian(heavenly roar).

The existence of the Immortal's Cave was the highest secret of the Pure Yang Palace for the time being. The entrance was in the hands of the master of the palace. If the master of the palace was in trouble, it was Wang Yong who would be in charge of the control.

Next, the Pure Yang Palace would establish a set of rules to discern the loyalty of the disciples. Only those loyal disciples would have the opportunity to enter the Immortal's Cave to cultivate.

Of course, they would declare to the outside that this was a branch of the Pure Yang Palace's Secret Pavilion, and other sects would never see the flaws. After all, a secret pavilion of a sect was their highest secret. Except for the successive Palace Masters, other people couldn't know the whole picture.

When returning to the Meiqing Mountain, Hall Master Xu Chengxin had already contacted the wine immortal. To his surprise, when he only said to the wine immortal that the Pure Yang Palace had prepared the Jade Dragon Wine, less than half a month later, Senior Jiu Xian rushed over with lightning speed, he personally arrive at the Meishan Mountain with dust all over him.

The wine immortal almost without thinking provided the news of another kind of fire seed that Yang Chen wanted, directly changed to four hundred pounds of jade dragon wine, and then sipped some on the spot. The fascinating taste was simply unbelievable, making people unable to believe simply that this was a Yuanying stage ancestor.

The cooperation was very smooth. After drinking the jade dragon wine ,Yang Chen's personally brewed auxiliary wine, Senior Jiu

Xian could no longer bear the inferior wines that he used to drink. He was tied to the pirate ship by Yang Chen. The scene made Xu Chengxin Foreign Affairs Hall Master feel very sad and pitiful.

The cooperation between the wine immortal and other Sect aristocratic families had never been so cheap, so that Xu Chengxin, the master who knew the rules of Senior Jiu Xian, couldn't even believe that the conditions of cooperation were so simple, using the news to exchange for the Jade Dragon Wine.? If he had not previously dealt with the wine immortal, he might suspect that Senior Jiu Xian was fake.

Finally, Hall Master Xu knew the depths, and did not dare to take the initiative to try the jade dragon wine, otherwise if he were to be addicted like the wine immortal, it would be a bit troublesome.

At this point, for the time being, Yang Chen could do little for the Pure Yang Palace. Yang Chen also reported his recent plan to the head of the palace, and after visiting Fairy Shi and Fairy Xue, he would go into seclusion with his master and senior sister.

The high-level members of the Pure Yang Palace's current attitude toward Yang Chen was that as long as it does not involve the safety of Yang Chen, it would be accurate and would not be asked.

They heard that Yang Chen would visit Green Jade Immortal Island and Blue Cloud Sect, when he told the palace master. He only said "Take Yu Kui and Xie Sha with you and come back early!" making the people flabbergasted

Yang Chen returned from overseas, it was necessary to explain the misunderstanding with Blue Cloud Sect, so as to avoid any unnecessary associations between Blue Cloud Sect. Therefore, Yang Chen's first stop was Blue Cloud Sect.

Because the secrets of the gathering of the Immortal's Cave, the news of Yang Chen's return was strictly blocked inside the Pure Yang Palace. After removing Liang Shaoming the traitor, in the

recent period, the sect's control of their disciples reached a new height. In the sect, all the disciples that saw Yang Chen, almost all of them were told to block the news of Yang Chen's return.

The Blue Cloud Sect naturally couldn't know too much detailed news. When Yang Chen appeared at the Blue Cloud Sect's entrance, the new guarding disciple who had seen Yang Chen had a ghostly expression. Still under the reminder of Yang Chen, he just remembered to report to the sect.

Yang Chen was an esteemed guest of the Blue Cloud Sect, and naturally he could enter the sect without notice. Yang Chen was also not polite and went straight to Sun Qingxue's residence. When Sun Qingxue received the news, Yang Chen had already appeared in front of her.

"Yang Da Ge!" When she saw Yang Chen's appearance, Sun Qingxue couldn't control her emotions. She didn't know what to do, she rushed to Yang Chen's arms and burst into tears. Her performance was exactly like that of Gongsun Ling.

Sun Qingxue, who was covered in veil and dressed in white mourning clothes, had also lost weight in recent years. She made a of ruthlessness of the man who harassed him, giving her the name of a snow fairy. Who thought it was this little girl who felt that she was dragging down Yang Chen, and she worked hard, and got involved in killing, so she would be so powerful.

However, the situation at the time did not have anything to do with Sun Qingxue. It's just that the little girl thought that the sect couldn't stop the chasing of the dacheng stage Luo Yuan, so the little girl blamed herself. In fact, Sun Qingxue was stunned by Yang Chen, was there was nothing that could stop Yang Chen.?

The practice of mourning made Yang Chen particularly moved. Therefore, Yang Chen also actively hugged Sun Qingxue's waist and softly comforted her. After a long time, Sun Qingxue calmed down.

After Sun Qingxue stabilized her emotions, she suddenly realized that her master and the Sovereign had already arrived at her courtyard , and they were smiling at her and Yang Chen from not far away. The little girl could no longer suppress her shyness when she saw that they arrived, and turned and fled back to the house.

Blue Cloud Sect Sect Master Lu received the news and came over. It was a shock to him how Yang Chen escaped from Luo Yuan's hands. Secondly, he wanted to completely eliminate the misunderstandings of the Blue Cloud Sect, Yang Chen and Pure Yang Palace.

At that time, Yang Chen just flew over and let Sun Qingxue down. There was nothing said at all. The Blue Cloud Sect and others did not know what happened.

Luo Yuan broke two big guardian formations, but left a name. When Yang Chen escaped, he immediately chased after him, and the speed was fast and unparalleled. Even if the Blue Cloud Sect wanted to do something, at that time, the speed of the several masters who were present could not catch up. It was not the inaction of the Blue Cloud Sect.

Yang Chen certainly knew the situation at the time. In fact, if Sun Qingxue was not there, Yang Chen would not lead Luo Yuan to the Blue Cloud Sect. His original intention at the time was the safety of Sun Qingxue, instead of bringing the strong enemy to the Blue Cloud Sect to kill him.

Moreover, in the position of the Blue Cloud Sect, there was no obligation to take the cause and effect for Yang Chen in that situation. After all, he was not a disciple of this sect.

Neither side had the idea of taking the opportunity to cause troubles, and the natural communication was very harmonious. Moreover, the Blue Cloud Sect's practice of compensating the Pure Yang Palace was also very appropriate, and they fully realized that they could not hold the apology of Yang Chen under the

circumstances. Soon, Yang Chen reached an understanding on behalf of the Pure Yang Palace and the Blue Cloud Sect.

Next, naturally, Sun Qingxue asked Yang Chen about the situation at the time. Sect Master Lu and Elder Hua Wanting were equally curious. How did a junior who was in the foundation stage escape under the chase of a master of the late dacheng stage? When they thought about it, there seemed to be only one possibility, that was, Yang Chen surrendered, and Luo Yuan was magnanimous so he let him go, nothin more.

When Yang Chen told his own situation at the time, it made everyone stunned. Yang Chen actually relied on a flying magic weapon. It was hard to bring a master of the late dacheng stage to a monster beast that was going to face tribulation, causing the two sides to fight and then he quietly fled. This was simply unbelievable.

Of course, Yang Chen did not say things that were too much related to Lan Ying. He only said that after the two sides fought, they did not pay attention to a little shrimp like him and he escaped smoothly. But even so, it was enough to cause the shock of Sect Master Lu and Elder Hua. Their sect disciples in the foundation stage were not as heaven defying as Yang Chen.

Since Yang Chen returned safely, Sun Qingxue also removed the veil and no longer appeared in white. Yang Chen was in front of Sect Master Lu and Elder Hua, he did not conceal his own plans. He told them that he would go into seclusion after going back and attack the Jiedan stage.

“Yang Da Ge, when you reach the Jiedan stage, I will also achieve Jiedan!” After more than ten years of tempering, coupled with the effect of the four seas mysterious coral liquid, Sun Qingxue’s cultivation base grew astonishingly. When she heard that Yang Chen wanted to retreat. Now, she immediately expressed her willingness to follow Yang Chen’s cultivation base growth.

Sect Master Lu and Elder Hua looked at Yang Chen and Sun Qingxue's cultivation base which were quite similar, and they even go along with each other. Even Elder Hua said that this time she would also give strong guidance to Sun Qingxue.

This meeting completely wiped out the possible cracks in the relationship of the Pure Yang Palace and Blue Cloud Sect, and both sides were happy. The sect was happy, Yang Chen was happy, Sun Qingxue was more happy, there was no more perfect result than this.

“Have you looked for elder sister Shanshan!” When Yang Chen planned to leave, it was very unexpected that Sun Qingxue actually urged Yang Chen to look for Shi Shanshan “Sister Shanshan was very sad after hearing about your issues. She was covered with a veil to mourn for you. It was the first time I saw Sister Shanshan crying.”

Did Shi Shanshan actually cry for him? Yang Chen's heart had mixed feelings, and did not know how to express this feelings. However, he was going to look for Shi Shanshan, this was not a problem.

Whether it was Sun Qingxue or Shi Shanshan, even Gongsun Ling, Yang Chen found that he could not be cruel-hearted and reject them, which made Yang Chen very confused, he did not know what to do.

The figure in his mind that brewed tea on the shuttle became suddenly clear and seemed to be lingering.

Chapter 266: Secluded Cultivation

On the way to Green Jade Immortal Island, Yang Chen carefully selected a batch of tea trees from the last year, and then picked the most tender young leaves, carefully fried in the Profound Spirit Furnace, made a Jade pot and stored it in it.

This was what Shi Shanshan liked, and Yang Chen did it without thinking.

Their reaction was exactly the same as the Blue Cloud Sect. After hearing the name of Yang Chen, the disciples guarding the entrance had a ghostly expression, which made Yang Chen feel funny.

Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan had a open Dao Companion relationships. Therefore, Yang Chen could also go greet Shi Shanshan without Shi Shanshan coming out of her residence.

Relatively speaking, Shi Shanshan who was in the Jiedan realm was able to control her emotions more than Gongsun Ling and Sun Qingxue who were in the foundation stage.

Seeing Yang Chen's appearance, Shi Shanshan eyes just shined rays fiercely, and then it seemed like nothing. She was very casual to take off the veil on her face, and then calmly ushered Yang Chen into her living room.

Although Shi Shanshan's covered her emotions perfectly, Yang Chen found clues from the flash of her eyes. However, Yang Chen did not say anything about it, but he just calmly followed Shi Shanshan into the room and sat down.

Shi Shanshan was equally curious about Yang Chen's ability to survive, but her performance was not as urgent as Sun Qingxue's. But when Yang Chen talked about the thrilling events, Shi Shanshan couldn't help but hold her breath. When he said that he finally escaped, Shi Shanshan suddenly took a sigh of relief.

“I found some things in the sea area and want to give you some to taste.” Yang Chen wouldn’t be so thick skinned, and he took out a large cup of the four seas mysterious coral liquid and sent it to Shi Shanshan.

“What is this? Four seas mysterious coral liquid?” Shi Shanshan, a Jiedan stage master, was obviously more knowledgeable than Sun Qingxue, and at a glance she recognized the thing in the jade cup.

The bonus was that Shi Shanshan yang qi was proficient, watching this big cup of four seas mysterious coral liquid, she could not help but be greatly shocked. The cup in front of her could be the net spend of some small martial art sect, it was very precious.

“The things outside of you don’t have to care about.” Yang Chen smiled and said “This is for you to drink, not to let you honour your master’s sect. You must know that some things are more troublesome.”

The trouble that Yang Chen said last time Shi Shanshan said that he was nothing more than a spear boat of the sect and personal opinion. Once the possession was too precious, causing the sect to covet it, it will lead to more incidents. Up to now, Shi Shanshan’s ten thousand years spirit elixir has been planted in Yang Chen’s medicinal garden.

At this point, Shi Shanshan herself was also very clear about it. Looking at Yang Chen’s eager eyes, Shi Shanshan’s heart became moved. Nothing was said and just she nodded and she said, “I will find time to drink.”

With Shi Shanshan’s character, Yang Chen still knew that she would definitely keep her promise, otherwise it would not be because of a sentence at the time, that she was Yang Chen’s companion. Since Shi Shanshan said that she would drink it, Yang Chen of course believed her. Now the two were talking, and it

seemed inappropriate to drink the four seas mysterious coral liquid now.

“This is a complete body of a Yuanying stage beast from a secret plane.” Yang Chen said, and took the last big body of the praying mantis out “Refining it into a puppet is good for self-defense.”

Looking at the body of this powerful Yuanying stage Yao beast, Shi Shanshan did not show a surprised look, but turned and asked “was it discovered together with Little Xue?”

“Yes!” Yang Chen did not hide it, nodded directly and admitted. This things were so popular, Yang Chen couldn’t hide it. Moreover, Yang Chen didn’t think about cheating on Shi Shanshan.

“You are giving it to me? Don’t you want to give it to your sect?” Shi Shanshan looked at Yang Chen unexpectedly, and seemed to be surprised at his attitude toward his sect.

“I have left enough for the sect, this is for you.” Yang Chen smiled and did not explain too much, and just simply said.

“Thank you!” Shi Shanshan’s feeling at the moment had always been faint, Even the thank you, it was also very friendly.

Although the words were not so enthusiastic, but still accepted the good intentions of Yang Chen. Yang Chen did not care too much about this.

Finally, Yang Chen took out the tea that he had carefully baked on the road and sent it to Shi Shanshan: “This should be the taste you like, but it is more refined than the last time.”

This time, Shi Shanshan’s performance was no longer so dull, and her face clearly shows a happy look. It seemed that this pot of tea was more moving to her than the jade cup of the four seas mysterious coral liquid and the body of the Yuanying stage beast.

Yang Chen began to think that it was Shi Shanshan’s preference, so it would be like this. But he soon understood that this was not

because Shi Shanshan liked this tea so she was happy, but because Yang Chen remembered her preference and specially prepared something suitable for her taste. This kind of heartfelt gesture was the key to making her happy.

Remembering what Shi Shanshan wanted, made Shi Shanshan happier more than giving her those precious things. After understand this, Yang Chen couldn't help but smile bitterly. He still saw Shi Shanshan's simplicity. His previous life Shi Shanshan who was well-known as the Three Realms Cold Plum Fairy Maiden, where was that vulgar person.

Yang Chen was happy, and directly asked to Shi Shanshan "Is there a suitable instrument, I accidentally got a good Spirit Spring, try it for the tea?"

Shi Shanshan really shined in front of his eyes, quickly took out her full set of tea sets, and also took out a wooden barrel. Yang Chen put the Spirit Spring water in a shallow bucket. Then, just like in the shuttle in the past, he sat quietly and watched Shi Shanshan start to boil the water.

After a while, Yang Chen had a cup of fragrant tea in his hand. After sniffing the smelly cup, Yang Chen took the teacup and took a sip.

This time, the tea was more delicious than in the shuttle. The tea leaves was also hot, Yang Chen also carefully baked it, the Spirit Spring was more suitable than steamed sea spring water. The taste of the tea was even more wonderful.

During the process of enjoying the tea, the action of the two seemed to be a more tacit understanding, the atmosphere was also a lot more harmonious, there was no small talk.

Although the two just tasted the fragrant tea silently, it was better than having conversation for a long time. Without a word, it was worth a thousand words.

No one wanted to speak, for fear of destroying this rare atmosphere. After Yang Chen finished the small cup, Shi Shanshan was very diligent to give Yang Chen another cup.

However, when the tea was finished, there was no way for two people to sit together and drink tea.

“I am going to go back to seclusion.” Putting down the teacup, Yang Chen finally said “My cultivation base is too bad, this time without reaching Solidifying Core, i am not going to come out.”

“I will be waiting for you!” Shi Shanshan seems to be indifferent to Yang Chen’s words. But the words she said were sufficient to show her attitude.

Returning to the Pure Yang Palace from Green Jade Immortal Island, Yang Chen finally solved the problem of being busy outside, after he greeted the Palace Master and ancestor Wang Yong, he was ready to retreat.

Before Yang Chen retired, the head of the palace sent people to send Yang Chen a batch of things, it was the fire seeds of all levels collected by the Pure Yang Palace in the past ten years.

Basically, they were all kinds of fire seed from First Grade to Third Grade Fire Seed. They were not particularly rare, but the number was quite a lot. There were already more than one hundred in this batch, plus the last time Yang Chen got it, now Yang Chen had more than two hundred kinds of First Grade to Third Grade Fire Seed on hand.

The location for the seclusion, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling had already chosen it, in the middle of Bluevault Mountain Immortal’s Cave. For the time being, only the few of them could come in, and even the elders could not come in to cultivate. It was full of spirit power and safe and reliable, there was no better place for seclusion than this.

It was said that the three people would be in seclusion together,

but the cultivation was still practiced by everyone separately. Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling had each found a room, and they also chose a room for Yang Chen.

Yang Chen did not disrespect the good intentions of her Master and Senior sisters. Under their arrangement, they lived in the chosen place. Later, Yang Chen began to think about how to cultivate next, in order to get better results.

More than 200 kinds of low-grade flames, Yang Chen must absorb and fuse them. However, before that, it was necessary to first absorb these flames into the Profound Spirit Furnace, and once again improve the quality of the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Nowadays, when the Profound Spirit Furnace absorbs the fire seed, especially the low-grade fire seed, it was very easy. With the increase in rate of absorbing the fire seed, the grade of the Profound Spirit Furnace was getting higher and higher, and it was easier to collect the fire seed.

Almost at a speed of one a day, Yang Chen only spent about two hundred days, and all the low-level fires were absorbed into the Profound Spirit Furnace

With more than two hundred low-grade flames, the appearance of the Profound Spirit Furnace had changed again. The pale green Profound Spirit Furnace began to slowly turn into a light cyan, and at first glance, it was like a flame that burned to the extreme color.

Chapter 267: Spiritual Awareness separation

Yang Chen was very experienced in absorbing fire seeds. Now the flame in Yang Chen's body was a mixed flame of hundreds of kinds of First Grade, Second Grade and Third Grade flames. It was far worse from Yang Chen's target Yin-Yang Burning Heavenly Fire. It was barely a Yin-Yang Flame.

The preservation of all the fire seeds in the profound spirit furnace was also an important buffer, making it easier for Yang Chen to absorb these low-grade fire seeds.

To absorb, of course, he started from the simplest and lowest level fire seed and gradually merge it, to enhance the power of his own yin and yang flame, and then slowly absorb the advanced fire seeds. This was a gradual process.

The fire seeds that had been absorbed before had laid a solid foundation for Yang Chen, so now Yang Chen absorbed with no pressure. One first grade fire seed could be absorbed then fused in just a few days.

Every time a fire seed was merged, Yang Chen's sea of consciousness was a small fire, and then directly attached to the trunk of the penglai divine wood branch.

The First Grade Fire Seed couldn't make much difference to the sea of consciousness, but it also made Yang Chen's spiritual awareness grow a little bit.

The changes of one or two may not be seen, but when the total number of First Grade flames in Yang Chen's sea of consciousness had accumulated to nine hundred and eighty, the situation had undergone a qualitative change.

This change was not to expand the sea of consciousness, but to change the height of the sea of consciousness. Originally it was just

a high point of Penglai Divine Wood. It was divided into upper and lower layer sea of consciousness. Now it was violently raised and thickened by an entire several fold. The sky had also become more like the sky, with an empty feeling.

The real shadow of the Penglai Divine Wood seemed to have been affected by this change. It had become several times higher, like it had truly become a Divine Wood.

His spiritual awareness suddenly jumped up by a large section, directly breaking through the limit of the middle Yuanying stage, and entered the late Yuanying stage. The dramatic changes in the spiritual awareness even caused a sudden shock in the entire Immortal's Cave.

This vibration was quickly discovered by Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling, who were also cultivating. The two women no longer wished to cultivate, and quickly rushed to Yang Chen. After discovering that Yang Chen was safe and sound, they felt reassured.

The suddenly enhanced spiritual awareness, in the middle of Yang Chen's sea of consciousness fluctuated wildly, so that Yang Chen felt that it was a little uncontrollable, which had never happened in his past cultivation.

However, Yang Chen was not alarmed. This situation had been recorded in the Three Purities Secret Art. Speaking of it, this was a harbinger of the division of the spiritual awareness. Then, as long as there was some progress in the spiritual awareness, it would split into two.

Cultivating the Three Purities Secret Art to a certain degree would inevitably lead to such a situation. As long as the spiritual awareness was higher than the spiritual power, it would be separated from the two realms. Separate spiritual awareness would grow up alone until it reached the level of Three Purities.

One's qi becomes Three Purities, this was the first change but for Yang Chen, it was very obvious. At such an early age, the

separation of the spiritual awareness, if the two weak spiritual awareness wanted to further enhance in the future it would be absolutely difficult to the extreme.

If you cultivated the Three Purities Secret Art, you would see this change at the level of Heaven Immortal level. But no one would have thought that Yang Chen actually integrated the Immortal Executioner Stage killing intent unexpectedly, and directly transformed it into a spiritual awareness, at least the hard work of Yang Chen's cultivation was reduced by hundreds of years.

Moreover, Yang Chen's situation was special. When he has not yet cultivated spiritual power, he had already begun to cultivate the Three Purities Secret Art, and this was the case for this situation to appear earlier. At the moment, it was a bit uncontrollable.

The violent shock of the spiritual awareness made Yang Chen have to stop all his cultivation. Even if Yang Chen was a reborn Great Principle Golden Immortal, it was impossible to control everything in his hands. There would always be such an accident. At present was the problem that Yang Chen needed to solve in time.

Double spiritual awareness cultivation, in Yang Chen's mind the first reaction jumped out of this thought. The last time he and his master learned the double double cultivation, not only saved his weak master, but also let his master's spiritual awareness gain direct promotion, and by the way also reduced some of his own spiritual awareness cultivation.

This method seemed to be good, Yang Chen's gaze shot onto his master's face. Looking at Yang Chen staring at herself, Gao Yue's inexplicable face became red, she didn't know what he thought.

"Are you okay?" Gongsun Ling asked worriedly. Although Yang Chen stopped cultivating, but the shock of the spiritual awareness was obvious, so that Gongsun Ling could not help but worry.

“There is a little problem that requires master to help solve it.” Yang Chen replied truthfully.

Upon hearing this answer, the two women were quietly relieved, as long as they could solve it, it was not a big trouble. Gongsun Ling was also very perforated, and quickly retired.

Gao Yue pointed to Yang Chen, this was her apprenticeship, but the presence of outsiders was very inconvenient. Although Gongsun Ling was also a person of the Pure Yang Palace, after all, she was not a disciple of Gao Yue. Their attributes were different. It does not make sense to keep listening. She knew that Yang Chen was fine.

“Master, my spiritual awareness grew too fast, and i somewhat can’t control it.” Yang Chen did not completely conceal it from Gao Yue, and directly said a part of his own situation. Of course, Yang Qing would never say anything about the Three Purities Secret Art this Heaven Defying thing, even if he was facing his master, it was impossible.

Gao Yue experienced a double cultivation with Yang Chen in the past. When she heard Yang Chen’s words, she knew what Yang Chen wanted to do, and her face became red again.

However, despite her shyness, if Yang Chen could not control his spiritual awareness, this was a big problem, Gao Yue almost did not want to think about what would happen to Yang Chen “Then you do not support, we come ... come ... cultivate your cultivating method.”

The Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra both cultivated, the last time it was Yang Chen who dominated, Gao Yue was injured heavily in a coma, Yang Chen had to hold her in his arms, head with Gao Yue’s back brain to cultivate.

This time, Gao Yue was sober, and does not need Yang Chen to take care of her. And that kind of posture, in fact, the effect of the cultivation was not as good as the connection of the forehead of the

two.

The two were opposite each other, but they were inevitably face-to-face contact with their forehead at near zero distance. Their breathing could be sprayed on the other's face, the posture was extremely ambiguous.

Reminiscent of the unspeakable pleasure in the process of cultivating the Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra, the face of Gao Yue was red. Even Yang Chen couldn't help but hesitate.

However, she felt around Yang Chen's body, was violently fluctuating, so that Gao Yue couldn't care of being shy. She pressed Yang Chen to sit and sat down opposite Yang Chen. After posing in a cultivation position, she leaned slightly, and put her forehead toward Yang Chen.

With the tender face of his master in front of himself, Yang Chen's heart began to beat wildly. Still under the urging of Gao Yue, he could only meet with the forehead of Gao Yue.

This kind of posture made Yang Chen almost unable to control himself. It seemed that as long as his lips were opened, he could kiss his master's lips.

Soon, Yang Chen had to quickly enter the state of cultivation. His master had already begun to work. If Yang Chen was half-hearted, it would only hurt the two people.

Gao Yue's heart was full of shock, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was so powerful that she could hardly believe it. The feeling of shock, with the work of Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra passed to her sea of consciousness, the feeling of embarrassment, almost made Gao Yue unable to concentrate.

How could Yang Chen's spiritual awareness be so powerful? This was a doubt that always haunts the heart of Gao Yue, but since the double cultivation with Yang Chen, Gao Yue understood that Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra was so strong, Yang Chen's

performance does not seem that surprising. After all, although this cultivation method was a double cultivation, it could be usually practiced by one person.

Usually Gao Yue would also practice this Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra to exercise her spiritual awareness, at this moment during the double cultivation, it was a little familiar and easy. Soon the two entered a mysterious realm.

Yang Chen's spiritual awareness that was skyrocketing in his sea of consciousness seemed to suddenly find a place to vent, madly rushed toward the sea of consciousness of Gao Yue, and under the concerted efforts of the two, he quickly found a balance and started to calm down.

The unspeakable pleasure soon reappeared, this time the two together, this feeling seemed even more unstoppable. The two were immersed in the kind of silent joy, and they had been working hard. No one could bear to accept the work first, and soon entered a realm in which the two forgot everything.

It was not known how long it took. When the two people woke up at the same time, they had stopped cultivating with tacit understanding, Yang Chen realized that this time the double cultivation of the spiritual awareness had ended.

Reluctantly the two people together separated their forehead, Yang Chen also had an unforgettable aftertaste. Gao Yue opposite him was even more red, and her beautiful face was almost like dripping blood. She had such a shameful feeling with her own disciple, and it really made Gao Yue feel uncomfortable.

However, the troubles faced by Yang Chen soon made Gao Yue immediately start to care about Yang Chen "How do you feel now?" In the process of Gao Yue and Yang Chen double cultivation, it seemed that Gao Yue did not feel the big reduction of the spiritual awareness of Yang Chen. How big was the reduction, was completely different from the last time.

“It’s okay!” Yang Chen laughed, but there was a bit of bitterness in the laughter.

This time, during the dual cultivation of the spiritual awareness the improvement of Gao Yue Spiritual Awareness was once again risen to the peak of Jiedan stage. This time, it directly broke through the realm of Yuanying stage and arrived at the early Yuanying stage.

However, Yang Chen’s spiritual awareness did not decrease much, but he returned to the peak of the middle Yuanying stage. Although for the time being, the problem was solved, but as long as Yang Chen absorbs a certain amount of fire seed, he would face the same problem immediately.

Gao Yue’s thoughts were clear, especially when facing Yang Chen, who she was concerned about. At first glance, she saw the bitterness of Yang Chen, She couldn’t help but frown and asked: “Is the effect of double cultivation not as good as the first time so obvious?”

Yang Chen nodded slightly and did not say anything. It seemed that they could only maintain this kind of spiritual power promotion for the first time. However, even if the spiritual power was improved, it would inevitably lead to the growth of the spiritual awareness. Was this seclusion to fail like this?

Gao Yue looked at Yang Chen’s face and noticed that he had some discouragement. She frowned slightly again, but did not say a word, she did not know what he was pondering.

“Master’s spiritual awareness, has it already reached the realm of Yuanying?” After Yang Chen and Gao Yue double cultivation, he basically could feel the intensity of Gao Yue’s spiritual awareness, and asked in a loud voice.

“Well!” Gao Yue had just checked it. She was already in the early stages of the Yuanying realm, but she didn’t know what Yang Chen meant.

“There is a cultivation method. Master can try to cultivate it.” As he said, Yang Chen handed over a jade slip, and at the same time he sent it, there was also a jade bottle full of Talisman.

“Tenth Water True Secret Art?” Gao Yue was very casual to take a look at the jade with her spiritual awareness, and it gave her a big scare. This level of cultivation method, Gao Yue had of course heard of it, but there had never been a chance to actually see it. Yang Chen actually gave it to her, didn’t Yang Chen know that it was necessary to cultivate the Tenth Water True Secret Art with the Tenth Water True Essence?

Could it be that among the jade bottles, was the Tenth Water True Essence? As soon as this thought came out, Gao Yue’s heart began to jump suddenly. If it was really a Tenth Water True Essence, then does it mean that she could already cultivate the Tenth Water True Secret Art?

The advantages of cultivating the Tenth Water True Secret Art, How can it be unclear? But she still couldn’t believed that she actually had such an opportunity.

“Master’s spiritual awareness has reached the realm of Yuanying, and naturally it is possible to control this Tenth Water True Secret Art.” Yang Chen did not have so much concealment, but continued to say: “As long as you cultivate this Tenth Water True Secret Art, Master is absolutely sure of reaching Solidifying Core in twenty years.”

The reason why it was given at this time was naturally because the spiritual awareness of Gao Yue before was too low to control the Tenth Water True Essence. Now that she had reached the realm of Yuanying, these were no longer problems. Yang Chen certainly had to give the best things to Master.

Unfortunately, he still does not know where to look for the Ninth Water True Essence, if Yang Chen just wanted to give it to his Master, it was impossible. Otherwise, the Ninth Water and Tenth

Water Simultaneous Cultivation, the yin and yang were the same, and the power was higher.

Gao Yue nodded and knew that Yang Chen was telling the truth. Far beyond the current spiritual level of the spiritual awareness, and in addition to the Tenth Water True Essence and Tenth Water True Secret Art, the spiritual power here was sufficient, the achievements of Jiedan in 20 years was by no means empty talk.

Although her cultivation was no longer a problem, Gao Yue was still worried about Yang Chen's troubles. The second time, during the double cultivation of the spiritual awareness, the effect was not as good as the first time. In this way, Yang Chen would soon face the same trouble.

She wanted to solve this big trouble for Yang Chen. It seemed that there was no other way. She could only make the same idea as Gongsun Ling and retreat.

Thinking of this, Gao Yue's face suddenly appeared a smile. Gong Sunling also had a good impression on Yang Chen. She could also have a double cultivation with Yang Chen. The first double cultivation would definitely solve this trouble for Yang Chen. Although she don't know if Yang Chen would encounter the same problem in the future, it seemed that Gao Yue has a kind of hunch. As long as Yang Chen was in the realm of Jiedan, all problems would be solved.

She made up her mind, and Gao Yue didn't say much about it. She just planned how to go and say this thing to Gong Sunling.

It was strange to say that Gao Yue's own plan for this matter did not make her feel sorrowful in her heart. It seemed that as long as it was for Yang Chen, no matter how it made Gao Yue feel uncomfortable, she could also tolerate it.

She didn't even know when she had such a mentality. Just knew that as long as Yang Chen was safe, everything was fine.

Chapter 268: Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire Prototype

Yang Chen had already set his heart, his cultivation base must be upgraded. Otherwise, there would be many things that cannot be dealt with during the foundation stage.

As for the problem of splitting the spiritual awareness, if the spiritual awareness double cultivation with his master couldn't completely solve it, Yang Chen would also go all out and let the spiritual awareness split. At most, it would take a little more time to improve in the future. It was not something that cannot be solved at all.

In cultivation, where there was a good thing, a little bit of twists and turns, a little more tempering, was also a tempering of oneself, was only good with no harm.

After thinking about it, Yang Chen was not so entangled like at the beginning. After sending away his master, Yang Chen began to sit quietly and first explore the changes in his sea of consciousness.

To put it bluntly, the change brought to the sea of consciousness by this double cultivation was not obvious, but the sea of consciousness was reduced by a certain degree of reduction has been reduced to some extent.

This situation was not the first time, and this was not necessarily a bad thing. After this process of shrinking after becoming bigger, Yang Chen's sea of consciousness converging would be strengthened, and the cohesiveness of the spiritual awareness would be higher, which meant that the quality of the spiritual awareness would be higher.

Now Yang Chen understood the true role of the Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra. In addition to the double cultivation could improve the understanding of the spiritual awareness faster than

the single cultivation, there was also an important aspect, that was, consolidating the sea of consciousness and improving the quality of the spiritual awareness.

He believed that Gao Yue's spiritual awareness was also very different from before. This was definitely a good thing for Gao Yue. In the future, it seemed necessary to do more with his master.

The wonderful feeling of close contact with his Master had still made Yang Chen feel good. After a long break, Yang Chen came out completely from that aftertaste.

This was the change caused by the nine hundred and eighty-one First Grade Fire Seed. Yang Chen had at least several times more Fire Seed.

It was a must to merge the flames into the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire. This kind of flame was a legendary flame. In Yang Chen's past life, almost no one could collect it. Even if there was such a strong presence as the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord, there was no such legendary flame.

Many low-level Fire Seed were almost non-existent in the Spirit World Immortal World, and as long as the ordinary fire seed entered the spiritual world, the powerful spiritual power would cause the fire seeds to go out. It was simply impossible to ascend from a mortal world with a low-level fire seed.

The contradiction was precisely here, the fire cultivator that could ascend, almost no one had a low-level fire seed. In the mortal world, no one had the means of fire seeds to achieve the integration of various flames. After ascending, they had the ability, but found that there was no fire seeds to absorb, which was why the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire never appeared.

Different from Yang Chen, the chance of rebirth was unique. In the mortal world, there was an unparalleled methods of controlling fire, which could fuse so many low-level flames. This kind of opportunity was simply tailor-made for the Yin-Yang

Heaven Burning Fire, if Yang Chen was let such an opportunity go waste, then he would be the biggest fool.

These low-level flames on his body, Yang Chen must integrate with it. After a simple cultivation for a few days, after consolidating the results of this double cultivation, Yang Chen began to absorb the fire seed again.

There were nearly a hundred kinds of first grade fire seeds. This time, it took almost half a year. Another change occurred after the fire seeds was all over eighty.

The first grade fire seeds collected before were very average, and there were more than 80 kinds of third and fourth fire seeds. When Yang Chen thoroughly absorbed and merged them, the yin and yang flame finally changed qualitatively.

The original two flames in his body, a mixed third grade fire seeds, a mixed fourth grade fire seeds, entangled together at this moment, like two fire dragons, intertwined with each other, forming a very regular double helix flame.

Whether it was the firepower of the third fire or the power of the fourth fire, all of this had begun to rise wildly. The spiritual power of the underground spiritual pulse was absorbed into the body by Yang Chen like a black hole, and began to strengthen the power of the flames. Yang Chen's side exuded a frightening heat.

The double-spiral flame, through this spiritual nourishment, instantly changed color. The third fire began to become a beautiful purple, and the fourth fire became a pure blue, intertwined, it was particularly eye-catching. Of course, this scene was only visible to Yang Chen.

At this point, the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire was really at the prototype stage, and had the possibility of developing towards the final accomplished stage. After the embryo molding, the rest, was for Yang Chen to continuously absorb more flames to strengthen and supplement it.

The third fire and the fourth fire spirit power was directly promoted here, the third fire spirit power directly upgraded to the eighth layer of the foundation stage, and the fourth fire even rushed to the ninth layer of the foundation stage, only one step was left and it could reach the peak of the foundation.

The spiritual power of the other attributes, under the promotion of the two spiritual powers of the fire attribute, also began to improve in jointness. Except for the spiritual power of the Tenth Water and the spiritual power of the Seventh Metal, all others were upgraded to the level of seven layer of the foundation stage.

At this point, all the spiritual power of Yang Chen finally entered the level of the late stage of the foundation stage. And the three kinds of spiritual power, the Fifth Earth, Seventh Metal and Tenth Water, all of them were the spiritual power of the most original.

The flames twinkling like stars in his sea of consciousness were also merging, like the flames in Yang Chen's body, forming two colors of fire dragons, purple and blue intertwined, winding around the Penglai divine wood, just like a towering sky. There were like two more guardian heavenly dragons on the column.

The strange thing was that his sea of consciousness has not expanded again, but it has been further compressed. It seemed that there was a powerful force that had compressed a lot of his sea of consciousness. The space had also changed from 200 square meters to 150 acres.

Yang Chen was worried that his spiritual awareness would not rise again, but with the compression of his sea of consciousness, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was also compressed crazily.

In the middle stage of the Yuanying stage, under the power that Yang Chen could not explain, his spiritual awareness began to slowly reduce and fell to the early Yuanying stage.

Although the cultivation of the spiritual awareness had been significantly reduced, Yang Chen did not feel that his strength had

declined. No matter whether it was the control of a sword or the scope of the exploration of the spiritual awareness, it had not been lowered, but it had been slightly improved.

Originally, Yang Chen released his spiritual awareness to explore the movements within a hundred miles. But now, Yang Chen felt that he could easily reach about 120 miles. This could only show that the conciseness of the spiritual awareness brought more than just a simple fall of the realm of the spiritual awareness. Perhaps this was the effect of the Three Purities Secret Art that he had never seen before.

Anyway, this change made Yang Chen very happy. The control of the spiritual awareness had greatly enhanced, and it had temporarily lifted the fear of splitting the spiritual awareness. It was definitely a good thing in the end.

The spiritual power had almost collectively upgraded to a small level, and Yang Chen certainly cannot cope with the consolidation of the realm. Then naturally, he can't immediately absorb the fire seeds.

There were two basic functions for consolidating a cultivation base. One was to let your body slowly accept the changes brought by the spiritual power advancement, and the other was to adapt yourself through battles and other actions after the spiritual power advancement. This was to lay the foundation for future improvement.

In a short period of time, the realm was continuously improved. It was not a talent, It was a silly return. When the body had not adapted to the influence of the power of the advancement, it would be blindly elevated to a higher level, once and twice, but it would take a longer time to get used to and adapt.

Once such an improvement was made continuously, the end result was that after several consecutive increases, the body could no longer adapt to its own strength. The final result was an

abnormally serious injury, or the foundation would be destroyed and could no longer be promoted.

No matter what kind of result, Yang Chen didn't want it. Therefore, Yang Chen could only temporarily stop to absorb the flames, and honestly adapt to the daily work.

Of course, there was a better way, that was, the painstaking use of spiritual power, so that your body could adapt to the process of changing spiritual power in use.

The refining of magic weapons was also a good way to use spiritual power. Coincidentally, there were still a lot of things on Yang Chen, and they needed to be re-refined.

Profound Spirit Furnace, Medicine Garden, Dome Hall, Bright Ray Sword and Blood Phantom Vine sword, all need Yang Chen refining system. The Sea Pouring Jasper Cup was just collected in a unique way, could only be used simply, and had not experienced any refining.

The Profound Spirit Furnace was the highest quality weapon in Yang Chen's hand. Yang Chen spent a full half of the time, and then it was difficult to refine the profound spirit furnace to the sixth layer of the Heavenly Spirit Treasure Refining Secret Art and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secret Art Eighth Layer. This was also the highest state that Yang Chen was currently able to cultivate to in the Heavenly Spirit Treasure Refining Secret Art and Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secret Art.

The one thousand and eighty Spirit power threads in Yang Chen's body have already been illuminated by one hundred and forty, and the spiritual power increase had reached at least four times. The pure power of spiritual power was no longer at the early Jiedan stage.

Chapter 269: First Wood Flying Sword's Sword Embryo

The Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire Prototype was just formed, and it was still very fragile. At this time, whether it is used for fighting or used for alchemy refining, it was not a good idea. Only when the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire had grown to a certain level could these tasks be completed with it.

The only way to let the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire to grow was to devour other fire seeds. Of course, if the low-level Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire wanted to devour high-grade fire seeds, such as the True Sun Fire and Moon True Fire and so on, there would be only one result, it would be refined by these advanced fire seeds. Therefore, the devouring could only start from the low-grade fire seeds, and slowly grow itself.

First Grade Fire Seed was indeed the best tonic for the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire. After absorbing the remaining one, the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire on the body of Yang Chen had begun to become stronger.

In the body of Yang Chen, there were dozens of Yin-Yang Flames in which Second Grade Fire Seed and Third Grade Fire Seed were combined. All of them were based on the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire, which also made Yang Chen's Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire more powerful than ordinary formed Fire Seeds.

After consuming all the first grade fire seeds, and then absorbing the second grade fire seeds, there were naturally not many obstacles. Now Yang Chen had not been too deliberate to control the absorption, all of them were done by the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire spontaneously in the completion of the whole process, compared to the need for Yang Chen to completely control it, simple was not a little bit two points.

At least Yang Chen does not need to control the flames any more,

for fear that the fusion of the flames will lead to an explosion. All this, the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire had no such worry at all. The characteristics of this kind of flame, besides burning the sky, was engulfing. Devouring all kinds of flames, as long as it was within the scope of its grade.

Perhaps the primary Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire composed entirely of first grade flames could only absorb the flame of the first grade automatically. However, as long as two or more flames of the Second Grade flame were absorbed, the Third Fire and Fourth Fire was complete, the primary Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire would automatically absorb the flame of the second grade . Of course, when Yang Chen was absorbing, he would pay attention to the balance between the yin and yang.

The current Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire contained several flames of the third grade , which was no longer primary. Therefore, the flame of the second grade was completely absorbed in the fusion. The only thing that needed Yang Chen's control was that the flame inside the profound spirit furnace should be cut off at the right time, so that the fire seeds of the profound spirit furnace was completely absorbed.

The two fire dragons in Yang Chen's body, under the mad absorption of Yang Chen, began a slow change. Each time a flame was absorbed, the color of the dragon changed by one point. The purple flame was getting thicker and thicker, while the blue flame was getting lighter and thinner.

Of course, this change was only a trend. The second grade flame was at best, so that the primary Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire was no longer so fragile. It was still far from the real change.

Yang Chen had dozens of second grade flames, but even if the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire spontaneously absorbed, it still costs Yang Chen at least half a year. Even if everything could be saved, only time was always irreplaceable.

When the number of the second grade flames exceeded 8,860, the spiritual power of Yang Chen changed again. The fire attribute spirituality began to increase again.

However, this time, the Third and Fire Fourth Fire began to be completely balanced. First of all, the Third Fire spirit power reached the ninth layer of the foundation stage. Then, in the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire, the fire seemed to once again embark on a step of change, and the two spirits power of the Third Fire and Fourth Fire began to rise again.

The two fire dragons of the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire, compared to the original prototype, were vivid by many times, and was more and more like dragons, and even Yang Chen could barely distinguish which was the head or the the tail.

What made Yang Chen wonder was that he thought the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire two fire dragons head was on the tail of each other. Now he found that this was not the case. The purple fire dragon and the blue fire dragon were connected end to end, and their heads touch each other. The other's tail was entangled.

Under the crazy absorbing of the two fire dragons, the Third Fire spirit power and Fourth Fire spirit power, like boiling, flowed into Yang Chen's meridians and climbed. It seemed that in just a short moment, Yang Chen's two spirit power collectively pushed to the tenth layer of the foundation stage, which was already the peak of the foundation stage, and only one step was needed, and it could enter the Jiedan stage.

The other series of spiritual powers, under the influence of the fire attribute spirit power, also began to improve in a joint nature, from the seventh layer foundation stage, all had a collective promotion to the eighth layer of the foundation stage to stabilize the stop.

The changes in the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire and the improvement of spiritual power would inevitably bring about

changes in the sea of consciousness. It seemed as if the two fire dragons in Yang Chen's body were in harmony with each other, and the two fire dragons in the sea of consciousness had become much clearer. The only difference between the ones in Yang Chen's body was that the two fire dragons in the sea of consciousness were coiled on the pillars of a Penglai Divine Wood. The two fire dragons directly turned the Penglai Divine Wood into a fire column with two colors.

Unexpectedly, his spiritual awareness skyrocketed again, from the early Yuanying stage, it directly rushed to the apex of the mid Yuanying stage, and it stopped at this point, and did not take a step forward, otherwise, Yang Chen had to face again the dilemma when his spiritual awareness was splitting.

That was a narrow escape, Yang Chen also secretly wiped the cold sweat on his head. Fortunately, he stopped at this point. If he went a little further, it would have been troublesome. Now at this point, this pill was good. Next time, when Yang Chen was promoted to the Jiedan stage, maybe he could solve this big problem.

With a long breath, Yang Chen stopped the cultivation. This time, the Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art collectively upgraded by one level. Although it was only a short period of six months, Yang Chen had to stop again to consolidate his cultivation base.

This was a step that cannot be omitted if Yang Chen still wanted to have long-term development in the future. Originally, according to the ordinary cultivation method, Yang Chen could not have such a fast speed of improvement. However, this life's Yang Chen super strong fire controlling ability, let him have such a nearly cheat like general promotion.

Usually even the same fire cultivators as Yang Chen, at most could absorb a fire seed, absorbing hundreds of fire seeds like Yang Chen was absolutely incomparable. It could be said that there was

no one before, and there would be no one after. No one could be faster than Yang Chen's cultivation.

Although Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling claimed to be in seclusion, but actually used a completely different approach. In addition to the closed-door cultivation in this spirit power overflowing place, when they wanted to consolidate their cultivation base, they would go out to fight monsters.

But for Yang Chen to fight these low-grade monsters fight, for Yang Chen, there was not much experience to be gained. Therefore, Yang Chen's way of consolidating his cultivation base was back to the aspect that Yang Chen was good at.

This time, Yang Chen chose the refining process, he wanted to refine a large Yin Yang Five Phases flying sword for himself, First Wood Flying Sword.

The Yin Yang Five Phases flying sword, Yang Chen already had two. One was the Third Fire flying sword Bright Ray Sword, one was the Second Wood flying sword Blood Phantom Vine sword. Now Yang Chen was about to start the refining of the First Wood flying sword..

Refining the First Wood flying sword, there was no more suitable material than the Penglai Divine Wood, this was what Yang Chen had already fixed since he got the Penglai Divine Wood. However, Yang Chen's cultivation base was low at the time, and the Penglai Divine Wood had just been transplanted into the medicine garden. It had not yet fully matured, so it has not been carried out.

Now, the Penglai Divine Wood was growing very well under the nourishment of the medicine garden, and after being indirectly nourished by the Thunderbolt Pomegranate, it appeared even more green and luxuriant.

The Old tree monster Gui Shanyou only absorbed a Penglai Divine wood, and the cultivation base was soaring. Up to now, Yang Chen had been unable to judge whether the old tree demon's

cultivation base had reached the middle of the dacheng stage or higher.

Among the fully mature Penglai Divine Wood forests, one was the strongest one. It was Yang Chen's carefully selected and specially nourished with the First Wood spirit power and Fifth Earth spirit power. Yang Chen chose it as the main material for his own sword.

A complete Penglai Divine Wood was dug up by Yang Chen, and all the side leaves were carefully disposed of by Yang Chen, leaving only the straight branches and the thick main root.

Like the blood demon vine flying sword, Penglai Divine Wood flying sword also needed to use the main root of the Divine Wood. In fact, the wood type flying sword was the best in this way. Retaining the main root preserves the possibility of the future growth of the Wood Type flying sword, and it was also the key to the upgrade of the flying sword.

Few people would be so extravagant to use a whole plant of Penglai Divine Wood to refine a flying sword, not that they didn't want to, but they couldn't. The preciousness of the Penglai Divine Wood, even if it reached the spiritual world, was also astounding.

The long branches and the main roots were ten feet long and the joint was thick. Yang Chen did not seem to see this length in general, his hands began to display one of the Secret Technique, and hit the giant wood in front of him.

In every Secret Technique, there was a strong First Wood spirit power. When every Secret Technique hits the huge trunk, it seemed that the huge branch would become slightly smaller.

This process, Yang Chen did an unusually careful and hard work. With his current cultivation base, even if he display a Secret Technique every time, the whole body of the wood would take some time. Yang Chen had to rely on his strong resilience and the underground strong spiritual pulse power, which could barely

support him.

Among the Secret Technique, at least dozens of miniature formations were included. Fortunately, Yang Chen had a strong mid Yuanying stage spiritual awareness, and the consonance of the spiritual awareness was unprecedented, this could complete such a difficult secret technique.

With hundreds of completely different Secret Techniques, the huge Penglai divine wood tree trunk had shrunk almost twice as much.

But for Yang Chen, it was still a bit colossus.

The Secret Technique behind it seemed to be more responsible and more energy-intensive. Every once in a while, Yang Chen had to rest for a long time. Restoring spiritual power was one thing. Even the spiritual awareness had to rely on the Three Purities Secret Art to recover once to continue.

It was necessary to refine the huge Penglai divine wood trunk into the size of an ordinary flying sword. It was only this step that required Yang Chen's great efforts.

Seeing the huge Penglai divine wood was getting smaller and smaller, Yang Chen's Secret Technique was also displaying more and more slowly. It used to take as small as half an hour, but now it took at least half a day to be able to display one move.

On the narrow trunk of the Penglai divine wood, there had been a dazzling ray of light. Even Gao Yue and Gong Sunling have been alarmed.

Seeing that Yang Chen was working hard on the Secret Technique, the two women also knew what was going on. No one bothered Yang Chen, but they found a place where they could see this place and continued their cultivation. However, after each cultivation, they would always pay attention to Yang Chen and make sure that he has no problems. Then they would continue.

Yang Chen had no concept of time. He only knew that he had to refine this huge trunk in front of him into a First Wood flying sword. The step in front of him was to create a sword embryo, which cannot be forced and needed patient and persistent work.

Although for Yang Chen, when doing this for a higher time, it took less time and a greater grasp. However, Yang Chen doesn't want to waste time fighting with monsters. The process of refining the sword embryo of the First Wood flying sword was in itself a good process of consolidating his own cultivation base.

For three years, Yang Chen had done almost nothing else in the process of tempering himself with hard work and will power. Every day was spent to restore his spiritual power and spiritual awareness, and then he would continue to make the secret technique.

Thousands of Secret Techniques, all of the entire First Wood flying sword's sword embryo were evenly wrapped. Now the sword embryo has been reduced to six feet and the length of the wrist was the most suitable size for the flying sword embryo.

When the last secret technique was made, the First Wood flying sword, which was originally wrapped in the dazzling light, suddenly converges all the light and showed the body.

The main root of the shrunken Penglai divine wood was covered with a fine and dense runes, and it was like an ordinary wooden stick in front of Yang Chen.

After all it was only a sword embryo, it didn't even have a sword edge. Yang Chen's hand reached out to grasp this sword embryo, feeling the feel of the flying sword in his own heart, his heart was satisfied.

This sword embryo was obviously tempered with the First Wood spirit power of the Penglai divine wood for a few years, which would have such an effect. After this refinement of the rough embryo, Yang Chen could further elaborate and turn the sword

into a shape that he wanted.

“What is this?” Gong Sunling’s voice rang from one side. She had already seen that Yang Chen had made no movement here. She quickly arrived here and asked curiously.

“Flying sword’s sword embryo.” Yang Chen turned to give Gong Sunling a close smile, and he replied.

She didn’t know how, seeing Yang Chen’s smile, Gongsun Ling actually turned red, she didn’t know what made her feel embarrassed.

“You will also refine the flying sword?” Gong Sunling did not see the process of Yang Chen’s comment on Wang Yong’s ancestral Qilin flying sword. Naturally, Yang Chen felt very different in refining flying sword.

“Is it strange?” Yang Chen looked at Gong Sunling, and his heart was amused, but he continued to say with his mouth “Don’t forget, my master is a master of refining instruments that is rare in the Pure Yang Palace! As a disciple, how can i not refine a flying sword?”

“You didn’t forget, our life source flying sword, you are taking a chest bag.” Gao Yue’s voice also sounded from the other side, she never relaxed to pay attention to Yang Chen, and almost arrived at the same time with Gong Sunling. Listening to Yang Chen’s answer to Gong Sunling’s words, Gao Yue promptly interjected.

Chapter 270: Eventually Face It Again

“You are condensing your Life Source Flying Sword early.” Yang Chen smiled and replied “Master, Senior sister, what I promised, when haven’t i delivered?”

“Just reminding you just a little, lest you forget.” Gao Yue smiled and came over, it seemed that Yang Chen completed the sword embryo refining, and also saw that Yang Chen was genuinely happy.

In fact, Yang Chen refining a flying sword, it was not the first time that Gong Sunling heard about it, but it was only the first time she saw it. In fact, when the Great Calamity of the Demonic Art came, the Blood Phantom Vine sword in the hands of Yang Chen appeared frequently on the mouths of all the cultivators who talked about this matter.

Of course, everyone does not know that it was a blood demon vine sword, but only knew that that Yang Chen this Pure Yang Palace Foundation stage disciple himself had refined a sword embryo, and was looking for a hundred-year-old tree to warm up, and Lin Chang and himself collided on the blade edge. At that time, Yang Chen had a sword embryo of a flying sword.

In front of him, it was also a sword embryo of a flying sword, and it was still refined under the eyes of Gao Yue Gongsun Ling. After the first secret technique was made, all the aura of Penglai divine wood was closed by the secret technique. So far, the two women still haven’t seen what this material was?

However, this does not prevent the two women from knowing the huge weight of the flying sword. A whole plant of Penglai Divine Wood, hard and raw, was made to such a size, but the weight was not alleviated at all. It seemed that it was also complementing Yang Chen’s brute force.

After all, it was just a sword embryo. The sword edge could not

cut anything. The two women did not have much entanglement on this issue. Gao Yue was concerned that Yang Chen was still troubled by the troubles of his spiritual awareness and asked on the spot.

This problem, Yang Chen would face it sooner or later. Now Yang Chen's second grade fire seeds had been completely absorbed. This had once again made Yang Chen's spiritual awareness climb to the peak of the middle Yuanying stage. Next, Yang Chen would cross this obstacle as long as he absorbed any kind of third grade fire seeds, he would once again reach the late Yuanying stage.

Third Grade Fire Seed, as long as one was absorbed, it was enough for Yang Chen's cultivation base and the spiritual awareness to raise a small level. Although it may not be enough, but the spiritual awareness could definitely grow.

Towards his little hesitation, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling saw it immediately. After the two women looked at each other, they were worried and overflowing with words.

Immediately, Gong Sunling's face burst into a red color, and no longer dared to look directly at Yang Chen.

Gong Sunling's abnormal performance, Yang Chen did not care much about it, he had now decided to bear the consequences of the division of the spiritual awareness, so his mood was more calm.

Refining the First Wood sword embryo, this was to consolidate his cultivation base. So far, the sword embryo has been formed, and the rest was for it to be carefully crafted, which was not a day's work. Yang Chen quickly collected the sword embryo and asked about the progress of the two women.

Gao Yue had changed from the Water Attribute cultivation method to the present, and it had only been 60 years since she was fully charged. After cultivating to the late Foundation Stage, it was already a rare genius performance. Therefore, the seclusion to accompany Yang Chen to the Solidifying Core, was purely to

accompany Yang Chen, and wanted to follow the pace of Yang Chen's Solidifying Core, but would also take at least a 20 years of maturity.

However, because of the improvement of her spiritual awareness, when Gao Yue was cultivating now, and it was more convenient than ever. She believed that even if there was a gap with Yang Chen, it was only a gap of one or two decades. After a long period of cultivation, the gap between the two decades was simply small and pitiful.

Gong Sunling had an astonishing achievement, and at this moment she was almost at the peak foundation stage. She was only one step away and she would enter the realm of Solidifying Core.

In his previous life, Gong Sunling was a genius of cultivation. This life was influenced by Yang Chen and changed some of her attitudes. However, there was no delay in her cultivation, but there were signs it was faster than before.

It should be known that in his previous life, for three hundred years, Yang Chen was unable to enter the Jiedan stage, and then spent almost seven or eight hundred years before he was promoted from the Jiedan stage to the Yuanying stage. At that time, Gong Sunling had already died in the midst of her Crossing Tribulation.

In his previous life, Yang Chen used the power of the True Sun Fire, and in the last hundred years of Gongsun Ling's dying, he rushed to the Yuanying stage. Gong Sunling relied on her excellent talents all the way. She was like an irresistible force and entered the dacheng stage. At that time, Yang Chen, compared with Gong Sunling was a slag.

Fortunately, this life from Yang Chen began to cultivation until now, but in only a short period of eighty years, he had already reached the peak of the foundation stage, and would soon enter the Jiedan stage, compared to his previous life, it was not known how many times faster it was. The most important thing was that his

master has embarked on a completely different path from his previous life, and Yang Chen, would not let Gongsun Ling repeat the same mistakes in the Heavenly Tribulation again.

It seemed that both Yang Chen and Gong Sunling had hopes to reach Solidifying Core. Consolidation their cultivation base was almost the same. Gong Sunling in addition to cultivating was fighting the monsters. There was also no big problem. Next, the two would once again attack the Solidifying Core.

Gao Yue was also a seasoned person, she came over and told them about her experience in the past years. Yang Chen also did not hide anything, he not only shared the experience of the Elder Wu Xiong with the two women, but also named the experience of his previous life in the name of a book he discovered accidentally.

After all, it was a Great Principle Golden Immortal, and the gap in their insights was irreparable. Even if it was Gao Yue, listening to Yang Chen's words, she couldn't help but feel the feeling of waking up. Gongsun Ling was amazingly savvy, both of her eyes released extraordinary splendor as if she found a treasure, listening to it again and again, and hated that it could not be tested immediately.

When they got together, Yang Chen took out a large bottle of jade dragon wine and tasted the wine with his Master and his Senior sister. Even for each of the two women, he gave a large cup of Four Seas Mysterious Coral liquid, so that they also have a big sleep, to eliminate fatigue, so as to recharge their batteries and impact the Jiedan stage.

For Yang Chen's big handiwork, both women seemed to have become accustomed to it, and did not deny it, let alone guard against Yang Chen. In front of Yang Chen, after drinking the four seas mysterious coral liquid, they entered the dreamland under the guardianship of Yang Chen.

After a brief gathering, the three people dispersed again. Yang

Chen didn't need to beware of anyone here, so he didn't pay too much attention to the whereabouts of the two women.

Refining the First Wood sword embryo made his cultivation base almost as solid as it had been consolidated, and then he could start to attack the Solidifying Core. Prior to this, Yang Chen still habitually used all the cultivation method, including the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, to cultivate his body. After even drinking a cup of four seas mysterious coral liquid, after he took a nap and raised his spirit, he started to absorb the fire seed again.

This time, it was the third grade fire seed that had been collected by the sect. There were no fewer than ten kinds. These ten kinds of third grade fire seed were enough to make Yang Chen attack the Jiedan stage.

Yang Chen was not worried that he can't condense Dan, but he must always be careful about his spiritual awareness splitting. The most ideal situation was that Yang Chen's Solidifying Core succeeds, and his spiritual awareness was enhanced at the same time. In this case, the spirit power Cultivation Base and Spiritual Awareness Cultivation Base would not be too far apart, and the trouble of splitting the spiritual awareness would be avoided.

But Yang Chen knew that this was just a luxury thought, and there were some things that he must face. Since he had already figured it out, Yang Chen had no unrealistic fantasies, but just started to cultivate step by step.

There were several kinds of Third Grade Fire Seeds in the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire. Therefore, now that the primary Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire absorbed the Third Grade Fire Seed, it had no feeling of difficulty.

The Third Grade Fire Seed that were being absorbed, under Yang Chen's attention, separated a flame from the profound spirit furnace, and almost entered the body of Yang Chen without

stopping, and the purple dragon in his body bite it and ingested into it's abdomen.

However, this silk flame was endless, and it had never been cut off because it was swallowed by the fire dragon. The color of the fire dragon that seemed to be purple seemed to be getting stronger and stronger, and Yang Chen's heart was happy for a while.

Where in his previous life did he have the opportunity to touch these legendary flames, let alone Yang Chen, even those masters who play with fire it was impossible, now the legendary flame has been formed in Yang Chen, how could Yang Chen not be full of emotions?

Although the absorption of the Third Grade Fire Seed had been spontaneously absorbed by the primary Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire, it would still take a long time. Yang Chen could safely cultivate other cultivation method, as long as he pays attention to this point.

This kind of distraction, after the cultivation of Three Purities Secret Art, Yang Chen had been very familiar with it to know that the Great Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret Art were ten spirit power simultaneous cultivation, but it was easy for Yang Chen to master it, this kind of just paying attention, was not difficulty.

However, for the time being, Yan Yang Chen did not dare to work too hard on the Three Purities Secret Art, he was absorbing the flames and it was not suitable for the cultivation of the Great Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art, he could only work hard in the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique. It took at least a few months to absorb the flame, which was a waste.

To put it bluntly, after Yang Chen got this cultivation method, in addition to the fact that he did not have the opportunity to do other things, basically it was like the Great Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art, and he had to cultivate One Heavenly Circulation every day.

So far, there had not been much advancement into the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, this was also normal. After all, here was the mortal world, not the Immortal world. This kind of immortal Secret Art, Yang Chen had only cultivated for 20 years, and it was still intermittent. If he was to have small accomplishments it would rather also belittled this cultivation method

Even so, Yang Chen was able to perceive his own strength improvement from every cultivation.

After being conditioned by the four seas mysterious coral liquid, when cultivating the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, the life essence of the immortals absorbed by Yang Chen, began to be stimulated bit by bit.

In addition to changing Yang Chen's post-mortem roots, those life essences were all improving Yang Chen's physique, which was why this life's Yang Chen strength was so strong. But until now, those life essences were truly absorbed by Yang Chen.

Yang Chen in his cultivation did not find that his own form seemed to be changing. His body that was already very strong, this time seemed to be more robust. The muscles of his whole body, on the basis of the original, was more bulging, at first glance, it seemed that the body of Yang Chen suddenly became thicker.

The whole body's joints were slightly creaking, and Yang Chen's body became very strange and tall. Yang Chen's whole person, was like a monster who returned from the wild, the muscles of his whole body were like small snakes, entrenched in the body, showing an indescribable fierce and formidable body.

The clothes that his master and senior sister gave to him split directly, they could no longer bear the strength of Yang Chen's body expansion.

Boom, his sea of consciousness shook fiercely. Yang Chen stopped paying attention to his cultivation directly, and began to

pay attention to his sea of consciousness. The Yellow Turban Strongman had the advantage of being able to be cultivated at any time, but it was not afraid of being interrupted.

The third grade fire seed had been completely absorbed by the primary Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire, and completely transformed into powerful tonics. Under the big supplement of this third grade fire seed, Yang Chen's fire attribute spirit power rushed wildly, and the purple fire dragon inside the sea of consciousness directly expanded by a small section.

His spiritual awareness was almost uncontrollable and directly broke through the bottleneck of the mid Yuanying stage, and instantly entered the realm of the late Yuanying stage. Yang Chen hasn't had time to feel the novelty of the spiritual awareness sharp rise. When the Sea of Consciousness fiercely shook, he suddenly stunned, and once again the spiritual awareness begun to split after the shock.

Although he was already psychologically prepared, Yang Chen was still somewhat lost. However, this time was obviously not the time when Yang Chen should be lost. He immediately converged his mind and began to cultivate the Three Purities Secret Art, preparing for the pain of the next division of his spiritual awareness.

Immediately, Yang Chen suddenly noticed that there was someone in front of the gate. Who would appear here, except for his master and senior sister, it must be that his master had noticed an abnormality and wanted to come over again and rely on the Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra double cultivation to help Yang Chen suppress it.

"Master, it is useless." Yang Chen did not open his eyes, but said very calmly. From the last Spiritual Awareness double cultivation, Yang Chen knew that himself and his master had reached a balance. Then, if they were to have another Spiritual Awareness double cultivation, they could only enhance the spiritual

awareness of both sides and could not complement each other.

“It’s I, Junior brother!” Gong Sunling’s voice suddenly sounded in Yang Chen’s ear, letting Yang Chen burst into surprise, and quickly opened his eyes.

Opposite him, Gong Sunling was standing in front of him with her face blushing, and seemed to be unable to think of anything in a while with an anxious expression, revealing a speechless appearance.

“Senior Sister?” Yang Chen was shocked. What happened?

“You don’t have to say much, I know.” Although Gong Sunling was flushed, she spoke very sharply “Aunt Master Gao has told me everything, even the Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra was passed me, I... I help you!”

When it came to the following words, Gong Sunling was almost ashamed to look up, but her action had not stopped. It seemed that she wanted to sit in the opposite position of Yang Chen and balance her forehead with Yang Chen.

However, it was very difficult to do this now. Yang Chen didn’t know the changes in his body when he cultivated the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, but it was clear that Yang Chen’s more and more sturdy figure and the expanding muscles have made Gong Sunling’s posture a bit awkward.

Feeling the increasingly fierce sensation of Yang Chen’s body, Gong Sunling slammed her teeth and stepped forward, sitting on top Yang Chen’s legs. Her long legs directly caught Yang’s thick waist. At the same time as her face was blushing, she turned her forehead toward Yang Chen’s forehead.

Chapter 271: Double Cultivation With Gong Sunling

Yang Chen's whole person had been stunned, and his whole body didn't dare to move, but Gong Sunling's action made Yang Chen feel the softness of Gong Sunling's body easily. Especially when Gong Sunling's legs were on his waist and her hands were on his neck, Yang Chen's heart was soaring.

"What are you doing, fool!" Seeing that Yang Chen stayed in the same place, Gong Sunling couldn't help but scold him lightly, and then she closed her eyes with shame. However, Yang Chen's more and more rapid sensation of the spiritual awareness made her wake up immediately, and quickly turned her forehead to Yang Chen's forehead, and then began to work on her own.

At this time, if Yang Chen still didn't understand what happened, Yang Chen would be a fool. His Master Gao Yue must have found that her and Yang Chen's dual cultivation have been unable to solve Yang Chen's troubles, so she put this idea in the head of his Senior sister, Gong Sunling.

Originally, Yang Chen was somewhat resistant, but when he saw that Gong Sunling had made such a embarrassing thing for himself, Yang Chen's heart softened and no longer resisted, closed his eyes and began to act.

Although it was the first time for the two to cooperate with the double cultivation, but there was a silent tacit understanding, it was easy for the two to enter the realm where they forgot everything.

Gong Sunling only felt that her whole person had flew up and flew in the air, and the light fluttering could not fall. The feeling of letting herself sink into it gave her supreme pleasure. She had never tried this feeling, and Gong Sunling was a bit eager to stop but couldn't.

Compared with Yang Chen, Gong Sunling's spiritual awareness cultivation base was very normal, almost close to the level of early Jiedan stage. At the same time, the spiritual awareness between the two people run the Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra, and this time aslo Yang Chen's spiritual awareness seemed to have found the an exit to vent, and madly rushed to the sea of consciousness of Gongsun Ling.

Gong Sunling's sea of consciousness was originally white, and this moment, suddenly, there had been a change, the Pure Qi rose, the Foul Qi declined, and it directly became two distinct parts. The most amazing thing was that there was a solid land underneath, and even a strange aura was felt in the land, just like the most original earth attribute aura.

At this time, neither of them cared about these, just immersed in the kind of tacit understanding and pleasure that came from the Spiritual Awareness double cultivation of the two people, and no longer separated.

Gao Yue had a silent and uninterrupted appearance not far from the two, and seemed to be protecting the two. Just, looking at Yang Chen and Gong Sunling's current position, Gong Sunling was held in the arms of Yang Chen and she was holding Yang Chen's neck and carrying Yang Chen's waist. She didn't know how, Gao Yue felt such an indescribable sorrow and grief.

This was because Yang Chen's body shape had changed. Gao Yue had told herself this way, but her eyes couldn't help but stare at the two people, seemingly afraid of what they would be doing further.

After watching it for a long time, Gao Yue realized that it was not right. She shook her head slightly and found a place to sit down. She guarded the two from far away.

Soon Gao Yue thought of a problem. Now Gong Sunling and Yang Chenxiu used such a shameful posture. After that,if Yang Chen's

body shape was unchanged. When her and Yang Chen were double cultivating, would he still want to use this posture?

How could this be? They were master and apprentice? Gao Yue's heart suddenly became stunned, and this problem in front of her made her start to entangle, even when she saw Yang Chen and Gong Sunling's cultivation this time, she threw the grievance from her mind and it became filled with this problem.

For the first time when cultivating the double cultivation Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra, it took a very long time. Gao Yue and Yang Chen lasted for at least a few months. Of course, there was a big part of the time when Yang Chen was healing for Gao Yue.

Gong Sunling and Yang Chen certainly did not have the trouble of healing, but even so, the two people took the first double cultivation, which took a full two months. It was not a simple matter to balance the gap between the spiritual awareness of a late Yuanying stage and the spiritual awareness at the foundation stage. It was a long process.

The two maintained this position for a full two months, they were motionless. The kind of sensation of Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was finally slower and slower, and eventually ceased, and the spiritual awareness of Gong Sunling began to rise wildly.

The peak foundation stage, the early Jiedan stage, the middle Jiedan stage, the late Jiedan stage, the peak Jiedan stage, the early Yuanying stage, the spiritual awareness cultivation base of Gong Sunling was simply like an irresistible force made a crazy improvement all the way, after successive breakthroughs in several realms, It stopped at the early Yuanying stage.

Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was also reduced again from the late Yuanying stage to the middle Yuanying stage, the early Yuanying stage, after reaching the initial Yuanying stage, it would not change again.

This time, the two people's spiritual awareness cultivation base was basically adjusted to the same realm. But in essence it was slightly different.

Gong Sunling was only trained to forcibly upgrade to the early Yuanying stage, but Yang Chen's sea of consciousness was once again confined and compressed, and the spiritual awareness was now like a sturdy iron rope, which became more and more tough.

Finally, both of them stopped doing their double cultivation, and their foreheads that was put together was also separated. However, the wonderful feelings from the double cultivation process had made both of them feel a little bit unfinished, and they were still in the aftertaste.

In particular, Gong Sunling experienced such a wonderful pleasure, and her body was still in the arms of Yang Chen, posing such a shameful posture. The bonus was that she would soon reach Solidifying Core, and she was still ashamed of herself. She buried her face in the neck of Yang Chen, no longer dare to look up.

There was a coughing sound from the side, and the two people who were relishing became awakened. Gong Sunling couldn't help but look red, and hurriedly jumped up from Yang Chen, flashed aside, looked up and saw the face of Gao Yue with a smile. She did not dare to look at Gao Yue again, and she hurriedly bowed her head.

Yang Chen was a little ticked skinned, always sitting there, his face had not changed. In addition to the aftertaste of the double cultivation, Yang Chen was still checking his own changes in his spiritual awareness.

This time, the double cultivation seemed to be more effective. The spiritual awareness had been confined. Yang Chen even had a conception that even if the golden bell in his body was rung again, he would not stun himself. His own spiritual awareness, had become fully capable of fighting against the bell and no longer had

to worry that he would become dizzy from using his own protection Magic Weapon.

“How is the effect?” Gao Yue, who was next to Yang Chen, did not speak for a long time. She couldn’t help but anxiously asked in a loud voice. Even Gong Sunling was worried about it and raised her head. If it was useless, isn’t it a waste of their double cultivation, and it’s still made Yang Chen’s spiritual awareness to fall crazily?

“I’m fine!” Yang Chen looked up and replied to the two women who cared about him, but he began to think about how to face the two women in the future.

Gong Sunling’s move was obviously arranged by Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling herself did not resist. It was obvious that the two women were already in an offensive and defensive alliances. This was beyond doubt.

Yang Chen had some headaches. In this way, he would have to owe a lot to Gong Sunling. Yang Chen, who had not had any experience in this kind of thing, once again fell into the troubles of happiness.

The insufficient present was obviously not the time to get entangle with this, otherwise it would hurt the hearts of two women at the same time. Yang Chen understood this, so the answer was very fast, and then he said: “Thank you Master, thank you sister!”

These two thanks, was obviously to the two women for secretly discussing behind his back and help him solve the problem. The two girls listened to Yang Chen, they were all ecstatic, and they did not hide their happiness.

“How does sister feel now?” Yang Chen could know the changes in his spiritual awareness, and could clearly understand the changes in the spiritual awareness of Gong Sunling, but couldn’t know the feeling of Gong Sunling, so he asked.

“I am very good!” Gong Sunling immediately explored her own sea of consciousness, and immediately became scared. The spiritual awareness have soared so much, and at the same time, she was also shocked by Yang Chen’s spiritual awareness. After she had double cultivation to balance herself, she could improve herself so much. How strong was it before?

No wonder that Yang Chen had done many things that seemed impossible to accomplish before. With such powerful spiritual awareness, he could do a lot of unbelievable things.

Of course, for Gong Sunling, the cultivation base of her spiritual awareness suddenly rose to the early Yuanying stage, and she was more sure about attacking the Solidifying Core and no longer had to worry about any risks.

Yang Chen solved his trouble, the two women felt a very heart-wrenching happiness, that kind of happiness, it seemed that they could be more happy than they were, so that Yang Chen was grateful, and secretly swear in his heart never to let the two women receive any pains.

“Sister, there is a cultivation method, which may be suitable for your current cultivation.” When he suddenly remembered something, Yang Chen said to Gong Sunling: “After cultivating it, maybe it will be easier to reach Solidifying Core.”

At the same time, the two women were stunned. The things on Yang Chen’s body were endless, but everyone thought that he had read many miscellaneous books. They didn’t expect him to have any cultivation method. Gong Sunling took a piece of jade from Yang Chen with some surprise, and her spiritual awareness began to explore it.

“Fifth Earth True Secret Art?” The sound of surprise broke out from the mouth of Gong Sunling. As an Earth attribute cultivator, how could she not know what it was. Although Yang Chen gave her this, but there was a feeling of it being really untrue.

Gao Yue next to them was immediately stunned. It was only recently that she got the Tenth Water True Secret Art and Tenth Water True Essence from Yang Chen, because her own spiritual awareness broke through the early Yuanying stage. It was not surprising that Gong Sunling was now the same.

“There is no Fifth Earth True Essence, how can you let her cultivate it?” The last time Yang Chen gave it to Gao Yue, even the Tenth Water True Essence was given together. Now Yang Chen only gave the Fifth Earth True Secret Art, but there was no Fifth Earth True Essence. Wouldn’t it be difficult for Gong Ling?

“This disciple has already cultivated the Fifth Earth True Secret Art.” Yang Chen raised his hand with a smile, and the two women found a purely incomparable earth attribute aura from Yang Chen’s finger. Yang Chen explained: “It is not easy to get the Earth True Essence, and Senior sister can absorb it directly from me.”

This was also a way to absorb directly from Yang Chen’s body, and it could also save the trouble of refining it. The cultivation would be much more convenient. Moreover, Gong Sunling firmly believed that as long as she has cultivated the Fifth Earth True Secret Art, she could immediately condense Dan.

However, Gong Sunling considered more than Gao Yue. When she heard Yang Chen’s words, her face changed and she suddenly asked: “Is that what you were doing in the desolate valley?”

At that time, the Greatest Heaven Sect harbored Chu Heng. For the sake of the Fifth Earth True Essence, there were many arrangements in the desolate valley, but they were defeated in the past. Not only did they fight for a few hundred years, but even Chu Heng was killed. The Fifth Earth True Essence was divided by several major factions, but there was no such thing as the Greatest Heaven Sect anymore.

Now Yang Chen had swaggering said that he had cultivated the Fifth Earth True Secret Art, and when the Greatest Heaven Sect

was in trouble in the desolate valley, Yang Chen was present. The first reaction of Gong Sunling was that it was related to Yang Chen. It seemed that Yang Chen also brought back She Kui and Xie Sha from the desolate valley. It was simply suspicious.

“Master, Senior sister has a few things in mind, no need to publicizes.” Yang Chen did not deny it and just reminded.

Gong Sunling had no idea how to describe himself as an apprentice. When the desolate valley was in trouble, Yang Chen was an early foundation stage disciple, and dared to do such a long-term thing in a lot of Yuanying stage masters. She didn’t know if he was a bold person, or if he had a good luck.

In her shock, it was inevitable that Gong Sunling would force Yang Chen to make clear the situation at the time. She began to clearly remember that Yang Chen had not cared about the Chu Heng. Later, Chu Heng was insulting Gao Yue, and Yang Chen was angry and chased him. She must know the details of this.

Gao Yue had heard it before, but when she listened to Yang Chen again, she still couldn’t help but feel warm. This Yang Chen for her to chased Chu Heng, for her, listening to it for how many times and she would not be bored.

Gong Sunling was the first to understand the inside story. The whole process of it shocked Gong Sunling . After listening to it, she made a burst of exclamation. This Junior Brother Yang, the surprise he gave her was too much.

However, Gong Sunling would like to know more about Yang Chen. This kind of mentality had not been understood by Gong Sunling herself. She wanted to ask again, but she was blocked by Gao Yue.

Now Yang Chen and Gong Sunling were on the verge of the Solidifying Core, Yang Chen was okay, but Gong Sunling couldn’t feel too excited, otherwise it would affect her cultivation.

Gao Yue was the master of Yang Chen. Of course, Yang Chen and Gong Sun Ling would not have any opinions. Of course, throwing away the identity of this Master, Gong Sunling had another respect for Gao Yue, but this could not be shown in front of Yang Chen.

“How is your body size getting bigger?” Yang Chen has been sitting, and there was another reason, that was, his underwear has been smashed, and he does not dare to get up. On the side of Gao Yue, she quickly asked Yang Chen and throw a piece of animal skin clothes that had already been prepared at the time when she was guarding them.

“The problem of the cultivation method.” Seeing that both women turned around, Yang Chen quickly replaced the broken clothes and replied: “When i have small accomplishments in my cultivation method, I can return to normal.”

“Didn’t your built surprise Sun Qingxue and Shi Shanshan when they saw you?” Gao Yue asked very curiously.

Yang Chen thought of this. It seemed that after changing his body shape, he went to see Sun Qingxue and Shi Shanshan. The two women were not particularly surprised. He didn’t know if they don’t care about how Yang Chen’s body shape would become, or whether there were similar Body Refining Technique in the big sects, so they were not surprised at all.

Chapter 272: Extreme Power

However, this issue was not known for the time being. What was important now was to let Gong Sunling cultivate the Fifth Earth True Secret Art.

The Fifth Earth True Essence in the body of Yang Chen was not in the same way as before. This inevitably required two people to cooperate with the cultivation. At least before Gong Sunling absorbed enough Fifth Earth True Essence, Yang Chen had to accompany her to cultivate, and the Fifth Earth True Essence in his body were to be released for the use of Gong Sunling.

It seemed that Gong Sunling was very happy.

She didn't know if it was because of the reason for getting back to cultivate or because of Yang Chen's companionship.

What surprised Yang Chen was that until now, Gao Yue did not cultivate the Tenth Water True Secret Art. Before because of Yang Chen's spiritual awareness issues, Gao Yue was afraid that Yang Chen would break out at some point and he could not take care of himself because of his work so she had never cultivated.

His Master's affection, Yang Chen's heart was warm, but now, Yang Chen could almost certainly not have problems before the Solidifying Core, so Gao Yue cultivation of the Tenth Water True Secret Art, it was put on the agenda.

Now that both women had spiritual awareness double cultivation with Yang Chen, they would no longer avoid anything, and they would not cultivate separately. They would start cultivating in the same room.

Before the cultivation, Yang Chen still used the control method of the Immortal's Cave, and moved three times more Spiritual Pulse to ensure that the three would never have the problem of lack of spiritual power during their cultivation.

After explaining the experience of absorbing the Tenth Water True Essence to Gao Yue in detail, he watched Gao Yue enter the state of cultivation. Yang Chen then turned around and explained the secrets of cultivating the Fifth Earth True Secret Art for Gong Sunling.

Compared with the direct absorption of the Fifth Earth True Essence, it was easier to absorb the Fifth Earth True Essence from Yang Chen's cultivation. However, in the process of doing this, Yang Chen always had to hold hands with Gong Sunling, and the requirements for Yang Chen were higher.

It couldn't be help but say that Yang Chen's current body shape was too much of a hindrance to this kind of cultivation of holding hands. The muscles were too swollen and so large that the standard five-hearted posture has not been able to come out. Even the ordinary cross-legged ones can't be folded. They could only cultivate with a very casual sitting posture.

If they wanted to hold their two hands together, they must be slightly closer to each other. Otherwise, it was Gong Sunling who had to bend over, that or Yang Chen had to bend over, no matter who it was, it would not be so comfortable.

Yang Chen did not expect that he would have such drawbacks when he cultivated the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, but he could not solve it at the moment. Gong Sunling was generous, after face-to-face cultivation failed, Gong Sunling simply let Yang Chen open his double back legs, and turned back to Yang Chen, directly sitting between Yang Chen's double back legs.

In this way, it seemed that Gong Sunling was facing Yang Chen and sitting in his arms. The posture looked very embarrassing, but the problem of holding hands with each other was no longer a problem.

During the cultivation, Yang Chen continued to slowly control his hands and output the Fifth Earth True Essence, and carefully

control the speed of the output. If the output was too slow, Gong Sunling would fail to absorb the Fifth Earth True Essence, and if the output was too fast, it would hurt Gong Sunling.

Also in Yang Chen's experience, even if the past life did not cultivate the earth attribute method, but the control of the Great Principle Golden Immortal was still, but the uniform output of the control of spirit power output was not difficult.

Even so, Yang Chen and Gong Sunling were careful to test the speed several times before they determined the speed of Yang Chen's best output. Then the two did not have any more distractions, so they entered the state of cultivation.

With Yang Chen's cultivation of the Fifth Earth True Secret Art, the absorption of the Fifth Earth True Essence would gradually grow back with his daily cultivation in his body, compared to the seed that Yang Chen absorbed at that time, now it was not how many times bigger and stronger it had become? Gong Sunling just wanted to absorb enough of the Fifth Earth True Essence to make seeds, instead of depriving Yang Chen of his cultivation base, so the obstacle to Yang Chen was not great.

Since it was in line with Gong Sunling's cultivation, what Yang Chen had to do was only a simple output. Everyone knew that it was simple to absorb the Fifth Earth True Essence from Yang Chen, but after all, it was still the Fifth Earth True Essence, even if she had a spiritual awareness with the Yuanying stage cultivation base, but Gong Sunling was still a low-level cultivator.

This absorption was a matter of months. Gong Sunling's spiritual awareness just rose and she was very unaccustomed to it yet. The Yuanying stage spiritual awareness did not give her much help at first.

At the beginning of the first full month, it was Gong Sunling who was adapting to this kind of change in her spiritual awareness. For Yang Chen this was also unexpected. With his experience of Great

Principle Golden Immortal, of course, there was not much adaptation needed, but Gong Sunling had no such experience. It was not until one month later that she was able to gain control of it.

The next process was considered to be on the right track. The Fifth Earth True Essence in Yang Chen's body was absorbed into Gong Sunling's body, and refining and blending instead of the original earth attribute spirit power.

After half a year, Gong Sunling's Fifth Earth True Secret Art was finally completed, and it was no longer necessary to absorb Yang Chen's Fifth Earth True Essence, and she could continue to grow it by herself. At this point, Yang Chen's task was thoroughly completed.

It couldn't be helped but said that the Fifth Earth True Secret Art was really strong, and the most primitive glutinous Fifth Earth True Essence that was absorbed by the Fifth Earth spirit power was not higher than the spiritual power strength of Gong Sunling's body by much. Just after the completion of the cultivation, the refining of the Fifth Earth True Essence, it took Gong Sunling a full two days.

Everything was natural. Gong Sunling originally had a peak foundation stage cultivation base, and it was only a step away from going to enter the process of condensing Dan. After cultivating the Fifth Earth True Essence, she immediately noticed the sudden change of the spiritual power in her body, and naturally began to condense.

The dramatic changes in the Heaven and Earth innate qi caused by the time of Condensation were more than a hundred times stronger than when building the foundation. The spiritual power around her was attracted by a black hole, and the crazily gathered toward the body of Gong Sunling, and even affected the Gao Yue not far away.

At the moment, Gao Yue was also at the crucial moment of cultivating the Tenth Water True Secret Art. Fortunately, Yang Chen had woken up and quickly moved the two Spiritual Pulse in Immortal's Cave to meet the needs of Gong Sunling so that Gao Yue would not be affected by big influences.

The process of condensing Dan was not a one-time process. After the spiritual power condenses from a normal state into a small golden dan seed, it took a lot of time to stabilize the golden dan seed, and then concentrate all the original spiritual powers into golden dan completely, this process would last at least a year.

Both women were in the state of cultivation, and Yang Chen naturally wanted to protect the two women. He couldn't cultivate other things himself. Naturally, he could only choose the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique.

In addition to cultivating, Yang Chen did not forget to look after the state of Xiao Tian. After leaving the treasure house of the Dragon Palace last time, Yang Chen had paid very little attention to Xiao Tian.

After so many years, Xiao Tian had already absorbed the dragon qi absorbed in the treasure house of the Dragon Palace. The overall size was only slightly larger, but there was no such exaggeration as like Yang Chen.

The many Magic Weapon fragments found from Immortal's Cave by Yang Chen was almost already consumed cleanly, Xiao Tian liked that kind of fragments, nothing would suck a piece, it seemed that the pieces were used as snacks.

Most of the time, Xiao Tian was still entrenched on the bright ray sword and the blood demon vine sword, playing and playing, while also nourishing the two flying swords. Now there was the sword embryo of the First Wood flying sword. Yang Chen also put them together. Although the refining was not completed, there was always no harm.

After playing with Xiao Tian, Yang Chen suddenly found a little change, and it seemed that there were some vague patterns on its face. Although these patterns were not very obvious, they didn't seem to change the look of the Xiao Tian too much, but Yang Chen could guess something from the shape of the Xiao Tian attached to the weapon.

These patterns, if you remove the head of today's Xiao Tian and imagine it, you would find that it was a fierce ghost head, with a murderous aura.

Perhaps this was some of the performances that showed that it had become mature after the absorption of those dragon qi. The Xiao Tian Wolf-Dragon bloodline had only been stimulated for decades. Yang Chen did not expect it to grow into a terrifying power. Now it was beyond the expectation of Yang Chen. Being able to participate in the mature process of the Xiao Tian was also lucky for Yang Chen.

After half a year, Gao Yue's cultivation was finally completed. The whole bottle of Tenth Water True Essence was cleaned up by Gao Yue, and the Tenth Water True Secret Art was also successfully cultivated.

Originally Gao Yue was in the middle foundation stage, the Tenth Water True Secret Art was completed, and the cultivation base was as strong as a bamboo, and it was directly raised to the peak of the foundation stage.

This time, the cultivation of Gao Yue was too fast. Yang Chen had to ask with seriousness, that Gao Yue took a longer time to consolidate her cultivation base.

The task of protecting was handed over to Gao Yue, and Yang Chen could finally begin to cultivate. Fortunately, for the time being, Yang Chen does not need to be too troublesome, as long as he absorbs the remaining Third Grade Fire Seed.

With the primary Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire that had grown

to a certain level, the absorption of fire seeds could already be carried out automatically. Yang Chen only needed to pay attention to it a little. Most of the time, Yang Chen could also cultivate the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique. As for the Three Purities Secret Art, Yang Chen did not intend to touch it again before the Solidifying Core, so that his spiritual awareness could not be increased to an uncontrollable level.

On one hand, it was the vision of the Heaven and Earth phenomenon caused by Gong Sunling, but on the other hand, Yang Chen leisurely indulged in the absorption of flames and cultivated the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique. Gao Yue next to them was carefully protecting them, it was a very calm scene.

Gong Sunling was worthy of being a talented cultivation genius. In just a few months, her body has already erupted with a golden dan, and it was getting stronger and stronger. Gao Yue, who has had experience in condensing Dan, knew that she was now getting better and better, and she was very happy for her.

Yang Chen does not have such a performance as Gong Sunling. Instead, bones kept coming out of his body, and the muscles of the body were already developed. You could even see Yang Chen's muscles strengthening during the cultivation.

When thinking about the embarrassing posture of Gong Sunling and Yang Chen's acquaintance, Gao Yue couldn't help but smile and shook her head, but then her face turned red. If this was the case in the future, if she wanted to have double cultivation with Yang Chen, would she not use that shameful posture?

Yang Chen, who was immersed in the cultivation, did not pay attention to the surroundings. Here were all people he absolutely trusts, there was nothing to guard against.

The absorption speed of the third grade fire seed was much faster. The cultivation of the Yellow Turban Strongman Body

Refining Technique seems to have reached a key point. As long as this shackles was broken through, the goal of the first layer of the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique could be completed.

In the description of the refining technique, after the completion of the first refining body, the practitioner would be able to achieve the power of the 300,000 jin strength. Of course, the size would become a huge body that could bear the power of 300,000 jin.

With the sound of the bones , Yang Chen's muscles finally expanded to a critical point. Turbulent, Yang Chen's whole body and muscles slammed into a loud explosion, and all the movements stopped.

Gao Yue discovered the abnormality of Yang Chen at the first time. She was about to rush over, but she saw that Yang Chen had opened his eyes and stood up.

“Be careful, you are still absorbing the flame!” Gao Yue was startled greatly, what Yang Chen was doing she was of course clear about it, seeing that Yang Chen actually stood up despite the absorption of the flame, she could not help but be shocked.

“It is all right, Master, I still controlling it.” Yang Chen smiled at his master and gestured. His body started to move.

Just a very casual twisted neck, shaking his wrist, Yang Chen's body made a strange noise, giving a strange sense of power.

Yes, the sense of power, Gao Yue thought that Yang Chen was just standing there, there was an oppression that cannot be ignored. The already sturdy body was like a hill, as if it was between the hands and the feet, he could have the power of a thunderous 300,000 jin.

What made Gao Yue not know whether to laugh or cry was that when Yang Chen now stretched out his arm, the thickest part was as thick as the waist of Gao Yue, and even more than some. When

Gao Yue and Yang Chen stood together, she was already very petite.

“After others ask, you have to tell them clearly, your refining technique was not taught by me!” Gao Yue, who loved beauty, looked at Yang Chen’s body like a gorilla, and couldn’t help but feel a little angry. This was because if people misunderstand the refining technique she taught had such an effect, how would that make Gao Yue behave.

“Of course, Master is so beautiful, how can she teach such a refining technique.” Yang Chen said with a smile.

“How did you stop?” After complaining about Yang Chen, Gao Yue asked again.

“The Body Refining Technique First Layer is completed.” Yang Chen smiled and replied “It have the power of 300,000 jin.”

It was said that he had the power of 300,000 jin, but Yang Chen knew that his body had more strength than a 300,000 jin. When starting cultivation, his starting point was higher than the average Yellow Turban Strongman, and the effect of the cultivation was naturally better than the ordinary Yellow Turban Strongman . According to Yang Chen’s estimate, he could now have almost 500,000 jin of strength, or a lot. This kind of power, let alone the ordinary Jiedan master, even the strength of a Yuanying master controlling a flying sword, could not reach it.

Gao Yue heard it on the spot. The power of 300,000 jin, does it mean that even if Yang Chen does not have the slightest spiritual power from his cultivation base, and relying on brute force, could he hold his bright ray sword and compete with a master who was in a higher realm than him?

Gao Yue, now an apprentice of her own, had become increasingly obscured to her. Judging from the performance of the past, Yang Chen also passed on his own Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra and Tenth Water True Secret Art to her, out of the two

people who was the master and who was the apprentice?

Chapter 273: Condensing Dan

Although he was curious about how much power he had, Yang Chen still couldn't test it. He was absorbing the fire seed, and secondly, not far away from them, Gong Sunling was condensing her Dan, and it was not so wonderful to disturb her.

After Gong Sunling's spiritual awareness double cultivation, Yang Chen's condensed spiritual awareness reached a point that was jaw-dropping. The third grade fire seed that previously enabled Yang Chen to improve, now could no longer achieve the original effect.

Perhaps Yang Chen's primary Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire had already packaged enough third grade fire seeds. After Yang Chen's completed the absorption of a third grade fire this time, it's not as it used to be, the spiritual awareness had not skyrocketed, but it had risen a bit, at best Yang Chen's early Yuanying stage spiritual awareness was raised to the peak of the early Yuanying stage.

With the probing of this kind of fire seed, Yang Chen was overjoyed, at least in accordance with such a situation, he could at least absorbed the fire seed to reach the Solidifying Core, and did not have to worry about the splitting of his spiritual awareness. As for the Solidifying Core, for the time being, there would be no big trouble, after all, he had raised a big realm.

The Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire had not changed much for the time being from absorbing the third grade fire seed, but the two fire dragons in the sea of consciousness had become much larger. It was originally possible to blur the head and tail, but now it was clearer, but the distance of the two fire dragons was still far away.

Yang Chen did not stop and continued again. There were still several kinds of fire seeds in the profound spirit furnace, which could almost balance the third fire and fourth fire. Yang Chen

would certainly not waste time and continued to absorb it.

Time couldn't be saved, but he could save his energy. Yang Chen did not expect the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire to have this kind of benefit, the leisurely self-cultivation of the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique in the process of absorbing the flame.

The Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, Yang Chen had completed the first layer and was now entering the second stage. It was unfortunate that the first layer and the second layer was the refining of the practitioner's body to the most developed stage of the muscles. This also meant that Yang Chen's current body shape would last for a long time.

However, for the time being, Yang Chen does not seem to reject such a body. It was because of this type of body that Gong Sunling had to adopt a very warm posture when she cooperated with Yang Chen. Although Yang Chen does not have much thought of it, it does not exclude the feeling when the two were in close contact.

If he changed to a double cultivation with his Master, was it necessary to make such a warm posture with his Master? Yang Chen was suddenly looking forward to it, looking forward to having a spiritual awareness double cultivation with his Master once again.

In Yang Chen's unreasonable expectation, Gong Sunling's process of congestion was finally completed. At the moment of completion, it once again triggered a huge Heaven and Earth phenomenon. The heaven and earth spirit power quickly gathered on Gong Sunling's body for a long time and this stopped.

"Congratulations!" "Congratulations!" Congratulations came from the mouths of Gao Yue and Yang Chen. Gong Sunling opened her eyes and did not get up. She heard the voices of the two people.

"Thank you, Aunt Master, thank you Junior Brother Yang !" Gong Sunling certainly knew why the two were here, they were all

protecting her, so she immediately thanked them.

Speaking of it, Gong Sunling was the first of the small groups of Yang Chen to promote to a Jiedan master. Gao Yue's water attribute spirit power cultivation was somewhat late, and being at the peak of the foundation stage was already outstanding, but she still could not catch up with Gong Sunling.

Whether it was Gongsun Ling or Gao Yue, both women were considered to be in a new realm, and they needed to consolidate their cultivation base for a long time. In particular, Gong Sunling who had just condensed her Dan, it would take less than ten years to consolidate her cultivation base, which would have an impact on her future cultivation.

Yang Chen's current state does not require the two women to protect him. The two women also knew that they couldn't help him. They made an appointment to come see him when he entered the Jiedan stage and left Yang Chen alone.

Alone on this side, Yang Chen was more heart-warming, while absorbing the fire seed, and continued to cultivate the Body Refining Technique. The absorption of the fire seed was automatic, but Yang Chen was now somewhat worried. In his previous life, he had just a spiritual power Solidifying Core, but now, Yang Chen had to face two kinds of fire attributes and the Solidifying Core at the same time, what kind of abnormality would there be?

This question does not require Yang Chen to consider for long, as Yang Chen would soon have to face it. After continuing to absorb the two types of the third grade fire seeds, Yang Chen discovered that his own spiritual awareness cultivation base had once again rose to the middle Yuanying stage. Next, he absorbed another two kinds of the third grade fire seeds, this time, it finally pushed Yang Chen to the edge of the Solidifying Core.

Boom, the two fire dragons in his body, suddenly changed

tremendously at this moment, the fire dragons formed by the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire, suddenly began to tighten rapidly, and soon became two pocket sized fire dragon.

The two small fire dragons were still purple and azure, just in the spiritual awareness of Yang Chen, they quickly shrunk into two small fire groups like sesame.

This was a harbinger of the Solidifying Core, the seeds of the two golden dans had begun to form, and the next step was the process of Yang Chen's nourishment and growth of the golden dan.

The process of condensing Dan was familiar to Yang Chen, but at the same time condensing two golden dans, Yang Chen did not expect it. However, Yang Chen's mentality was firm and resolute. Naturally, he was not too surprised. Two of them were two. Anyway, his Yin-Yang Five Phases Secrets had ten kinds of spiritual powers, and he had not felt that they would be normal.

Surrounded by the spiritual power, the two golden dans were injected. The seeds of the two sesame-sized seeds gradually increased with the influx of spiritual power.

However, the speed of the increase could almost be comparable to that of a snail, or even worse. Such a huge supply of spiritual power, even Yang Yang's feeling has increased a little bit, if he wanted to reach the normal minimum of the egg size, such a day must take at least one year.

Fortunately, Yang Chen's Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire golden dan was different from other people's golden dan, and it could still be quickly supplemented by swallowing fire seeds. And just as it was, Yang Chen still had a lot of third grade fire seeds.

The golden Dan seed had been formed. When the flame in the profound spirit furnace touched Yang Chen's hand, it automatically turned into a purple light or an azure light into the Jiedan seed. With the spiritual power perfusion and flame phagocytosis, the golden dan began to nourish and grow at twice

the growth rate of ordinary Jiedan seeds.

What surprised Yang Chen was that the two Jiedan seeds could absorb two kinds of third grade fire seeds at the same time, and the third fire and fourth fire was absorbed at the same time, the speed was doubled.

In his own body, Yang Chen's spiritual power was ten times more than that of others. At this time, the double Jiedan seeds were molded, and the spiritual power absorbed was at least twice as large as that of ordinary people. For a time, the spiritual power of the surrounding spiritual veins was almost absorbed by Yang Chen like a long whale absorbing water, sucking it all into his body insanely.

If someone was next to him, they would find that Yang Chen has now become a huge black hole. The spiritual power of a few spiritual veins and with the crazy speed of Yang Chen's gathering, even if they were by his side, it would be impossible to absorb any spiritual power here.

The two golden dan seeds, and the same Jindan seeds of the same fire attribute, under the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire, also showed the fearful ability to absorb spiritual power during the seed period.

The enormous spiritual power entered Yang Chen's body, and after the simple absorption of the Yin-Yang Five Elements Secrets, it came directly to the two Jiedan seeds in the Dantian of Yang Chen. At this time, whether it was the fire attribute or other attributes, the Jiedan seeds seemed to be hungry and had not eaten, all were absorbed.

When Gao Yue and Gong Sunling came back to see Yang Chen, they found that he was already nourishing the Jiedan seeds. Finally, he was in the process of condensing Dan. The two women did not say anything, they sat and watched from far away acting as protectors.

This nourishment, Yang Chen absorbed all the third grade fire seeds. After more than a year time, the Jiedan seeds were finally nourished and grown to the size of plums.

At this point, the nourishment process was completely over. At the end of the day, the heaven and earth spirits rioted again, almost for three full hours. Compared with Gong Sunling, it would be more than half the time.

After the formation of the golden dan, the fire attribute spiritual power seemed to be directly compressed by ten times, and even the speed of the overall absorption of spiritual power was almost at least three or four times faster. The Jiedan stage was essentially different from the foundation stage.

The change of the sea of consciousness seemed to be the least obvious, and even the two fire dragons were still two fire dragons.

However, the change was not obvious compared to the previous appearance, not the essence.

At the time of the outbreak of spiritual power, Yang Chen's sea of consciousness was like the Jiedan seed. It quickly shrank and was compressed at least three times. The original 150-acre sea was almost reduced to 50 acres according to the original proportion.

Then, it was the process of madly absorbing Yang Chen's spiritual awareness, it returned to its original size. However, in terms of "density", the current sea of consciousness was at least several times the original.

Yang Chen's spiritual awareness rose again when he entered the Jiedan realm. From the middle Yuanying stage, the late Yuanying stage, it directly rose to the peak of the Yuanying stage.

The compression of the sea of consciousness also meant the further improvement of the quality of the spiritual awareness. At this time, his peak Yuanying stage spiritual awareness, it was not known how strong it was as compared to that of Yang Chen's

spiritual awareness cultivation base before the double cultivation. At this time, even if the golden bell directly hits Yang Chen, Yang Chen would not be affected. The Three Purities Secret Art plus the Highest Mystery Yin-Yang Heart Sutra cultivated spiritual awareness and the ordinary spiritual awareness had a world of difference.

A third grade fire seed had completely failed to make Yang Chen's fire attribute spiritual power level upgrade, and even the effect on the spiritual awareness was limited. If he wanted to continue to absorb the fire seeds to upgrade, he needed at least fourth grade fire seeds.

It was a pity that when it came to the fourth grade fire seeds, it was already a precious fire seed. Most fire cultivators would choose to stay and use it. Very few people would sell it.

Even if it was sold, it was also in the internal auction of the major sects. Although the Pure Yang Palace made a promise of giving him large number of spirit stones and sect contribution points, he did not receive a fourth grade fire seeds or above fire seeds.

For Yang Chen, who already had several kinds of Fifth grade fire seeds in his hand, the fourth grade fire seeds was not too precious, but unfortunately, for the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire, the fourth grade fire seeds was a must.

The upgrade of the Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire cannot be skipped to a certain level. Just as it was formed at the beginning, although there had been several kinds of third grade fire seeds, it still needed to be formed by the ninety and eighty-one of the third fire and fourth fire respectively.

He continued to absorb the fire seeds of all grades, for a long time, it would be something that Yang Chen must do. Fortunately, Yang Chen was now a small and famous alchemy master. As long as he was willing to come up with some high-grade medicinal pills, it was not a big problem to exchange for some fire seeds.

If Yang Chen was willing to exchange with the Ask Inner Heart Pill, maybe even the Sixth grade fire seeds could be used to exchange for it. For some masters, the masters of the Dacheng stage like Wu Xiong, the Fifth Grade True Moon Fire really was not a difficult thing to get. The only thing they needed was to know where there was such a kind of fire seed. It was not a problem at all.

In addition to the spirit power of the fire attribute, the other spirit powers of the various departments with the simultaneous third fire and fourth fire and the success of the Solidifying Core, they were once again upgraded, and quickly upgraded to the ninth layer of the foundation stage . There were only one step away and it would enter the peak of the foundation stage.

When the surrounding spiritual power calmed down slowly, Yang Chen finally opened his eyes slowly.

When his spiritual awareness threads searched around, Yang Chen felt that it was different from the foundation stage.

The scope had been expanded several times directly. As long as he concentrated, Yang Chen could clearly perceive the movements within a few dozen miles, and was more sensitive than before.

The Three Purities Secret Art was indeed wonderful, which made Yang Chen even more strange. The Grand Supreme Elderly Lord who cultivated the Three Purities Secret Art would not be aware of the actions of the rebels. Was it true that all the rebels had similar actions? Did all of them have things like the sea pouring jasper cup to protect their whole body, so that their spiritual awareness couldn't detect it?

This was obviously impossible. If this kind of thing was everywhere, it would too cheap, and it was worthy for the old dragon king to collect in the treasure house. Well, the only possibility was that there was another hidden truth.

On this issue, Yang Chen would not go into depth of it for the

time being, nor would he have the ability to delve into it now. Could the people in the mortal world manage the matters of the Heavenly Court? What was important was that in his previous life he achieved Solidifying Core only after more than three hundred years of cultivation. In this life, Yang Chen only used only eighty years.

Yang Chen entered the Jiedan realm, and Gao Yue was even more happy than when she raised her own realm. The only thing that made both women dissatisfied was that Yang Chen's body was so robust because of the cultivation of the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique. The reason was that his present build was grandiose and was simply a sturdy and boorish man. If they walked with him they would have a feeling of having no face.

After the general people's situation changes, their overall temperament also changed. Although Yang Chen had entered the Golden Core stage from the foundation stage, there was no change except for his body type. Yang Chen was still the same as Yang Chen, and there was no slight change in his tone of his speech.

"Master, it's up to you!" Yang Chen now challenged Gao Yue who had not yet entered the Jiedan stage. "Look at how fast you are, or some of my other attributes spiritual power is faster."

Gao Yue herself was a fire attribute golden dan. Now her water attribute was about to enter the Jiedan stage . Naturally, Yang Chen's words were not bragging. Immediately, her eyelashes flashed and responded "then waits and sees!"

Chapter 274: Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill

This time, the seclusion had been for fifteen years. Yang Chen had said that he would never leave, unless he reached Solidifying Core stage.

For Yang Chen's decision, several elders of the Pure Yang Palace, including the head of the palace, agreed. Yang Chen was now their star of hope, and everyone had the meaning of letting him take over the post of Pure Yang Palace Sect Master. He went into seclusion in the Pure Yang Palace, and his safety was absolutely guaranteed. At least not a few big shots had to worry about it.

The retreat of the three people this time was not like that of ordinary people. For others to retreat, they could not always be in the state of cultivation with warmth and a nourished spiritual power, then break through their shackles and enter a higher realm.

But for Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gong Sunling, the retreat was not so boring. They didn't only follow the normal cultivation. The consolidation will continue, and the two women could even go outside the security line to fight monsters. This kind of retreat made many people who saw it, feel profound unfairness.

Yang Chen counted on his fingers that the previous time he said he would refine a Ask Inner Heart Pill was forty years ago. Yang Chen said long ago that he had to refine a furnace after thirty years, that now had to be delayed for ten more years.

Just like the pill success, Yang Chen still needed to consolidate his realm, and Gao Yue was still at the last step; it would take a period of consolidation to continue to impact the Solidifying Core stage. He simply did not need to go out, he just needed to refine a Ask Inner Heart Pill in the middle of the Immortal's Cave.

This time, the three people were concentrated in the portal of the Golden Dan period. It was the first time that Yang Chen came in. It was not much different from the foundation stage, but the spiritual power was much richer.

Surprisingly, among the caves, there were several alchemy rooms in the portal of the Golden Dan period, which was suitable for Yang Chen's Alchemy.

In the pill rooms, it was unknown where some of the underground fire veins were located. Although it was not like a heart fire, it was the most suitable for some kinds of medicinal refining.

Yang Chen did not need these fire veins. He had an alchemy furnace and various kinds of fire seeds. All he wanted was this place.

The two women knew that he would not be in danger within the safety line, so there was no need to protect him. Once again, they would fight out with the puppets and monsters. While accumulating experience, they also wanted to consolidate their own cultivation base.

Especially Gao Yue, although her fire attribute spiritual power had already achieved Solidifying Core, but her water attribute spiritual power was still stuck at the peak of the foundation stage. The water attributed spiritual power used here to fight, presented an almost leapfrog challenge. Every victory over a monster, for Gao Yue, was a new process of knowing herself.

Both his spiritual power and spiritual awareness was much higher than when the last time he refined the Ask Inner Heart Pill. In addition, the spiritual power here was abundant, making the Ask Inner Heart Pill refining experience more comfortable.

Not only that, the grade of the Profound Spirit Furnace had been improved by at least several grades compared to the last refining; the efficiency of refining had almost increased several times.

Since it was necessary to refine the Ask Inner Heart Pill, Yang Chen simply intended to refine some of them. In addition to handing some over to the sect, he intended to save some. For others, the Ask Inner Heart Pill was an incredible pill. For him, it was just the time to reinforce his cultivation base and keep the snack supplements for himself.

The medicinal materials that were put into the profound spirit furnace at least were twice as much as the last refining of the Ask Inner Heart Pill, Yang Chen now had the confidence to control more herbs.

The four seas Mysterious Coral Liquid could ensure that there would be no big leaks during the process of the alchemy. However, Yang Chen did not add it, and there was no benefit to his skill in this challenging alchemy process. As long as Yang Chen was ready, just in case.

This process of refining was far more relaxed than the last time. At the same time, the amount of medicinal materials was three times more, it was still successfully completed without any twists and turns.

However, Yang Chen did not stop there but continued to start the refining of the second revolution. Ask Inner Heart Pill was one of the medicinal pills that Yang Chen knew. There were a few high-grade medicinal pills that were suitable for mortal cultivators to use to challenge the Two Revolutions refining system.

If someone else knew that Yang Chen was actually refining the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill at this time, it was estimated that he would immediately stop it. Not to mention anything else, it's just a round of resurgence of the medicinal materials that have been maturing for thousands of years. Once the Two Revolutions system fails, what kind of loss would it be?

Usually, even if some senior alchemist masters had this mentality to challenge the Two Revolutions and even turn higher, the

distress of the raw materials in their hands would make them discouraged. Just like the last time, Deng Yiya and Zhu Peng, even He Lianyun, wanted to refine the Two Revolutions Heaven Seizing Pill, but it still wasn't an option. The medicinal materials available were only enough for one such pill which were already used up, where was the opportunity to risk carrying out Two Revolutions refining?

Only a rich and powerful person like Yang Chen in the whole wide world would do such a thing. Of course, only Yang Chen would have this kind of temperament and mentality that was not afraid of refinement failure, even if he loses a lot.

This was very important. The more one didn't care about these Spirit Medicines, the less one could be influenced by their value, and thus, could display own proficiency to its highest extent or even surpass it.

Yang Chen really did not care about this Spirit Medicine. Naturally, there was not much pressure on him. Under this mentality, the process of refining was extremely smooth. Occasional mistakes in the middle of the road caused a loss of a few Ask Inner Heart Pills but he remained perfectly precise in controlling the whole process.

The Two Revolutions system directly consumed the entire two years of Yang Chen's time, resulting in an even longer refining period. It was something that everyone could understand. After all, Yang Chen's refining system was already familiar and easy to him, while the Two Revolutions refining system was challenging and the difficulty was even higher. For this level of the medicinal pill, whether it was spiritual power or the maturity, it had to be at least twice as high as the One Revolution refinement.

After the Two Revolutions refining was successfully applied, dozens of round Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pills could be found in the pill furnace. Yang Chen began to hesitate, should he bite his teeth and spend some Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart

Pills to challenge the Three Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill?

The Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill was the limit that Yang Chen's present cultivation base could challenge. When this hesitation came into his heart, he knew that it was time to give up. He didn't have such mentality even with alchemy to risk certain failure.

Moreover, if he sent the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill out, it would enough to shock the world. If he really wanted to come up with the Three Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, it would definitely make some sects feel restless.

“Hu”

Yang Chen took a relieved breath.

In the «Elderly Lord Pill Scripture», the methods of collecting the pills had been described one by one. The cover on the mouth of the profound spirit furnace flew and Yang Chen began the process of collecting the pills.

This time, ample spiritual power ripples, centred on the profound spirit furnace, slammed into the surroundings, and filled the entire space with a swift momentum.

This spiritual power, carried a momentum that allowed people to calm down. Wherever they went, no matter what kind of monster, they stood directly in the same place dumbfounded. At that moment, all the monsters' minds were empty and elusive, and there was nothing to fight for.

Gao Yue and Gong Sunling of course immediately noticed this aura. When the spiritual power swept over, the monsters who fought with them slammed down and suddenly stopped fighting and became calm.

The same was true for the two women themselves, but their understanding of the spiritual awareness was still stronger than all the Jiedan realm monsters here. Yang Chen's alchemy did not

elude them. They immediately realized that Yang Chen's alchemy was completed.

Hurrying back to Yang Chen's alchemy room, the two women saw Yang Chen sitting on the side of the stone table in the yard, laughing while drinking the jade dragon wine while waiting for them. On the table, there was also a plate of peeled Profound Yang Fruit that served as a side dish for the wine, he looked very laid-back.

“Did you refine the Ask Inner Heart Pill?”

Gong Sunling asked as they met.

Yang Chen smiled and nodded but did not talk much. He only indicated that the two women sat around the table and found two jade cups from his Qiankun bag to fill up for them.

It seemed that a thousand years Profound Yang Fruit was not enough for three people to taste the wine. In the hands of Yang Chen, there was a ginseng and a sealwort of more than a thousand years. In his hand, the sword light flashed a few times, and there were two more slices of ginseng and sealwort on the table.

“Unfortunately, there is nothing good to condiment, otherwise it could be made more delicious.”

Yang Chen slightly regretted with a sigh, then picked up the glass, “master, sister, let's celebrate!”

Listening to Yang Chen's words, the two women were speechless. A few thousand years old ginseng, a millennium old sealwort, a few thousand years old Profound Yang Fruit, the things which he just took out so casually; extraordinary things that could make people break their heads for. Here, they had become a morning wine dish for Yang Chen, but he still sighed that the taste was still not very good?

If some people knew that Yang Chen was ruining precious things like this, they would rush up to beat Yang Chen. At least Gao Yue

and Gong Sunling had such an impulse.

Yang Chen was actually not showing off, it was really like this when he knew that there was another gateway in the medicine garden, many other such millennial elixirs being on the other side was not so unimaginable. So, due to the quantity available, for Yang Chen, they had turned ordinary, be it for eating or drinking, he didn't feel any hindrance for the contrary.

“Do you like delicious food?”

Gao Yue couldn't ignore Yang Chen's behavior and said. He had such an extravagant hobby that she couldn't help but ask with her eyes shining brightly.

“Of course, I like it!”

Yang Chen nodded. He used to be in a situation of urgent cultivation. There was not much time to ponder these things. But now that the solidification of the core had been successful, there was a lot of time to squander around, and naturally he would do so.

During his previous life he also tasted some of the best of delicacies in the Heavenly Court, to be honest, those masters did not exclude such enjoyment. Blind cultivation was sometimes not the key to becoming a master. On the contrary, the right way was to balance relaxation with it.

Due to Yang Chen's kindness, of course, the two women would not waste such an opportunity. Not long ago, the two women fought for a long time and these precious things could just restore their losses. What's more, his alchemy's success was naturally worth the celebration.

The wine had been drunk for a few cups, and both women were somewhat overwhelmed. Yang Chen later secretly swapped Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid with the wine distiller's yeast, for the women, giving them another service.

When the two women woke up from the deep sleep, they did not

know what had happened, but soon they realized. Such a precious thing as the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid was brought to them by Yang Chen, such a luxury inevitably made the two women a little distressed.

Yang Chen took two small jade boxes and pushed one to each woman.

“This medicinal pill should be taken immediately, it is good.”

The two women opened the jade box and immediately saw the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill wrapped by a Talisman in the jade box. The two women knew that he was refining an Ask Inner Heart Pill, but never knew how the pill looked like. He did not say what it was. Although the two women were somewhat suspicious, they did not link the medicinal pills to the Ask Inner Heart Pill.

Since Yang Chen said that it would benefit them, the two women naturally would not doubt it. Yang Chen would not harm them anyway. The two women even drank the four seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, thus, naturally they were not afraid to accept Yang Chen's small medicinal pill. No one was polite, they took it up, removed the talisman, then swallowed it.

The effect of the pill quickly appeared, and the two women immediately noticed the abnormality, then quickly entered the state of cultivation.

Gong Sunling was okay, her core solidification was successful, and she was consolidating her cultivation base. The Ask Inner Heart Pill let her enter the deepest level of meditation. Working in this way was only advantageous for her, with no harm.

Gao Yue was a step away from her breakthrough. Because of the cultivation of the Tenth Water True Essence, her cultivation base had been upgraded to the peak of the foundation stage, and the core solidification was also underway.

This Ask Inner Heart Pill, let Gao Yue vaguely decipher the direction of the Jiedan realm. The spiritual power of her whole body, ran in an unprecedented concentration, and the environmental spiritual power to resonate with her.

The Ask Inner Heart Pill was worthy of being named so, it was indeed possible to let people handle their own cultivation in the most rational way. Gao Yue knew that her consolidation time had not been long, and her foundation stage was still not completely stable. Therefore, the idea of upgrading was hardened by this hardship, the spiritual power of this resonance was used to start a steady cultivation.

Yang Chen's face also showed a smile. This kind of Ask Inner Heart Pill could at least reduce the time for Gao Yue to consolidate her realm by half, which was enough.

Both women were caught in cultivation, and Yang Chen naturally wanted to protect them. There would be no danger here, but Yang Chen was also there just in case, and once again took out the sword embryo of the First Wood flying sword to further engrave his imprint in it.

This kind of carving was not directly operated on the flying sword with the tools, but Yang Chen used the purest First Wood spirit power, which condensed into a single Secret Technique. He kept it on the sword embryo, so that it would follow its own need and transform its appearance.

Yang Chen was very focused. He, who had a big rise in his cultivation base, had not been as strenuous as this time when making a secret technique before. Soon, the sword embryo of the First Wood under his control began to appear on the sword tip, edge, ridge, hilt, blade, soon a well-behaved flying sword began to slowly form.

After the formation of the complete flying sword, Yang Chen began to lay down his spiritual awareness imprints. Then began to

use the Heavenly Refining Treasures Secret Art and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secret Art. When he started the sacrificial refining, on each sacrificial refining First Layer, he used the Universe Treasure Raising Secret Art to maintain it.

At this point, the Penglai Divine Wood sword finally had the appearance of a flying sword and became an initial grade flying sword.

Chapter 275: Future Plans

Yang Chen did not directly upgrade the First Wood flying sword all the way to the highest level even though he could do so, but simply refined it to the Heavenly Spirit Second Layer and Earthly Fiend Second Layer and then temporarily stopped.

Penglai Divine Wood flying sword, he had not added enough auxiliary materials, just the Penglai Divine Wood, which was not a little worse. This was also one of the Yin Yang Five Elements flying swords that Yang Chen needed for sacrificial refining for a lifetime. Yang Chen must be cautious and careful.

The two women had taken the opportunity to consume the Ask Inner Heart Pill and began to cultivate for a long time. Yang Chen sat down and began to consider what to do next.

Greatest Heaven Sect and Yang Lan were sure to be removed. However, Yang Lan's Dark aptitude was not very good. Until now, they had not yet appeared in the Greatest Heaven Sect. After Yang Chen went out, he planned to send people to explore the current movement of Yang Lan and see what opportunities could be had.

Dealing with the Greatest Heaven Sect was not so easy for the time being. After all, it was still a big sect at the highest point of its power. Not to mention Yang Chen alone, even if he pulled the entire Pure Yang Palace, he would not be their opponent.

The news of the rebellion in the Heavenly Court, had not yet reached the mortal realm, but there would surely be people to pass down the news and let the mortal world's Greatest Heaven Sect deal with it early, and control the resources of the mortal realm. At that time, the Greatest Heaven Sect would have the support from above, they would definitely be even more domineering.

Thinking of this, Yang Chen suddenly felt that he had seized something and was excited. It was not so easy to pass down the news from the Immortal World to the Spiritual World and then to

the Mortal World, they would at least have to pay several Great Principle Golden Immortals to discard several thousand years of cultivation bases as the price. At most, it would just be a conscious clone.

However, even if it was a conscious clone, it would at least be a Great Principle Golden Immortal's Consciousness Clone. In this case, an extremely complicated formation was needed to help its decent. The upper realm and the mortal realm must accurately agree on the time and spend a lot of precious materials and effort to complete it.

Of course, this decent of the avatar was definitely a great help to a big sect like the Greatest Heaven Sect. However, this kind of cost was too high, if not as a last resort, it would never be used.

The Heavenly Court rebellion, the newly-appointed Jade Emperor taking office, this was definitely a news worthy of notice and also an opportunity to control the mortal realm's resources. A strong master consciousness clone's decent to the lower realm was also inevitable. The Immortal World's Profound Heaven Sect had already dominated the Heavenly Court and the price could be afforded by them.

The Immortal World passed the news to the spiritual world, and the spiritual world passed on to the mortal world. It was handed down from generation to generation. With the experience in Yang Chen's memory, it seemed that it would take hundreds of years to complete.

From Yang Chen's entry into the Immortal Executioner Stage till the present, almost ninety years had passed, and in memory, it seemed that after a few years, another very abnormal change of the heavens and the earth would occur. Now that he thought about it, it should be the descent of the consciousness clone from the upper realm.

The reason why Yang Chen dared to be so sure was that after he

ascended, he also heard from others that Profound Heaven Sect had sent people to the lower realm. Second, after that incident, the performance of the Profound Heaven Sect in the mortal world changed. Not only was it more aggressive than it was now, but it had also coerced many small sects to join them to further strengthen their force.

Later, the Pure Yang Palace was also forced to lead its sect Master to death, and thus, Pure Yang Palace vanished. This was the hatred that Yang Chen never forgot. Now, when he still thought about it, he would still gnash his teeth.

Consciousness Clone's decent into the lower realm, Yang Chen's mind had finally formed a complete idea. If he destroyed it this time, it would be very fun.

This kind of Formation that meets the consciousness clone from the upper realm must be in a hidden place in the Greatest Heaven Sect. If this Formation was in trouble, the consciousness clone of the upper-level master would be broken and dispersed which would be no less than a disaster comparable to a Heavenly Tribulation.

Greatest Heaven Sect's undercover Liang Shaoming, who was placed in the Pure Yang Palace, had been dug up by Yang Chen. However, he had used dozens of Tenth Water Yin Thunder to directly blow up an avatar of the old tree demon and fried the entire Pure Yang Palace's mountain gate. This hatred, which was almost equivalent to destroying his family, allowed Yang Chen to scheme a retaliatory attack.

Taking the opportunity to detonate the consciousness clone of the upper realm master, the gate of the Greatest Heaven Sect would only be worse than the Pure Yang Palace's. When Yang Chen thought of this result, he couldn't help but start to itch. He hated that he could not to go out and arrange it now, and then wait for the master of Greatest Heaven Sect from the upper realm to throw himself into the net.

He counted it on his fingers, and there were still more than ten years, enough for Yang Chen to finish all the things here. After destroying the development plan of the Greatest Heaven Sect, there would be absolutely no conflict with Yang Chen's revenge plan. Accelerating this matter could also report the ruin of the entrance of the Pure Yang Palace. Yang Chen certainly had to seize this opportunity.

With this temporary goal, Yang Chen's time had also been the backbone of his cultivation base. His current cultivation base did not need any help from the Ask Inner Heart Pill. Now he only was guarding his master.

Seeing that his Master was now aware of her strangeness in the Water Attribute cultivation, perhaps, when a suitable time was right, Yang Chen could also tell the Palace Master of the postnatal spirit root to teach them in advance. With this postnatal spirit root, Pure Yang Palace could definitely find more outstanding disciples.

The cultivation world came to know about the postnatal spirit root after almost a thousand years, in his previous life. Only then, Gao Yue discovered that she had the complete postnatal water spirit root, which also caused certain people in the Greatest Heaven Sect to covet it. Yang Chen remembered that it was also announced to the world by the people in the Greatest Heaven Sect.

This kind of major discovery, of course, Yang Chen would not leave it to the Greatest Heaven Sect to know about its reputation again. Before a hundred years of time to that event, Yang Chen intended to announce it. Hundreds of years of advancement till then, were enough to develop Pure Yang Palace substantially.

In his mind, he thought about it like this; since the Greatest Heaven Sect would coerce some small sects and rogue cultivators to join their force, the Pure Yang Palace would be able to do the same. As long as there was no need for harsher means, and combined threats with inducements, a lot of rogue cultivators

would come to seek shelter.

Yang Chen was getting increasingly excited, but suddenly he had become a Jiedan realm master. Now he was planning to pass these things to Pure Yang Palace. In his mind, after Gao Yue, the position of the Palace Master would be taken by him, and he then would plan for the Pure Yang Palace and his master. He would never be parsimonious.

What he had to do for the time being was to wait for the seclusion of his master and senior sister to end, then he intended to travel outside as a pretense, and slowly stealthily work the Greatest Heaven Sect. No one will ever know, how the gates of the Greatest Heaven Sect got destroyed and turned into a flat land. He amusingly wondered about the people of his sect laughing out about the Greatest Heaven Sect's predicament.

Gao Yue and Gong Sunling's small retreat lasted for five years. After the Dacheng realm masters Hua Wanting and Min Huafeng took the One Revolution Ask Inner Heart Pill in the past, they had to spend half a year to digest the pill. The two women were just at the early stage of the Jiedan realm, and they took the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, naturally it would take longer.

During this time, Yang Chen did a lot of things. Yang Chen gave Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid to Xiao Tian, no less than ten times, and exhausted its body impurities as much as possible, so that the bloodline of him would be purer.

As for Yang Chen himself, of course, he took no less. He had been promoted to the Jiedan realm, thus, not only some of the original rate of absorption of the body was stimulated, but it also had brought on more impurities.

When Yang Chen practiced the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique, he suddenly noticed this. Compared with his earlier cultivation, after the promotion, there was some spirit power which was blocking his posture. This was obviously not

because the Body Refining Technique entered the Second Layer.

Fortunately, there was the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, which could let Yang Chen excrete impurities from his body at any time. Otherwise, so many impure things deposited in Yang Chen's body would spell big troubles sooner or later.

After enjoying the process of detoxification through the Four Seas Mysterious Coral Liquid, Yang Chen's Golf Strongman Body Refining Technique once again restored the posture of pursuing a Pure Qi. He was also affirmed that for the time being, there would be no such big problems coming his way.

With nothing to do, Yang Chen, tested his current strength, the method used was still the stupid way. After roughly estimating the weight of a large pile of stone, it was then made into a huge stone pillar and waved.

According to Yang Chen's calculations, his current strength was about 500,000-600,000 jin. It was close to 20,000 baht which was more than the effect of practicing the Body Refining Technique's First Layer, it had more than doubled. It could be seen that Yang Chen's body was already outstanding.

The Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire was formed and had entered the initial stage. Yang Chen did not waste time. He directly sent the bright ray sword to the purple fire dragon inside his sea of consciousness in accordance with the Life Source Magic Weapon sacrificial refining method and warmed up to the nourishing sacrificial refining.

This would also take decades of hard work for hundreds of years. Nevertheless, Yang Chen had a Blood Phantom Vine flying sword. For the time being, he could also send a handful of thousands of ordinary flying swords out. As long as there was Xiao Tian, it was enough to use any peerless weapon.

The First Wood flying sword had just been formed, and it needed more sacrificial refining and nourishment. At the same time, it

needed more materials from the First Wood to strengthen it. Yang Chen's discovery showed that although, it was a real weapon, some high-end refining materials were very lacking. It seemed necessary to strengthen this collection in the future.

Yang Chen had been able to safely cultivate the Three Purities Secret Art. After the Yuanying realm, he had to enter the Dacheng stage, it wasn't small matter. The spiritual awareness of the Dacheng and Yuanying realm had a world of difference, not to mention the Third Grade Fire Seed, even the True Sun Fire and Moon True Fire, the Fifth Grade Fire Seed, were not necessarily able to promote the spiritual awareness from the early Dacheng stage to the peak Dacheng stage. This was the gap.

He had been promoted to the Jiedan realm. For the time being, there was no need to worry about the splitting of the spiritual awareness. Three Purities Secret Art was such a formidable cultivation method that it had to be practiced diligently.

Even Yang Chen had a bit of recollection and the wonderful taste of his master and senior sister's spiritual awareness while undergoing double cultivation. Only in the future would there be opportunities where his master and senior sister would be willing to do it again with him, was still a problem.

For Yang Chen, there was still an important thing to do after going out. The Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire must be upgraded. There would be no more Third Grade and Fourth Grade Fire Seeds. The third-grade fire seeds could be exchanged with a large amount of spirit stones. The Fourth Grade Fire Seed required some opportunities. Yang Chen could only go to find it himself or use medicinal pills to exchange it with others.

Everything was for his cultivation base, and if the cultivation base didn't promote, anything would become empty talk. Before Yang Chen met Luo Yuan, he could only flee and escape. This fully illustrated this point. Fortunately, now Yang Chen had been promoted to the Jiedan realm, even if he was not defeated while

driving the shuttle, only a few people would be able to catch up. Thus, promotion increased his chances of survival in tough situations.

The golden bell was naturally very powerful. At least, Yang Chen was not afraid of the bell's sound anymore and enemy's more powerful attacks could now be countered.

Unless one could kill Yang Chen with a single blow, it would definitely be countered by the bell.

The only pity was that even if Yang Chen was in the Jiedan realm, he still couldn't apply sacrificial refining to the Golden Bell. He really wanted to know how powerful the Golden Bell's resonance would be afterwards.

Of course, Yang Chen had not solidified cores for the nine other kinds of spiritual powers yet. He had to secure any opportunities to cultivate all his spiritual powers to the Jiedan realm, this needed him to always keep an eye out.

Already in the Jiedan realm, Yang Chen still wondered if he could go to the Dragon Palace treasure house and see if he could open one or two more restrictions. The ones that had been obtained, each of them made him pleasantly surprised, and he believed that the remaining ones would bring even more surprises.

Time passed slowly in the process of Yang Chen's planning for himself and the Pure Yang Palace. Of course, while protecting, he did not forget to consolidate his cultivation base.

The Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art was still being practiced to One Heavenly Circulation every day. Similarly, Three Purities Secret Art was also practiced daily. Universe Treasure Raising Secret Art was also practiced occasionally while the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique was the focus of his cultivation. Not to mention, the size and shape of his body reminded him to cultivate religiously, otherwise, going out with it would definitely make him joke to the world.

Yang Chen was certainly not afraid of anyone laughing at him, but Yang Chen was afraid that because of him, his master would be pointed out by others. So, what Yang Chen could do was to suffer, work hard and strive to cultivate the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique to the third layer as quickly as possible. At that time, his body shape would begin to slowly come back to normality.

Gong Sunling's current cultivation base was calculated to be higher than Gao Yue's water attribute spiritual power, so she was faster than Gao Yue at comprehension. After opening her eyes, she realized what she had done. The first reaction was to ask Yang Chen directly, "What was that medicine?"

"Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill!"

Yang Chen casually replied, his eyes were carefully looking at his senior sister.

"Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill?"

Gongsun Ling have had heard of the name of the Ask Inner Heart Pill. Once she heard that what Yang Chen actually gave her and Gao Yue to eat was the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, she could not help but scream. The pill that allowed the Dacheng realm masters to break through their realm, she had actually eaten one after she had just solidified her core. Feeling that to waste such natural resources recklessly, Gong Sunling had a feeling of wanting to beat her chest and stamp her feet.

Chapter 276: Going Out

Both the Ask Inner Heart Pill and Heaven Seizing Pill were said to be the medicinal pills that enable the masters of the Dacheng stage to break through the realm. However, strictly speaking, the Heaven Seizing Pill was still stronger.

The Heaven Seizing Pill could make the masters of the peak Dacheng stage ascend. It was directly relied on the pill spirit and formidable drug efficacy to help crossing the tribulation and ascending. Ask Inner Heart Pill helped in stimulating the real potential of the cultivators allowing them to improve their mind's cultivation base. So, Ask Inner Heart Pill did not directly help the cultivator to improve their cultivation base, the cultivator still had to rely on his talent.

However, the advantage of the Ask Inner Heart Pill was that it could be adapted to almost everyone. One didn't have to worry about a life-threatening situation after the promotion of his cultivation.

The Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill was more refined; the effect was completely different. In terms of value, it was infinitely close to the Heaven Seizing Pill.

Gong Sunling realized that she had taken the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill in a situation where even she, herself was unsure, she felt like getting stabbed through her heart. If she had known of this, she would not have taken it even if she was dying.

“A little medicinal pill, why should senior sister worry about it?”

Yang Chen looked at Gong Sunling's expression and held back his smile.

“Do not worry about it? That is the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill! Ah! Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill! Ah!!”

Gong Sunling still did not hold back, rebuking Yang Chen.

“No matter whether it was Two Revolutions or Three Revolutions, wasn’t it refined by me?”

Yang Chen smiled and said, “it is not something that I can’t refine again in the future. I don’t have to worry about it, my sister!”

Gong Sunling suddenly thought this time. This medicinal pill was made by Yang Chen. However, this was the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill which could almost move a master of the Dacheng stage, why would Yang Chen give it to herself?

In her mind, she suddenly remembered a scene of herself and Yang Chen’s spiritual awareness double cultivation. To be able to cooperate with Yang Chen, her legs were placed on his waist, and the scene of being in Yang Chen’s arms with her hands on his neck appeared again. Gong Sunling’s face became red, but she couldn’t say anything anymore.

It seemed that after having spiritual awareness double cultivation, Gong Sunling herself felt that he did not need to be so careful. Since it was Yang Chen’s own creation, no matter how precious, he had complete authority over its use.

Thinking of this, Gong Sunling’s anger seemed to have been thrown into the clouds, and her emotions calmed down. Just a bit of resentment remained; “You should have at least told us of its origin!”

“I certainly will remember it for next time.”

Yang Chen smiled and promised. He then began to ask about the results of Gong Sunling’s progress in her cultivation and the feeling she felt after taking the medicinal pill.

Gong Sunling and Yang Chen spoke alone and discussed their respective results one after another. That was all so that Yang Chen could use them as a reference.

Gao Yue had not yet gone out, Yang Chen and Gong Sunling had

also not left, they cultivated in the same place. The two continued to wait for almost half a year, only then did Gao Yue finally reacted.

It wasn't that Gao Yue woke up from the seclusion but on her body suddenly an imposing aura burst out which made the surrounding spiritual power begin to madly concentrate on her.

This situation had been experienced by Yang Chen once before. Naturally, this was the process of Gao Yue entering the Solidifying Core stage. Speaking of it in another way; this was Gao Yue's victory over Yang Chen's other spiritual powers as she got her second spiritual power to enter the stage of Solidifying Core.

Yang Chen had been consolidating his cultivation base since his fire attribute's spiritual power got promoted and did not think that he could promote other the spiritual powers in a short time. This was not that Yang Chen was not diligent enough, but if the Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art wanted to reach the Solidifying Core, ten Jiedan, would never be so simple, no chance, it was impossible.

Unless there was anything similar like the Fifth Earth True Secret Art and Tenth Water True Secret Art, the success chance of the cultivation may be enough to achieve a complete promotion. As for whether to bring all the other spiritual powers to the Solidifying Core stage, he was still unsure. If he wanted to rely on hard work as the way to reaching Solidifying Core stage for all the ten spirit powers, even with Yang Chen's postnatal spirit root's full potential, he still had to wait for at least a few decades.

The process of Gao Yue's core solidification lasted for more than a year. After achieving it, Gao Yue swallowed the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, and again started cultivation for six more years. The consolidation of the cultivation base, combined with her core solidification was then finally completed.

Gao Yue had now successfully achieved Jiedan realm with her

water attribute spiritual power. From the Qi Refining to the foundation realm and then to the Jiedan realm, it took her less than seventy years. Although she had taken the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, the speed of promotion could still be regarded as astounding.

After Gao Yue completed her core solidification, she asked the same question as Gong Sunling. The question about the origins of the medicinal pill she consumed. When she heard that it was the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, she didn't have the surprised reaction of Gong Sunling. It seemed that the master accepted the filial piety of her disciples, which was a matter of righteousness.

The retreat of the three had now reached its goal. It had been 30 years since the start till the present. This could be regarded as a long-term retreat.

Even if Yang Chen did not mention it, Gao Yue and Gong Sunling would still insist on going out. Since, they had already achieved core solidification, there was not much significance in staying here for secluded cultivation. It was more appropriate to go out to gain experience. Although they could also fight with the monsters here, Yang Chen said that this kind of battle cultivates the consciousness and battle instinct, the real enemy though, were the other cultivators.

Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gong Sunling, collectively going out, surprised the master of the palace and several elders. Yang Chen had said that, if he did not reach core solidification, he would not go out. Now the three people have gone out to gain experience, they had all reached the Jiedan realm in just 30 years. The sect now had three more Jiedan masters. This was a happy occasion.

Asked about the three-person process, naturally knowing their respective time of condensation, everyone was surprised. Looking at the talent of these three, one would be affirmed that they were one of the most talented geniuses around. No one was worse than

the Green Jade Immortal Island's Fairy Shi.

Pure Yang Palace suddenly had three cultivation geniuses. The master of the palace was so happy that he laughed loudly. Not only the palace master, but even a few elders also had that pleased look.

The happiest ones were Wang Yong, master of Yang Chen's master, Gao Yue, and Gao Shiyan, Gong Sunling's master's master. Their descendants' excellence also elevated their positions among other several elders. Especially Wang Yong, the eagerness of his disciple and the grand disciple to compete was a matter of great pride.

However, all the happiness and pride was replaced with utter shock when Yang Chen took out twenty medicinal pills wrapped in a talisman.

“What kind of medicinal pills are these?”

Asked the master of the palace with curiosity. Generally medicinal pills came packed in jade bottles, rarely were they ever wrapped in a talisman.

“Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill.”

Yang Chen answered very casually.

“Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill?”

When they heard Yang Chen's words, all the elders present jumped. Was he kidding? Ask Inner Heart Pill of Two Revolutions?

Gao Yue and Gong Sunling just heard about the name of the Ask Inner Heart Pill, but they didn't really see the Ask Inner Heart Pill before they took it, and they heard only some of the scraps that were occasionally heard. Even so, they heard It was also shocking.

However, the reaction of the two women was not half as exaggerated as of any elder who was currently present. Hearing the name, Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, no one could sit still.

The Ask Inner Heart Pill, could make a great Dacheng realm

master break through the mid stage bottleneck and now there was this Two Revolutions version. Now everyone understood why Yang Chen would use the talisman to firmly wrap these medicinal pills. This level of medicinal pill, if not so preserved was simply a crime.

Yang Chen had seen that in the secret plane, all the medicinal pills had turned into dust with the passage of time. It was natural to be cautious and careful to preserve the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, this way.

The elders all came around in an instant, staring at the twenty small jade boxes that Yang Chen placed on the table, and kept their eyes on it. Yang Chen said that in the past, he would open another furnace in 30 years. It took some time for the retreat, but when everyone saw the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, the difference between it and the One Revolution Ask Inner Heart Pill was that of heaven and earth!

If you say that the One Revolution Ask Inner Heart Pill would be able to let the masters of the middle stage break through the bottleneck, then the Two Revolutions version may as well could let the master of the peak stage to increase the assurances in crossing the tribulation faced at ascension.

Even the Dacheng stage masters could use it, they were the masters of the Yuanying stage, naturally they could also. In the same year, for the Hundred Thousand Mountains, a total of 13 Ask Inner Heart Pills had been disbursed to nine Dacheng stage masters, the remaining two were given to Wang Yong, one given to the palace master. Even though both have not been willing to take it.

Now there were a total of twenty Ask Inner Heart Pill, even if one was given to every person in the room, there were still a lot left. Everybody thought of getting one; the Dacheng stage was expected, and everyone's hearts would be restless.

Yang Chen was now taking out the other things, which were intended to be handed over to the sect's benefit. The Palace Master and the elders decided that the sect resources would be used by Yang Chen. Yang Chen had no need to ask the sect any more for whatever he needed to use at any time. As for how to use these Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, Yang Chen was no longer concerned. He only had to worry about his master and the elders.

“So, it just happens to be able to strengthen the prestige of my Pure Yang Palace.”

The palace master finally suppressed his excitement and said.

Yang Chen, Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling had some doubts, they didn't know what the Palace Master meant. Wang Yong was very interested in introducing them to the changes in the Pure Yang Palace during their retreat.

The most obvious change was that the disciples recruited by the Pure Yang Palace had increased several times more than before. Every year, hundreds of people joined the Pure Yang Palace. Pure Yang Palace seemed to have gained the same appeal as the big sects.

Naturally, because of the operation of the Hundred Thousand Mountains, the Pure Yang Palace was also on the rise. The monthly cases of disciples have multiplied, and the cultivation of all the disciples was gradually improving.

The overall strength of the Pure Yang Palace had also improved a grade in the past few decades. If the former Pure Yang Palace was only at the bottom of the second-rate sects, it was now at least at the middle second-rate sects.

The growth of the martial arts sect had also led to other changes. In recent years, Pure Yang Palace has also held auctions within the sect. Of course, because of the income from Hundred Thousand mountains in the form of precious materials. The sect had been using the surplus for the auctions.

Just recently an external auction was going to be organized by the sect and there were no finale items available. Yang Chen's Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, naturally, would be the best one to use for it.

“Just kidding! How can I ask whether Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill was available for auction?”

After the palace master had been waiting for Wang Yong to introduce it, this was just a taste.

“What does the Palace Master mean?”

Wang Yong did not understand what the palace master wanted to do and could not help but ask.

“Yang Chen respected you and I have a Ask Inner Heart Pill. I know that you old guys are not willing to use it. I have not been willing either but this time it could be used for the external auction's finale item.”

The Palace Master said in a rare joking tone to Wang Yong. The group looked at that batch of Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pills on the table. Then the palace master suddenly said to Yang Chen: “Since you take out these things, we also rely on the seniority to sell the older one, do you have any objections?”

“The Palace Master can handle it anyway he desires!” Yang Chen smiled and replied, he didn't want to manage it when he took it out. How to deal with it was to be decided by the elders.

Everyone could take Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill, excited looks appeared on their faces. The Palace Master did not care, and directly threw one for each person, and at the same time collected one for himself. Then said, “the rest of these will be sent to the sect's Secret Pavilion for safe keeping. It will thus, serve as a reward for people who will make great contributions in the future.”

Naturally, no one had any opinions on such a decision. The one

who asked the palace master and Wang Yong's turn in the One Revolution Ask Inner Heart Pill, quickly took it to prepare for the auction.

Yang Chen had retired for more than 30 years. Naturally, he also needed to re-recognize the sect's style. At the same time, he also had to visit old friends and thus, asked to be excused.

However, though the three were familiar in the Pure Yang Palace, the finale item of this auction; the Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill of the Pure Yang Palace, was the news, which had already passed along with the exchange of Wine Immortal House and other rogue cultivators all over the cultivation world.

In order to allow most people to hear the news, the Pure Yang Palace even postponed the time of this auction, which was now scheduled to be half a year later.

Since, Hundred Thousand Mountains' matter, almost fifty years had passed, thus, there was no need for secrecy anymore. Moreover, the masters of the Green Jade Immortal Island and Blue Cloud Sect also consciously or unconsciously told some old friends about the matter of the Ask Inner Heart Pill. Thus, the Ask Inner Heart Pill was already known to be a precious thing in the cultivation world, but it couldn't be had.

There were going to be Ask Inner Heart Pills in the auction, and the time had aroused the interest of countless people. Whether it was a big or a small sect, martial sect or rogue cultivators, whether it was a master of the Dacheng realm or a patriarch of the Yuanying realm, or a master of the Jiedan realm, as long as they felt that they could afford, they began to wonder about seizing some at the auction.

Some Alchemist Masters and some big sects began to think about whether they could take Ask Inner Heart Pill, to carefully study the ingredients and alchemical techniques used so that they could also imitate it.

The auction of the Pure Yang Palace had not been started yet, and its hype had already spread far and wide.

Chapter 277: Highly Confidential

Even if there were a few cultivators who didn't know what the Ask Inner Heart Pill was, they were sure of its value with due to the publicity. They would eventually understand what the Ask Inner Heart Pill was.

From the foundation realm to all the way to the masters of the Dacheng realm could use such a precious thing, a medicinal pill once let a master of the middle Dacheng stage to directly breakthrough the bottleneck, such a possibility could make countless people go crazy.

In this world, there were many cultivators who were trapped in a bottleneck and could not breakthrough. When they heard that there were good things like Ask Inner Heart Pills, they immediately realized how important these were to their cultivation.

Some masters of the big sects, who had few friends and relatives, may have a few poorly qualified juniors trapped in a certain realm. If they could get a Ask Inner Heart Pill, couldn't they breakthrough their bottleneck and improve their cultivation base?

Countless people had begun to plan, and at what cost could they get a Ask Inner Heart Pill. However, everyone understood that the for a moment it would interest the masters of the Dacheng realm. At that time, even if they had more spirit stones, the pressure of these masters would reign supreme. If they wanted to grab these Ask Inner Heart Pills from these masters, they would need to think of other methods.

These had nothing to do with Yang Chen. The Pure Yang Palace auctioning the Ask Inner Heart Pill, at the first-hand delivery of the transaction, did not care who buys it. The only thing that should be of concern to the Pure Yang Palace was that the influence of its own sect was getting bigger and bigger.

There was another advantage to the spreading of this news. Everyone had stopped suspecting that Yang Chen was coveting the Xiang Family Heaven Seizing Pill formula. Since Yang Chen could refine the Ask Inner Heart Pill meant that the other's level had already exceeded the Xiang Family by many times, why would he care about the Heaven Seizing Pill.

Although the Heaven Seizing Pill was precious, but for two thousand years, there had only been two. Although it seemed that with it, people crossed tribulations and ascended, but in the eyes of the masters, it was not as good as the Ask Inner Heart Pill.

Everyone understood that the cultivation base that they have acquired by themselves was the most stable and most fundamental strength. By relying on external forces, it would be slightly inferior. The Heaven Seizing Pill was the external force, while the Ask Inner Heart Pill improved one's own strength. Which one would benefit the best, everyone knew clearly.

Yang Chen's reputation had also become more resounding with the news of the Ask Inner Heart Pill. And this also made more people clenched their teeth more and more.

The news of the auction was frantically blistering, but Yang Chen was taken to the Immortal's Cave by the palace master and several elders.

"Yang Chen, during these days of your seclusion, I have made some changes in the Pure Yang Palace. You should know fairly well on the line."

The Palace Master told Yang Chen these bewildered words, so that Yang Chen was very puzzled.

What changes?

The master of the palace did not say that the other people did not intervene, but everyone's face was filled with a burst of joy, it seemed that this was a good thing, not some trouble.

After waiting for a while in the hall, Yang Chen's three friends; Hall Master Gui Shanyou, She Kui and Xie Sha, who had not seen him since his seclusion, quickly came out from a portal.

Behind them, eight strangers followed, men and women. The eight people were all at the Yuanying realm. Their progress fluctuated between the late and early Yuanying stage.

Yang Chen almost immediately noticed the demon qi of the eight strangers, and suddenly understood. These eight guys should be the Yuanying stage monsters that were originally trapped in the Immortal's Cave. It was estimated that they were convinced by the old tree demon and promised a large profit to draw them to the Hall of Eccentrics.

If he didn't look at anything else, just seeing that they could be transformed into human figures, meant that the old tree demon had already passed on the Transformation Secret Art to them. To assure the sect of their disposition, it must be that these guys have already vowed an oath of loyalty on their monster souls.

There were more than eight Yuanying realm masters at once, thus, the strength of the Yang Palace could almost be said to have been multiplied. It must be known that every elder had a praying mantis puppet of the peak Yuanying stage. These combat forces were comprehensive and definitely not lower than the upper levels of the original Pure Yang Palace.

These masters were secret forces, and the Pure Yang Palace would hide them for the time being. It was the kingly way to accumulate strength in the dark.

Gui Shanyou introduced these different people to Yang Chen one by one. It seemed that everyone had heard of his name and was being very polite.

After becoming familiar with each other, Gui Shanyou once again entered the portal with the Yuanying realm masters of the Hall of Eccentrics to impart some guidance on cultivation.

“There are still a few people who have achieved peak Yuanying stage cultivation base, but for the time being, I am afraid that it is not good to suppress them, so I have not wooed them.”

When the Palace Master saw the people of the Hall of Eccentrics leave, he explained to Yang Chen.

Yang Chen did not know what was in the Yuanying realm portal, so the Palace Master made it clear to him. Then added another sentence: “In the portal of the Dacheng realm, it is said that there is also a master of the realm in there. However, we cannot control it for now so do not make other arrangements for the time being. Wait until the sect has enough strength, then we’ll see if we can pull it up.”

This was a safe plan. It was not good to rush to draw a master of the Dacheng stage that no one could control. This was not to give the sect more strength, but to give trouble to the sect.

It seemed that this could wait till at least two of the elders get to be promoted to the Dacheng realm. Then both could join the strength with the old tree demon, perhaps then they would be able to suppress it.

Yang Chen couldn’t help but look at the Master Ancestor Wang Yong, his cultivation base had already reached the peak of the Yuanying realm and now he was accumulating. Maybe after a few more years, with the help of the Ask Inner Heart Pill, the Master Ancestor could step into the level of the Dacheng stage.

Chapter 278: Greatest Heaven Sect's Plan

The meaning of the words of the palace master were meant to make these sects understand the difference. It was nothing more than telling these sects that people challenging him and getting killed in legitimate life and death challenges are worthy if being recognized while the duels their disciples pursued can't be regarded as the same honorable acts.

The present Pure Yang Palace's spirit was now a lot harder, and the tone of speech firmer. Someone from a small sect, couldn't dare to mince words like this. Pure Yang Palace or the Luo family with their late Dacheng stage masters, would not make mistakes in lieu of this.

Speaking of it, Yang Chen's killing of each of them was to show that he was not afraid to confront anyone. When he was challenged, he did admit defeat. But they still forced a fight, meaning that they were knowingly rushing to find death, and killing kills.

"Yang Chen, what is with your body shape?"

After finishing the business, the Palace Master finally investigated the change in Yang Chen's body. Such a strong body, it was rare even for a body cultivator, the Palace Master could not help but be curious.

"This disciple is practicing a Body Refining cultivation method."

Yang Chen smiled and explained, "I haven't gotten proficient yet and will wait until after I practice to small accomplishment, it will return to normal."

The Palace Master was only asking and did not intend to study it carefully. Listening to his explanation, he nodded and said nothing more.

Among the entire Pure Yang Palace, only one person did not need

anyone to worry about what he was cultivating. From his entry into the sect as an outer sect disciple, no one had ever pointed out Yang Chen's cultivation path for him. This was also an odd issue.

“The pill has become a success, what are your plans for the next?”

The Palace Master was completely concerned about him and did not have any other ideas.

“Reading thousands of books and traveling thousands of miles.”

Yang Chen respectfully replied, “this disciple intends to travel around.”

“Well, okay!”

The Palace Master nodded.

“The way of cultivation is not to cultivate behind closed doors. But...”

Just when he said these two words, he suddenly saw Wan Qian next to him and could no longer continue talking. When he came out, he just reached out and patted Yang Chen's shoulder: “Forget it, Luo Yuan can't help you. Run, don't worry about the face.”

Originally, he wanted to remind Yang Chen to pay attention to safety. However, suddenly, he realized that Wan Qian, who was a master of the mid Yuanying stage, was actually captured by him, thus, couldn't say anything else. Yuanying master cannot help him, Dacheng master could not catch up with him, if he still was worried about anything and his action fast enough, nothing was going to happen to him.

“Palace master, if the timing is similar, then take the Ask Inner Heart Pill!”

Yang Chen said to the Palace Master just before he left, “this pill is not as precious as you think!”

After that, Yang Chen turned and left, leaving only the Palace

Master to stand and carefully chew Yang Chen's words. The Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pill was not as precious as imagined. What does this mean?

Leaving the Palace Master, Yang Chen went to meet his master ancestor Wang Yong. The current cultivation of the ancestor had been infinitely close to the apex of the Yuanying realm, and only the last step needed to be taken.

Yang Chen came to the ancestor to persuade him to take the Ask Inner Heart Pill. This kind of pill could be refined anytime by him and was not as precious as others imagined. The ancestor and the Palace Master have always been reluctant to consume it.

Convincing the Palace Master to convince master ancestor to use the method was more direct. Yang Chen was very casual. From the Qiankun bag, he took out more than 20 Two Revolutions Ask Inner Heart Pills wrapped in a Talisman and placed them in front of his master ancestor.

“Master ancestor, this pill, master and Senior sister both have consumed, you don't have to be so frugal.”

Yang Chen's smiling face, now in the eyes of Wang Yong, was so shocking, “the ancestor entering the Dacheng realm is much more important than these medicinal pills.”

Although the Pure Yang Palace now had a master of the Dacheng realm, it was the Hall of Eccentrics, Hall Master, Gui Shanyou, not the upper level of the original Pure Yang Palace. This always served as a point of contention.

The master ancestor Wang Yong was closest to Dacheng realm. If Wang Yong could breakthrough, it would be great for the Pure Yang Palace. A master of the Dacheng realm would surely increase the status of the sect.

Moreover, afterwards, if the sect was willing, he could directly subdue a monster of the Dacheng realm from the Dacheng realm

portal of the Blue Vault Mountain's Immortal's Cave. In lieu towards making it join the Hall of Eccentrics directly.

Three masters of the Dacheng realm were enough to make the strength of the Pure Yang Palace soar again. At that time, it may be able to reach the apex of the second-rate sects. If still allowed to accumulate for a period, it would not be impossible to truly become a first-class sect.

The stronger the sect's experts, the stronger the sect. The stronger the sect, the more resources that could be mastered, which in turn leads to the development of the sect more easily, which leads to more sect experts. This was a virtuous cycle of a well-developed martial art sect, and the Pure Yang Palace was on this path.

This reason, Yang Chen understood, the master of the palace and Wang Yong also understood, so the second day after Yang Chen visited the master ancestor, Wang Yong announced his seclusion to attack the Dacheng realm.

Gao Yue was busy with another matter in the sect. As a master of refining, Gao Yue had both the roots of water and fire attributes. Some of the magic weapons that the sect needed were her responsibility.

The refining device was naturally inside the sect. Yang Chen was very happy with this arrangement. At least for a short time, Gao Yue could rely on the refining device to consolidate her cultivation base without worrying about instability. As for going out to gain experience, it was completely possible to wait for his master's cultivation base to become stable.

Senior sister, Gong Sunling, also had responsibilities. She was now following her own master to delve into a deeper study of formations. Such a genius disciple, Gong Sunling's master also had gained a lot of face. Of course, she must be carefully cultivated and not be wronged.

When her master summoned, she naturally couldn't say anything and could only refine with her master. It was a pity that she couldn't go out and gain experience with Yang Chen.

This arrangement, Yang Chen also liked very much. Though, he was going out this time, it was not a simple tour, but he wanted to take aim at the Greatest Heaven Sect. Once something went wrong, it would spell big trouble. Yang Chen didn't want to involve his master and senior sister in this dangerous matter.

When he calculated the time, the consciousness clone's decent to the Greatest Heaven Sect had a few years of time left. Presumably, the Greatest Heaven Sect had already prepared everything. Yang Chen wanted to destroy it but still needed to make more arrangements. It was not so simple.

In addition to the arrangements made by the Heavenly Court, a person at the lower realm was also needed to receive the consciousness clone at the time of its descent. The recipient must accept the possession of the avatar to make the transfer successful.

As calling it body possession bluntly seemed to convey a bad notion, it was called accepting the perfusion of consciousness. Still this consciousness carrier was destined to be sacrificed like a consumable.

The reason why one had to be sacrificed was that the avatar could not last for a long time on its own, this kind of passage between the two worlds required a huge price.

From the bottom up, it was called ascension and needed tribulations to be passed to be successful. Conversely, the difficulty was greater by tens of thousands of times. Several Great Principle Golden Immortals had to abolish their cultivation of thousands of years as a sacrifice. It was not something that anyone could afford. Only Profound Heaven Sect, this Immortal World's big sect, could do it.

The whole process was also very dangerous. Once any error

occurred, both sides could pay a devastating price. However, success could bring great many benefits. At the very least, news of the upper realm and the experiences regarding cultivation methods could be passed down. For the mortal world, this was simply a heaven defying matter.

Unfortunately, nothing was as perfect as everyone imagined. It was impossible to bring a large amount. On the one hand, there was not enough time, on the other, it needed strong determination, preparation and remembrance capacity for the information needed to be transmitted.

Even so, when crossing the barriers of the two worlds, the avatar would still be greatly hurt. The memory of the avatar would get erased by up to ninety-nine percent, only the deepest of memories could survive. Knowing all the information completely was still impossible.

The rebellion of the heavenly court and the re-establishment of the Jade Emperor were the matters that could be remembered by anyone. Therefore, in the memory of Yang Chen's past life, the news of Profound Heaven's Sect's success was the memory that survived. As for what else, Yang Chen was not very clear.

It was not that easy to break the boundless consciousness of the Greatest Heaven Sect. This matter was of great importance, Greatest Heaven Sect would definitely have a master as the guard, and the location would definitely be at the core of Greatest Heaven Sect. Not to mention a living person, even a mouse was estimated to not be able to enter.

Secondly, once the welcoming array got completed, he would not be able to destroy it. This kind of array had a self-preservation ability, and the protection potential was not inferior to the Greatest Heaven Sect's Mountain Protecting Great Formation. It was a wishful thought to want to destroy it after completion.

However, Yang Chen must sack this grand event of the Greatest

Heaven Sect. This was not only related to the strong development of Greatest Heaven Sect in the future, but also, Yang Chen's vengeance against Liang Shaoming for destroying the Pure Yang Palace in his previous life.

In the memory of Yang Chen, there were several kinds of welcoming formations. Yang Chen couldn't judge which kind, the Greatest Heaven Sect would use. If he wanted to know, there was only one way; to see the appearance of the formation. Only by knowing which type of welcoming formation was involved that Yang Chen could determine how to destroy it.

Greatest Heaven Sect was a big martial art school. There even had a lot of rogue cultivator attachments around the Pure Yang Palace. Not to mention the Greatest Heaven Sect side, it was ten times livelier than the Pure Yang Palace.

The welcoming array would take a large area. If the array layout was placed in the inner sect, it would definitely not fit, and could only be within a strictly guarded area somewhere nearby.

Yang Chen had a Face Changing Pill. If Yang Chen took the Face Changing Pill, he changed his face and mixed into the site of the Greatest Heaven Sect with the rogue cultivators. He could secretly look at the welcoming array of the Greatest Heaven Sect. What was too difficult.

But now, Yang Chen's body shape was so valiant that even people who have not seen it could recognize who he was at a glance. Don't even talk about changing his looks, he couldn't hide his features even after changing his appearance ten times.

It seemed not so easy to sneak in from the front, so he could only find a way from the other direction. That area must be heavily guarded also, and he may be able to see the appearance of the formation if he could bypass them. In fact, he only needed to see a glimpse of the formation, he did not require much.

The once-in-a-lifetime consciousness clone descent was a matter

of future development for the Greatest Heaven Sect. It was always the top priority for defence. At least two masters of the Dacheng realm would use their spiritual awareness to explore the entire area at any time and the slightest movement will be enough to make them act. It was almost impossible for Yang Chen to not disturb anyone by his approach.

However, there were exceptions to everything. Few magic weapons found in the treasure house of the Dragon Palace could be fully used here.

The shuttle was almost omnipotent underground, but it couldn't hide the insights of spiritual awareness from the Dacheng realm masters.

Yang Chen still got another treasure, the Sea Pouring Jasper Cup. In addition to being able to absorb and condense the Tenth Water True Essence, it also had a very important role in blocking spiritual awareness.

When Luo Yuan chased Yang Chen, he escaped his pursuit many times by relying on the sea jasper. He eventually led him to the site of Lan Yan. After successfully concealing himself, he then had him killed.

Luo Yuan and Lan Yan, both in Dacheng realm, one was at late and the other at peak stage, ready to ascend. It was impossible for them to find Yang Chen. Naturally, the master of Greatest Heaven Sect under the shield of the Sea Jasper, would be the same.

To conceal his whereabouts, Yang Chen entered the shuttle from the get-go. Similarly, he also used the Sea Jasper to cover his whole body to conceal it from other's spiritual awareness. Furthermore, he even circled a few times erratically, and finally went towards the Greatest Heaven Sect.

This was also a safe thing to do. After all, the Greatest Heaven Sect was still a super-sect. If this time, he attracts the hostility of it, he was not worth a candle in front of them. We must know that

destroying the avatar of the expert descending into the lower realm could definitely be compared with the destruction of a sect. Everyone had only one result, that was, death.

With Yang Chen's cautious approach, three months later, his shuttle finally entered the Greatest Heaven Sect, and no one noticed it.

However, Yang Chen was a little bit worried. He couldn't find the location of the Greatest Heaven Sect's welcoming array layout.

Chapter 279: Destruction Without Lifting A Finger

In the past life, Yang Chen only knew the day of the incident when there was a phenomenon in the heavens and the earth. He was unclear of where in the Greatest Heaven Sect the array was being arranged. He couldn't say it, he could only find it in the entire Greatest Heaven Sect.

However, this was not a simple activity, at least Yang Chen had not yet touched the Greatest Heaven Sect Mountain Protecting Great Formation. Once he touched the ground, it would definitely cause a response from the Mountain Protecting Great Formation. Letting them raise their vigilance, it would not be worth the loss.

Carefully avoiding the great formation of the Greatest Heaven Sect, Yang Chen walked around the outer perimeter of the inner sect, but still did not find out exactly where the welcoming array was.

If he wanted to enter the gates of the Greatest Heaven Sect, he would trigger the formation in any case. Yang Chen was not proficient in all formations. At least he was not good with this kind.

It was obviously impossible to enter silently. Even more impossible to break through the Mountain Protecting Great Formation. It would definitely trigger an alarm signifying an attack on the formation. Simply announcing his presence and location to the Greatest Heaven Sect. It was not easy to hide for such a long time, he did not want to fall short at the end.

Yang Chen must let the Greatest Heaven Sect eat a squandering loss. Even while suffering they must not know of the villain or find any clues. This required him to be more careful than ever, without revealing any flaws.

After he carefully wrapped around the boundary, Yang Chen had found almost no clue. If he went in through the ground, it would trigger a large defence array of the Mountain Protecting Great Formation, which was very distressing for him.

Suddenly, Yang Chen's mind flashed and then his face showed a smile. He was so obsessed with the flaws that he had gotten into the corners of the horns.

From the beginning, Yang Chen thought that he would not allow anyone to see him entering the Greatest Heaven Sect. He had been so focused on thinking from this point of view that he had forgotten the Monster Race Beast Controlling Secret Art that he had practiced.

The Monster Race Beast Controlling Secret Art could let Yang Chen communicate with the monsters with spiritual wisdom, but it was limited to that due to his past low cultivation base. Now he had already reached Solidifying Core stage. According to the description of the Beast Controlling Secret Art, he could completely control the actions of a common animal, while also being able to share vision with it.

The Mountain Protecting Great Formation would respond to all spiritual creatures unless they were recognized by a sacred token. The sect token must be squandered with blood, and others could not simply pretend having it. However, this did not include ordinary animals with no spiritual power, who would not be affected by the Mountain Protecting Great Formation.

This was the design consideration of the Mountain Protecting Great Formation. If there were animals without any spiritual power, naturally they would not have the ability to destroy the formation itself. Therefore, from the beginning of the design phase, the defence arrays within had never been aimed at ordinary animals.

Suitable animals were very easy to find, and Yang Chen grabbed

few flying sparrows with ease. To deal with this kind of sparrow without any spiritual awareness, he used the Beast Controlling Secret Art once and successfully controlled one.

Subsequently, Yang Chen controlled the sparrows to flying into the sky and sway into the Greatest Heaven Sect Mountain Protecting Great Formation. The Three Purities Secret Art cultivation's formidable Spiritual Awareness only left a trace of the sparrows in the distance. The great formation didn't show any reaction to it.

Yang Chen looked in the core area of the inner sect. The buildings there were densely packed, and the places where the underground Spiritual Pulse were concentrated were all good places to cultivate. Even if it was the Greatest Heaven Sect, they didn't have the richness and wealth to separate a piece of the underground spiritual pulse to specifically arrange the welcoming array.

Yang Chen payed attention to areas that the welcoming array could be placed under. Controlling the sparrows, he scanned several spacious places in the Greatest Heaven Sect.

What made Yang Chen strange was that even with so many such areas, he could not find any trace of the welcome array's arrangement. This made him distressed.

Was the welcoming array of the Greatest Heaven Sect already completed? Available to be used at a moment's notice, whenever they wanted?

The unwilling Yang Chen once again controlled the sparrows to fly. It took a full two months to carefully examine each place.

The welcoming array required a huge flat land. In the Greatest Heaven Sect, there was almost no place to meet such requirements. The only place with some resemblance was in a valley but the area was a little less. It would have been impossible to completely carry out the welcoming array there.

Could it be, that the Greatest Heaven Sect's Welcoming Formation arrangement was placed underground?

This was quite possible but soon Yang Chen vetoed the idea. As the welcoming array started, apart from the consciousness carrier, everything above would be wiped out. It was not the first time for the Greatest Heaven Sect to do such a thing. How could they choose to summon the consciousness clone to the lower realm underground?

There must be something left! I must have had missed something.

Yang Chen once again controlled the sparrow, starting exploration from the intersection of the Greatest Heaven Sect and entering the mountain gate.

A large road walked in, facing the huge mountain gate archway, and then went to the square where the disciples were tested. It was also the gate of the sect mountain that received guests from all walks of life. Yang Chen was thrown here in the past life.

Then there were the hills where the outer sect disciples were located. Several roads were connected, surrounded by mountains. Going in, was the inner sect area of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

Suddenly, Yang Chen's heart moved, and he went to the square where the disciples were tested. Wouldn't it be enough to get rid of the houses that hosted the guests?

The array was arranged there! Usually a strong spiritual power fluctuation was always found here, only to be misunderstood for it being from the Mountain Protecting Great Formation. The disciples would never doubt about the trick under their own eyes.

If the sect closed the area in advance and removed these houses, this place could assume its real purpose as a huge welcoming array, usable at any time. Not far from the guest room, a master of the Dacheng realm sat all year round, supposedly to protect the safety

of the guests and to prevent people from messing up.

Within the few major sects, only the Greatest Heaven Sect had such a large arrangement. It seemed to serve as a respectful gesture for the guests, but a master of the Dacheng realm sitting here all the year round was overkill and too suspicious.

Isn't he guarding the welcoming array?

The layout of the Greatest Heaven Sect was truly unique.

After discovering this, Yang Chen finally showed a smile. If he knew where the formation was, the rest of the matter was much simpler. There were only a few types of welcoming arrays. Yang Chen knew that with a simple technique, it was easy to judge which one was used by the Greatest Heaven Sect.

What made Yang Chen happy the most, was that until now, no one had noticed a common sparrow flying in the sky. This also meant that everything that he had done had still gone unnoticed.

Many of the cultivators have Spirit pets which were birds, could too share their vision. However, no one could share the vision with animals without the slightest spiritual power.

A spiritual pet, unless with the appearance of its master, could absolutely not escape the exploration of a Dacheng realm master.

It was estimated that the sitting Dacheng realm master wouldn't think to even dream that an ordinary sparrow would spell demise for the Greatest Heaven Sect!

According to the calculation of bearing of the welcoming array, Yang Chen easily controlled the sparrow to fly to a known key point. If it was not for the virtue of it being an ordinary sparrow, it wouldn't have been safe and sound. Otherwise, it must have been attacked by spiritual power here by the formations.

The first type of formation wasn't the one, the second type also. When Yang Chen tried the key point of the third array method, the sparrow just flew past and caused the ground to stir, when it

landed, with a spiritual power. It hit the body of the sparrow, instantly turning the sparrow into ash, disappearing without a trace.

It seems that it was the third type of welcoming array.

To be on the safe side, Yang Chen took control of another sparrow and flew to another key point. The same result reappeared. Afterwards, he sent a third one to the third key point, resulting in the same conclusion.

At this point, Yang Chen had been able to completely determine that the Greatest Heaven Sect used the third method of welcoming array construction that he knew. After confirming, he did not alarm anyone, quietly bypassing the Mountain Protecting Great Formation here, to a faraway area from the Greatest Heaven Sect.

After determining the formation method, Yang Chen had a solution. When the consciousness clone descended into the lower realm, it was impossible to accurately locate the appropriate carrier. Because the consciousness clone had to cross three realms; the Immortal, Spirit and finally the Mortal World. The method of the welcoming array was used to tell the consciousness clone of the position of the carrier.

For the consciousness clone to possess a body, there were three different conditions which needed to be met. One was the exact time, the other was the accuracy of the welcoming array, and the other was the appropriate carrier. This time, Yang Chen knew that the location of the carrier was determined by the method of the array itself.

The simplest method of destroying the formation was to attack violently when the welcoming array started, resulting in the formation not working smoothly. If it happened to be at the key moment of the body possession, the formation would collapse completely.

However, this method was not so simple, he needed to face all the

masters present at that time. Since Yang Chen wanted to be unknown as the perpetrator to the Greatest Heaven Sect, he would not use this blatant method.

Yang Chen planned to use another relatively gentle method. Usually, there was only one method to run the welcoming array, which also allowed the consciousness clone to find the carrier accurately. However, if another method was introduced in the welcoming array, when the consciousness clone descended, what kind of situation would that be?

Either the consciousness would not be able to possess a body due to not being able to judge the correct carrier or mistakenly possess some other body.

The carrier must be able to withstand the consciousness of the Great Principle Golden Immortal who was weakened by many thousand times. Generally speaking, the carrier was a cultivator, at least in the Jiedan realm. Otherwise it would not be able to bear such a terrifying consciousness, exploding and dying immediately.

The carrier was destined to be sacrificed. To allow the consciousness to possess the body smoothly, the usual method was to use medicine to let the cultivator acting as the carrier fall into a sleep, and then subject consciousness could successfully possess without any resistance.

Generally speaking, if the carrier was not cultivated with great enthusiasm, and conditioned from birth that his fate was to sacrifice himself for the consciousness from the Immortal World, few cultivators would contribute so generously with their own life.

Even if he was brainwashed by religion, he was a creature; his instinct would have a sense of survival. He must be handled accordingly and not be eliminated. That was the decisive factor in the descent of the consciousness.

For Yang Chen, it was not difficulty to arrange a similar array. The most troublesome was the carrier, the cultivator of the Jiedan

realm, who was willing to be a sacrifice for the consciousness clone from the Immortal World. He had five Jiedan realm masters in his medicine garden.

Each of Wan Qian's five apprentices was a living puppet that had lost its active consciousness. This also meant that their situation was alike the carrier who had chosen to sacrifice himself for the consciousness clone. Thus, any of them could be successfully possessed.

In this way, if Yang Chen chooses another suitable location, he could arrange an identical welcoming array. There would be five bodies, ready to be possessed in the array. It would spell disaster, if started simultaneously with the array of the Greatest Heaven Sect and the consciousness clone deciding to enter his array.

The welcoming array method was not so simple. Even if it was Yang Chen, it took him time for the arrangement. When he calculated, there was less than five years left for the consciousness of the Profound Heaven Sect to start its descent. This much time was enough for him to successfully arrange another welcoming array to trap it.

There were a lot of materials needed for it, but a pity that Yang Chen didn't have that many. Some required things were special, a bit scarce. Once Yang Chen bought them, it would inevitably invite Greatest Heaven Sect's suspicion afterwards.

However, even if no one helped, the Pure Yang Palace had mastered Hundred Thousand Mountains region with other sects. The materials for this array are all produced there.

As the behind-the-scenes owner, a lot of these materials were naturally hoarded. After Yang Chen drove in a big circle, he quickly rushed back to the Pure Yang Palace. The Palace Master even did not even ask Yang Chen what these things were needed for, and immediately let Elder Zheng Feng, who oversaw the resources of the sect to provide him the materials.

Elder Zheng Feng did a more thorough job, bringing Yang Chen to the sect warehouse, opening the door, and then throwing him into it. Regardless of what he took, people would not care, they have long had a consensus on this matter. Yang Chen was to be cultivated as a future Palace Master. Strictly speaking, he was now a Young Palace Master.

As for what Yang Chen wanted to take, no one would care or keep an account. In these years, his contributions to the sect had surpassed the sum of the sect's would be income of a thousand years. What else could the elders care about?

Everything seemed to be in Yang Chen's calculations. The hoarded materials from the Hundred Thousand Mountains were enough for his endeavour.

What Yang Chen was going to do now was to find another suitable place and arrange the same welcoming array. Waiting for the moment of the consciousness' descent and then launching the formation.

Chapter 280: Blowing Up The Greatest Heaven Sect

Yang Chen did not tell the Master of the Palace or his Master what he was doing. He didn't want to let the Greatest Heaven Sect discover any clues through their expectations or worries. The Pure Yang Palace could not compete with the force behind the Greatest Heaven Sect's facade.

However, when Yang Chen left the Pure Yang Palace this time, he borrowed the Illusion Array Banner from Gong Sunling. After all, the welcoming formation required a large piece of open space, and the violent spiritual fluctuations without the cover of an illusion would be discovered, no matter where it was.

Of course, the location chosen should be far enough from the Greatest Heaven Sect. So even if they found any anomalies, it would be still too late for them to stop it.

Once the Greatest Heaven Sect's formation showed any signs of trouble, it was certain that the spiritual power of the two arrays could be used to find the location of Yang Chen's layout. It must be ensured that when they do arrive, he must not be found anywhere near it.

The open space was very easy to find. The spiritual power had the support of Yang Chen's top-grade spirit stone; the array would not have any problems. However, before he started to set up the array, he first used the Illusion Array to circle all the large open spaces around and including the selected open space. From the outside, only a raised cliff could be seen in its place, nothing else.

In the illusion, Yang Chen first arranged a Spirit Gathering Formation and a method to isolate the fluctuations of spiritual power to avoid doubt. With the illusion, he was no longer afraid of getting exposed.

Next, Yang Chen began to arrange the welcoming array. This time, he had already studied in the Immortal World. For a while, the Profound Heaven Sect even planned to sacrifice his cultivation to serve as the consciousness avatar for their welcoming array. Therefore, he also studied it very thoroughly, no less than those who practiced the theory.

The array method was extremely cumbersome. Yang Chen was alone, and he must also measure the amount of materials. He must prepare the materials for the array by himself. He also needed to accurately weigh the materials and mold them into the appropriate shapes, they must fit precisely in the right place. Arranging the array method still took a long time, even if Yang Chen was already familiar with the theory.

The huge array of formations was formed little by little, the runes made from the grain materials had been placed in the right positions, and the various key nodes were also connected. At the end, the embroidered troughs were placed. if he loaded and stimulated the top-grade spirit stone spirit, he could successfully start the array.

After doing all this, it took a full three years for Yang Chen. When everything was ready, he stopped.

Yang Chen was afraid to start the formation, fearing that he would resonate with the welcoming array of the Greatest Heaven Sect, and their people would realize something. In the following time, he went to various places, to strengthen his own alibi.

When leaving, Yang Chen placed a sword array protected dome on the welcoming array under the illusion array. In this way, even if someone discovered the illusion array and entered, they still wouldn't be able to destroy the welcoming array. They will have to break the sword array before he arrived.

Then again Yang Chen's figure appeared in various places, he appeared in many squares and cities. Of course, he also appeared in

various auctions. In all of them, he only bought two kinds of things; fire seeds and alchemical materials. This made people more and more determined that Yang Chen was an alchemy master.

Of course, Yang Chen would leave immediately after every purchase. He now had a very fast flying magic weapon which was not a secret; driving the shuttle, very few people could block him.

To create some illusions for the Greatest Heaven Sect, Yang Chen even appeared outside the Greatest Heaven Sect once. Sometime in the first two months of starting to arrange the formation in Yang Chen's memory.

Greatest Heaven Sect was identical to what it was in his past life. They began to release news three months in advance. The announcement laid out a plan to rebuild the mountain gate. Shortly after, the number of visitors declined at the original mountain gate site. Guests of the sect started to visit the guesthouse on another side.

The mountain gate has been in disrepair since a long time. It was very normal to repair it every 100 years. Apart from Yang Chen, no one felt something amiss. Even some of the disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect were so naive that they did not know, the intention of their own sect.

Leaving the Greatest Heaven Sect, Yang Chen quickly rushed to the side of the welcoming array he had arranged. Quietly, he waited for the formation to open.

The place chosen by Yang Chen was inaccessible, and there were no people in hundreds of miles around. One day before the opening, he had already prepared everything. Wan Qian's five female apprentices had already sat down in the corner of the big array. He had begun to count on his fingers, waiting for the formation to open. The arrival of the crucial time.

Time passed into the night, almost to midnight. Yang Chen's right thumb came over on the other fingers one by one and

stopped on the index finger.

It was at this time that Yang Chen's left hand had already taken the top-grade spirit stone. He immediately put it on the inlay. Spiritual power instantly began to stimulate the array.

Boom!

The complete formation was instantly ignited, and the dark ground seemed to suddenly light up like a huge torch, making the surrounding cliffs glow.

A series of electric lights began to swim in the crowded array. In the midnight sky, there seemed to be a black hole in the emptiness. This black hole only appeared above the large array and hovered not far from the top.

If you look at it from a distance, you couldn't find the existence of this black hole. This was also why the Greatest Heaven Sect and other sects have accomplished the descent of the consciousness clone to their realm without getting noticed.

The shape of the black hole was very bizarre. It looked like a semicircle. A corner of the semicircle began to slowly descend, a ghastly black thread hangs down from it towards the array. One of the women's mouth flew open.

The black line made into the woman's mouth, the semicircle in the sky began to slowly change its shape, becoming rounder, as if it were originally a full circle but half lost. Now it seemed to be recovering.

On the Greatest Heaven Sect's Square, which was thousands of miles away, there were many sporadically standing figures. The welcoming array here was also open, and the same phenomena happened here too at the beginning. However, the moment when the semicircle appeared, all the high-ranking members of the Greatest Heaven Sect frowned while standing next to each other.

What always happened in the past, resulted in a whole circle.

How could there be a semicircle this time? No one knew what was going on, everyone looked at each other in worry.

When the semicircle hanged down a black line and entered the mouth of a cultivator, the black line seemed to be frightened and shook.

Then the semicircle above the big array began to slowly disappear, in a short time it became a crescent moon.

“What is going on?”

The Sect Master of the Greatest Heaven Sect could not help but scream in fear.

Such changes at the end of the day. Even if one was a fool, they would know that something must have gone wrong. However, the people present at the scene broke their heads but could not understand the problem.

Everyone was watching this change, but there was nothing they could do. They didn't know how to reverse this situation.

Suddenly, a Dacheng realm elder raised his head and looked at the direction of Yang Chen's arrangement of his welcoming array. He suddenly said, “in that direction, there is a spiritual fluctuation that is almost identical to our great array!”

Boom!

A few of the high-ranking members of the Greatest Heaven Sect almost detonated, “how could this be?”

“Some people have arranged the same method as my sect and cut off the boundaries of my ancestral hall!”

The Elder of the Dacheng realm once again screamed, he turned into a sword light and flew in the direction of Yang Chen.

“Stabilize the array!”

At the crucial moment, the sect master screamed. Several elders who were responsible for launching the formation method

stabilized the formation. However, the black line that hung down resisted crazily. It kept shaking, kept getting tangled even more and didn't stop for a moment.

The black line kept drilling into the first disciple of Wan Qian. Yang Chen's heart moved, and the other four female apprentices and the mountain god, flew to the side of the first female disciple and stood quietly.

Yang Chen slowly watched the black hole become more and more round, the black silk thread that was hanging down became thicker and thicker. When the first female disciple had absorbed it for about one-fifth of the time, he suddenly controlled the female disciple to fly into another great array.

The black line was thus interrupted by the great array. It then began to search for the next suitable target. The second female disciple immediately took over the residence of the first female disciple, and the black line quickly found her. Her cherry mouth was smashed in and it quickly went inside.

Looking at it, Yang Chen controlled the third female disciple to take over the second one, followed by the fourth and finally followed by the fifth.

After all the black lines had been drilled into the mouth of the five female disciples, the black hole above Yang Chen's formation had become a full moon. On the other hand, the pattern on the side of the Greatest Heaven Sect had turned into a small crescent moon. If they were combined, it would just be a full circle.

“慚七!”

Yang Chen suddenly sighed in his mouth. The five female disciples brushed the area, sat down and began to cultivate.

What they practiced were the small spells that Yang Chen gave them three years ago; Three Purities Secret Art refining Spiritual Awareness. The five women did not have a sense of initiative at all.

In fact, Yang Chen controlled their bodies and then practiced the Three Purities Secret Art.

Even if this was the consciousness of a Great Principle Golden Immortal, most of it was lost during the descent. After the descent, only at most it was at the level of early Dacheng stage.

Because of the sudden emergence of the two large arrays and the emergence of a total of six carrier cultivators in the large array, the consciousness that should have entered a carrier cultivator was artificially divided into six.

Yang Chen had five exclusive shares, but there was only one copy for the Greatest Heaven Sect that really needed it. And only one of them was still unusually unstable.

In the five female disciples who entered Wan Qian, there was no active consciousness at all, and the consciousness of the following quickly took the initiative. However, Yang Chen's refining directly sent the avatar consciousness into hell.

Under the influence of the formidable Three Purities Secret Art's refining Spiritual Awareness, the separated consciousness had almost no resistance; it was completely controlled by Three Purities Secret Art, till successively rupturing. The last remaining part disappeared in less than an hour.

The news was not passed down to Yang Chen, but he did not need to know it. His only goals were to destroy the Greatest Heaven Sect's ideology, disrupt the conciseness clone's descent into his realm, and then teach the Greatest Heaven Sect a lesson.

At this point, the first goal had been basically achieved. The ideology of the consciousness clone's descent into the lower realm had its five out of six parts refined. The remaining one-sixth suffered from the sacredness of the spiritual awareness and the instinctive counterattack of the carrier cultivator. It had become nothing but a trinket, not to mention the message.

Yang Chen's five female puppets, after the refinement of the avatar consciousness, had their spiritual power increased. All of them had improved and promoted a small realm, from middle to the late Jiedan stage.

Could devouring consciousness be able to improve his level? The improvement of spiritual power was very obvious, and even the spiritual awareness had been greatly improved. However, at this moment, Yang Chen had not taken too much notice of it. He quickly returned the five female puppets, back to the medicine garden.

Yang Chen jumped directly into the shuttle and drove it far away to escape.

The black hole above the large array was still spinning slowly. After Yang Chen fled a certain distance, he violently launched another array that had already been arranged next to him.

The array next to it was purely a destructive kind. The moment the formation was launched, a huge spiritual attack hit the center of the large welcoming array.

The entire array shown flashes of light, then flashed a glimmer of light, finally the entire battle formation swayed and trembled.

In a certain position on the array, it slammed open. This small crack began the general progression of falling dominoes. On the whole arrangement of the array, cracks began to appear constantly, and soon the whole array was covered in them.

As if in the same way as Yang Chen's arrangement of the array, the large array at the gate of the Greatest Heaven Sect began to crack a small crack in the same position, soon the crack became unmanageable.

In a fierce tremor, with a bang, the whole formation burst with an explosion, fragments of the array madly splattered around.

“Not good! Fast! Dodge!”

The Greatest Heaven Sect's few high-level executives and a great master of the Dacheng stage flashed and flew a few miles away.

With the explosion and the fragmentation of the array, the black hole floating above the array also detonated furiously. The huge sound spread hundreds of miles away, a dazzling fire rushed into the sky, and after illuminating it, the black hole burst upwards. A huge shockwave centered on the array exploded, carrying the power of destruction towards the surroundings.

The gates of the Greatest Heaven Sect, the hills where the outer disciples were, and the inner sect, including all the buildings were directly turned into powder in front of this huge force.

The scope of the explosion directly covered a thousand miles, and all the houses around were directly turned into ruins.

Countless Greatest Heaven Sect disciples who had not had time to escape in this crazy destruction became muddleheaded and eventually turned into meat sauce.

Just this explosion had turned the whole Greatest Heaven Sect upside down.

Chapter 281: Final Consciousness Clone

The explosion of the welcoming array was too wide. Even if Yang Chen escaped in time, he was still swept away by the aftermath of the explosion. The shuttle swayed.

Fortunately, although the shuttle was not a pure protection magic weapon, it still had a certain protective ability. It was swept away unscathed by the aftermath of the explosion, but it caused a shock.

Yang Chen was in the shuttle and endured that kind of crazy shock. After a while, everything disappeared and calmed down.

How could this level of explosion and spiritual disturbance, not attract attention? However, when Yang Chen chose a location, it was an inaccessible place for most. For a moment, he was not afraid of someone coming over. As for the Greatest Heaven Sect? It was a long way from it, even if its the strongest master, it would take at least a month for him to come over.

Driving the shuttle, Yang Chen returned to the location where the layout was. Then with an action, he quickly summoned the five women and carefully collected the scattered materials. These were some rare materials, even if they have been damaged once, the material itself would not change.

Moreover, leaving these things in place would give people a lot of clues, and Yang Chen would not be so careless. The materials that blasted into the distance had been bound by a larger circle of law within a small circle and the spiritual disturbance was so fierce that it was not easy to find.

At that moment when the two sides exploded at the same time, no one noticed at the Greatest Heavens Sect side that the carrier cultivator trembled. Then, a black gas slammed out of him and instantly returned to the black hole above the formation.

Yang Chen's array of black holes at that moment of the explosion suddenly became a complete circle.

A glimpse of the black gas that was so incomprehensible drilled into a corner of the array. With the explosion, the piece of hidden black gas was thrown high and then fell in a certain area.

Very casually, the five women collected all the materials scattered around them. One of them unsuspectingly tried to take a part of the hidden black gas. The black gas suddenly pounced on her and disappeared into her seven orifices.

The eyes of the female disciple shown a burst of light that was different from the earlier one. It flashed but immediately recovered the same wooden look again. According to Yang Chen's order, the fragments of the array in the field of vision were naturally packed up. Then all of them arrived at the side of Yang Chen.

Yang Chen then ordered them to return. Now in the dome of the temple, in addition to a mess, there was nothing to be found. With a satisfied smile, he called out the shuttle and quickly flew towards the direction of the Pure Yang Palace.

After two days of continuous flight, Yang Chen took the shuttle back, and then found a hidden place to arrange the Illusionary Array. He then flashed inside.

The dome appeared quickly, and Yang Chen didn't think more and went inside. Among the halls, the five women were occupying a corner, sitting on the ground and doing their work silently.

This was their normal state. If there were no other instructions from Yang Chen, they would do their work here and increase their cultivation. This speed of their cultivation was comparable to those of genius disciples.

"You don't have to pretend."

Yang Chen looked at the female disciple who was attacked by the

black gas. He then suddenly said, “they are all my puppets. Oh, they are all under my control. You think that you can’t make me see through your tricks?”

The strength of the Three Purities Secret Art was such that even this guy who was a Great Principle Golden Immortal, could not hope to guess. Naturally, he did not know that his every move had already been clearly understood by Yang Chen.

Brush!

The reaction of the female disciple was not slow, she stood up immediately. However, she seemed to know that the forty-nine flying swords flying above the dome were very powerful, so she still stood and did not make a provocative move. If her flesh was to die again, his consciousness would have no other chance against death.

“Who... dare... move... I... divide... body!”

It was not known if he couldn’t get acquainted with this body, or because the consciousness was too seriously damaged while the avatar was descending, the original female disciple spoke intermittently, one word at a time, it was very awkward.

“Well, it is not good to be blessed in your Immortal World. Do you have to suffer this sin?”

Yang Chen snorted, “You are loyal to your ancestral sect. Unfortunately, you met me!”

The other party seemed to realize that it was not good. He didn’t know what technique was being used. The two female disciples on both sides of her side stood up and faced her. The spiritual awareness suddenly let go and seemed to be sending power to this female disciple.

These two days were enough to refine and consume her body’s original and these two other female disciples’ consciousness completely. The two other female disciples were now enhancing

her consciousness too. Although her consciousness had been almost completely refined, the remaining instinct was still able to greatly enhance its strength.

It was a pity that it was originally a conscious body that was weakened by 10,000 times. Even so, there was still the strength of the Dacheng realm.

It was only through the toss of Yang Chen's formation, that the consciousness was divided into six parts. The other five were already refined, leaving only one which had also fallen from the Dacheng realm to Yuanying realm.

Originally, if she was to be left alone to quietly absorb all the consciousnesses and that only the instinct remained, it was still expected that she would recover to the Dacheng realm. At that time, controlling the bodies of these five females, would still present a challenge. But she only had absorbed two yet had been discovered by Yang Chen.

The memories had been lost a lot, and most of the rest was only instinct. It was not very clear that this consciousness was even someone. It was only instinctively aware that the Sword Formation at the top of her head was dangerous. The instinct knew that Yang Chen was an enemy and must be destroyed, apart from that she did not know anything.

According to the usual practice, the lower realm descent of the consciousness entering the body of the consciousness carrier cultivator involved strong resistance from the carrier. The force of the initiative consciousness would be weakened rapidly, so usually after the descent it only lasted for a few days. After that time, it would dissipate.

However, the five women did not have an active consciousness, they were more suitable than any consciousness carrier that the Greatest Heaven Sect had arranged. There was no active sense of resistance and were primed for a conscious mind. This allowed the

initiative consciousness to easily possess this body.

In this case, it was not a question of how long it could survive. It was entirely possible to practice again through this body. When the realm was raised, the memories would be restored one by one, and it may become a formidable master in the future.

It was not the Greatest Heaven Sect who did not want to find a carrier of consciousness that was completely inactive. It was really too difficult.

The carrier cultivator must have the cultivation base of the Jiedan stage, and the masters who reach this realm were almost all conscious and determined. It was not easy to force them to become vegetables.

Trained from an early age? How could an idiot practice to the realm of Jiedan? Even if you use a lot of spiritual power to infuse into the body every day. It was impossible to cultivate a state of mind without improvement.

Under this circumstance, the Greatest Heaven Sect could only use other methods, such as trying to hypnotize the carrier cultivator as much as possible and destroy his sense of being with powerful spiritual awareness. In any case, it was still a poor line, and could not be completely done without a little initiative awareness.

If the consciousness of the body was a little bit strong, it could spell annihilation for the initiative consciousness. Even if it does not rebound for a while, it would in turn reverse the possessing consciousness and completely suppress it within a few days. After all, it was the original being with a natural advantage.

Although he couldn't remember many things, the conscious body was still instinctively aware, and these bodies on Yang Chen's side were more suitable for their own conscious body. Unfortunately, before he fully recovered, he must face the suppression of Yang Chen.

“Very... daring!”, she suddenly screamed.

Even if he didn't remember who he was, he still understood that his identity was noble. He was not an ant-like guy who you could offend.

The female disciple was speaking loudly, but the body did not dare to move, fearing that the sword array at the top would ruin this most suitable body.

Yang Chen certainly knew what she was worried about. Similarly, he had also very much cherished these five women, who were in the Jiedan stage and did not want them to be eliminated in vain. After all, the five-female Five Sides Profound Woman Formation was also good, the Beautiful Girls Formation was also good, it was completely easy to control a Yuanying master, it was his effective helping hand, if it was ruined, it would be a pity.

However, in the face of a one-sixth consciousness with a fallen Dacheng realm cultivation base, how could Yang Chen be afraid.

He laughed coldly and yelled at him, “do you want to collect all the avatars? Consciousnesses? I will help you!”

The two female disciples behind him flew to the back of Yang Chen, and his body flew up in a strange way. One side left and right, and the forehead touched the head of Yang Chen, so they hung in the air.

“Come on! With my consciousness, if you have the ability, all of you come together!”

Yang Chen screamed at the other side, his hands opened, and his silhouette pictured an avatar of a large open door at the middle.

If there were outsiders, they would feel that Yang Chen was a rogue. There were two beautiful women hanging behind me. There were three in front of him. Yang Chen's arms were open just like a sexual harasser.

The opposite female disciple saw Yang Chen's posture, her eyes

jerked brightly, and her mind was moved. The two female disciples were also like the female disciples behind Yang Chen. The same flight flew behind her, touching her forehead and her back.

This position was the easiest to convey the spiritual awareness. In general, the duality of the spiritual awareness was possible through a few postures; the foreheads were opposite to each other, or the cerebellums were opposite each other, or the forehead was opposite to the back of the cerebellum, or the heads were at opposites. When the two women put on this position, the sense of the avatar perceived that the speed of absorbing the original consciousness was greatly accelerated, and in a short period of time, half of his cultivation base had been restored.

Although the active consciousness was only one-sixth of the original, the instinct was still there. She and the two female disciples had absorbed four of the six parts, accounting for more than two-thirds. The opposite, Yang Chen's group occupied almost a third. Even if Yang Chen was by himself, what could change? It seemed that his recovery was expected!

Brush!

The figure of the female disciple with her two companions behind her, stood directly opposite Yang Chen. He also knew that Yang Chen's control of the sword formation on his head could only be controlled with a thought, so he did not intend to fight with Yang Chen. If the consciousness battle has the upper hand, he was afraid that these things of Yang Chen would not become his own.

The foreheads of the two women touched each other in an instant. The instinctive consciousness of the original Great Principle Golden Immortal suddenly directed the attack. Which of the ones, who had ascended, had not been in a deadly fight before, how could he not understand the benefits of an active attack?

Already absorbed two-thirds of the power, infinitely close to the Dacheng realm's spiritual awareness rushed directly into Yang

Chen's sea of consciousness, and soon discovered that in the sea another third of the instinctive Consciousness already exists. She had the urge to immediately fuse with it.

The fusion of the spiritual awareness was very good, and it was completed in a flash. Immediately, the consciousness avatar began to madly attack Yang Chen's sea of consciousness. If it got destroyed, Yang Chen could be controlled as per her wishes. Even if she had forgotten a lot of memories, good or bad, could still be recovered.

Even if only one-sixth of the active consciousness was left in the avatar, if the active consciousness was not extinguished, it would recover a little with the further improvements in the future. With these five avatars that were best for him, he may be able to achieve five External Body Incarnation divine abilities.

Restoring the complete sense of the avatar did not encounter any resistance in Yang Chen's sea of consciousness, as if Yang Chen's sea of consciousness was empty and everything was normal.

Even the avatar's consciousness was amazed. Yang Chen's sea of consciousness was extremely vast. It was impossible to have such a huge sea of consciousness in the Dacheng realm. This guy was not at all simple.

A red area appeared in front of him, and the conscious mind rushed over without thinking about it. However, here was Yang Chen's sea of consciousness, he was subjected to Yang Chen's restrictions. Although the spiritual awareness of the avatar felt his movements as being very fast, but they instead were as slow as an old cow's climb, it would take a while for him to rush to the front.

The red was a long river of blood. Strictly speaking, it should be on the top of the avatar. However, in the consciousness, there was no difference between the top and bottom, but it was very difficult to get close to this bloody river.

Since it was so difficult to come, Yang Chen must have cherished

this bloody long river, and his sea of consciousness was also extremely vast, certainly it had relationship with this Scarlet River.

Although it was impossible to judge what was wrong with it, but the avatar knew instinctively, and to kill Yang Chen's consciousness, this bloody river was the key. If it was broken, anything would not be a problem.

He almost didn't want to think about it. The avatar consciousness used its own maximum speed, directly ignoring the power of various obstructions. It leapt like a horse, just like a victorious general going straight towards the Yellow Dragon, it rushed into the bloody river.

Chapter 282: The Greatest Heaven Sect Wanted To Cry But Had No Tears

As soon as he entered the long river of blood, the endless killing intent within behaved like the essence, invading into the avatar consciousness. It was a conscious body that was already a Great Principle Golden Immortal, but in the face of the bloody long river that merged with the Immortal Executioner stage killing intent, it was still not enough to bear.

Bang!

The avatar consciousness was shocked by this killing intent. For a while, he stayed in the same place motionless.

The Immortal Executioner Stage originally was to kill immortals, even if it was a Great Principle Golden Immortal, there was a natural fear in the face of a killing intent at Immortal Executioner's stage. When even the spirits like those of Wan Qian's group were turned into idiots and couldn't move again.

When the avatar consciousness was within the blood river, it suddenly saw an Immortal Beheading Blade with a scent of Immortal killing intent, its shock increased manifold.

It was just an ordinary avatar consciousness, where could it be as powerful as the real being. When the Immortal Beheading Blade directly killed the avatar consciousness, the group consciousness still had no reaction, it was directly annihilated by all the active consciousness. There was no more mentality left.

In the moment when the meaning of the avatar dissipated, Yang Chen's mind suddenly received two very clear news. The first one, of course, was the Heavenly Court rebellion that Yang Chen had known since long ago. Profound Heaven Sect had already entered the heavenly court, even the Sect Master had started to serve as the Jade Emperor.

The second news made Yang Chen somewhat surprised. It turned out to be a secret plane opening. This secret land was not the secret plane of a sect after being destroyed. It was arranged by the predecessor of the Greatest Heaven Sect. It had been arranged for a special year. After that, it was reserved for the younger generation, but its information was kept by a rogue cultivator that had ascended recently. Profound Heaven Sect was in the Immortal World. They got the message and passed it down.

However, this secret plane was somewhat special. Although the owner of the secret land estimated the danger involved in crossing the dense ground in detail, this conscious body had forgotten most of the content. It only remembered about the location, opening method and that it was dangerous inside the secret land. He didn't know what the danger was.

When the consciousness clone descended into the lower realm from the Immortal World, there seemed to have occurred a very painful injury. It was estimated that it affected this memory of the secret ground.

Although it was very dangerous, Yang Chen did not feel that it was an unworthy secret. Why would the Profound Heaven Sect use the conscious mind to pass the news down? Moreover, although there were many casualties in the Greatest Heaven Sect, the following was a more rapid development, which had already explained a lot.

Here, Yang Chen was still hesitating about how to deal with the secret land. The Greatest Heaven Sect had already blown up the pot.

The burst of the array was not strong, the violent one was the channel above the array. Yang Chen had chosen a valley which was surrounded by mountains. Secondly, Yang Chen arranged several protective arrays on the surrounding mountains, so despite the explosion, he had it contained in a small area. The materials were all collected with the debris from the aftermath of the explosion,

covering thousands of miles.

There weren't any explosions of the same magnitude on the Greatest Heaven Sect's side of the channel, but they still covered hundreds of square miles of the sect's area.

The welcoming array was in the interior of the Mountain Protecting Great Formation. It could be said that the interior of the Greatest Heaven Sect was undefended. This time, the explosion was at least ten times stronger than the dozens of Tenth Water Yin Thunder that Liang Shaoming detonated.

The tragedy was that in the same year, there was an old tree demon in Pure Yang Palace, which swallowed all the Tenth Water Yin Thunder. Using his powerful body to block the power of it. The Greatest Heaven Sect was not so lucky.

Not to mention whether there were any masters of the Dacheng realm who were willing to sacrifice their lives to protect the sect. Even if there were, they could not cover such a large-scale explosion.

The crazy explosion directly destroyed hundreds of miles into the ground. Several high-level members of the sect were stationed at the edge of the formation, while the center of the array was protected by three masters of the Dacheng realm. All of them had died and their magical weapons were directly destroyed while several other high-level body protection magic weapons were also damaged to varying degrees.

Even in the farther places, each house was destroyed. Within three hundred miles, the disciples below the Jiedan realm, within five hundred miles, disciples in the middle of the foundation stage, all perished.

The Mountain Protecting Great Formation was directly destroyed from the inside. Before getting it re-arranged, it could no longer be launched. The entire Greatest Heaven Sect was now under no protection.

The high-level members of the Greatest Heaven Sect, under the guard of the three Dacheng realm masters with the strength of their own protective magic weapons, did not suffer any harm. But the three masters who guarded them on the outside had different degrees of injuries. In a short time, it was almost impossible to fight with others.

Seeing the hell like scenery in the sect, several high-level leaders, including the Sect Master, wanted to cry but simply had no tears. Who would have thought that there would be problems with the operation of the welcoming array that had been going on for thousands of years?

The high-level members of the sect currently remaining were not fools; they knew the importance of the master of the Dacheng realm who had rushed out to find the spiritual fluctuations that all others also felt. If the elder could find evidence that someone was also arranging a similar welcoming array, then this was all a conspiracy against the Greatest Heaven Sect.

No matter who the perpetrator was, no matter how big the backing he had, the Sect Master and the Elders had vowed in their hearts that they must pay the price of this conspiracy against their Greatest Heaven Sect.

But now, everyone's energy was still concentrated on rushing to clean up the mess. Moreover, the destruction of the mountain gate always required an external account, whether it was true or not, it was always necessary. Such an enormous matter though hard to conceal, needed to be brushed under the rug from prying eyes.

Last time, the Pure Yang Palace pushed the boat directly to the water and planted it on the head of the Hundred Thousand Mountains. There would always be someone in the area. In fact, it was only used to play along Yang Chen's idea, but it also served the Pure Yang Palace. A perfect excuse. Others didn't know of it, but the Greatest Heaven Sect top management was clear that Pure Yang Palace had long wanted to occupy Hundred Thousand

Mountains.

But for now, it seemed that there were not enough opponents to let the Greatest Heaven Sect borrow a weight and pull everyone's hatred over there. To let the Greatest Heaven Sect, admit that they were disturbed when they took the celestial consciousness into this lower realm, they could not afford to lose this person. For a time, to render appropriate external explanation, several high-level officials broke their brains.

However, this external explanation was secondary. What was important was that this time the sect was not only destroyed, but the disciples in the sect were also seriously injured. More disciples were still lying around injured. If they are not rescued in time, the sect could maybe lose more.

Within a hundred miles there was no need to carry out treatment, except for a few big shots, there were no more living beings left. Afterwards, the surviving Jiedan realm disciples had started to receive treatment. Furthermore, people had begun to get spontaneously rescued.

Several of the big shots appeared and everyone's panic calmed. There were several Dacheng realm elders who had been in seclusion and almost never appeared. It also brought calmness to the Greatest Heaven Sect. Regardless of the big wind and rain, if these ancestors were okay, then the Greatest Heaven Sect could remain safe and sound.

The Greatest Heaven Sect was like a conglomerate family. Due to the large scale of the explosion radiating from the original mountain gate hospitality, to hundreds of miles outside, even the square was directly destroyed. At least thousands of innocent rogue cultivators and other martial art disciples in the city were also affected.

For the Greatest Heaven Sect, this explosion was simply a terrible terrorist attack. When several elders settled the fears of the

disciples in the sect, they were scheduled to start to save the wounded and dying. A day had already passed.

The preparation of statistics and operations regarding the saved people lasted for a whole month. The result of counting statistics made a few high-level members of the Greatest Heaven Sect directly spit out blood.

Because the explosion had occurred at the reception area of the sect, the original mountain gate, not far, there was the residence of the outer sect disciples. Going further was the residences of the inner sect disciples.

Within five hundred miles of the explosion, the whole army of disciples and slaves below the foundation stage did not leave a mouthful of breathable light. This number had already reached tens of thousands.

Although the figures were large, they were all below the foundation stage, which did not seem to have much impact on the strength of the Greatest Heaven Sect. However, this meant that the backup force of the sect had been completely annihilated. Fortunately, the Greatest Heaven Sect lost tens of thousands of disciples with qualifications for practicing overnight. For at least a hundred years, the Greatest Heaven Sect would not be able to accept it.

Disciples who had been under the foundation realm had also suffered a lot of casualties. After the statistical count, the casualties of disciples in the foundation realm numbered more than 2,000.

This figure, although not a big number for a big sect like the Greatest Heaven Sect, it was still close to more than a quarter of all the foundation realm disciples of the Pure Yang Palace. In perspective of Pure Yang Palace, such loss would definitely be devastating.

Strictly speaking, the strength of the Greatest Heaven Sect was not based on the disciples of the foundation realm, but the masters

above the Jiedan realm.

In the ordinary times, within the gates of the sect, there would be no masters other than the masters of the Dacheng realm.

The problem was that to ensure that the welcoming array and formation would not be affected by mistakes, several of the big shots were sent out together. Four Yuanying realm ancestors had been sent with 20 Jiedan masters each to take care of alerting surrounding areas.

Even if it was the Yuanying realm ancestors, under the protection of several masters of the Dacheng realm, the distance was still not very much, it was impossible to resist the power of the explosion. At that time, the four Yuanying ancestors and eighty Jiedan realm masters directly turned into ash.

Take the Pure Yang Palace as an example. The four Yuanying ancestors were already half of the Yuanying ancestors in the sect. The eighty Jiedan realm masters, were at least one-fifth of their amount. At this time, these served as half the power of Pure Yang Palace.

Even the Greatest Heaven Sect was distressed over their loss. When was a Yuanying realm ancestor so easy to cultivate? Their loss numbered four, which was not counting the 80 Jiedan realm masters. Who could be assigned responsibility on this occasion, which one was not the core disciple of the sect's absolute trust? All of them were folded in at once.

This was only the loss of personnel. The number of destroyed houses was not less than 100,000, even the foundation of the Mountain Protecting Great Formation had been destroyed by more than half.

When the loss of these properties was so devastating for the Greatest Heaven Sect, then the loss of some ancient books would make them even more painful.

The branch housing the jade slips of basic knowledge related to alchemy for the quasi-outer and outer disciples was destroyed with the explosion. Even a Hidden Pavilion of scriptures for inner disciples was destroyed with all the jade slips.

Although the ruin was only a few low-level cultivation methods and various basic knowledge, those methods could still be rewritten by memory. But not everyone had the abnormal memory like Yang Chen's which could also restore some of the cultivation and miscellaneous other books that were referenced in the past.

And there were some cultivation methods, obviously no one had practiced, which meant that they were lost for good.

Less than half of Greatest Heaven Sect's basic cultivation methods remained. These were painstakingly collected from various places in various ways by the disciples of the sect. Still most had been destroyed. The inheritance of the foundation directly lost more than half of its total knowledge.

Even if the Greatest Heaven Sect started recruiting outer sect disciples, due to the loss of the many disciples and ancient books, they had to extract some from the servants who had not been damaged to cultivate them. How could they let the inner-sect disciples of the foundation realm to take over the outer sect disciples?

Even without inheritance, the new outer sect disciples may even face the embarrassment of having to do some chores themselves, because there were not enough slaves to help them.

However, even if all these issues were resolved, the Greatest Heaven Sect still must face another problem. Because of this explosion, almost all the outer sect disciples were killed. Would anyone now dare to join the Greatest Heaven Sect, a martial art sect that could not protect their own outer sect disciples? Despite the strength of the Greatest Heaven Sect, it was still the leader among the first-class sects.

These losses had not yet calculated another issue, the reputation of the Greatest Heaven Sect. When the Pure Yang Palace Gate was destroyed, it was almost immediately pulled up by the means of Thunder and Thousand Miles. The reputation was not reduced, but it was even more prosperous. What kind of means does the Greatest Heaven Sect need to use now to save their lost reputation?

Such a huge loss, even if it was a sect as strong as the Greatest Heaven Sect, it would definitely hurt. During the statistical process of this period, several senior executives faced the reports of losses accumulated every day. They could only use a metaphor to describe their feelings, and that was that they wanted to cry but couldn't find any tears.

In the high-level collective of the Greatest Heaven Sect, the hatred of the perpetrator who broke the consciousness clone had reached its maximum. The news that the Greatest Heaven Sect's gate was destroyed by a crazy explosion had spread throughout the world of cultivation.

Chapter 283: Drinking In Celebration

Although the active consciousness of the avatar was killed, the remaining avatars did not dissipate, an instinctive consciousness remained.

However, this had no threat to Yang Chen. In his sea of consciousness, such a strong consciousness of the Dacheng realm was simply an excellent supplement.

The control of the five females and their respective one-sixth part of the active consciousness could make the five women directly promote a small realm stage. Not to mention that Yang Chen personally refined the remaining one-sixth of the active consciousness in his mind plus all instinct awareness.

The spiritual awareness grew like a crazy growth hormone. The benefits of this kind of door step delivery, were not meagre. Yang Chen had now reached the realm of Jiedan. There were no worries about his spiritual consciousness splitting for a long time. The avatar consciousness of this Immortal World Great Principle Golden Immortal was soon under the formidable Three Purities Secret Art, completely reduced to nothingness.

The original spiritual awareness of Yang Chen was highly concise; however, the avatar consciousness was from a Great Principle Golden Immortal. From the peak of Yuanying realm, it broke through to the early stage of the Dacheng realm and continued till the early apex of the Dacheng realm. Only then did the growth of the spiritual awareness stopped.

The sea of consciousness narrowed to 150-mu, the sea of consciousness had once again expanded and returned to the size of two hundred acres. Whether it was the Fifth Earth layer or the Penglai Divine Wood or the Niutou Bridge or the Yin-Yang Burning Heavenly Fire Dragon, they all increased in proportion and became sturdier.

Within the Dacheng realm, Yang Chen could almost control all the magic weapons on his body, including the golden bell, the jasper cup and the shuttle.

This refining took a whole month for Yang Chen. When he finished it, he drove the shuttle and immediately discovered that the speed of the shuttle had increased by 50%. When Luo Yuan was chasing Yang Chen at that time and if the shuttle had such speed, he could even stop and rest for one or two hours every day, waiting for Luo Yuan to catch up slowly, otherwise Luo Yuan would have lost him.

He leisurely rushed back to the Pure Yang Palace. As the first thing Yang Chen went to the sect warehouse; meeting the Elder Zheng Feng and returning the materials he had borrowed before.

Yang Chen's borrowed things still needed to be returned but Elder Zheng Feng didn't really care about them. However, on Yang Chen's insistence, Elder Zheng Feng could not refuse and opened the door to let Yang Chen put the things on his own. Zheng Feng laughed and helped Yang Chen to collect the materials. He then directly took Yang Chen straight to the Pure Yang Palace main hall.

“Ha ha ha ha!”

When they had not arrived, he could hear the unscrupulous laughter of the master of the palace, as if there was a great event going on in the Pure Yang Palace.

Yang Chen certainly knew why the master of the palace would laugh. For so long, even if the Greatest Heaven Sect blocked the news, it should still have been passed over. However, he still quietly followed Elder Zheng Feng into the hall.

Among the halls, it seemed that apart from Wang Yong, who was retreating, several elders were all in the same place. Gui Shanyou of the Hall of Eccentrics was also there, as if they were waiting for Yang Chen. Looking at this posture, Yang Chen naturally understood what it meant.

“The Greatest Heaven Sect also has today!”

Several restrictions were placed, and the Palace Master screamed the first sentence, and laughed again.

“Yang Chen, you came back!”

There were restrictions, and several Elders were unscrupulous. Gao Shiyan was simply happy to inform Yang Chen, “today, I received a message that the Greatest Heaven Sect was attacked. The outer sect faced destruction, tens of thousands of disciples’ servants lost their lives, including four Yuanying realm masters and 80 Jiedan masters. The mountain gate got half ruined, and we are excited!”

Originally this was a high-level meeting of the Pure Yang Palace, still Yang Chen presence didn’t raise any red flags. This was the default of several elders and the master of the palace. From now on, Yang Chen would be used as an heir.

“It was so ruthless?”

Yang Chen knew that his work would have definitely caused a chain reaction at the Greatest Heaven Sect, but he did not expect that there would be such brilliant results. This time he was also overjoyed.

The most basic goal of Yang Chen was to completely foil the descent of the consciousness clone and to cut off the channels of the Greatest Heaven Sect with the Immortal World. The second was to destroy the Greatest Heaven Sect plans. He didn’t have much expectations, but he got such an impressive result. How could it not let Yang Chen rejoice?

“There are many tigers in the mountains!”

Zhu Chentao said with a happy smile, “the Greatest Heaven Sect has been overbearing for so long, and they always offend people who should not be offended. Under them, my and others’ sects’ gates were completely destroyed. Finally, theirs has also suffered

the same fate. Someone has revenged for us!”

The Palace Master and the Elders were simply celebrating happily. This secret celebration was the same as in other Dao Sects.

However, in their capacity, they couldn't make such performances publicly. They could only hide and do them secretly. In public, they must show serious support for the Greatest Heaven Sect. Otherwise it was easy for people in the Greatest Heaven Sect to guess that they already knew the truth of Liang Shaoming.

Even now, the Pure Yang Palace still could not bear the cost of dealing with the Greatest Heaven Sect. Some advantages could still not be taken. This was the sorrow of the weak. When strength was insufficient, even when facing the enemy, one could only bear the torment.

But in any case, their happiness was certain, the big shots and Yang Chen were concealed. Yang Chen took out the jade dragon wine and celebrated with it in the hall of the Pure Yang Palace.

It was rare to meet this kind of matter worthy of celebration. Everyone even put down their haughty manner that was high on ordinary days and let go of it. After enjoying a lot of jade dragon wine, they were amazed, and drunk. Soon they disbanded and returned. Within the halls, only the master of the palace and Yang Chen were left behind.

When Elder Zheng Feng was drinking and was about to leave. Yang Chen took the chance to help him and supported him along. After a while, he returned to the hall.

Even with the few restrictions. The master of the palace felt that it was not secure enough for discussions with Yang Chen. He directly brought him to his own medicine garden. Then he asked, “Yang Chen, what is it?”

He did not know where the master of the palace was hiding Wan Qian, he did not see her when he came in. Of course, Yang Chen

and Zheng Feng would not be rude to open their spiritual awareness to explore in the site which belonged to the Palace Master.

When listening to the master of the palace, Yang Chen said, “Palace Master, Elder Zheng, the disciple wanted to ask the elders to hold the auction soon. Refine the materials again which this disciple had borrowed before. Sell them as soon as possible.”

“Why?”

Elder Zheng Feng asked awkwardly, still not realizing the hidden message inside.

The Palace Master was gazing at him. He seems to have thought of something. He didn’t change his expression mouth and affirmed, “since you say so, then we will do it! Junior Brother Zheng, I will have to trouble you for this hard task, refine those materials. Take the batch out as soon as possible and send it straight to sell it!”

“I will do it!”

Elder Zheng Feng got up, nodded and started to act without any objections. The Pure Yang Palace was now united, especially the top level. It was completely harmonious, there was no more competition for power.

People who followed the path of cultivation, once they found out that they have achieved Dacheng realm success or even hope for reaching the day when they could ascend, who cared about the power of the world?

Everyone at the sect had a Questioning Inner Heart Pill. Everyone had seen the pursuit. Even if the power of the sect was piled up, the elders feel that they were wasting time obstructing their own practice. Who would take the initiative to take such a matter? If there were not some matters that ultimately were under their responsibility, they may have even wanted to quit their position as

Elders and concentrate on their cultivation.

“Wait!”

Elder Zheng Feng was about to leave but was told to wait by the Palace Master. Elder Zheng Feng hurriedly turned back and looked at the master of the palace, waiting for his command.

“Don’t let go of it.”

The master of the palace thought for a moment, once again said, “let the Jiedan disciples who are good at refining the equipment work hard on it. Use these materials to create a batch of flying swords sword embryos. Let Gao Yue change their shapes slightly and give them to the disciples who would perform well in the near future. Keep the recorded date of refining 20 years ahead of schedule. No matter who asks, tell them that Sect disciple Gao Yue closed up for thirty years and had been refining this batch of flying swords.”

Although he didn’t know what had happened to Yang Chen, but Yang Chen was anxious to take this batch of things out, certainly for some reason. Due to some fear that others would find this batch of materials.

The master of the palace also knew that Yang Chen took away a batch of high-level materials, and simply did not want to let go of them. He wanted to use them to help his own sect’s disciples, and in turn help Gao Yue. He believed that with the relationship between Yang Chen and Gao Yue, Gao Yue would definitely recognize it.

The sword embryos created by these advanced materials were also enough to become the Life Source Flying Swords of some disciples. Of course, although the sword embryo was good, it still required everyone’s own efforts.

Originally, this level of material was not so easy to release. In case of a problem, they would simply conceal the complete group

of faithful disciples and cover up the whereabouts of the materials. Even if someone investigates, there would be no trace.

Elder Zheng Feng looked at the palace master and then looked at Yang Chen again. His face flashed a trace of doubts. His eyes stayed on Yang Chen's face and seemed to be waiting for him to reply.

Facing the eyes of Elder Zheng Feng, Yang Chen nodded his head and seemed to admit what he had done. Elder Zheng Feng laughed twice. Then he said loudly, "I will arrange it this time. I don't need other people to do this. We're a few old guys, and there's nothing wrong with it."

Sending Elder Zheng Feng away. The master of the palace and with a wave of his main hand, arranged a table and two chairs in the medicine garden. As Yang Chen wanted to explain, the Palace Master shook his hand and stopped him, "wait, take out your jade dragon wine and say it while we drink it."

Wan Qian, who no knew where she was hiding in the palace, appeared near the table, her hands were mysteriously carrying two dishes that looked delicious. It seemed that the taste of the Palace Master and Yang Chen was the same, they both liked to use the medicines produced in the medicine garden as delicacies.

In Wan Qian's well-behaved service, the Palace Master and Yang Chen sat on one side. After drinking a cup, the Palace Master said, "let's talk!"

Yang Chen then described his work in this way; Of course, he did not know in detail about the time when the other side started the operation. He just said that he accidentally discovered the array at the gate of the Greatest Heaven Sect and found out what it does in a book. There were two similar arrays that could trigger the same frequency oscillations, which could not be controlled by the spiritual power and eventually lead to an explosion.

The Palace Master heard Yang Chen admitting that he had arranged another similar formation, and then used the spiritual

power to smash the Greatest Heaven Sect's formation, which eventually caused the huge loss and heavy casualties of the Greatest Heaven Sect. After hearing such, it was necessary for him to non-stop drink the delicious jade dragon wine and let go of the waves. The dignified and steady master of the palace today acted like a different person.

It was Yang Chen who discovered the conspiracy of the Greatest Heaven Sect. Now he had reported to the sect that the mountain gate had been destroyed. It was still only Yang Chen, but he still did it so beautifully. The Palace Master was so happy that he didn't know how to express it. Knowing that the sect accepting Yang Chen was definitely the most correct matter he has ever encountered in this life.

The only pity was that the master of the palace could only share this happiness with Yang Chen and couldn't even talk to the other elders. Even if Elder Zheng Feng had vaguely guessed something. Yang Chen had just silently nodded and hadn't admitted anything concrete.

The matter was too great. It was not an exaggeration to describe it as a hole in the sky. Once it got caught by the Greatest Heaven Sect, not to say anything about the strength of the Pure Yang Palace, complete sect destruction would be the only result.

Therefore, whether it was Yang Chen or the master of the palace, they were very cautious. However, such a happy matter could only be stuffed in their stomachs, even the Palace Master was somewhat aggrieved.

But the joyful mood would never change because of this little regret. It was extremely satisfying to see the successor that he had chosen. He was competent, not arrogant, loyal to the sect, repeatedly made surprises, never had a disciple, the master of the palace was very satisfied. For Yang Chen, he was content with his satisfaction.

Yang Chen accompanied the master of the palace to drink the wine for almost a full day. The Palace Master was happy, wasn't Yang Chen not happy? This time, almost half of the inheritance of the Greatest Heaven Sect was eliminated, the pace of the Greatest Heaven Sect's expansion had been made to slow down for hundreds of years. All of this was a gift outside of his main purpose. How could it not let Yang Chen be happy and excited?

Even if the Greatest Heaven Sect was a big sect with a lot of assets, they couldn't suffer this kind of blow again and again? Yang Chen was now just like the little ant who had smashed the embankment of a thousand miles and was busy hollowing out the Greatest Heaven Sect little by little. His revenge was now a step closer.

He just didn't know if this time, his former enemy, Yang Lan, had been directly killed or not. In the subconscious, Yang Chen did not want this kind of end for him. Yang Chen's life and death enemy, the person who made his life unfortunate and caused his master's death, it was definitely a cheaper way to end him. Yang Chen still thought that one day, he would cut his head with his own hands.

When they were slightly drunk from the wine, Yang Chen began to start worrying about how to take the benefits of the secret land in his hands and while also concealing his part and the Pure Yang Palace's involvement?

Chapter 284: The Greatest Heaven Sect Going Berserk

The secret land was very dangerous, no doubt about it. Even in his previous life, with the power of the Greatest Heaven Sect, they still lost much manpower there. If the Pure Yang Palace wanted to swallow this secret land, he was afraid that it would never pay less than the price of what Greatest Heaven Sect paid.

Another point was that the intelligence report of this secret land was acquired from a rogue cultivator in the Immortal World. Although this time, the Greatest Heaven Sect was not able to possess it but who could guarantee that the next time when another consciousness clone descended, they would not be informed about it? At that time, the sect or individual who had gone to the secret plane would definitely be the object of their vehement violent revenge.

Speaking of it, this secret plane was really dangerous. Compared with the abundant resources inside, the safety of the sect and its disciples was more important.

However, to let Yang Chen give up the wealth of this secret land to the Greatest Heaven Sect, such expectation was absolutely impossible. Since he couldn't take it himself, he wouldn't let the Greatest Heaven Sect to get the benefit either. If several large sects were involved, maybe the Pure Yang Palace could still get a piece of it.

And as for the explanation for the Palace Master? Yang Chen couldn't explain where he got the news, as it would definitely cause suspicion!

In his heart, he made up his mind, and Yang Chen didn't have any burden, and he was able to enjoy the jade dragon wine with the enjoyment of the Palace Master. Today's master of the palace was very high-spirited. It may be the first indulgence after he was

promoted to Yuanying ancestors. He turned out to be drunk and unconscious, and even forgot to put Yang Chen out of the “medicine” garden.

The Pure Yang Palace was celebrating happily, but there was raging anger on the Greatest Heaven Sect’s side. The Dacheng realm elder who rushed out to find the spiritual fluctuations similar to their welcoming array had returned, bringing back a message that made the Greatest Heaven Sect’s upper echelon shocked.

The place to develop the layout of the formation had been found. In fact, it was such large in scope that it was impossible to cover it completely, its detection was inevitable.

However, the discovery only found a trace of the explosion, any other spiritual powers did not even leave a smell. When he arrived, because of the unusual spiritual power, many heavy rains were ongoing. It was impossible to find any other clue other than the site of the explosion.

In the inaccessible area, there were remnants of many other explosions spread over hundreds of miles. However, clues of an explosion bursting from the centre were evident and like that of their large array, which explained much.

What was dazzling was that such a large scope did not leave a significant clue of its existence or trace of the perpetrator. Even the rubble from the explosion was cleaned up for investigation. Though tracing in this way was simply a joke.

The only certainty was that some people had arranged the same kind of array as their welcoming array, and then detonated the formation. Leading to the instability of the Greatest Heaven Sect’s consciousness once again, and in turn leading to the disaster.

All the high-ranking members of the Greatest Heaven Sect were like red-eyed bulls that had been slapped on their faces, all looked like murderers. Tens of thousands of servants’ life, they had to

catch the murderer, they had to pay them for this slap in the face.

In fact, all the younger brothers of Jiedan realm and above in the Greatest Heaven Sect had all been sent out to look for any possible clues. The top level had already issued the pattern of the array and the materials used. Any master of the array, who had touched these materials would become a suspect.

The anger of the Greatest Heaven Sect was the joy of many sects. Even though the Greatest Heaven Sect was in a high position in the cultivation world, many would be happy in their misfortunes. All the sects were similarly in high spirits like the Pure Yang Palace; secretly celebrating and drinking. Their happiness even brought advances in their cultivation and refining. A happy and open mind was always beneficial.

As for certain Demon Sect disciples and Monster Cultivators, they openly celebrated. Everyone was already at life and death hostility. Some people gave them such a prize, it was not too late to celebrate.

The arrogance of the Greatest Heaven Sect in these years had indeed made many people dissatisfied. Due to the strength disparity and face of the Greatest Heaven Sect that no one had retaliated yet. Even the attitudes of several other large-scale sects were the same. It could be seen how much unpopular the Greatest Heaven Sect had become to people in these years.

The first object of doubt in the Greatest Heaven Sect was the several large gates that were almost identical to them. Everyone was competing to return to the position of the leader of the Dao sect, and sometimes would work behind the scenes. The previous Desolate Valley Five Elements Sect was one of them. However, currently, the Greatest Heaven Sect, whose strength was greatly damaged, could not bear the consequences of being an enemy with several major sects. Despite doubts, they did not dare to show it.

The second object of doubt was certain large Demon Sects and

some extremely powerful Monster Cultivator alliances. It was only normal that they were the life and death enemies that the Greatest Heaven Sect had been in conflict with since a long time. It was normal for them to do such a thing.

At the third level, there were some rogue cultivator alliances. Dao Sects governed by the Greatest Heaven Sect were the most prosperous areas on the land. These rogue cultivators could only be forcefully evicted overseas. Although sometimes there was no opportunity for spiritual power progress overseas, consequently they had to compete with some powerful guys for it. For the Greatest Heaven Sect, if they said that they did not hate it would be fake. The Greatest Heaven Sect just had an accident, they were looking forward to dispelling this anger on others.

The last doubt was the smaller sects in the cultivation world. Among them, the most suspicious was the Pure Yang Palace which was relatively large. A few decades ago, the gates of Pure Yang Palace were destroyed. Though there was no loss of people. Who knew whether it was the Pure Yang Palace exacting revenge?

However, the Greatest Heaven Sect executives were still not sure about this. Whether the Pure Yang Palace knew of their complicity was doubtful. After all, the Pure Yang Palace had claimed the Hundred Thousand Mountains for many years. Anger from that disaster had already been swept under the rug due to the Hundred Thousand Mountains matter. At the same time, their attitude towards the Greatest Heaven Sect had not changed from beginning to end, so the seniors of the Greatest Heaven Sect were doubtful.

As for other small sects and rogue cultivators, they were the most unquestionable. Of course, this did not mean that all of them were unsuspected. Anyone who had a reputation for formation research was a suspect.

The people in the Greatest Heaven Sect had almost gone insane to check each cultivator. It caused havoc and panic among the cultivators.

Someone raised an objection, feeling their attitude being too much. The next day, people from the sect went and cut his head off. Since then, no one dared to say anything. They let the Greatest Heaven Sect act as they pleased.

Of course, these were rogue cultivators. Towards the real cultivation world giants, the Greatest Heaven Sect would not dare to use such an attitude. It was just such a big matter. If they got cornered by several large sects at this time, they would not be able to bear the consequences...

The welcoming array had always been the core secret of the martial art sects. It could hardly be said that it was impossible to get to know about it other than for the Palace Master and a few core Elders.

To think that on the side of the Greatest Heaven Sect, a similar welcoming array was arranged. Was it that these core elders have betrayed the sect?

The Palace Master was a smart person, and there was no such doubt. Almost all these elders were masters of the Dacheng realm and were all deep in seclusion. Basically, they had not participated in worldly affairs. They were so eager to ascend, that they would not participate in this kind of matter.

Thus, everything was like a mire making them puzzled. Could it be that the other party had not arranged a welcoming array, but some other formation which resonated with the welcoming array and caused it to explode? Reminiscent of the inexplicable semi-circular black hole above the welcoming array, everyone kept on guessing.

It was beyond the control of everyone for being confused, even Yang Chen, did not know the effect of arranging two similar welcoming arrays at the same time. He just tried it hoping for success and success he achieved in one fell swoop at that. And the understanding of the array by people in the Greatest Heaven Sect

did not necessarily achieve even have half of what Yang Chen had arranged. How could they figure out such a core problem?

But the suspicion was still going on. The Greatest Heaven Sect was like a mad dog, attacking everywhere. Their bloody eyes stared at all the suspects, at even the slightest possibility, they would definitely rush to kill the other.

The Greatest Heaven Sect was really anxious. For the longest time, they could not exact revenge or even find a single clue about the perpetrator. In the same year, Pure Yang Palace had suffered similar destruction, but it also nabbed 100,000 people in the mountains. And one month after, when everyone was still talking about it, they had directly brought people to the old nest of the Hundred Thousand Mountains.

Even if one rushed from the Pure Yang Palace to the Hundred Thousand Mountains, the road would take almost a month. To say that the Pure Yang Palace was not prepared, was nonsense.

The Greatest Heaven Sect knew that for the Hundred Thousand Mountains, the Pure Yang Palace had been preparing for at least a few years.

However, even the small Pure Yang Palace was able to immediately find a target to vent its pent-up rage. Even took advantage from the highly prosperous Hundred Thousand Mountains. In comparison, the Greatest Heaven Sect didn't even know the opponent, how would they not choke on their rage?

After more than a month, there were still no clues. Instead, many people had once again had a change of view about the Greatest Heaven Sect. It was only because of the special circumstances at this time, everyone dared not to anger them, but in the back, they would cheer and clap, wishing that the Greatest Heaven Sect experience a few more explosions.

However, after all, the Greatest Heaven Sect was still the Greatest Heaven Sect. Soon, dozens of small martial art sect groups

united to deny this kind of destructive behaviour against the Greatest Heaven Sect. At the same time, these dozens of small sects discussed and collectively invested in the Greatest Heaven Sect, becoming one and the same.

Not only these dozens of small sects, but even a few rogue cultivator alliances, also voted over and joined the Greatest Heaven Sect. Despite the disaster making the reserve disciples suffer heavy casualties with the addition of so many new martial arts sects, they recovered some of their strength in just a few dozen days.

These joining forces were not as strong as those of the Greatest Heaven Sect's reserve forces. The addition of foreigner disciples and slaves had alleviated the urgent needs of the Greatest Heaven Sect. There was no need to worry about successors in a short time. The dilemma that could not be cultivated by disciples.

The discerning eye almost immediately knew that why these dozens of small sects had supported the Greatest Heaven Sect? They were clearly pawns on a chess board that had been inserted in by the Greatest Heaven Sect. They had been helping them to do things that were too inconvenient for themselves. This was a difficult time for the sect, naturally they would return immediately to strengthen their prestige.

This kind of action, although several big sects had done it before, none of them were as powerful as the Greatest Heaven Sect. Dozens of small, martial art sects, plus two small rogue cultivator alliances, each of which looks less eye-catching, at most, had a Yuanying realm ancestor as their head, but the combined strength was significant. Nothing worse than Pure Yang Palace at the least.

The most speechless matter was that this was still part of the concealed power of the Greatest Heaven Sect. Who knew how much power the Greatest Heaven Sect had in their control?

This move alerted many sects. What was the plan of Greatest Heaven Sect? Secretly arranging so many pieces, many of them

were even around the other major sects, making their intentions almost clear.

Fortunately, this time's disaster had made the Greatest Heaven Sect expose these hidden pieces to stabilize the moral of the sect. If it had been going on like this for a long time, maybe these would become the culprits of disasters in other sects.

“The explosion was good!”

For the arrangement of the Greatest Heaven Sect, countless people had once again issued such a voice, and began to intentionally or unintentionally set up a variety of obstructions in the investigation of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

When the Greatest Heaven Sect started investigating about certain materials, Elder Zhang Feng immediately determined everything. While his heart was dark, he still urged several old elders in the Yuanying realm to quickly refine Yang Chen's materials.

With the help of the newly added eight-member Yuanying realm monsters in Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave, this matter was handled quickly. It took only some short five days. All the materials were then handed to Gao Yue.

Gao Yue was currently consolidating her realm. The water attributed cultivation base had achieved almost the same level as the fire attributed cultivation base. Yang Chen also suggested her when she was leaving for secluded cultivation; If the coordination remained good, these two properties could definitely bring opponents unexpected disasters.

“What is this?”

Seeing a lot of good sword embryos sent by Elder Zheng Feng, Gao Yue could not help but be surprised.

“Let Yang Chen explain it to you!”

Elder Zheng Feng put things down, left a sentence and left.

Yang Chen was on the side of Gao Yue. It was easy to come back once, of course, to accompany his Master. It's not that he had to do anything with master's knowledge, but here at Gao Yue's side, Yang Chen could relax, and enjoy the warmth and temptation.

Since the Elder Zheng Feng said this, Yang Chen certainly couldn't explain it all. After thinking about it, Yang Chen decided to use the words of the Palace Master to convince Gao Yue.

The Greatest Heaven Sect was facing a disaster, and Yang Chen was the reason for all of this? Gao Yue couldn't believe her ears. Once such a thing leaks out, not only Yang Chen, but also the entire Pure Yang Palace would face a great disaster.

“How do you deal with these sword embryos?”

After listening to Yang Chen's description, Gao Yue said nothing about picking up a sword embryo and then asked. Since these things were hidden dangers but could also be used to fight for life and to cover up Yang Chen's matter.

Chapter 285: The Future Talents in Memory

Gao Yue was busy all the time, and Yang Chen was idle again. At this time, he finally began to consider the words of the Palace Master at the time they drank.

“Since you are already a Jiedan realm master, consider taking a few talented apprentices!”

This was the original words of the Palace Master.

The rules of the Pure Yang Palace were that an apprentice could only be accepted by a Master of the Jiedan realm. Of course, this refers to the inner mountain disciples. In fact, most of the martial art sects had such rules, otherwise it would not make a Jiedan expert, a master.

The words of the Palace Master were very exciting for Yang Chen’s memory. Since it was not possible to move the idea of the secret land or plan for it for a while, he really could take a few apprentices to cultivate.

One must know that at the Immortal Executioner Stage, Yang Chen also promised a lot of people. Many had met the right disciples and wanted them to inherit their schools. These were some of the conditions that Yang Chen agreed to in exchange for their information.

Since he already had the qualifications to accept an apprentice, Yang Chen wanted to accept some to fulfill the conditions he had promised. However, Yang Chen was not just accepting anyone, he still must consider some.

If their qualifications were mediocre, and they were Pure Yang Palace’s disciples and they were willing, he could give pointers and will spare no effort to cultivate them, but he will not accept them as disciples.

Now that this was his second life, Yang Chen knew of the future

talented disciples. Shi Shanshan and Sun Qingxue, he could not do anything about them, but he had to establish an unbreakable relationship with them. As for the younger generations who were famous in the world, he was naturally impolite, and must get them to be on his side.

Chen Mo: male, previous life overseas rogue cultivator, earth attributed. A free soul and unconventional cultivator, no one dared to offend him before his ascension to the Immortal World.

Ye Yu: male, previous life child of Limitless Demon Sect Master, metal attributed. Practiced the Limitless Demonic Art, unrestrictedly laughed at the arrogant Demon Realm.

Yu Youyou: female, previous life Water Moon House disciple, water attributed. A starry magic weapon which completely composed of numerous fine needles, was a woman, no one dared to be disrespectful to in the Demon Realm.

[Hua Mengyou](#): female, previous life Green Jade Immortal Island disciple, wood attributed. When it came to combat effectiveness, perhaps Hua Mengyou was not the strongest, but she could grow plants. No matter how difficult it was to plant, if it was handed over to Hua Mengyou, it could be successfully planted. The method of planting Thunder pomegranate was her credit. Only this one ability would make countless people to rush to her.

[Mu Bai](#): male, previous life Greatest Heaven Sect disciple, sword cultivator, wooden attributed. He was Monster race; a mourning cypress tree which transformed into a spirit. Later became Greatest Heaven Sect, Hall of Eccentrics, Hall Master. The Nether Dragon Sword that was refined with his own heart, swept the Monster Realm. Although he was a disciple of the Greatest Heaven Sect, he concentrated on cultivation and ignored foreign affairs. He never had any contact with Yang Chen.

[Bing Kong](#): male, previous life Cold Crystal Cave disciple, mechanical master, water attributed. His silver star composed of

six-handed ice crystal flying swords was unmatched. He was also an outstanding mechanical master, the puppets he produced were simply the treasures that all cultivators dreamed of.

Yu Fan: male, previous life overseas rogue cultivator, earth and gold dual attributes. What he was best at was the Myriad Swords Secret Art, which had the same skill as Yang Chen's Ten Thousand Swords Return to Origin. His Divine sword in his hand, he swept away everything.

Sa Nan: male, previous life Divine Profound Sect disciple, qillin bloodline, qillin left arm, fire attributed. The talents were different, ingenious and the left arm was tempered into a magic weapon that was invincible. After joining the heavenly court army, although he was only a small celestial soldier, the leader Juling Shen did not dare to be even slightly scornful.

Mo Chunmei: female, previous life Blue Cloud Sect disciple, fire attributed. After hundreds of years of Sun Qingxue, another outstanding disciple came. From the mortal world to the heavenly court, the Blue Cloud Sect had been able to stand up against Profound Heaven Sect's Greatest Heaven Sect, and it was all because of the powerful Sun Qingxue and Mo Chunmei.

Bei Fuyun: male, previous life Kunlun Mountains rogue cultivator, fire attributed refining master. At the Immortal World, even if the firepower ability of Yang Chen was at full strength, it still could not be compared to Bei Fuyun. With only this one can judge the strength of Bei Fuyun. As a master of refining instruments, his magic weapon was incomparable. He was known as the first refiner to be the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord.

So many talented little cultivators would appear in the next millennium. At this time, if Yang Chen did not take the time to receive them one by one, would it not be a pity that he was so lucky to be reborn?

Yes, there was also the Old Demon Yi, although in the past life

Old Demon Yi and Yang Chen perished together, but that Demonic Art was the root of Yang Chen's life. Speaking of it, it was a gift of merit.

Since Yang Chen of this life had already stood at the top position of this time, naturally he will not forget to fulfil the Old Demon Yi's debt. The merits of passing on the merits were still rewarded with grace. Nothing was better than cultivating Old Demon Yi as a disciple, wasn't that a better way of repaying his debts?

All these people, except Old Demon Yi and Hua Mengyou, had almost all kinds of spiritual roots or postnatal values, their qualifications of cultivation were better than Shi Shanshan, Sun Qingxue, Gao Yuegong and Sun Ling. Yang Chen, in his heart had already booked them as his own disciples.

He believed that if these people were taken under his apprenticeship, it would be impossible for Pure Yang Palace to decline. And if one could become the master of these superb seedlings, the possibilities could be endless!

After another three hundred years, Mu Bai (the cypress) would join the Greatest Heaven Sect. Slowly then promote to become the Hall Master of the Hall of Eccentrics. In the past life, the Greatest Heaven Sect was the first to come up with a Hall of Eccentrics, only then other sects made the rules to allow the Monster race to join in.

Joining the Hall of Eccentrics required at least the strength of the Yuanying realm. At this time, Mu Bai should at most be at the Jiedan realm. It was necessary to receive this extremely enchanting candidate in advance before the Greatest Heaven Sect had the chance.

Receiving Mu Bai not only enhance the strength of the Pure Yang Palace, but also weaken the power of the future Greatest Heaven Sect. The good deed of this killing two birds with one stone, what more one would one want?

What made Yang Chen somewhat speechless was that when this Mu Bai gave himself a name, it was at the same level as She Kui and Xie Sha. It was clearly that the name of his own body was reversed, it was quite irresponsible.

Fortunately, in the previous life, Mu Bai was strong and famous enough, so Yang Chen still remembered where he was. Not to say, the current timing was also opportune, why not get this powerful guy under his tutelage. As for how to direct a Monster cultivator, Yang Chen had a secret cultivation manual, even the old tree demon had not obtained from Yang Chen. For the time being, he needed to observe how reliable they were. Only after they do conform to his standards will he accept them.

Hua Mengyou: The Dream of Flowers

Bing Kong: Ice

Mu Bai: The cypress

After confirming his target candidates, Yang Chen discovered that to take these small monstrous talents under his belt one by one would take a long time.

These were the strong persons who emerged after his ascension in his past lives, he didn't know whether he could find them all before he would ascend. However, even if he were to ascend, he must arrange for the Pure Yang Palace to collect these people.

The body of Mu Bai was in a wild land far north of the Central Plains, which was ruled by the orthodox sects. The land there was barren, the climate was relatively dry, and bitter cold. According to reason, it was not suitable for plants to survive. However, Mu Bai's main body grew there. This kind of harsh environment was also an important reason for Mu Bai to be similarly monstrously talented.

The more one struggles in a tough environment, the more perseverance one has, and the more you can face all kinds of

calamities. Just like Sun Qingxue of the past life, who was excluded from the martial art sects, and cultivated on her own became one of the most talented cultivators of a generation. The same applied to Mu Bai.

Just on the way to find the body of Mu Bai, Yang Chen could still accomplish the matter of gathering the First Wood True Essence. On the Immortal Executioner Stage, there was an immortal to be slain, who said that there was a vein of First Wood True Essence in the lower realm in his Immortal's Cave, and Yang Chen certainly would not skip it.

Now Yang Chen was currently only a Third and Fourth Fire double attributed Jiedan realm cultivator. The other eight spiritual powers were still at the peak of the late foundation stage. According to Yang Chen's past practice experience, if he collected the First Wood True Essence for the cultivation of the First Wood True Secret Art, he could at least ensure that First Wood spirit power could also succeed to Jiedan realm.

He didn't know if First Wood spirit power of Jiedan stage could initiate other attributed spirit powers at the same Jiedan stage, but at least Yang Chen's Great Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art would get more perfected. In the same way, it would certainly lead to the process of other attributes spirit powers getting Jiedan stage advancements.

Just the Jiedan stage, it takes at least ten years to consolidate. At that time, Yang Chen's master Gao Yue took only ten years after he condensed it. The first one that received Yang Chen. Now, although Yang Chen said that the Palace Master had long recognized that he had the qualifications for admission, he must pluck his own Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art, which was the right way to practice.

It was just that the sword embryo of First Wood flying sword had been completed. He believed that with the understandings of the First Wood True Essence, the First Wood flying sword among the

Yin Yang Five Elements flying swords would soon become Yang Chen's other ultimate flying sword.

Master Ancestor Wang Yong was still in seclusion and his Senior sister, Gong Sunling, was still following her master to study several sub-levels of the formations. Over the past years, some of the absolutely trusted of the disciples had been able to enter the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal's Cave to cultivate.

Yang Chen just hurriedly greeted Gong Sunling and left the Pure Yang Palace without saying anything more. Since before the Palace Master, Yang Chen had casually taken out the bodies of fifteen praying mantises and Wan Qian, who were all Yuanying realm ancestors, he never said anything about the safety of Yang Chen again. Even Luo Yuan could do nothing about Yang Chen, in this world, the people who could hurt Yang Chen were really too few.

Perhaps apart from the super masters who were about to ascend, few people could threaten the safety of Yang Chen. However, since they were all facing ascension, how could they easily embarrass themselves by catching a Jiedan realm junior?

No one knew what Yang Chen was going to do, and no one was going to control it either. These years, Yang Chen's work had proved to the high-level members of the Pure Yang Palace that they should let Yang Chen do whatever he wished. They only needed to be responsible for solving some minor troubles afterwards. Yang Chen was definitely working towards Pure Yang Palace's benefit.

Amid the secret plane issue, Yang Chen still intended to endure for a few years and seduce the future geniuses, to strengthen himself, to weaken the enemy, and to improve his cultivation along the way. Why not?

More troublesome was that the area where Mu Bai was located was in the territory of the Monster Race. The plain of the monsters was in the north with snow all year round. If he wanted to go there, it was necessary to go through the plains of these monsters

and face them whenever they appear. When Yang Chen, a disciple of the Jiedan realm, entered this plain of the beasts, it was certain to provoke a few incidents.

In addition, the location of the First Wood True Essence was also a hidden place in the plain of the beasts. Yang Chen did not understand the line of thought of the predecessor of that time; putting his own Immortal's Cave in the plain of the beasts? Could it be that he was originally a monster himself?

This was quite possible. There were a lot of monster cultivators in the Heavenly Court. At that time, the one who was desecrated was not famous. Yang Chen could not have had any contact with him, and his cultivation at the time was very average.

Although Yang Chen now had a pair of bodies that didn't look like normal humans with huge horns. Undersea, it was easy to be mistaken for the monster race. He couldn't go otherwise. It was too dangerous even more so as proven by past events showing the wickedness of the monster race.

The area where the monsters lived, was not by their choice. The first determinant of survival there was strength. In many matters, the Monster Race had not precedents for right or wrong, only strength.

Because one's deficient strength, it was a matter of course to be eaten by another powerful monster. No other monster would come out to fight for you. The robbing of resources and spiritual pulses was the norm.

Scarface had a cultivation base in the late Yuanying realm, but was barely able to mix and match there, the sinister nature of the monsters was evident.

Before leaving, Yang Chen visited a circle of his friends. In the past few decades, everyone had advanced respectively. Du Qian even entered the Jiedan realm earlier than Yang Chen because when Yang Chen was first introduced, Du Qian was already in the

late stage of building the foundation. He had been rather slow at entering the Jiedan realm in the following decades.

What surprised Yang Chen most was Shangguan Feng. The manager of the Ye Xiu Manor, who in the past had said it was impossible to achieve foundation stage. He had only entered the foundation stage a few years earlier than Yang Chen. Now had already reached the peak of the foundation stage, and only a single step separated him from the early Jiedan stage, Solidification of Core.

This could only be explained by one thing. Though the cultivation aptitude was important, the correct cultivation method still could change all of this. Obviously, Shangguan Feng had found his own Path of Cultivation.

The sect was flourishing, his Master was getting rid of her original destiny, and friends were also cultivating well. The sects of the enemy were badly hurt, and all this was caused by Yang Chen's own hands. How can he be any happier than this?

If there was something to say, then it was only one. After so many years, Xiao Tian finally thoroughly digested the dragon qi that he had devoured in the treasure house last time. His whole body seemed to have grown up in a circle. In the garden, it danced happily.

Chapter 286: Green Jade Immortal Island

Master's Visit

Yang Chen didn't have time to deal with Xiao Tian for the time being. However, he still attached him to a weapon. Xiao Tian's incarnation would always be the appropriate size and shape that best suits his hand, enabling him to use him whenever he pleases.

Gui Shanyou also found many high-level magic weapon fragments from the portal of the Dacheng realm. These pieces were favourite foods for Xiao Tian, every piece of broken skin could give it enjoyment for a long time.

Looking at Xiao Tian bursting with energy, Yang Chen's heart moved again. There were still a few things in the treasure house of the Dragon Palace that have not been collected. Now Yang Chen's cultivation base had also improved, and Xiao Tian had completely absorbed the dragon qi. Was it possible to consider going to the Dragon Palace again to collect the rest of the things?

However, for the time being, Yang Chen still suppressed this idea. The first few things in the hands of Yang Chen had not been completely collected until now. Secondly, Yang Chen knew in his heart that he always let Xiao Tian exceed his own limits to absorb the dragon qi, his growth had not been so good, this must stop.

Even so, the growth of Xiao Tian gave Yang Chen a small surprise. The magic treasure pieces he absorbed spiritual power from were thrown away because they had no recycling value. Although the materials were still there, they had been mixed and sacrificial refined in various ways. It was now more difficult to track them than trying to go to heaven.

However, the strength of Xiao Tian made Yang Chen somewhat stunned. After Xiao Tian used the magic weapon fragments, there was a miraculous general change in their appearances. The materials were still mixed, but the trace of sacrificial refining had

been completely eliminated, as if swallowed by Xiao Tian itself.

There were no magic fragments with even a trace of sacrificial refining, thus, these materials could be refined and separated in many ways and become the top materials that could be used. It should be known that this part of the material was basically produced in the portal of the Yuanying and the Dacheng realm, its level was not low.

Of course, this advantage, Yang Chen had not yet intended to tell anyone, but he did to let Shangguan Feng pay attention and collect some magic weapon fragments from the Yuanying and the Dacheng realm portals. In the long history of cultivators, he didn't know how many such things have been piled up in various unknown places so far. If someone has the heart for it, they could collect countless such things.

For Yang Chen, these countless magic weapon pieces meant countless high-grade refining materials. Yang Chen's Yin-Yang five elements flying swords were just lacking all kinds of top materials for their sacrificial refining. That was simply like getting cheap raw material delivered to his door step.

Speaking of it, this time Xiao Tian also had an upgrade. Yang Chen was happy, he had piled a lot of magic weapon pieces around Xiao Tian. Of course, the most important ones were flying swords; Blood Phantom Vine flying sword and First Wood sword embryo. Xiao Tian's body was now on the First Wood sword embryo. On the top, it was playing with the Blood Demon Vine flying sword in its mouth.

Yang Chen wanted to leave, but some people didn't let him. After making up his mind to go to the Monster Race's domain, he tried to report the matter of his departure to the Palace Master, but he told him that the Green Jade Immortal Island Master had come to visit the Pure Yang Palace. Specifically indicating that Yang Chen must accompany her, there was some business matter to discuss.

The arrival of Green Jade Immortal Island Master was a grand matter and the distinguished guest was to be received in a similarly grand manner at the Pure Yang Palace. Not to mention the Pure Yang Palace, even among the top two sects in the rankings, which one had a history of receiving a distinguished guest with a similar rank as of the Island Master?

However, what surprised Yang Chen was that the Palace Master had told him that the Island Master's visit was this time, a secret one. Thus, it did not involve fanciful reception. Also, Yang Chen should not divulge this information.

The other party pointed out that Yang Chen should accompany her, there was some business to deal in. He could only obey the instructions. However, what made Yang Chen strange was that, in addition to the two elders of Green Jade Immortal Island, there was another companion, Shi Shanshan.

Yang Chen knew the two elders. One was Yan Huafeng, a master of the Dacheng realm, and the leader of the Great Calamity of Demonic Art. The other was Guan Yuanying, a Yuanying realm ancestor. In the past, he chased Yang Chen for a month in the sea, and later turned to a friend from an enemy.

The Island Master's appearance was like a thirty years old woman. The smile on her face seemed very bright. If one didn't know her identity, anyone would take her as a woman full of optimism about life. You wouldn't think that she was one of the leaders of the several major Dao sects.

Except for the Island Master, the people who came were acquaintances, who tended to be favourable towards the Pure Yang Palace. The secretive nature of this was a bit strange. However, since the other party had something to do with business, of course, it was necessary to bring people who will not cause misunderstanding with the Pure Yang Palace. From this point of view, it was quite normal.

“This old person is going to have something to discuss with the Palace Master. You, young people still have a lot to exchange.”

Unexpectedly, after seeing Yang Chen, the Island Master only looked at Yang Chen carefully and pushed Shi Shanshan out to let her get along with Yang Chen alone.

This gesture seemed to support Shi Shanshan and Yang Chen in their own capacity, but the whole hidden action was a bit strange. Making Yang Chen very confused. He didn't understand the motive behind it.

Shi Shanshan was frosty in front of outsiders, but in front of these several seniors, she still had a respectful look. Listening to the Island Master's tease, her face shown a rare blush. The glamorous face with a shyness to boot, compared to the Island Master and several elders was higher by many points.

“Yang Chen, you take Fairy Shi to go to the Meishan Mountain, keep her entertained.”

The Palace Master also commanded. The meaning behind the smile on his face couldn't be seen through clearly. Whether it was just for mere etiquette or was it optimism about Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan's relationship.

What could Yang Chen say, he could only leave with Shi Shanshan after a greeting. It was also funny to think about it. He and Shi Shanshan were already over 100-years-old but were still young people in the eyes of their elders.

Shi Shanshan's face was restored to her usual frostiness. Because the Palace Master had iterated that this was a secret matter and any information about the Island Master was not broadcasted, so Yang Chen directly put Shi Shanshan into the shuttle, and soon flew to a high cliff. After arriving above it, they came out.

“I haven't tasted the tea you cooked since a long time. It just happened to be so that my tea leaves had matured, becoming much

better. Would you like to try them?”

Yang Chen looked at Shi Shanshan, who stood on the cliff. Then looked at the mountains under the cliff. Then laughed and told, “I got a nice Spirit Spring.”

“From the Blue Cloud Sect auction?”

Shi Shanshan turned her head and suddenly asked, “You bought it with Little Xue?”

“Yeah?”

Yang Chen did not expect that Shi Shanshan knew of the matters in the Blue Cloud Sect so clearly. But he did not feel surprised and just nodded, “At that time, I was buying it for alchemy. I’ve tasted it myself. The best thing to use it for is wine and tea brewing.”

Seeing that Yang Chen admitted to it, the frost on Shi Shanshan’s face visibly reduced. Yang Chen laid out a complete tea set with a sway of his hands.

Yang Chen’s movements were not slow. The profound spirit furnace quickly appeared in his hands, and the sprouts of the old tea trees that used the spiritual powers were also picked up in a short time. Then they were hung in the profound spirit furnace.

If anyone knew that Yang Chen actually used the Profound Spirit Furnace to match the Yin-Yang Burning Heavenly Fire just to fry tea leaves, it would definitely exacerbate Yang Chen’s wasteful temperament.

But Shi Shanshan did not blame him at all but rather had a look of anticipation. She had no other good food, but she could brew delicious tea. It was rare for Yang Chen to have a common interest with her and his tea-making technique was not unusual. It let her look forward to his better-looking tea.

The effect of the Yin-Yang Burning Heavenly Fire was not generally good, and Yang Chen had slightly added some Seventh Metal spiritual power to take care of Shi Shanshan’s taste. Even

the process of frying was adapted to Shi Shanshan's metal attributed spirit root. After tasting, one would feel an endless aftertaste.

The water was of course the spirit spring that Yang Chen bought from the Blue Cloud Sect auction site. As for the work of cooking tea, he made Shi Shanshan do it herself. Looking at the elegant and incomparably beautiful woman's movements while skilfully brewing tea; every move exuding fresh and refined beauty, being alluring at every instance. The tea had not yet been tasted, still it felt like he had already tasted its deliciousness.

“Taste my craft!”

Although Shi Shanshan was cold and proud, but in front of Yang Chen whether it was action or language, a feeling of a wife serving her husband was shown. She even served the tea to Yang Chen with both hands. Though her face did not carry a too intimate expression.

The hot tea would make any person feel the warmth in the whole body. With the exclusively mixed Yin-Yang Burning Heavenly Fire and Seventh Metal spirit power made a person to forget everything.

Even Yang Chen, the initiator of this event, felt such enjoyment, not to mention that even Shi Shanshan was intoxicated. This time, the tea leaves brewing process clearly showed that Yang Chen's control after his cultivation base had improved. The seventh metal was good, and the fire was unbelievable.

The hard feeling thing hidden in the tea was like a metal, it was the infamous skill of Shi Shanshan. While drinking the tea, the spiritual power of the whole body became stimulated and started moving feverishly. The short moment of enjoyment could almost match the effect of One Heavenly Circulation.

The beauty of Shi Shanshan suddenly lit up. She did not expect that Yang Chen's tea was so different than before. It was just

delicious before, but now it was even affecting her cultivation. It did not have just the delicious taste anymore.

Looking at Shi Shanshan's amazed eyes, Yang Chen couldn't help but laugh. The reason why he prepared all those things was that he wanted to force such a reaction from Shi Shanshan. Sure enough, the purpose of surprising Shi Shanshan had been achieved, Yang Chen was no longer restrained and laughed out.

“How has my craft improved?”

Yang Chen had a mind to show off and asked with a smile.

Looking at Yang Chen's proud face, Shi Shanshan only gave him a smile, which was the reward. Soon she recovered her frosty expression. If Yang Chen didn't know from his several contacts with her that Shi Shanshan did give him a high praise. Maybe he would have misunderstood that she was not satisfied.

It happened to be the sunset, watching the dying sun slowly falling, neither of them had any interest in talking. One person, a Jade cup, a small mouthful of taste, untasted by all others, it seemed that even the mood was tranquil.

“These are well collected. When you have time, you can drink more.”

Yang Chen cooked more than just for this tea, much more, then he directly sealed them in a Jade box, sealed it with a symbol seal and gave it to Shi Shanshan.

“Thank you!”

Shi Shanshan was not polite at all and collected it.

“Why should you say such a word between us.”

Yang Chen said very casually. But immediately realized that he said something wrong, then want to take it back, only to miss the timing.

“Also, between you and me, I don't have to thank you.”

Shi Shanshan took it seriously and her mouth shown a happy expression.

Yang Chen couldn't help but sigh again. When he faced this beautiful female, he would always be so unsettled and careless with his words causing such misunderstandings. Could it be that he couldn't resist the beauty of this female? Or was it because of the prestige of Shi Shanshan's later generation that he must pay attention to? He could not think it clearly.

However, there was a point that Yang Chen couldn't deny it. He liked to sit in a place like this with Shi Shanshan very casually. He didn't talk much, just watching the surrounding scenery and drinking delicious tea.

He didn't know how, whether it was fighting or leisure, it seemed that both Yang Chen and Shi Shanshan had a silent tacit understanding.

Shi Shanshan also enjoyed this atmosphere. She hadn't talked for a long time. Until the night's colour was drooping, she sighed and said, "Yang Chen, I told the island master of the matter last time."

"En"

Yang Chen gave a cry but did not say anything. Shi Shanshan was originally a person from the Green Jade Immortal Island. If she told the island master of her own whereabouts, what was the fuss?

"That batch of ten thousand years Spirit Medicine, Island Master also knew."

Shi Shanshan said another thing.

"Well, that is yours."

Yang Chen said this sentence, but it was a little more, once again acknowledging the ownership of Shi Shanshan. This sentence said so much more, answering all the questions Shi Shanshan imagined.

She thought that Yang Chen would be a little surprised and even uneasy, but she didn't think that he would have no reaction at all. Shi Shanshan understood that he really regarded those things as hers and never thought about taking them back. This feeling of being trusted seemed to be different from the sect.

“This time, I want to ask you something.”

Shi Shanshan said slightly in a whisper.

“What?”

Yang Chen still asked in a calm tone.

“The Questioning Inner Heart Pill's raw materials are actually those ten thousand years Spirit Medicine.”

Shi Shanshan's eyes stared at the ground and didn't look at his side, carefully masked, she continued, “Can you help out? Use my medicinal ingredients to refine a batch of Questioning Inner Heart Pills?”

Chapter 287: Ensemble Organized Without Problems

There were not many alchemist masters in the cultivation world, it was not that everyone did not want to learn alchemy. But because of talent, perception, hobbies, etc., the number of alchemist masters was not many. Therefore, it was commonplace for one to prepare their own medicinal ingredients and then ask the alchemist masters to help them in refining it.

At the invitation of Elder Wu Xiong, Yang Chen participated in the process of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill. Not only him, Deng Yiya, Zhu Peng, He Lianyun, even Fan Shan, who was not an alchemy master, had such an experience.

It was not surprising that Shi Shanshan made this request to Yang Chen. Just because of the special nature of the Questioning Inner Heart Pill was now the exclusive resource of the Pure Yang Palace. Shi Shanshan was not sure whether Yang Chen would accept. Thus, she felt very embarrassed asking for it.

“Ok!”

Yang Chen almost did not consider the answer. Shi Shanshan, who was a frosty person all the year round, could not help but show a hint of surprise.

“However, what are you going to give me, this alchemy master?”

Yang Chen wanted Shi Shanshan to show more expressions and asked.

It was also very normal for the alchemy master to help people to refine their alchemy and receive remuneration. In fact, almost all alchemists did this, with no exceptions.

She didn't expect Yang Chen to be so refreshed. She remained in the shocked state. When she heard Yang Chen's request, she responded hurriedly, “what conditions do you want?”

“Can you give me anything?”

Yang Chen looked at Shi Shanshan with a smile.

“As long as the Green Jade Immortal Island can afford it.”

Shi Shanshan did not go to Yang Chen’s side, but replied steadily.

“That’s fine.”

Yang Chen smiled and continued, “when the Island Master and Palace Master finish their discussion, I will consider what I want!”

This was very normal. Yang Chen was still a person of the Pure Yang Palace. Such a big thing, of course, must be verified by the Palace Master. This point Shi Shanshan also understood, in fact, Yang Chen’s approach was just like what she told the Island Master.

“Actually, the Questioning Inner Heart Pill, which was auctioned by the Pure Yang Palace a few years ago, was bought by my sect.”

After Shi Shanshan sat silent for a while, she said suddenly without caring whether Yang Chen was listening. But she knew that Yang Chen would certainly hear it.

“Has it cost a lot of money?”

Yang Chen didn’t know the grand occasion of the auction, and didn’t know what the final price was, but it must have been costly.

“Connected to the one, the best alchemist in the sect, the Hall Masters, shared three to study, each one was broken into powder.”

Shi Shanshan did not know what psychology she had, always felt that she had to tell Yang Chen everything. Then she got the point and slowly said, “they found out the medicinal ingredients in it but the refining techniques you used could not be deciphered.”

Sure enough, they were the masters of the big sects. Knowing the preciousness of the Questioning Inner Heart Pill, that could be used by a master of the Dacheng realm, they still resolutely took out three pills to study and try replicating it. The refining

technique could not be ordinary but unfortunately, they still underestimated the Questioning Inner Heart Pill.

The reason why the Questioning Inner Heart Pill could have that effect was 30% due to the use of the medicinal herbs and the remaining 70% was due to the refining technique. To produce the Questioning Inner Heart Pill was like knowing the refining technique. Unless a Seventh Grade Alchemist Master existed, it was impossible.

Seventh Grade Alchemist Master, it was not so easy for one to appear in the Immortal world, not to mention in the mortal world. Even if all the alchemy divisions in the mortal world were added up, it was impossible to get through the refining techniques of the Questioning Inner Heart Pill.

It took the price of a fortune, but in the end, they had to find Yang Chen again. It could be said that Green Jade Immortal Island was also very helpless. However, it was obvious to all that the Questioning Inner Heart Pill was strong. The Island Master and the elders have witnessed it and said that they must also make greater benefits of the Pure Yang Palace in exchange for a batch of Questioning Inner Heart Pill.

Compared with resources, the most important thing in the martial art sects was people. If the masters of Green Jade Immortal Island emerge in an endless stream, it would last forever, and they would be able to do whatever they wanted.

Just as Shi Shanshan and Yang Chen still had such a relationship, the sect must of course would use it. Shi Shanshan was also under the inquiry of the sect. After hesitating for a long time, she said that she had gone out with Yang Chen and exchanged a batch of spiritual medicines.

Since there was this source, then everything was easy to do. The Island Master asked Shi Shanshan and Yang Chen to go out alone. They also hoped that Shi Shanshan could persuade Yang Chen to

make a move. She, Elder Guan and Elder Min were persuading the Palace Master.

Shi Shanshan was very worried that Yang Chen would be in conflict about it. Therefore, she did not mention this matter at the beginning, but she did not think that Yang Chen did not have any reservations at all. It was just a normal proposal in exchange of payment, it was a hundred times smoother than the imagination of Shi Shanshan and the Island Master.

The more this was the case, Shi Shanshan felt that there seems to be a place in her heart that was slowly loosening and softening. She and Yang Chen were together originally because of a misunderstanding. Of course, the initiator was herself. She did not know what the Sect Master and elders thought, but she felt they were a strong match.

However, after several contacts, Shi Shanshan became more and more understanding of Yang Chen, and was also scared of their two silent tacit understandings.

Yang Chen never asked for any further contact, which was exactly what Shi Shanshan wanted. However, the feeling of more and more tacit understanding made Shi Shanshan fearful; she was afraid that one day she would not be able to put on her frosty face in front of Yang Chen.

“If, I mean, if.”

Shi Shanshan hesitated for a long time and still carefully asked, “if you agree to the Island Master, what are you going to ask for as the payment?”

“Fire Seeds!”

Yang Chen almost did not hesitate to blurt out, “I will specify Third and Fourth Grade Fire Seeds.”

“How many?”

When she heard that Yang Chen only wanted Fire Seeds, her

heart was even more relieved. For a big sect like Green Jade Immortal Island, third and fourth grade fire seeds were not so unimaginable.

“That depends on how many Questioning Inner Heart Pills you want.”

Yang Chen smiled and said very casually, “your share is enough to ask for two complete furnaces of Questioning Inner Heart Pill. With my current ability, it would produce at least twenty pills. One Fifth, ten Fourth and forty Third Grade Fire Seeds, wouldn’t be excessive right?”

A Questioning Inner Heart Pill could be of help to the master of the Dacheng realm. To put it bluntly, if Green Jade Immortal Island was willing, each one could make a Yuanying realm master upgrade to the Dacheng realm. If there were really 20 masters of the Dacheng realm, even if it was the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Five Elements Sect, it would necessitate giving face to the Green Jade Immortal Island.

Acquiring 20 Dacheng realm masters in exchange for one Fifth, ten Fourth and forty Third Grade Fire Seeds was not a loss for the Green Jade Immortal Island, but in fact a big bargain.

Shi Shanshan once again fell into a sluggish state, she completely didn’t imagine that Yang Chen would use such a “low” price to refine Questioning Inner Heart Pills. Switching to any one of the alchemy masters, it was estimated that they would take this opportunity to heavily blackmail them.

The only explanation was that because of this, Shi Shanshan almost unknowingly attributed the reason to herself. Of course, she thought so, but Shi Shanshan did not say a word.

“How is your body shape getting worse and worse?”

After a long time, Shi Shanshan asked. However, looking at this situation, it seemed to be breaking the deadlock. If Yang Chen’s

body shape had changed, anyone could have seen it when he meets him, how could she say it only now?

“A kind of refining body technique.”

Yang Chen smiled and stood up, “not too early, let’s go back first. It is estimated that the Island Master and the Palace Master must have been waiting impatiently.”

This time, Shi Shanshan did not say anything, got up and followed Yang Chen, soon they returned to the Pure Yang Palace’s main hall. As expected, the Island Master and the two elders had arranged their accommodations under the concealed but enthusiastic hospitality of the Pure Yang Palace. Elder Gao Shiyan was still waiting there alone.

Shi Shanshan was a guest. The high elders directly sent a Jiedan realm core disciple and made Shi Shanshan go to the courtyard where the Island Master and the two elders stayed. After everything was settled, Yang Chen returned to the hall.

After the restrictions were placed, Elder Gao used several Secret Techniques directly; Yang Chen and Elder Gao appeared in the ramp of the Blue Vault Mountain Immortal’s Cave. Entering the hall through the ramp, he saw the Palace Master and several other elders.

“Yang Chen did Fairy Shi tell you about the intention of the Island Master?”

The master of the palace directly asked him to sit down and asked.

“She did.” Yang Chen nodded.

“What do you think?”, asked the Palace Master.

“Everything will be in accordance with the instructions of the Palace Master. If the Palace Master agrees then this disciple will refine it for them. If the Palace Master does not, then forget it.”

Yang Chen must be consistent with the sect on this issue.

The Palace Master and the Elders, of course, were expecting to see this kind of attitude from Yang Chen. Everyone listened to Yang Chen's words and they silently nodded their heads.

"The meaning of the Island Master is that half of the income of the hundred thousand mountain Green Jade Immortal Island will be handed over to the sect within 20 years. In the future, there will be more cooperation between the two sides."

The Palace Master nodded and expressed the sincerity of the Island Master today.

"What do you think?"

This question was asked clearly for Yang Chen's decision. The Palace Master turned to see the others' understanding, but the elders behind him did not have a single question, indicating that everyone had the same mind. Yang Chen had been regarded as an elder who could express his opinions.

"The disciple is afraid!"

Yang Chen was moved by some people. He was just a little Jiedan realm master. In the Pure Yang Palace, he was not a top-ranking member, but he received this honour.

"You don't have any burden, you talk about your opinion."

The Palace Master swayed and stopped Yang Chen's words, "your opinion is very important."

The Palace Master's words were very flattering for Yang Chen. It seemed that if Yang Chen said that he was not willing, the sect intended to push away this possible cooperation.

"Please forgive this disciple!"

Yang Chen knew that he couldn't speak for himself. He could only plead guilty first, and then slowly said, "since the Island Master is sincere, this disciple feels that it is a good idea to

cooperate. Anyway, this is a Questioning Inner Heart Pill. No matter when you need it, with this cooperation, you may be able to bring the relationship closer, and my sect can also improve their strength.”

“Well, if that is the case, then I will reply to the Island Master tomorrow.”

The master of the palace said with a smile, “we have a few old guys who think this is a good opportunity. However, cooperation is cooperation, your share can not be cheap. They, despite the opening, Green Jade Immortal Island is rich in wealth, and it is unnecessary to meet their expectations.”

“This disciple also said to Fairy Shi that some Fire Seeds should be used as compensation.”

Yang Chen also did not conceal this from the Elders, and directly said the rewards and the passages he had mentioned at the time, “they must have large assets in the Green Jade Immortal Island and they won’t care about this level of compensation.”

When they heard that Yang Chen had already thought of the people in front of him, and even put forward his own personal rewards. The Palace Master and several elders began to laugh as if by prior agreement.

Yang Chen actually limited the number of pills to only 20. Others were not clear. Why were they still unclear? Yang Chen gave the sect 25 second grade Questioning Inner Heart Pills through one refining process, while he was going to refine only 20 first grade Questioning Inner Heart Pills from two refining processes for Green Jade Immortal Island. The lesser graded ones had to have at least the same amount as the second grade Questioning Inner Heart Pills. Thus, this was still the most conservative estimate.

With so many second grade Questioning Inner Heart Pill, the people present at the scene could almost guarantee the outcome. If they practice hard, they could enter the Dacheng realm. If the Pure

Yang Palace had so many masters of the Dacheng realm, why could they not enter the ranks of first-class big sects?

If these extra benefits were not counted, the half income of the Hundred Thousand Mountains from Green Jade Immortal Island for 20 years would be enough to meet the accumulation of hundreds of years from Yang Chen. Pure Yang Palace had indeed the best development opportunity in history.

These were all material benefits, there was no calculation of the favours the Green Jade Immortal Island would owe to the Pure Yang Palace because of this. The favours of the Green Jade Immortal Island were enough to match the same number of material objects. This time, the Pure Yang Palace had gained a lot of benefits.

ζ

Early the next morning, the Palace Master went to the guest quarters personally to visit the Island Master, explaining the meaning of the cooperation. On Yang Chen's own request, Shi Shanshan had already told the Island Master that he could at least get twenty Questioning Inner Heart Pills. The Island Master and the two Elders were all overjoyed. As for the fire seeds that Yang Chen asked for, the Green Jade Immortal Island was not worried in the least, they were not worth mentioning.

Both sides had achieved their goals and were happy. The Green Jade Immortal Island would have these 20 Questioning Inner Heart Pills, their strength would definitely soar. The Pure Yang Palace was also entering the ranks of rapid development, a win-win situation, so everyone was smiling.

The cooperation was successful, and it was not rare to celebrate. Yang Chen's Jade Dragon wine was naturally a must-have. When the guests and the host were happy, the Xu Chengxin, the director of the Foreign Affairs Hall, came to the side of the Palace Master.

“What is it?”

Seeing Xu Chengxin's face was unusual, the Palace Master asked, and even involved the Island Master.

“A few fellow daoist from the Greatest Heaven Sect came, saying that there are important things to discuss, and want to call the Palace Master.”

Chapter 288: We Must Consider Carefully

There were a few people coming from the Greatest Heaven Sect to visit. The Foreign Affairs Master had to be prudent. There may have been other insiders in the sect as well. Now the Pure Yang Palace had just closed a cooperative deal with the Green Jade Immortal Island. Some people came from the Greatest Heaven Sect, could it be that they noticed something?

“The Palace Master is the one who they want to casually come to see?”

The high-ranking Elder Gao Shiyan directly refuted Xu Chengxin, “send someone to receive them and ask what is going on.”

“Palace Master, those who came are fifteen in number.”

Xu Chengxin clenched his teeth and could only tell the truth, “there is also a long-time Elder of the Dacheng realm who had appeared from seclusion since a long time ago. All others are Yuanying realm ancestors. The leader is the Foreign Affairs Hall Master of the Greatest Heaven Sect.”

A master of the Dacheng realm, plus the fourteen Yuanying realm ancestors, this was definitely not a peaceful visit. Everyone’s faces had changed in color. What did this mean?

“Please, I ask the Island Master to be more cautious and avoid meeting them firsthand.”

The Palace Master got up and said to the guests, the Island Master and several Green Jade Immortal Island elders. Then turned around and told Xu Chengxin, “serve the Green Jade Immortal Island’s distinguished guests. Let’s go and see them!”

Since the Greatest Heaven Sect had dispatched a long-time elder of the Dacheng realm, it was also appropriate for the head of the palace to act. The other side had such a strong line up, the Palace

Master and Elder Zheng Feng had already psychologically prepared for that matter. Fortunately, Yang Chen and the Palace Master had an inkling of the subject, thus, everything was arranged properly.

The person who came was a very high ranking Elder, and Xu Chengxin was arranged as the reception in the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace. When the Palace Master rushed to arrive, there were fifteen people from the Greatest Heaven Sect, who were sitting in the seats of the main hall.

They were sitting, but the fifteen people all had frosty looks on their faces, they did not hide their auras either. In the entire hall, there was an indescribable atmosphere of battle. Even the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace, who were responsible for serving them, were feeling like participating in treacherous battles.

Everyone had a scented tea next to them, but no one picked it up or took a drink. Fifteen people remained quiet while sitting and waiting.

“It turned out that Elder Ming and Hall Master Mao came to visit and brought the Pure Yang Palace to glory!”

The face of the Palace Master had a far-sighted smile. When he had not arrived, his voice passed to the hall.

Yang Chen’s body status had changed, there was no way to enter the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace, thus, only a few Elders followed. However, this did not prevent Yang Chen from releasing a few traces of his spiritual awareness threads, exploring the movements in the main hall. Now everyone’s conversation made it to his ears.

Mao Qi was the Foreign Affairs Master of the Greatest Heaven Sect, also the person who led the team this time. The Elder Ming’s full name was Ming Guangruo, he was the master of the Dacheng realm, who discovered the aura of Yang Chen’s Welcoming Formation and pursued its tracks. At the same time, he was also sitting in the Tianmen Gate of The Greatest Heaven Sect, called the

Shanmen town. Responsible for leading tactics for the Sect Master.

It was precisely because Ming Guangruo had been sitting in the town of Shanmen and been in contact with the Greatest Heaven Sect for many years, so he was very familiar with the Welcoming Array. When Yang Chen's formation was launched, even if it was thousands of miles apart, he was still aware of the spiritual fluctuations over there.

"This time I took the liberty, I also asked the palace to forgive the sin."

Mao Qi was also a Foreign Affairs Master, a slick role. However, in front of the Greatest Heaven Sect's people, there was still a hint of awkwardness in his body language. Though his mouth expressed beautiful words, his face didn't show matching expressions.

The master of the palace had overseen the portal for many years. He was adept at handling this kind of situations. It was very difficult for the two sides to mingle with each other. Palace Master then got seated in the main position. He then asked, "Hall Master Mao and Elder Ming had come this time. What advice are you going to offer?"

"Palace Master He, I am in a difficult situation, please forgive me for discussing it."

Mao Qi's words were beautiful, but they did not have any embarrassing posture at all. It was a direct opening, "Our sect was destroyed, the vengeance had still not been exacted. The murderers are still at large, the sects strive each day to find the murderers, they dare not slack off even a single day."

"Naturally!"

The Palace Master immediately reacted on the words and said with impatience, "my pure Yang Palace has also been affected with a damaged mountain gate. Like your situation, it had been very

painful. The Pure Yang Palace is naturally obligatory to track down the murderers. If you need any help, please, do tell!”

These words were even more beautiful than Mao Qi, even if everyone knew that this was just a phrase to please the guests, but no one pointed it out. After all, the Pure Yang Palace did encounter the destruction of their mountain gate, the initiator was The Greatest Heaven Sect. Mao Qi and Ming Guangruo were both people who knew the inside story. Listening to the Palace Master’s discourse about it made them feel a bit embarrassment as well.

However, this time The Greatest Heaven Sect was really at a loss, they had to suspect many people. Pure Yang Palace was a very doubtful one. In the past, The Pure Yang Palace had been ruined by Liang Shaoming. Although, it was unclear whether they knew the connection between them and the traitor, they could still have a potential motive.

Another reason was the materials. The income of the Hundred Thousand Mountains had made many sects jealous. At the same time, some rare materials had also fallen into the hands of the Pure Yang Palace. This sect had the financial power to arrange a Welcoming Formation.

Even if it was not made by the Pure Yang Palace, their material could have as well made it to the outside. This could come under legit suspicion. Mao Qi’s arrival was to inquire about this very point; asking about the distribution chain of materials possessed by the Pure Yang Palace.

“If that’s the case, then we will take the liberty!”

Mao Qi had a guilty conscience, but he didn’t show it here. He immediately climbed up and took out a piece of jade, handing it to the Palace Master. Then continued with a smile, “I just want to know if there is such a batch of materials in the Pure Yang Palace?”

“Materials?”

The Palace Master pretended to take the list and then handed it over to the Elder Zheng Feng, “Zheng Elder, you are in charge of our sacred warehouse, would you take a look?”

After commanding elder Zheng Feng, the Palace Master turned back to face Mao Qi and Ming Guangruo. Ming Guangruo also seemed to know that he was not good at dealing with these types of situations, thus, he did not interfere, allowed Mao Qi to preside over. However, the Palace Master could only show respect to him, so when he spoke, he must also explain it to Elder Ming.

“Most of the materials should be available.”

Palace Master admitted but continued, “But the old man remembers that there are some rare ones and he needed a confirmation from Elder Zheng Feng.”

As soon as the Greatest Heaven Sect’s delegation heard the Palace Master’s confirmation, the delegates’ eyes shined with unmasked hostility.

“Palace Master, we have these materials in possession since a few years now.”

Elder Zheng Feng did not seem to find any particular reservation about the current situation and after reading the list, he quickly replied.

“You have all of them?”

When Mao Qi heard the words of Elder Zheng Feng, he became even more spirited. Even the Elder Ming who had partly closed eyes, now have been leaning forward from his seat. He stared at the Palace Master with widened eyes. They seemed to be waiting for the confirmation from the Palace Master.

“Elder Zheng had overseen my sect’s warehouse for many years. So, if Elder Zheng says that we have them, then we do.”

The Palace Master gave a slight smile, ignoring the performance of the Greatest Heaven Sect’s delegates. He seemed very certain.

“We also ask Elder Zheng Feng to move these materials out and let us see them.”

Since Palace Master had confirmed, Mao Qi was no longer polite and made a request directly.

“Take it out and let you have a look?”

The Elders of the Pure Yang Palace, including the Palace Master, all had a blank expression on their faces. It was difficult to cover the surprise on the face of the Palace Master. He asked, “But why?”

“It would be good that I explain to the Palace Master, so he knows.”

In the eyes of Mao Qi, there was a faint trace of a threat, “my Greatest Heaven Sect was destroyed, and countless disciples were killed. It was due to a kind of an array. The materials needed for the arrangement of such a formation are among those. Anyone who has these materials is a suspect.”

“If we have the materials then we are judged as suspects?”

The Palace Master did not speak, but Elder Gao Shiyan standing behind him, had already interjected, he then continued, “isn’t this too much?”

“The enmity for the destruction of my sect, is absolutely irreconcilable!”

Mao Qi’s face was now replaced by another kind of coldness, “If you have everything in the Pure Yang Palace, then everything is easy to suspect. If not, I ask the Palace Master to personally travel to my Greatest Heaven Sect to give an explanation to my Sect Master!”

When this sentence was spoken, the faces of all the Pure Yang Palace elders and disciples flashed with a lot of anger. For this reason, it was obvious that the dozen or so Yuanying realm ancestors came along with a master of the Dacheng realm. This was simply an explicit provocation. Once something incriminating

was found, they would surely resolve it then and there.

“If you have it all worked out, why ask us?”

Elder Gao Shiyan continued in place of the Palace Master. If the Palace Master started to talk, there would be no room for a change, but if Elder Gao acts, even if it was unsuitable, it could be glossed over by the Palace Master.

The delegates of the Greatest Heaven Sect also had this idea. Mao Qi discussed while Ming Guangruo stayed quiet in the back. If the situation turned for the worse, he would come forward like a great elder.

“How many things had been received by the Pure Yang Palace in recent years, your sect has probably counted the number.”

Mao Qi also knew that this time, this couldn't be forced too much. After all, the Pure Yang Palace was now not the same as it used to be. Then he said, “if the number is similar, then there would not be any problems.”

Seemingly his intentions were good, but they only hid grave problems. The exact income of the Pure Yang Palace of a few decades would be known to the other party. The issues that could arise in part of this were simply shocking to one's heart.

“What if my sect did not allow you to look into our warehouse?”

Elder Gao Shiyan asked again.

<Snort> “All the sects possessing these materials will be regarded as suspects. All must be examined one by one.”

Mao Qi waved a hand and did not give Elder Gao any face while continuing, “if you do not let us examine them, then I am afraid that will be considered as holding a guilty conscience. Thus, the Palace Master will have to return to my sect with us!”

“What big words!”

The people in the Pure Yang Palace had not answered to these

words. Someone had already taken the chance to reply, “you want to check out our sect’s warehouse, then take this old me to go to your Greatest Heaven Sect to check yours!”

The voice belonged to a girl, the Green Jade Immortal Island Master. Naturally, followed by the two Elders of the Green Jade Immortal Island, Shi Shanshan also followed.

“Bold?”

Mao Qi screamed and was about to become violent, when he suddenly saw the figure of the Island Master. Shocked, his arrogant look disappeared without a trace and was replaced by a pair of panicked eyes.

For those who were from the Pure Yang Palace, the Greatest Heaven Sect would dare to swear at. After all, the strength of the two sides was too far apart, but in the face of the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island, let alone Mao Qi, even if the Sect Master of the Greatest Heaven Sect came over, he would be afraid to be scornful. It was already a big offense for Mao Qi just to dare to scream at the Island Master.

“Slap yourself with your hand!”

The voice of the Island Master was not loud, but it was not a polite command at all.

“!”

Greatest Heaven Sect Foreign Affairs Hall Master Mao Qi, even with the Elder Ming who was in the Dacheng realm on his side, he still did not dare to refute one sentence. Directly reached out and strongly slapped his own face. Then immediately said, “is the island master, satisfied with this?”

“What wrong? So, if we also have such material, then are we the enemy who attacked you?”

The reason why the Island Master appeared was because of the words from Mao Qi. He had to slap himself when he dared to

berate the Island Master, and now this was the topic.

“I don’t dare! It’s just that my sect is suffering, and tens of thousands of disciples are dying. I have to find justice for them!”

Mao Qi was a Foreign Affairs Master. He still had skill in his mouth, even though he said so himself. But he must still clarify his own reason, “the Green Jade Immortal Island is of course not suspected, but other sects, I am allowed to check them one by one.”

Since the other side said that the Green Jade Immortal Island was not suspected, and slapped himself in the face, he gave face to the Green Jade Immortal Island. It was not appropriate to pursue the idea again.

“It is necessary to clear suspicion, my Pure Yang Palace did not do such, and I am not afraid of knocking at the door in the middle of the night.”

The Palace Master finally came out to play a round, “since the friends from the Greatest Heaven Sect want to examine them. Then let them look at it.” .”

Although the words were polite, the grievances in his tone were heard by everyone. Of course, the Pure Yang Palace did not have the arrogance of the Greatest Heaven Sect. Naturally, it couldn’t be like the Sect Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island and he couldn’t dare to make the other party slap himself.

“Palace Master He has great understanding, I offended you!”

Mao Qi saw that Palace Master was finally accepting, naturally he was no longer arrogant, and immediately changed his tone. Then looked at elder Zheng Feng, waiting for him to make the arrangement.

Elder Zheng Feng frowned. Some of his words and thoughts were seen through by everyone from the Greatest Heaven Sect. They felt that there was something wrong with this.

“What’s wrong?”

The Palace Master stared at him and asked very strangely, “are you not going to get them?”

“Lord of the Palace, these materials...”

Elder Zheng Feng looked at the Palace Master and then looked at the people present. His face shown a reluctant expression for a long time. Then he opened his mouth and said, “These materials can’t be taken out immediately.”

Brush!

Everyone’s eyes were now concentrated on the body of Elder Zheng. The Greatest Heaven Sect’s delegates’ eyes also contained open hostility.

Chapter 289: Seeing Is Believing

These materials were necessary to construct the Welcoming Array. The intelligence of the Greatest Heaven Sect said that they had enough materials to build a complete array with their materials. Now Elder Zheng actually said that these materials could not be taken out. Didn't it mean that the Pure Yang Palace had the biggest suspicion?

Originally, there was once a sinister ruin in Pure Yang Palace. The key to this was that the high-level members of the Greatest Heaven Sect were certainly in doubt whether the Pure Yang Palace knew it. Now, with the performance of the Pure Yang Palace, were they the culprits?

Of course, they were correct in such a fine test. Pure Yang Palace had already known all the secrets, and Yang Chen was the one who detonated the formation in their sect. However, who would admit it?

“How can you not get it?”

The anger on the face of the Palace Master was apparent.

“Lord of the Palace, these materials were all good materials for refining flying swords.”

Zheng Feng hurriedly explained, “you forgot, thirty years ago, you told the sect disciple, Gao Yue, to refine a number of good flying sword embryos for the sect. To use them as a re Life Source Magic Weapons for a group of outstanding disciples. In the past 30 years, Gao Yue has successively refined these materials into swords, most of them have been given out. How could they be taken out?”

The reminder of Elder Zheng Feng was what Yang Chen and the Palace Master had discussed as countermeasures. Yang Chen listened in the distance and smiled in his heart. This time, the

Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island came out, how could they just let these delegates of the Greatest Heaven Sect not eat back their words and leave peacefully.

Listening to this, the Palace Master acted as if he suddenly realized what had happened and slapped his head, “I really forgot!”

After that, he turned to the Greatest Heaven Sect’s delegation like he was very sorry to say, “we have really made fellow Daoists laugh at us, we have already made them into sword embryos. They really can’t be taken out.”

The masters from the Greatest Heaven Sect, headed by Elder Ming, all had a pale facial expression, and looked at the Palace Master without saying a word. Mao Qi was staring at the people of the Pure Yang Palace with an extremely skeptical look. After a while, he said, “they have already been given out, they couldn’t go far, why not let these disciples come. Bring them out, making me and the others see them?”

“That is a good suggestion!”

The Palace Master waved without demur, “the disciples who have won them as rewards are to be called out, the remaining swords are also to be brought out.”

This time, Elder Zheng Feng no longer said anything more, he turned and left. After a while, he came back to the hall with a lot of sword embryos and at least a dozen flying swords.

“I have already told people to call the disciples here, they will arrive in a minute.”

Elder Zheng Feng was very simple this time. When he came back, he returned to the Palace Master and continued, “these are the sword embryos that have not yet been rewarded.”

This scene made the people of the Green Jade Immortal Island and the Greatest Heaven Sect a little confused. However, the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island sat and watched quietly.

Mao Qi and the several of the masters he brought, turned their heads and signaled them to look forward.

The two Yuanying realm ancestors were also well-versed in refining, everyone in the field knew. The two walked up unceremoniously, picked up one slippery sword embryo each, looked at their handles very carefully, as if afraid of missing out on the minutest clue.

After a while, the two talents took turns to look at the handles of more than a dozen flying swords. Then turned back to their original seats.

One of the Yuanying realm ancestors smiled and said, “sure enough, Palace Master has an outstanding disciple, Fairy Gao’s refining technique’s essence is as deep as Elder Wang’s. With her Jiedan realm cultivation base, in comparison to all the refining that this old man has seen, her swords are the best.”

His opening words were of recognition of the supreme grade of these flying swords. It was indeed made from the materials in the provided list of materials, but it was not so obvious.

These words provoked Yang Chen’s far-sighted laughter, these sword embryos were all made by Yuanying realm ancestors, even if the level of the refiner was worse, they could make up for it with their cultivation base. Moreover, they let Gao Yue finally process it, not really use spiritual awareness. How could they possibly detect this trick?

Although it was acknowledged that these swords were made of those materials, and the materials were very high grade, the quality of flying swords was equally good. But these materials were only a small part of the quantity, more than half of the quantity was still missing, the same was still enough to arrange a Welcoming Array.

“Reporting to the Palace Master, those disciples have brought them.”

The people waited for a while in the main hall. After less than half an hour, some people came in and reported to the Palace Master.

“Let them all come in, the seniors of the Greatest Heaven Sect want to see them.”

The Palace Master said to him directly.

Soon, a total of seventeen Jiedan realm disciples, walked in a line. There were men and women, standing in the open space, among the crowds. They stood in two rows and quickly greeted the Palace Master as well as all the others in the hall;

“Greetings to the Palace Master! Greetings to the Elders! Greetings to the predecessors!”

Quenching the Life Source Magic Weapon was usually after the Jiedan realm. These disciples were the younger generation disciples who had great potential. They were clearly the backbone of the Pure Yang Palace, but they would not let them temper their Life Source Magic Weapon at this time.

“The seventeen disciples, one of whom has a magic weapon with a golden seal, which consumes the most materials.”

Elder Zheng Feng introduced and even took out a list and handed it to Mao Qi.

Above the list, these disciples were recorded with their merits and when they obtained the sword embryo of the flying swords as a reward making everything clear. What were the names of the rewarded swords, the characteristics, the materials used and their number, the size and weights were also clearly written.

According to the records on the list, the materials that the Greatest Heaven Sect’s report said were basically in it. The numbers and the quoted number of the Greatest Heaven Sect was about the same, the maximum difference was about ten jin. Ten jin of difference in materials was impossible to be enough to

completely arrange a large Welcoming Array.

“Hall Master Mao, my Pure Yang Palace is not afraid of the Greatest Heaven Sect, but I feel that the relationship between the two sides that was established with great difficulty, should not be destroyed by the actions of a despicable villain.”

Elder Zheng Feng had everything in hand, naturally he was not afraid to talk, “what words currently does Hall Master Mao have to say?”

After Mao Qi finished reading the list, it was not good to say anything. He only gave the list to the Elder Ming Guangruo who did not say anything and ignored the words of Elder Zheng Feng.

After seeing the list one by one, the Elder Ming had no expressions on his face. Then he finally said slowly: “Speaking of it, it’s all on paper. Where are the products of these materials? It would be good to know that these numbers are also true in reality.”

When the words came out, the faces of the people suddenly changed.

These materials were necessary to construct the Welcoming Array. The intelligence of the Greatest Heaven Sect said that they had enough materials to build a complete array with their materials. Now Elder Zheng actually said that these materials could not be taken out. Didn’t it mean that the Pure Yang Palace had the biggest suspicion?

Originally, there was once a sinister ruin in Pure Yang Palace. The key to this was that the high-level members of the Greatest Heaven Sect were certainly in doubt whether the Pure Yang Palace knew it. Now, with the performance of the Pure Yang Palace, were they the culprits?

Of course, they were correct in such a fine test. Pure Yang Palace had already known all the secrets, and Yang Chen was the one who

detonated the formation in their sect. However, who would admit it?

“How can you not get it?”

The anger on the face of the Palace Master was apparent.

“Lord of the Palace, these materials were all good materials for refining flying swords.”

Zheng Feng hurriedly explained, “you forgot, thirty years ago, you told the sect disciple, Gao Yue, to refine a number of good flying sword embryos for the sect. To use them as a re Life Source Magic Weapons for a group of outstanding disciples. In the past 30 years, Gao Yue has successively refined these materials into swords, most of them have been given out. How could they be taken out?”

The reminder of Elder Zheng Feng was what Yang Chen and the Palace Master had discussed as countermeasures. Yang Chen listened in the distance and smiled in his heart. This time, the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island came out, how could they just let these delegates of the Greatest Heaven Sect not eat back their words and leave peacefully.

Listening to this, the Palace Master acted as if he suddenly realized what had happened and slapped his head, “I really forgot!”

After that, he turned to the Greatest Heaven Sect's delegation like he was very sorry to say, “we have really made fellow Daoists laugh at us, we have already made them into sword embryos. They really can't be taken out.”

The masters from the Greatest Heaven Sect, headed by Elder Ming, all had a pale facial expression, and looked at the Palace Master without saying a word. Mao Qi was staring at the people of the Pure Yang Palace with an extremely skeptical look. After a while, he said, “they have already been given out, they couldn't go far, why not let these disciples come. Bring them out, making me

and the others see them?”

“That is a good suggestion!”

The Palace Master waved without demur, “the disciples who have won them as rewards are to be called out, the remaining swords are also to be brought out.”

This time, Elder Zheng Feng no longer said anything more, he turned and left. After a while, he came back to the hall with a lot of sword embryos and at least a dozen flying swords.

“I have already told people to call the disciples here, they will arrive in a minute.”

Elder Zheng Feng was very simple this time. When he came back, he returned to the Palace Master and continued, “these are the sword embryos that have not yet been rewarded.”

This scene made the people of the Green Jade Immortal Island and the Greatest Heaven Sect a little confused. However, the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island sat and watched quietly. Mao Qi and the several of the masters he brought, turned their heads and signaled them to look forward.

The two Yuanying realm ancestors were also well-versed in refining, everyone in the field knew. The two walked up unceremoniously, picked up one slippery sword embryo each, looked at their handles very carefully, as if afraid of missing out on the minutest clue.

After a while, the two talents took turns to look at the handles of more than a dozen flying swords. Then turned back to their original seats.

One of the Yuanying realm ancestors smiled and said, “sure enough, Palace Master has an outstanding disciple, Fairy Gao's refining technique's essence is as deep as Elder w.a.n.g's. With her Jiedan realm cultivation base, in comparison to all the refining that this old man has seen, her swords are the best.”

His opening words were of recognition of the supreme grade of these flying swords. It was indeed made from the materials in the provided list of materials, but it was not so obvious.

These words provoked Yang Chen's far-sighted laughter, these sword embryos were all made by Yuanying realm ancestors, even if the level of the refiner was worse, they could make up for it with their cultivation base. Moreover, they let Gao Yue finally process it, not really use spiritual awareness. How could they possibly detect this trick?

Although it was acknowledged that these swords were made of those materials, and the materials were very high grade, the quality of flying swords was equally good. But these materials were only a small part of the quant.i.ty, more than half of the quant.i.ty was still missing, the same was still enough to arrange a Welcoming Array.

“Reporting to the Palace Master, those disciples have brought them.”

The people waited for a while in the main hall. After less than half an hour, some people came in and reported to the Palace Master.

“Let them all come in, the seniors of the Greatest Heaven Sect want to see them.”

The Palace Master said to him directly.

Soon, a total of seventeen Jiedan realm disciples, walked in a line. There were men and women, standing in the open s.p.a.ce, among the crowds. They stood in two rows and quickly greeted the Palace Master as well as all the others in the hall;

“Greetings to the Palace Master! Greetings to the Elders! Greetings to the predecessors!”

Quenching the Life Source Magic Weapon was usually after the Jiedan realm. These disciples were the younger generation

disciples who had great potential. They were clearly the backbone of the Pure Yang Palace, but they would not let them temper their Life Source Magic Weapon at this time.

“The seventeen disciples, one of whom has a magic weapon with a golden seal, which consumes the most materials.”

Elder Zheng Feng introduced and even took out a list and handed it to Mao Qi.

Above the list, these disciples were recorded with their merits and when they obtained the sword embryo of the flying swords as a reward making everything clear. What were the names of the rewarded swords, the characteristics, the materials used and their number, the size and weights were also clearly written.

According to the records on the list, the materials that the Greatest Heaven Sect's report said were basically in it. The numbers and the quoted number of the Greatest Heaven Sect was about the same, the maximum difference was about ten jin. Ten jin of difference in materials was impossible to be enough to completely arrange a large Welcoming Array.

“Hall Master Mao, my Pure Yang Palace is not afraid of the Greatest Heaven Sect, but I feel that the relationship between the two sides that was established with great difficulty, should not be destroyed by the actions of a despicable villain.”

Elder Zheng Feng had everything in hand, naturally he was not afraid to talk, “what words currently does Hall Master Mao have to say?”

After Mao Qi finished reading the list, it was not good to say anything. He only gave the list to the Elder Ming Guangruo who did not say anything and ignored the words of Elder Zheng Feng.

After seeing the list one by one, the Elder Ming had no expressions on his face. Then he finally said slowly: "Speaking of it, it's all on paper. Where are the products of these materials? It

would be good to know that these numbers are also true in reality."

When the words came out, the faces of the people suddenly changed.

Ming Guangruo had always been sitting, but he had always been like a dead tree, converging and unobtrusive. But this time, his words had shocked everyone.

Saw with own eyes that seeing was believing? It was clear that these disciples would have to take out the magical treasures that were being tempered and let them see.

However, the reason why this Life Source Magic Weapon was called the Life Source Magic Weapon was because it was necessary to use special methods in the process of quenching, to bring the magic weapon into the sea of consciousness for at least to temper for a few decades. Letting the Life Source Magic Weapon and the owner have the same mind, this was the initial quenching of this Life Source Magic Weapon.

The light was the process of this initial tempering, it could not be interrupted, so people who were usually tempering their Life Source Magic Weapon would generally choose not to travel. The rogue cultivators would choose to go into seclusion, and those who belonged to Dao sects, stayed in their sects. They carefully tempered it and did not dare to slack off.

This process could not be interrupted, how could they bring the magic weapon out for others to see? Once interrupted, not only would the Life Source Magic Weapon be damaged, but it would also put the several decades of painstaking efforts to waste. Even their own spiritual awareness cultivation base would be affected.

These dozens of people, even Shi Shanshan had seen that the Pure Yang Palace was preparing to vigorously cultivate these disciples, not to mention other people. In this way, Elder Ming was clearly trying to take the opportunity to destroy the follow-up backbone of these Pure Yang Palace disciples.

“No!”

This time, it was said by several people, including the Palace Master and several elders behind him.

“These disciples, the least one had been tempered for more than five years. Once they are taken out, they will be seriously injured, and ill.”

The Palace Master was really worried, “how could this happen?”

The disciples who have cultivated their own sect would have to abolish their cultivation base of several decades just to convince the Greatest Heaven Sect. It was impossible to make such a deal.

“No! No!”

The Palace Master shook his heads again and again. He was very determined and said to Elder Ming, “I don’t know if Elder Ming knows, but these are the core disciples of my Pure Yang Palace, and they will not do this.”

“My Greatest Heaven Sect too was ruined, the hatred, the lives of tens of thousands of disciples, this enmity must be repaid.”

Elder Ming did not speak at first, but he now had started to speak. His opening tone expressed that his words could not be refused, “if I do not personally check something then it is hard to be considered safe.”

“Is predecessor untrustworthy of my Sect disciples?”

After all, the Palace Master oversaw the whole sect. Some things could not be tolerated by him. His bottom line couldn’t be crossed, “Your Greatest Heaven Sect’s disciple is a disciple, isn’t my Pure Yang Palace’s disciple a disciple? Now, I have to let you deal with them?”

“This is not the case.”

Ming Guangruo was a master of the Dacheng realm, he naturally carried a majestic manner, “it is only a confirmation that the Pure

Yang Palace is not the murderer of my sect. If this delays the practice of these disciples. The old man is willing to apologize afterwards.”

It was indeed a big deal for Jiedan realm disciples to receive an apology from a master of the Dacheng realm, moreover, with the status of the Greatest Heaven Sect’s Elder. Switched to the general small martial art sect, under such coercion, they could only comply.

However, the Pure Yang Palace was not the same as before, there was also the Island Master on their side, who was begging for the Pure Yang Palace and Yang Chen’s help. Currently, if the Palace Master did not know the banner of the tiger-skin tree. Then he was a fool.

“Since I just confirmed these disciples of my ancestral hall, they will swear an oath on their heart and swear to ensure that those Life Source Magic Weapon are true. I think this must satisfy the predecessor.”

The Palace Master continued, “There are people from the Green Jade Immortal Island here to act as witness, will that be good enough?”

A vow on their heart, if broken, these disciples could only be trapped in the Jiedan realm during the entirety of their lives. They were the core disciples of the Pure Yang Palace. This method was indeed the safest way that the Palace Master could find without ruining these disciples’ decades of cultivation.

The eyes of the people returned to Elder Ming, waiting for his decision. Mao Qi did not dare to interject and honestly waited for the Elder’s order.

“I do not rely on hearsay!”

Ming Guangruo thought for a moment and still shook his head, “Seeing is believing, if I don’t look at them with my own eyes, I

can't be assured. I have lost tens of thousands of disciples, I must be sure! Still, after that, this old man will personally give them a gift as an apology. But the old man must look."

"An apology from the predecessor, is it worthy of my sect disciples added up two thousand years of hard work?"

The Palace Master was furious, and facing the elder of the Dacheng realm he did not back off, "is it worth my more than ten Life Source Magic Weapons?"

"How difficult is this?"

The voice of the Palace Master had just fallen, the voice of the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island had rung, "the Greatest Heaven Sect is a big sect, Elder Ming is the one that increases their skill through spirit pills, some are good for magic weapons as well. When the disciples practiced, they will use the spirit pills to make up the lost cultivation. If the magic weapon gets destroyed, then use a magic weapon to compensate. A fair transaction!"

"Island Master, what do you mean?"

Ming Guangruo was furious when he heard the words of the Island Master. With his cultivation and his status, even the Sect Master of the Greatest Heaven Sect did not dare to speak with him in this tone. The Island Master's cultivation base was just in the middle of the Yuanying realm. Even after hearing his words in such a tone, the Island Master stared coldly at Ming Guangruo face.

"What's wrong Elder Ming, my Island Master can't even say anything?"

Ming Guangruo was a master of the Dacheng realm, but Yan Huafeng, who came with the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island, was not weak. He stood up and looked coldly at Ming Guangruo, his angry aura went straight towards Ming

Guangruo.

“Is the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island planning to make this deal?”

Ming Guang ignored the anger of Yan Huafeng and stared at the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island while asking aloud.

“I don’t dare, just afraid that one day Elder Ming will find my Green Jade Immortal Island and will use the same reason to ask my sect disciples to abolish their cultivation base. If tens of thousands of your Greatest Heaven Sect disciples die, I don’t really care. My Green Jade Immortal Island can withstand no such loss.”

The words of the Island Master were preposterous but ironic, “an apology can be smoothed out, a good master of the Dacheng realm, a well-known elder, really worthy of the name.”

Who was the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island? The leader of the Green Jade Immortal Island! What kind of grave situation had the Island Master not seen? Despite the lack of cultivation, it was because of the management of the martial art sect that demanded a lot of effort. Which then had led to delays in cultivation promotion. However, in terms of courage, there were still few who could scare the Island Master.

Ming Guangruo was a master of the Dacheng realm, and there was also the advantage of the Greatest Heaven Sect’s illustrious prestige. He also dared to say this to the Pure Yang Palace, but even if you lend him ten times more courage, he would not dare to challenge the Island Master. He could not dare to provoke the enmity between both sides at will.

“If that’s the case, then we will do it according to the Island Master!”

Ming Guangruo was stubbornly staring at the Island Master. He again did not rise in sharp opposition but rather complied.

Chapter 290: Compensation for Destruction

The strength of the Green Jade Immortal Island could be no worse than that of the Greatest Heaven Sect. The current Greatest Heaven Sect was in great difficulty. Under the circumstance, even if there were secret forces to supplement them, they dare not say that they would win, not to mention that the Green Jade Immortal Island and the Blue Cloud Sect had common interests. It was equivalent to offending both at the same time.

Pure Yang Palace and the Beast Taming Sect allied together would be even more troublesome. Although the strength of the two small sects was not very good, but each sect had a master of the Dacheng realm, the strength of both in unity would be extraordinary.

If Ming Guangruo was arrogant again, he must also consider the consequences inquiring the anger of the Island Master at this time. Although Mao Qi and the others were Yuanying realm masters, this time they were all staring nervously at the old elder. Only when Elder Ming uttered those words could they finally be relieved.

This breath was really unbearable. It was obviously aimed at the Pure Yang Palace. They thought that this time Elder Ming had come strong with 14 Yuanying realm masters and could suppress the Pure Yang Palace. Who would have expected that the Island Lord appeared this time, and even stood side by side with Pure Yang Palace.

However, the discontentment was not enough. The master of the Dacheng realm also had to compromise in front of the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island. This was the shocking power of the Green Jade Immortal Island. Even the Elders of the Greatest Heaven Sect must consider it.

“The ears are imaginary, seeing is believing.”

The Island Master seemed to be trying hard to crack down on Ming Guangruo's face and said bluntly, "this is just Elder Ming's own words, not to take out the things you want to compensate. Why would the Pure Yang Palace believe that you will give compensation? In lieu of this, could the Dacheng realm master Elder Ming be not so playful?"

If this was the case, the Pure Yang Palace couldn't get angry with the casual talk of Elder Ming. But now it was from the mouth of the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island. Even if it was not good, it must be considered.

"Can't take it out? Then change the way."

The Island Master did not give Ming Guangruo the chance to reply and said directly, "there are all people who have a vow to swear, how? Pure Yang Palace disciple can swear, I'm sure that many of your disciples can also swear?"

This was another army. Since the Greatest Heaven Sect had the idea to destroy a group of reserve core disciples in the Pure Yang Palace, then they must also have the mental preparation for the destruction of a group of Yuanying realm ancestors. Who didn't know what Ming Guangruo planned? Who had not seen such before? Who wasn't part of the same world?

It was more difficult for Ming Guangruo to swear than to let him directly compensate for the loss. Losing a magic weapon was just a magic weapon. Let him swear by his heart and risk his inability to improve his cultivation base. He was a prime master at the Dacheng realm. How could he and the Pure Yang Palace's Jiedan realm disciples swear together.

Moreover, swears on hearts and souls were not so easy to give away. Such a swear with even a little bit of violation could result in countless demons. How could Ming Guangruo say that he had no idea of damaging the Pure Yang Palace core disciples?

It was just that when they set off, they had thought to coerce and

lure the Pure Yang Palace to examine their material possessions. Determine whether they were the real murderers behind the scenes or use this opportunity to completely suppress the Pure Yang Palace. Who would have thought that they would encounter such a matter that they would be forced to compensate with medicinal pills and magic weapon on the spot? Now, how could they ever hope to accomplish that?

However, Ming Guangruo was Ming Guangruo, the elders of the Greatest Heaven Sect were not stupid, they immediately thought of countermeasures. On one of his hands, a muddy brown ordinary flying sword instantly appeared.

“This is the old man’s Life Source Flying Sword. If their own flying sword is destroyed, the old man will use his own flying sword to pay for it. Is that enough?”

Ming Guangruo’s sharp gaze stared straight at the Island Master, as if shooting flames.

The Life Source Flying Sword of a great Dacheng realm master was definitely more precious than the Jiedan realm disciples’ Life Source Flying Swords.

If Ming Guangruo actually felt attachment with his own flying sword, obviously he had already reached an extreme.

“Against the seventeen Life Source Flying Swords of the disciples, aren’t you being a big bully?”

The Island Master would not be able to say that Ming Guangruo’s flying sword was not much better than these Jiedan realm disciples and could only talk about the quantity.

“You!”

Ming Guangruo was extremely angry, but could only say one word, and no more.

Mao Qi and the other dozens of Yuanying realm ancestors who followed him looked at each other. Everyone brushed their hands

and summoned their own Life Source Magic Weapons. Fourteen Yuanying realm ancestor's Life Source Magic Weapons, all were put out in the front. Elder Ming took out his own Life Source Magic Weapon, how could his followers not follow suit?

This showed that the difference between the Greatest Heaven Sect and other sects. Disciples capable of reaching the Yuanying realm were provided the best flying swords by the sect from the beginning, so that these disciples would temper them as their own Life Source Magic Weapons. Even less talented disciples with outstanding potential in the Jiedan realm would deliberately be cultivated.

Other sects would also love to do the same, but they fell short of resources in comparison to the Greatest Heaven Sect. Before in the Pure Yang Palace, there were eight Yuanying realm masters, but none of them had a Life Source Flying Sword. There were no suitable materials available at all, only low-grade materials were used to make Life Source Flying Swords. Such weapons would break after only few uses, they were not worth holding a candle to.

Fifteen Life Source Magic Weapons were placed in front of everyone. Everyone in the Greatest Heaven Sect's delegation was angry, the subject of the anger was not Pure Yang Palace but the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island.

In this regard, the Green Jade Immortal Island Master did not care, the secret competition between the Greatest Heaven Sect and the Green Jade Immortal Island was not something new. This small matter would not generate any waves in the hearts of the Green Jade Immortal Island's people?

Everyone knew that these masters' Life Source Magic Weapons were impossible for the Pure Yang Palace to acquire otherwise. If it was so simple to get a cultivator's magic weapon, then it would be too easy to cultivate. If they were in the mood, these magic weapons could fly back to their side at any time.

At this point, people in the Greatest Heaven Sect group knew that the people of the Green Jade Immortal Island were with the people of the Pure Yang Palace and were manoeuvring this matter together. The Greatest Heaven Sect had to put up with this farce; there wouldn't be much loss, at most they would lose some face. However, to attain such an outcome, they still had to satisfy the people of the Pure Yang Palace.

“You only have fifteen swords, the others have seventeen, two are missing!”

Of course, the Island Master could not let the Pure Yang Palace miss out on even a little benefit from it. Since everyone was now in an alliance, it was natural to consider such.

This time, even Ming Guangruo was generous, and he did not hesitate to take two more magic weapons from his body and put them in front. Although these two magic weapons were not his own, they were not the same as the other small ones. They were appropriate to be used as Life Source Magic Weapons.

“Are these enough?”

Ming Guangruo asked and looked at the Green Jade Immortal Island Master.

“Well, now you have shown a bit of sincerity.”

The Island Master was satisfied with the compensation measures and withdrew.

“My Greatest Heaven Sect's compensation has also been put here, does Palace Master He also express his sincerity?”

Ming Guangruo, this time, finally turned his eyes to the Pure Yang Palace, Palace Master.

At this point, the Palace Master could certainly not hesitate any more, he directed the seventeen Jiedan realm disciples to show their Life Source Magic Weapons that they were refining.

Although there were many unwilling expressions on their faces, these disciples did not oppose the instructions of the Palace Master. Each disciple took out his magic weapon out of his sea of consciousness.

The pain due to taking out the life source magic weapon in the middle of refining could be imagined. Even if they were at the Jiedan realm, they were still considered masters. A painful expression could be seen on these disciples' faces.

After a while, all the disciples were sweating, soon some began to pull out their own magic weapons. Of course, the fastest one was the one who had spent the shortest time refining. Basically, they were taken out according to the time spent on refining them, from shortest to longest.

After extracting the magic weapons, all the 17 disciples vomited blood. They looked at the Palace Master and asked others to help carry and heal them. This scene let the people of the Pure Yang Palace glare at the Greatest Heaven Sect. However, everyone in the Greatest Heaven Sect did not care about their gazes, they just stared at those magic weapons.

Seventeen magical treasures that had been tempered for a short time were placed opposite magic weapons of the Greatest Heaven Sect. This time, Mao Qi did not wait for Elder Ming to direct the two refiners to check before he did it.

The two masters did the same as before, picking up each one by one, examining them thoroughly. This time though they were even more careful.

It took almost twice as long as the previous inspection, and both traits were checked. After the inspection, no one said anything, just looked at each other and nodded.

This confirmed that the materials used in these things were the same as those shown by the Pure Yang Palace. That was to say, the materials of the Pure Yang Palace were not short, all of them were

here.

Those were used in various degrees in these flying swords, some were also partially refined by now but now all of them have become waste. Forcibly interrupting after a weapon reaches partial refinement would render the weapon useless. Basically, these weapons will now be completely scrapped.

“Elder Ming, Hall Master Mao, the materials mentioned by your sect are all here. What further advices, do you wish to impart?”

The tone of the Palace Master was unceremonious. There was also a thick intent of warning in his words. As if saying that, if they have no further demands, they should quickly leave.

Ming Guangruo would not say anything at this time, the facts had proven that all the materials of the Pure Yang Palace were there, and they were not the culprits. Of course, he would not speak.

“This time, it was really harassment of the hospitality of Palace Master He.”

Greatest Heaven Sect Foreign Affairs, Hall Master, Mao Qi brought a smile on his face, “Palace Master He rest assured, I will go back to report to the Sect Master that Pure Yang Palace had nothing to do with this matter. For the arrogance before, please forgive me. I will leave immediately!”

The group of people stood up and rushed to cup their hands to the Pure Yang Palace’s Master, and then directed the same to the side of the Green Jade Immortal Island Master. Ming Guangruo seemed to have thought of something general and curiously asked, “I didn’t know why the Island Master personally visited the Pure Yang Palace. Could I ask, what had happened?”

“This old person came to talk with Palace Master He about the marriage of my sect’s Shi Shanshan with Yang Chen.”

The leader of the Green Jade Immortal Island said very casually,

“why? Does Elder Ming’s words mean that we must have first gone to the Greatest Heaven Sect to report this, before we came here?”

It was a secret that they came to the Pure Yang Palace to negotiate about the Questioning Inner Heart Pill. Of course, they couldn’t let the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect know that and the Island Master directly pulled out this very plausible reason. Just like Shi Shanshan was also there, and there had been a rumour about Yang Chen’s affairs, no one could find any fault with this reasoning.

Shi Shanshan was a well-known cultivation genius and Yang Chen’s affairs were not so secret as well. It was quite normal for the two to form a tie. Everyone understood this clearly that the Green Jade Immortal Island wanted to pull Yang Chen through Shi Shanshan. Since Yang Chen could refine the Questioning Inner Heart Pill, it was not surprising that the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island had personally made this trip.

With this explanation, it was a perfect cover for the personal visit of the Island Master. There was nothing more for Ming Guangruo to discuss, he could only cup his hands towards the Island Master, and quickly leave the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace.

Xu Chengxin immediately cleared the hall and showed the delegation out as soon as his eyes met the gaze of the Palace Master. He then himself left to resume taking care of his responsibilities.

The people in the group of the Greatest Heaven Sect walked simply, and no one mentioned the magic weapons left behind. Everyone knew that out of these seventeen magic weapons, only the last two that Ming Guangruo took out, were the gifts for the Pure Yang Palace. The other fifteen pieces are their magic weapons. It was just a trivial loss for them.

“Thank you for the help of the Island Master!”

The Palace Master did not accompany the Greatest Heaven Sect’s

delegation but took the lead to cup his hand to the Island Master. Several other elders also expressed their gratitude to the several elders of the Green Jade Immortal Island.

This time it was really thanks to the master of the Green Jade Immortal Island. Otherwise, the Pure Yang Palace could only bear with the enemy weakly according to the predetermined plan. Which was formulated by him, elder Zheng Feng and Yang Chen, culminating with letting the other party leave rampantly. It was with the appearance of the Island Master, not only did they survive the crisis, but they also won two magic weapons as compensation.

“It is only a slight effort on my part, why must you mention it.”

The Island Master smiled and waved, “it was such a spectacle, and it was really important to handle Shan’er and Yang Chen’s actions, so as to avoid Greatest Heaven Sect’s suspicions.”

The Palace Master could only nod. The Island Master said that on the one hand, it was the solution, on the other hand, it was to take the opportunity of the two people to finalize it.

The people of the Greatest Heaven Sect actually acted as notaries in unintentional ways.

In any case, the Palace Master bit his teeth. Extraordinarily Yang Chen was surrounded by beautiful women. What if he married Sun Qingxue? Gong Sunling of his own sect was no exception!

When Yang Chen heard the people leave, he also came to the hall. His spiritual awareness was recovered, and he could not hear the last words of the Island Master.

Yang Chen entered through the door and saw the seventeen magic weapons left by the Greatest Heaven Sect’s delegation on the table. His eyes were bright, “Good things, let us see if these things can stay!”

He did not wait for everyone to react. What was the meaning of Yang Chen? Yang Chen collected the seventeen magic weapons and

threw them into the medicine garden. Xiao Tian had long been ordered by Yang Chen to consume these weapons' spiritual imprints and refine them. He had been lying in wait. As soon as they were thrown, he swallowed them all.

Chapter 291: What Are These Magic Weapons?

“The Life Source Weapons of the masters from the Greatest Heaven Sect, can’t be kept so easily”

Shi Shanshan followed the Island Master and saw the whole process. At this time, several seniors explained to Yang Chen that it was a bit inappropriate, Shi Shanshan said something similar.

“Are not these magic weapons paid as compensation by the masters of the Greatest Heaven Sect?” Yang Chen said with a smile.

“It will be too much for Greatest Heaven Sect to take these back. It just happens to be so vigorously publicized already.”

“Why would that be so?”

Shi Shanshan did not understand why Yang Chen asked to promote it. He was so direct, not only Shi Shanshan, but several seniors including the high-ranking members of the Pure Yang Palace and the Green Jade Immortal Island did not understand Yang Chen’s intention.

“After they find out that their own Life Source Magic Weapon could not be returned, they will refrain from asking anything more from us.”

Yang Chen smiled again and said, “everyone has seen that these magic weapons have already been taken away?”

Everyone glimpsed, they flew away? It was clear that Yang Chen took them, how could they fly away on their own? However, Guan Yueying’s eyes brightened and he suddenly asked, “Is it possible for Yang Chen to have a way to destroy their connection with these Life Source Magic Weapons?”

“I will try and see!”

Yang Chen did not give a positive answer, but he also expressed his intention to try it.

This time, the Greatest Heaven Sect was simply bullying them. Whether it was the Pure Yang Palace or the Green Jade Immortal Island, the attitude towards them by the Greatest Heaven Sect was very disgusting. Since Yang Chen may have a way to let the other party eat a loss, naturally the elders of the Pure Yang Palace were very cooperative. Even If it could prick the other party, it was good.

Of course, no one expected Yang Chen to succeed. They just thought that it would really make those guys feel sick, so they nodded.

Shi Shanshan had a different opinion in her heart. Yang Chen generally did not speak unless he was sure. Since he had said this, maybe it was possible. However, if this was not the case, she certainly would not say it. Now in the heart of Shi Shanshan, she was still ashamed of how the Island Master had forced her and Yang Chen's relationship.

Fortunately, Yang Chen had just been absent, and did not hear those words. Otherwise, Shi Shanshan did not know how to face Yang Chen.

The transaction between the two sides had been reached, and now it was at the end stage. The Island Master of the Green Immortal Island came out to support the Pure Yang Palace, which resulted in a firmer cooperation between both sides. Feelings of gratitude among the Pure Yang Palace would also give the Green Jade Immortal Island more benefits.

The Island Master did not entangle in the marriage of Shi Shanshan and Yang Chen, and soon left. This could be discussed several times among both, serving as a good excuse for close contact.

Yang Chen began to pay attention to the flying swords inside the

medicine garden. Now he had changed his mind and intended to take an offensive approach for those overbearing masters.

If these flying swords stayed in the Pure Yang Palace and were destroyed, it would definitely make the Greatest Heaven Sect even more hateful of the Pure Yang Palace. However, if that happened on their site, it would free the Pure Yang Palace from suspicion. Making it impossible for them to accuse the Palace Master or the Pure Yang Palace.

Of course, these things should be discussed first with the Palace Master. Any unexpected problems could then be concealed.

This time, using those materials to refine the sword embryos, they easily fooled the masters of the Greatest Heaven Sect. In fact, those Jiedan disciples were tempering those sword embryos in their sea of consciousness. However, after being carefully refined by Yuanying realm master, they seemed to have developed firm foundations.

All the results though seemingly had expected outcomes, including the withdrawal of the Life Source Magic Weapon from the sea of consciousness, which had left them seemingly in a weakened state, but all these effects were superficial. The essential detail lied in the fact that it hadn't been that long since these disciples started refining these weapons. Thus, they could be cured in a few days.

ζ

The ability of Xiao Tian was far more powerful than what Yang Chen had seen before. It could even devour the conscious spirits of destroyed magic weapons. These magical weapons will have the same fate as those fragments and slobbered.

The complete Life Source Magic Weapon, and the master's spiritual awareness was interlocked, which was even more delicious than the magic weapon fragments with weak spirits. If Yang Chen had not been in control, Xiao Tian would have already

rushed to swallow them into the belly.

The night soon came, and the Pure Yang Palace fell into quietness. In the silent night, suddenly there was a huge commotion. More than a dozen pieces of magical lights flashed with various colours. These flew from the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace and with a shining light, they collectively flew in a certain direction.

The light very quickly flew far away from the Pure Yang Palace. In less than an hour, it even crossed the Meishan Mountain.

More than two thousand miles away from Meiqing Mountain, Ming Guangruo and Mao Qi of the Greatest Heaven Sect were sitting quietly on a hill, waiting for the return of their Life Source Magic Weapons.

The reason why these weapons were called the Life Source Magic Weapons, was because these had a telekinetic link with their masters. Even if thousands of miles away, they could command the magic weapon to attack or return to them.

The magic weapon had already flown halfway, and they had also determined the distance between them. Another hour of time was required for these magic weapons to return.

This time, everyone in the Greatest Heaven Sect was sent out carelessly. Although a loss of two Elder Ming's Magic Weapons was incurred but it also proved that the Pure Yang Palace had nothing to do with the disaster of the welcoming array.

If the Green Jade Immortal Island Master had not suddenly appeared, maybe even these two magic weapons would not have been used as compensation. They could have also suppressed the Pure Yang Palace and let them know that even if they had the income of the Hundred Thousand Mountains, they still couldn't be among the big sects. Unfortunately, it ended up in failure.

In any case, the main purpose had been achieved. The Greatest

Heaven Sect's secret fears about Pure Yang Palace had vanished, and thus, they didn't need to change their arrangements in the Pure Yang Palace and other sects.

While communicating with their magic weapons, they intermittently experienced disruptions. After another such sudden disruption, a Yuanying ancestor frowned and shouted, "how can I not sense my magic weapon?"

After the first master's cry, the second Yuanying master also cried in the same manner and assented, "mine also!"

Next was a series of panic-stricken screams; the fourteen Yuanying masters, without an exception, suddenly lost the connection with their returning magic weapons. They disappeared without a trace.

"Don't panic!"

Ming Guangruo thought and shouted, "wait a moment, wait for me to investigate the returning flying swords."

Just after saying this sentence, Ming Guangruo's body suddenly shook, his face showed an incredible look, and then he was furious, "who is so bold?"

The fourteen Yuanying stage masters, under the command of Elder Ming, quickly flew to the area where the flying swords had lost contact. This did not take long for them.

Especially Elder Ming Guangruo, who was almost twice as fast. But when they arrived, they did not find any traces. Originally, Elder Ming thought that there would be an unknown formation here, but no traces of a formation could be found.

Their spiritual awareness had long been released, immediately covering hundreds of miles. In fact, when the flying swords entered this area, Elder Ming had already determined the flight path of these more than a dozen magic weapons.

However, at that time, Elder Ming had not been vigilant. The Life

Magic Weapons could always return to the master's side without incident, even if a great Dacheng realm master comparable to Elder Ming tried to intercept.

But for a moment, their fifteen pieces of Life Source Magic Weapons, seemed to have disappeared into thin air, traces of their aura could no longer be felt. How could this happen?

It was not known how many years had passed since Elder Ming had sweated. At this moment, there were a few drops of sweat on his head. His own Life Source Flying Sword, it had taken hundreds of years to temper, and then during later practice, the whole sacrificial refining for thousands of years, could almost be explained as half of Elder Ming's cultivation base, all went into this formidable Life Source Flying Sword.

Now the Life Source Flying Sword had disappeared silently, and he couldn't even feel a slight aura of it. This was almost equivalent to ruining half of his cultivation base. It was beyond control for Elder Ming to sweat.

The other fourteen Yuanying realm ancestors, including Mao Qi, were all equally frightened.

What kind of power could take fifteen Life Source Magic Weapons in such a short period of time?

Before, when they were not aware of the problem and tried to control the magic weapon to attack, it did not respond to their commands and went silent immediately.

Within a few hundred miles, there were no movements other than the market in the northeast. Even when Elder Ming wanted to break his head, he couldn't understand. How could his own magic weapon have disappeared without a trace?

He was angry and frightened, various negative emotions emerged within him, he couldn't figure out what had happened in the end. Elder Ming and the fourteen Yuanying realm ancestors felt that

their whole body was chilled, even the coldest winter did not let them have this feeling. Was it the Pure Yang Palace's doing?

Impossible, the Life Source Magic Weapon and his own mind was interlocked, any action against it could make its master feel it. The people of the Pure Yang Palace didn't even touch it more than a few times, and the weapon just stayed there. It seemed that this matter had no relation with the Pure Yang Palace.

No one would know that when those magic weapons flew from the hall of the Pure Yang Palace, they were not flying, but were actually still in the mouth of Xiao Tian. Yang Chen drove the shuttle and flew along with these flying swords.

Apart from Yang Chen, no one could realize the strength of Xiao Tian.

Magic weapon would be fine in other places but once it entered the mouth of Xiao Tian, other people beside Yang Chen absolutely couldn't control it.

All the actions were planned by Yang Chen, and even included letting everyone see the dozens of flying swords. Among them, there were people from the Pure Yang Palace. Naturally, there were also many rogue cultivators and even the staff of the Greatest Heaven Sect.

Fifteen weapons through this method had already flown far away from the Meishan Mountain. In fact, Yang Chen had not started at the location of the Pure Yang Palace but about somewhat less than three hundred miles away from Ming Guangruo.

When he arrived at that place, Yang Chen just controlled Xiao Tian and allowed him to swallow those magic weapons one by one. The magic weapon that entered the belly of Xiao Tian completely lost connection with its master, and no one could sense its existence.

During the flight, Yang Chen had been covered with the sea

jasper, and after launching, no one else could detect him. The magic weapon flew in the air, the speed was not slow. Even if some people were curious, once they couldn't catch up with the speed of Yang Chen with two dozen magic weapons in tow, the so advanced scene, no one dared to approach easily to avoid any misunderstandings. They couldn't even see the image of Yang Chen driving the shuttle.

Even the blue-eyed Luo Yuan's spiritual awareness could not detect Yang Chen under the cover of the sea jasper, and it was even more impossible for Ming Guangruo to discover him. At the end, the matter of returning Life Source Magic Weapons to their masters but suddenly disappearing, became a permanent mystery.

It was unclear that what Guangruo with Mao Qi and the others uncovered after digging the surrounding area three feet under like headless flies. Yang Chen had already controlled the shuttle to return to the Pure Yang Palace. The sun had still not dawned, when he had already returned to the Pure Yang Palace.

It was the first step for Xiao Tian to swallow the complete undamaged magic weapons, the next step was to erase the will of their masters. Obviously, this completely formed spirit tool was to the appetite of Xiao Tian.

What happened yesterday in the Pure Yang Palace began to spread from the first day after the departure of the Elder Ming and the others. The next day, it spread to various directions through various channels. At the same time, there was one more piece of news; countless people had witnessed more than a dozen magic weapons flying in the air in one direction.

Everyone understood that it was the treasures of the Greatest Heaven Sect who were recycling their own Life Source Magic Weapons. Although everyone was a bit sloppy about this kind of behaviour, the Pure Yang Palace, as the victim, did not say much about it. Others had nothing to say either.

Speaking of this incident, everyone had unanimously agreed that the Pure Yang Palace was not as good as people thought. Even if there was explicit support from the Green Jade Immortal Island, they could still not be equal to the Greatest Heaven Sect. So, after receiving two magic weapons, the matter was over. It was not a day or two that the people from the Greatest Heaven Sect started to bully others. Everyone understood this.

This time, the Pure Yang Palace succeeded in shaping an image that they could not compete with the Greatest Heaven Sect. It also completely extracted the Pure Yang Palace from this matter. The matter involving Elder Ming and the others losing their treasures was concealed. Naturally, no one would come down to the Pure Yang Palace for retribution.

The Pure Yang Palace had ceased all activities, but the Greatest Heaven Sect was like a dug open crater. The incident of the bombardment of the sect was not over yet that there were these disasters of the fifteen lost Life Source Magic Weapons, which simply worsened the overall situation.

One more task now was handed over to the disciples of the Greatest Heaven Sect; to madly find the suspects for that incident. Meaning, secret visits to anyone who could refine Life Source Magic Weapon of others.

Of course, the biggest suspect was the Green Jade Immortal Island. That day's matters happened in front of the Island Master and Elder Huafeng. However, this suspicion's resolution demanded a different approach than explicitly sending masters directly to them like what they did in case of the Pure Yang Palace. They could only rush to seek evidence.

Chapter 292: Unexpected Earth Attributed Flying Sword

No one knew what happened except Yang Chen and the Greatest Heaven Sect. However, Ming Guangruo and Mao Qi, a group of fifteen people, now lived in extreme fear.

The life magic weapons had lost contact with their owners, for the time being, it seemed that they had not been refined. This could only explain that the culprits did not know what method to use, they could cut off the relationship between the life source magic weapon and the master's heart but had not yet the ability to refine it.

If it was refined, then their performance would have been directly like those who had lost their lives, their sea of consciousness would be severely damaged.

They were worried, but there was hope. The other party could cut off their contact with the magic weapon, but they couldn't refine it. It showed that it may be only because of a strange magic weapon that they could achieve this, and it was not because their cultivation base was formidable. If they could find it in time, then the loss of the 'Greatest Heaven Sect' would not be too great.

The situation of other people was the same. This could only show that the other party couldn't sacrificially refine the Life Source magic weapons of the Yuanying realm ancestors. Their cultivation base must even be limited to the same realm.

Hope was right in front of them, they just had to find the other party. According to the situation that night, the distance of the other party was not far away, and a group of people in the Greatest Heaven Sect remained vigilant in continued surveillance of the area. It was a pity that even after digging three feet under, they still had not found any clues of the perpetrator.

If they have hope, they just must use it. In the Greatest Heaven Sect, everyone concentrated on the area, and the search lasted for almost a month. When everyone had almost lost all their hopes, suddenly something happened.

Originally, they thought that the other party did not have the ability to refine the Life Source magic weapons but elder Ming Guangruo, suddenly started spurting blood, his whole person instantly fainted.

Everyone was shocked by the event and hurriedly stayed as the guardians of elder Ming. After emergency aid, Elder Ming woke up. The first sentence he screamed after waking up was, “my flying sword!”.

The person who knew the inside story understood that the life source magic weapon of elder Ming, had been refined, the spiritual awareness connection between him and the Life Source magic weapon has been forcefully broken.

Under the serious injury of spiritual awareness, the backlash of his body was provoked, resulting in him vomiting blood. However, this kind of injury still couldn't make him faint, but the reason was the shock his mind received and the resulting intense heartache. The flying sword that had been sacrificially refined by him for thousands of years had been taken away by another person, it had caused his cultivation base to get seriously damaged. It would be strange, if he was not distressed.

The Elder Ming had an accident, and everyone else was even more shocked. It turned out that the other party was not incapable of refining their magic weapons. The magic weapon of the former, a Dacheng realm master, was being refined. That also means that the fourteen pieces of the magic weapon of 'Mao Qi and the others were equally difficult to escape the fate of being robbed.

Mao Qi and others face colour changed dramatically. Finally, they also felt the taste of being stripped of their own magic

weapons. Although it was not their turn, the kind of silent fear had still hit their hearts.

No one would have thought that the current retribution would come so quickly. The fifteen who had forcefully made the seventeen descendants of the Pure Yang Palace to hand over their Life Source magic weapon, would have to spend decades recuperating from it. Within a month, they had tasted the very same disaster. Though yet only one of them, the Dacheng realm master had paid the price.

The people immediately began to doubt, Liang Shaoming blew up the mountain gate of the Pure Yang Palace. After a few decades, the mountain gate of the Greatest Heaven Sect was also destroyed, and it also took tens of thousands of lives. Ming Guangruo and the others wanted the Pure Yang Palace to abolish the magic weapons and cultivation of seventeen of their core disciples. In the blink of an eye, they themselves would suffer the same fate. Could it be that all this was the karma plot of the Pure Yang Palace?

Suspicion was doubtful, but no one really asked the Pure Yang Palace. It was really the strength disparity of Pure Yang Palace with Greatest Heaven Sect, impossible to be compared. Even if the Island Master of the Green Jade Immortal Island was present, they would still bear the burden of letting the disciples follow the requirements of the Greatest Heaven Sect. If the Pure Yang Palace really had the strength to retaliate, they wouldn't be living in a shack like that.

Cultivation had to be promoted with a happy state of mind. Vexing ideas and understanding could be no good for cultivation. Moreover, with that ability, maybe they already would have been killed by the Greatest Heaven Sect. Could gather the flying swords controlled by their masters of the Dacheng realm? They would be invincible even in battle! What else would make the sect act?

The people of the Greatest Heaven Sect were all going crazy, but Yang Chen was appreciating the sword of Ming Guangruo. Ming

Guangruo was an earth attributed cultivator, this flying sword was also of the same earth attribute, moreover Fifth Earth attribute.

The material used turned out to be a very high-grade spine of an Earth Dragon, which was mixed with a touch of rare earth material and then replenished with countless rare materials. After the constant tempering of Ming Guangruo for thousands of years, it was almost the perfect flying sword.

That was to say, only the filthy rich Greatest Heaven Sect could find this kind of living soil. The extraordinary magic weapon was used in the legendary art of water control. This flying sword could never wear, even if slightly damaged, it would always recover slowly, thus, making it powerful and unbeatable.

Such a good thing, Yang Chen could not help but to directly take it with a laugh. Among the Yin Yang Five Elements flying swords, the Fifth Earth flying sword had not yet been refined, and this flying sword was enough to be used in its place.

Xiao Tian digested the unformed tool spirit in the flying sword, and even the spiritual awareness of Elder Ming Guangruo was digested and cleaned. The ability of swallowing the tool spirit had erupted a fearful effect.

If he wanted to use this Fifth Earth flying sword, Yang Chen, of course, could not use it with its original appearance. However, the change of visual appearance was not a big problem for Yang Chen.

Although the current Yin-Yang Heaven Burning Fire was still very low-level, but there were several kinds of fifth grade fire seeds in the profound spirit furnace, taking turns, in a few months, the Fifth Earth flying sword soon changed its appearance. Even if it was put in front of Ming Guangruo's eyes, if he did not carefully explore it by his spiritual awareness, he would not recognize that this was his own flying sword.

The Fifth Earth flying sword level was already high enough. For the time being, Yang Chen would not be able to continue the

sacrificial refining. Therefore, Yang Chen directly collected the Fifth Earth flying sword into his sea of consciousness, buried it deep in the fifth earth layer, just like a Life Source magic sword while being tempered.

During this time, when Yang Chen changed the visual appearance of the Fifth Earth flying sword, the fourteen magic weapons that Mao Qi and others left behind also had their tool spirit and spiritual awareness digested by Xiao Tian.

The fourteen Yuanying realm masters of the Greatest Heaven Sect almost lined up. Every ten days, they had to endure serious blood vomiting and injuries. No exception was made. Under such tremendous pressure, those who were behind were almost desperate, counting their days till they bear the same consequences.

Yang Chen certainly won't know this, even if he knew, he won't have any soft feelings. Those masters came to the Pure Yang Palace, forced the Jiedan realm disciples to put out their Life Source magic weapons but did not take heart towards their losses. The taste of having their Life Source magic weapon pulled out must also be experienced by them.

With the Living Soil Fifth Earth flying sword, Yang Chen was already having a good time cultivating. As for the remaining fourteen Life Source magic weapons that had their masters' will completely erased, Yang Chen had no plans about them, thus, sent them directly to the Palace Master.

Staring at this row of demon-like magic weapons, the eyes of the Palace Master were bright like stars. That day, when Yang Chen said the inexplicable sentence, he disappeared. He did not know what he was busy with in his small courtyard. He did not expect for Tang Chen to give him such a big surprise after half a year.

He was surprised and happy. Surprisingly, Yang Chen did not even let Elder Ming of the Dacheng realm off! this was direct strike

against the Greatest Heaven Sect. The good news was that those guys who were arrogant and overbearing had finally tasted the taste of having their own Life Source magic weapons pulled out.

“It was a good magic weapon you just had to change its appearance.”

Yang Chen smiled and said to the Palace Master, “there have been people who have been practicing for us for many years, or they have been tempered by refining their life source magic weapon. If the Palace Master thinks that the disciples have merits, the Palace Master may wish to reward them.”

“Well!”

The face of the Palace Master also restored its calm, he was surprised and elated, but not for too long. This matter, even the Palace Master had knowledge about the news of the Greatest Heaven Sect not returning unscathed. Of course, he couldn't be too proud.

“Is this your master's recent handy work?”

The Palace Master turned serious and continued, “it seems that the standard of refining has been greatly improved, but the final step of the appearance has not been completed yet. Take it back to your master, to carefully repair its appearance. After that, hand them over to elder Zheng, to be rewarded according to merits.”

The Palace Master was serious, Yang Chen also stifled his laugh and said earnestly, “I will follow the wishes of the Palace Master!”

He put away the bunch of magic weapons and went straight to his master's residence.

The meaning of the Palace Master had been very clear, these things, was to the credit of Gao Yue. Anyway, Yang Chen now did not need the sect to contribute such things, the sect resources could be taken out by him at any time. However, Gao Yue was still lacking, but they were still transferred to Gao Yue. They served as

a disguised award to Yang Chen.

Yang Chen soon appeared in the courtyard of Gao Yue, and once again saw his Master. After some greetings, a few restrictions were arranged. Yang Chen took out those magic weapons directly and placed them in front of Gao Yue.

“What are these?”

Gao Yue knew that a group of Jiedan realm disciples in the Pure Yang Palace had their Life Source magic weapons pulled out. She also knew that this was for the cover up of Yang Chen’s intervention, but she did not know that the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect had already had an accident.

Yang Chen was able to tell her the consequences of the cause and effect, and Gao Yue suddenly changed her face. She thought that they had no problem just to cover up those materials but didn’t think that Yang Chen was so bold that he directly seized the magic weapon of a master of the Dacheng realm and fourteen Yuanying realm ancestors.

Picking up one by hand, Gao Yue’s spiritual awareness instantly penetrated the magic weapon. Soon Gao Yue found that the quality of this magic weapon was excellent, but there was no such thing as the legacy of its previous master. After checking it again, she was relieved. All magic weapons were clean, she didn’t have to worry for someone following them to find them in their sect.

For the final repair work, Gao Yue certainly knew what it meant. This was for Yang Chen to accomplish but Gao Yue was also added for her benefit. There were still many sect contributions to take, why not?

“How have you been practicing recently? What are your plans?”

Gao Yue accepted the task and received those magic weapons in her Qiankun bag. Then asked about Yang Chen’s cultivation.

This time, Yang Chen went out to set up the formation to injure

the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect, but he did not delay any of his cultivation. This time happened to be that Yang Chen had just been promoted to the master of Jiedan realm and was consolidating his cultivation base. He also had not been any difficult fight recently either. It was just steady consolidation, not anything extraordinary.

“Is my Life Source magic weapon among these magic weapons, as you promised?”

Gao Yue was indeed surprised to see these magic weapons, each one was a very good magic weapon. Each was sacrificially refined for not less than hundreds of years, many for thousands of years, the quality was excellent, and she couldn't help but ask.

“Master there is no need to be in a hurry, wait until the balance of water and fire spirit power is achieved, then consider the matter of the flying sword again.” Yang Chen replied with a smile.

Although these treasures were of good quality, there was still a disparity with the top magic weapons. Ming Guangruo's was barely able to qualify, but it was earth attributed. Originally, it was suitable for Gong Sunling, but she was a Formations Cultivator and did not like flying swords. Therefore, what Yang Chen promised had not been fulfilled yet.

“Do you want to go out again?”

Gao Yue listened to Yang Chen's words but soon she seemed to have felt something and was somewhat worried.

“Yes!”

Yang Chen did not hide it and nodded.

“Where are you going now?”

Gao Yue asked again. The last time Yang Chen was chased by Luo Yuan and fled all the way, fled for ten years, which made Gao Yue endlessly worried. This time, Yang Chen must leave again. Gao Yue must know where he was going.

“The plain of the Monster Beasts.”

Yang Chen originally wanted to hide it, but later after some thought, revealed it unhesitatingly. Seeing that his master's face discoloured after hearing the location, Yang Chen hurriedly explained, “am just going to get some things and come back. Master knows that if I want to escape, no one can catch up with me.”

Gao Yue knew about Yang Chen's shuttle and that with the improvement of Yang Chen's cultivation base, the speed of the shuttle would only get faster. Even Luo Yuan of the late Dacheng realm couldn't catch up with Yang Chen in the foundation realm, so Yang Chen of the Jiedan realm was unlikely to have any pursuers catching up.

Thinking of this, Gao Yue was relieved, but it was still a thousand miles, and he must be careful. Listening to master's advice, Yang Chen just nodded all the way.

This time, the matter of the consciousness clone's descent to the lower realm and Yang Chen had come to an end. Even if the Greatest Heaven Sect wanted to do the same thing again, it couldn't be done for at least a hundred years. They couldn't notify the realms above either to speed up the next arrival.

Because the Greatest Heaven Sect came to his sect, and delayed Yang Chen for half a year, he was growing impatient. Although seemingly the delay was inconsequential.

The fire attributed Jiedan realm spiritual power had been consolidated since almost fifteen years, while other spiritual powers were still at the peak of the foundation realm. If the Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art were not able to fully reach the Jiedan realm, it would obviously be affected. The First Wood True Essence could ensure that the First Wood spirit power reached the Jiedan realm and could also improve the Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art. Thus, Yang Chen must attain it.

Saying goodbye to his Master, Yang Chen also said goodbye to the Palace Master, and then embarked on the road to the plain of the beasts.

Chapter 293: The Immortal's Cave Already Has A Master

According to the Immortal's memory, the First Wood True Essence was left by him in his Immortal's cave. His Immortal's Cave was in a huge Ten-thousand Trees Forest in the plain of the beasts.

Along the way, Yang Chen used the flying shuttle and the sea jasper. He took care to avoid troubles and did not encounter any obstacles throughout the journey. It was rare to encounter a monster that could keep its eyes on the shuttle and most could only look at the direction of its disappearance.

The Ten-thousand Trees Forest was also a lively area. Yang Chen was not sure how the Immortal's Cave that the predecessor had said about, had not been discovered.

One should know that this was the area where the monsters were rampant, a monster with a cultivation base of Jiedan realm or even the Yuanying realm of thousands of years or more could be found easily roaming about. It was not difficult to find a hidden Immortal's cave in this territory for such a long time.

Although Yang Chen of the previous life knew what was produced in the plain of the beasts, he had also come to this plain, but it was impossible for him to go all the way here. On the side of the Ten-thousand Trees Forest, Yang Chen had previously not explored.

A year later, when Yang Chen faced this huge Ten-thousand Trees Forest, even with the memory of his Great Principle Golden Immortal, he could not help but be shocked by this spectacular scene.

The huge forests covered at least tens of thousands of miles. But this was not the most shocking part of this place for Yang Chen.

What surprised him the most was that such a huge forest was composed of huge trees tens of feet high, branches going straight towards the sky, completely subverting Yang Chen. The madness of this forest left a deep impression in his mind.

Although there were some shrubs and grasses, all the trees were almost the same shape, so Yang Chen was very puzzled. Compared with ordinary forests, the trees in this Ten-thousand Trees Forest were a few times larger.

Seeing these huge trees, Yang Chen suddenly understood that the reason why there would be a First Wood True Essence here. The roots similarly ran everywhere from these huge trees.

The trees belonged to the First Wood, so many of them, more than hundreds of billions. In addition to the so-called Ten-thousand Trees Forest, there were far more than 10,000 species of wood in this forest. With so many species of wood, it was possible to condense the First Wood True Essence.

Of course, there must be a huge array in the Immortal's Cave that the predecessors mentioned. It must be like that of the Greatest Heaven Sect's formation which was arranged in the desolate valley. The formation could guide the First Wood True Essence to the Immortal's Cave little by little.

It was only this method that was definitely under this Ten-thousand Trees Forest and covered by so many large trees. It was impossible for Yang Chen to perceive a clue.

Of course, how the First Wood True Essence was gathered? Yang Chen was not interested now. What he wanted to determine now was whether the Immortal's Cave had been discovered by someone already.

There were many places in his memory with very clear positions, it was almost unnecessary for Yang Chen to spend a lot of time looking for it, when they were so few.

Yang Mountain Medicine Garden was one, as his past life had also been specially seen by him. The Dragon Palace treasure house counted as one also, and you could find some very characteristic reefs on the sea as well, because the island was not very big.

Others, whether it was the valley that the Howling Celestial Dog or the Immortal's cave now, needed Yang Chen to look carefully within the area.

The Immortal's Cave was in the middle of the Ten-thousand Trees Forest, probably southward, but the specific location was not explained. It was just that it was under a huge old banyan tree, there were some trick formations, and nothing else.

It was reasonable to say that the Banyan trees grew in a hot area, the plain of the beasts was originally in the north, and the weather was cold which was not suitable for the growth of a Banyan tree. However, Yang Chen also knew that some metamorphosis of the array was enough to change the local growth environment. It would not be surprising to find Banyan trees growing here.

In the huge forest of trees, if Yang Chen wanted to find a tree, how long would it take? No, Yang Chen could only use the old way as in the desolate valley, asking a few local indigenous people for any clues.

Now that Yang Chen's cultivation base had further improved, his spiritual awareness was already in the early stage of the Dacheng realm. The spiritual awareness threads were hundreds of miles long and covered a circular area around him. If there were some formidable Monster Beasts around, he could detect them almost immediately.

It was not known if it was bad luck or if Yang Chen's angle was wrong. This area did not have a single formidable Monster Beast. There were a few monsters who had just had their Spiritual Wisdom and were still in the qi refining realm, but these little monsters had limited domain. If he was to rely on them, he didn't

know how long it would take. It was much simpler to find a monster with a larger domain.

Looking for such a monster, made Yang Chen to slow down, and reveal his figure. After taking back the shuttle, his body flew at a height of several dozen feet, and his spiritual awareness was used to cover all the area beneath him, every region was explored.

The Ten-thousand Trees Forest was too big, Yang Chen started exploration while heading south, but the progress was slow. He searched for a day and a night but couldn't find any suitable monsters.

This situation was very strange, this was the Ten-thousand Trees Forest, it was in the plain of the beasts, it was impossible not find any powerful monsters. But the fact was that Yang Chen had searched for so long, almost a few thousand miles, and could not find a monster above the Jiedan realm.

The more unusual, the more Yang Chen felt that there was a problem, maybe it was related to that Immortal's Cave. This also made him even more vigilant, was there anything he had missed? Or was it that the large-scale Great Formation that was buried deep underground would interfere with the spiritual awareness exploration of a human consciousness?

Yang Chen couldn't break into the ground now to see if there was a real formation. It was covered with the strong roots of the forest, wood destroys Earth, the five elements repelled one another, if his Earth Escape met such huge forest roots, it would become its natural nemesis. Moreover, he could not determine which type of formation was used and whether it would not be disturbed by his own investigation. Relatively speaking, it was more appropriate to find some monsters to ask for directions.

Suddenly, Yang Chen seemed to find out that he was being stared at. This feeling was like being stared by a beast, giving him a cold feeling at the back of his neck.

As soon as he noticed this, Yang Chen almost immediately paid attention and tried to find out what was targeting him. He was not afraid of the emergence of a powerful monster, but he was afraid that this monster who was targeting him could actually avoid the exploration of his own spiritual awareness. It was obviously an extraordinary fellow.

Between the monsters, disputes over territory, sometimes devolved into life and death situations. If there was hostility, Yang Chen was not afraid, if the other party was not a master of the Dacheng realm, Yang Chen had the confidence to parley.

Soon, Yang Chen discovered the source of this hostility. What Yang Chen never expected was that this hostility actually came from above!

Searching for the monsters in the Ten-thousand Trees Forest, Yang Chen directly covered the ground with his spiritual awareness but missed the sky. Now that he thought about it, there were some powerful monsters who could fly in the air.

His spiritual awareness threads eagerly popped up, and Yang Chen determined the position of the other party almost instantly. The reason why Yang Chen did not release all his spiritual awareness, was because he was also afraid that his own Dacheng realm spiritual awareness would cause the other party's fear and they would run away.

It was a huge golden eagle, flying so high that his huge body looked very small and distant. However, the golden eagle was very fast. In the high sky, he flown in circles, his eyes also were staring vigorously at Yang Chen.

Accompanied by the spiritual awareness threads, Yang Chen also sent out the Beast Controlling Secret Art. As soon as it touched the other's body, his thoughts was passed on.

"Fellow Daoist, I want to ask about a way, I will thank you if you can show me."

Yang Chen sent his thoughts.

The other party did not seem to expect Yang Chen to pass on his thoughts from so far, so that the figure that was so far in the air, then began to slowly decline. The Golden Eagle did not have such a strong spiritual awareness as Yang Chen. After falling to a certain distance, Yang Chen felt the thoughts passed by Golden Eagle.

“Where do you want to go? What will be the rewards?”

This golden eagle of the peak Jiedan realm had the size of a hundred feet. Just in the eyes of Yang Chen, this guy was weak and pitiful. Even if Yang Chen did not use a magic weapon, it was estimated that his power could also be a matched with the other party.

“I am looking for a huge old banyan tree, in the south of the Tenthousand Trees Forest.”

It was not easy for Yang Chen to meet a monster who could communicate, and the Golden Eagle was suitable for his request, “as for the reward, what does Fellow Daoist want?”

Although its cultivation base was not very strong, but the Golden Eagle flew in the air, its domain was more extensive than the monsters on the ground. The eyes of the Golden Eagle could also see very far, from top to bottom, very few things could be missed through his eyes.

“Old Banyan?”

The Golden eagle flew closer, the more it understood about Yang Chen’s problem, “are you an outsider?”

“Exactly!”

Yang Chen did not understand what the Golden Eagle meant but admitted that he was an outsider and did not have much to do with it. The generous answer was an affirmative.

“No wonder!”

The golden eagle flanked the wings, hovering over the sky above Yang Chen, and passed on an idea, “Little calf, what do you want to find the old banyan tree for?”

The question asked was really strange. Yang Chen couldn’t figure it out quickly enough. After a sigh of relief, he said with his spiritual awareness, “I need to go beneath the tree...”

“Do you know that place?”

The Golden Eagle’s thoughts were sent again, and the sudden interruption of Yang Chen’s hesitation was followed by another question, “how do you know that place?”

That place? Yang Chen was really stunned this time. He thought about it before he came. Maybe the Immortal’s Cave would have been discovered by some monsters. Now it seemed that his fear had become true.

The Golden Eagle knew the Immortal’s Cave and asked Yang Chen how he knew about it. It seemed that it was a well-known fact around here. It also seemed that monsters here knew how this cave was like and these monsters didn’t want outsiders to know this.

“It was a predecessor who told of it.”

Yang Chen still didn’t lie, just regarded it as a predecessor’s saying. He said that it was true, whether it was according to age or according to seniority, the immortal who was killed by himself was enough to be a predecessor.

“Is it the black crane old man? I told him not to tell the outsiders casually.”

The thoughts of the Golden Eagle reflected a complaint. As for the guy in the Golden Eagle mouth, Yang Chen simply didn’t know off.

“Since someone told you, then you come with me!”

Golden Eagle did not say anything more this time, flew directly in a certain direction, and left Yang Chen with a sentence, “I take you to pass, see some acquaintances. For the sake of it, only accept fifty jin of your low-grade spirit stones. If you disagree, then forget it!”

How could lowly fifty jin of low-grade spirit stones be placed in the eyes of Yang Chen. He directly threw a jin of middle grade spirit stones towards the Golden Eagle, more than twice his asking price.

This golden eagle seemed to have a love for money. Seeing that Yang Chen was so generous, he flew down and offered, “you come to me, I am carrying you to pass!”

Yang Chen was overjoyed. He couldn’t think that his generous hand could result in such a convenience. He jumped up on the wide back of the Golden Eagle and sat down. It only felt like a second with the sound of the surrounding wind screaming, and they had flown a hundred miles away.

Whether it was the control of the flying sword, flying in general or driving the shuttle, the monsters could recognize his Dao Sect disciple status. This Golden Eagle did not know because he had not seen him driving a shuttle. He had regarded Yang Chen as a calf, thinking that he was Monster Race Fellow Daoist.

“Fellow Daoist, how can you need spirit stones?”

Sitting on the back of the Golden Eagle, Yang Chen also curiously conveyed a thought and asked, this was a question he always could not understand, when did the monster beast also began to use spirit stones?

“How can you not want spirit stones? The spiritual power in the Immortal’s cave is overflowing. If you want to go in and practice, you must hand in the spirit stones on time.”

The Golden eagle quickly replied, “your one jin middle grade spirit stones are enough for me to practice inside for a month’s

time.”

Listening to the answer of Golden Eagle, Yang Chen was shocked again, “why, is there still someone in charge of this Immortal’s Cave?”

If someone wanted to take charge and Yang Chen wanted to collect the First Wood True Essence. Wasn’t it an idiotic dream?

“The Immortal’s Cave, naturally needs someone to take charge, otherwise anyone can go in. Does it not need a lot of money to replenish an Immortal Cave’s spiritual aura?”

The Golden Eagle was very surprised how Yang Chen would ask such a question, but immediately realized it himself and gave an explanation, “the place where Fellow Daoist practices has a cultivation method buried, everyone else is vying for it. Who would be able to grab it? What kind of realm could it be cultivated to? If you must tackle Fellow Daoist, you must have a ferocious looking body or an advanced secret technique!”

“Also ask your Fellow Daoist to solve your doubts.”

A few words have already made Yang Chen completely stunned. In this Immortal’s Cave, there was actually a cultivation method Secret Art that could not be cultivated? Yes, the predecessor of the monster race, before ascending, may have left something.

“The Immortal’s Cave is now run by two Dacheng realm seniors. Daoists of the Monster Race and some acquaintances come, they can cultivate in the Immortal’s Cave.”

Golden Eagle quickly explained, “if you have enough spirit stones, you could stay inside. During the visit, one can even buy high-level secret techniques and all kinds of materials for medicinal pills. Most fellow Daoists in the Ten-thousand Trees Forest have practiced in this Immortal’s Cave.”

This explanation made Yang Chen finally understand that because of the existence of the Immortal’s Cave, the Monster Race

in this area was completely different from other places. No wonder Yang Chen had not found a monster cultivator before. It turned out that they were concentrated in the Immortal's Cave.

Chapter 294: The World of Monster Cultivation

The Immortal's cave under the banyan tree, was filled with spiritual power resulting in cultivation being many times better than outside. The monsters were not stupid. After their Spiritual Wisdom opened and they reached the foundation realm, they were brought here by their predecessors.

This Ten-thousand Trees Forest was rich in resources and has many rare materials. Among the mountainous areas not far from the forest, there were several spirit stones mines. Some of the monsters that drilled the grounds were mining spirit stone and gaining the qualification to enter the Immortal's Cave.

Of course, materials could also be exchanged for spirit stones, and all transactions were like markets in the human world. Even the Golden Eagle told Yang Chen that there was a large square market in the Immortal's Cave, and there were many shops where you could buy anything one wanted.

When the Golden Eagle came out this time, he planned to find some materials in exchange for spirit stones. On the way back, he met Yang Chen. At first, he thought that Yang Chen was a human being, so it broke out with hostility. Later, discovered that Yang Chen was a calf, and thus was relieved.

Yang Chen couldn't help but smile bitterly, in addition to having a pair of horns in the sea of consciousness, where did he look like a monster? However, this was also good, it also saved him a lot of trouble.

Along the way, Yang Chen exchanged ideas with the Golden Eagle and learned everything about the Immortal's Cave. The more he knew, the more surprised Yang Chen became.

The banyan tree's Immortal's Cave had almost developed into an

organization that was generally the same as the human sects. The only difference was that all the disciples were demon cultivators, and there was no clear indication that everyone was from the same sect. But when it came to the outside world, everyone admitted that it was a vein of the Ten-thousand Trees Forest.

The two Dacheng realm predecessors oversaw the Immortal's Cave's rules and resources, many Yuanying realm predecessors also managed all other aspects.

In the Immortal's Cave, there were the secret techniques left by their predecessors, which were simply tailor-made cultivation Secret Arts for the sorcerers. There were cultivation methods for the five elements, and there were various kinds of alchemy refining techniques also. Although it was not as strict as the big sects, it was already a small demon martial arts sect.

From this point of view, the monster cultivators of the Ten-thousand Trees Forest had obviously a higher starting point than that of other monster cultivators. One must know that She Kui and Xie Sha had no systematic secret techniques to practice, their cultivation was all in accordance with their instinct. Later, after meeting Yang Chen, they got some practice instructions.

The monster cultivators here, after the opening of the spirit wisdom, had systematic secret techniques, their overall strength was more powerful than the monsters elsewhere in the plain.

During the exchange, Yang Chen also discovered that the Golden Eagle unsurprised by Yang Chen's human form. It seemed that there were many humanoid monster cultivators in the Immortal's Cave. He didn't know if they practiced Yang Chen's transformation secret arts from the spirit world, or another inheritance.

With a lot of doubts, Yang Chen wanted to know, especially the one that was the most important thing. However, this time obviously was not the time to ask, Yang Chen held back his

curiosity. Soon he would arrive at the Immortal's Cave to see for himself, thus, he decided to wait a little longer.

However, what surprised Yang Chen was that though he thought that he would arrive soon. The Golden Eagle had been flying for two days and had traversed a full thousand miles. They began to slowly descend.

Yang Chen found a huge banyan tree in his vision. This tree, he did not know how to describe. If he knew that the banyan tree had always had the characteristics of a single tree, he would definitely think that he had come to a vast banyan forest.

A banyan tree with numerous pillar-like roots occupied the strictness of hundreds of miles. Not to mention the trunk, the light was the root of the air, the finest could also have the thickness equal to more than a dozen people. As for the main centre, it was a huge circular castle that directly occupied a few miles.

Yang Chen didn't know how many years this big banyan tree had grown, and he was even more unclear why this big banyan tree had not opened its spirit wisdom to become a tree demon after so many years. Anyway, the predecessor said that the Immortal's Cave was under the banyan tree, and it must be said that this must be the one.

The golden eagle's wings were collected, flying fast from above the canopy, the huge figure was so small against the huge banyan tree. As for Yang Chen on his back, he was like a drop in the ocean.

As soon as he approached the canopy, the Golden Eagle's eyes flashed a gold colour, and Yang Chen discovered that he and the Golden Eagle had come to a huge archway. The golden body of the Golden Eagle, in such an instant, became quite like Yang Chen. However, his body was of a human's, but his head was the same as before.

Under the archway, there were actually two Monster Cultivators sitting. They also had human bodies, one with a tiger's head and

one with a bull's head both in the Jiedan realm. In front of the two, there were two tables, as if they were in an office.

“There are new people coming, having same ancestry as yours.”

The Golden Eagle looked at the cow headed monster and yelled, “It was introduced by the black crane outside.” The eagle mouth made a voice which felt very weird.

“Oh?”

The bull-headed monster screamed. After glimpsing at Yang Chen's divine sense, he immediately noticed his horns, and the corners of his mouth cracked. The cow's face showed a strange smile.

“This time I have to practice for a year.”

The Golden Eagle had already done many formalities, and directly took out a lot of low-grade spirit stones and several middle grade spirit stones. It handed them to the tiger head.

After the tiger head weighed them, it gave a Jade card to the Golden Eagle. Golden Eagle reached out and took it. Then turned and explained to Yang Chen, “this brand is the identity token of the Immortal's Cave. Without this brand, you can't get in. The time is recorded on the sign. When the time is up, it will be recalled automatically.”

Yang Chen also took out a lot of low-grade spirit stones, but he was not so stingy like the Golden Eagle and directly booked for a decade.

“I have been listening to the mysterious crane who have said this before, so after I especially prepared a lot of spirit stones and came over to cultivate.” While paying the spirit stones, Yang Chen explained.

It sounded like the reason was impeccable. The tiger head and the bull's head didn't think too much about it. Just followed the rules and gave Yang Chen a piece of the same jade card.

“You are new to come here, it is best to find out whether there is a suitable cultivation method for you.” The ox head was conscious that the same clan predecessor brought him here and very enthusiastically pointed out, “when I finish my duty, you can come to me when you have something to ask, I will take you around.”

This kind of enthusiasm, Yang Chen was of course very grateful. After giving his thanks, Yang Chen followed the Golden Eagle into the archway, along the road.

“This is your first time coming here so you will be surprised, I will not say anything, so as not to break your interest.” After Golden Eagle said a warm sentence, he followed a few steps and ran to the front “Look at it yourself, I will go ahead.”

Turning around a corner, a huge city, suddenly appeared in front of Yang Chen.

The Blue Vault Mountain Immortal’s Cave was already very strong, but compared with the current Immortal’s Cave, there difference was simply of heaven and earth. Yang Chen also finally understood why the old Banyan tree had not opened its spirit wisdom and become a tree demon.

The city was built on the trunk of the huge banyan tree. The outside was obviously only a form, the real essence was still here, and the defendants had made a huge city.

He didn’t know how many generations of sacrificial refining had passed before and after, and the city had become such a giant. It occupied hundreds of miles and was much larger than any human city that he had seen yet. Even more than a few large sects did not match up.

In his previous life, Yang Chen did not deal with the monster cultivators. Naturally, this was also related to his birth. He occasionally encountered some powerful monster cultivators in the spiritual world and traded with some. Such as the Transformation Secret Art, but never asked the other their origins.

For their own origins, the monster cultivators regarded it as much more important than the human cultivators. Once people knew their origins, they may even retaliate. Thus, monster cultivators of the spiritual world rarely revealed their origins.

As for the ascending to the Immortal World, the Monster Race of the Ten-thousand Trees Forest may also know that their ancestors were beheaded by the current Jade Emperor, and could be even more afraid to expose their origins, so Yang Chen never heard of it or the Ten Thousand Trees Forest.

Standing here, Yang Chen discovered that he still underestimated the monster beasts. He always thought that the monster cultivators relied on instinct to practice but did not expect that there would be such a huge systematic structure behind monster cultivators.

It was obviously a space opened in the body of the big banyan tree. Countless monster cultivators were in this huge city, just like human beings, and bustling.

There were all kinds of monster cultivators of the various monster races. Occasionally, there would be several humans who walked by. It was no wonder that the Golden Eagle was unsurprised about the appearance of Yang Chen, it turned out to be commonplace.

As for the Golden Eagle, he had no idea where it has gone, but he estimated that it must have returned to his home in this city.

Standing in the same place for a while, Yang Chen was no longer so much surprised nor so sluggish. He soon walked along the road and entered the city.

After coming in, Yang Chen did not directly think about looking for the First Wood True Essence, but slowly followed the main road, observing and becoming familiar with the whole city.

Although the Immortal's Cave was a city, soon Yang Chen

discovered that the spiritual distribution in the city was uneven. The higher the height, the more intense the distribution of spiritual power, and most of the monster cultivators seemed to live in the lowest parts of the city.

The spirit stones paid by the archway was only the cost of entering the city and staying in it. To practice here, one needed to pay another spiritual stone to rent a room.

The most common, was naturally the lowest floor room. The higher the level, the higher the cost. The cost of the lowest level for the day was one or two low grade spirit stones, it did not seem to be a lot. For each level, the spiritual power was several times thicker, but the cost also increased. It costed ten times more than the next layer, and the highest level was said to consume one jin of middle grade spirit stones a day.

After a day of exploration, Yang Chen discovered the big market in the city that the Golden Eagle talked about. It was indeed a huge market, even bigger than the market of the Pure Yang Palace. There were hundreds of shops, and there were still many people who stood alone. A wide variety of materials, medicinal herbs, and even cultivation methods could be found here.

At a glance, many rare materials for human cultivators were everywhere here. It was no wonder that the cultivators had always said that the monsters in the plains were rich. They were placed in the stalls in such a way that a large sect's disciple could be ashamed to death, not to mention the goods in the bigger stores.

Unfortunately, without the introduction of the Monster Race, the cultivators could never enter this cave. And these things could never be properly circulated within the cultivators.

Yang Chen was very curious. In his previous life, no one was arrogant in the plains of the beasts. Even Yang Chen, who was in this life, pointed Scarface here. Although he also got a lot of materials, no one really entered the core world of the monsters.

Except now, only the current Yang Chen had.

In his previous life, the monsters of the beast plain had not produced any outstanding powers. Yang Chen did not have any masters in his memory. On the contrary, there were endless generations of powerful masters on the demon continent. Could it be that the monster cultivators who had been cultivated to a certain extent, would instead go to the demon continent?

These were unsolved mysteries, and Yang Chen had no answer about them. Now that he could stand in this city, maybe he could find these answers, or maybe not.

Originally when he came here, Yang Chen was looking for the First Wood True Essence that the predecessor left behind, but he now had changed his mind.

He would still have to continue to search for the First Wood True Essence, but, with so many cherished materials and various cultivation methods just lying around, how could he not take benefit of them. Yang Chen simply was not such a person. He must search for any good things here and make a fortune alongside.

For the Golden Eagle, he had long known that it had gone to somewhere he didn't know. As for the cow head that Yang Chen met in the archway he did not want to go looking for it. After finding the city, Yang Chen did not plan to do anything for the time being. No matter what his plan was, he must go and explore the city.

Just taking a trip around the city, he spent about five days. This was only when he was curiously looking around. He hadn't investigated any points of interest yet.

Five days later, Yang Chen seemed to be familiar with some rules in the city. Although it was filled with monsters, no one could kill anyone here. They could compete privately, fights could also be indulged in, but the no kill rule still applied. Once such an incident was detected, the involved people would be killed by the city's

management masters. This was an iron law and must not be violated. If they wanted to kill, they must do it outside the city.

After gaining some understanding of the rules, Yang Chen also paid the spirit stones in the management office like the ordinary monster cultivators and rented a room at the bottom of the city. He received a Jade Key to enter the room and first settled himself.

Now Yang Chen looked like a newcomer who had just arrived. After understanding the rules of the city, he began to practice. Not surprisingly at all, the experience was unremarkable. But no one paid attention to Yang Chen.

After he got settled, Yang Chen sat in his room and began to ponder. There was a restriction on the room to disallow entry with a jade key. No one dared to break open the door either. Relatively speaking, it was safe.

Next, Yang Chen began to worry about the First Wood True Essence, was it still here?

Chapter 295: Who Dares?

It was almost impossible to find a vein of the First Wood True Essence in a city of such size and one that had not been discovered already.

Not to mention that almost everyone here had opened their spiritual wisdom and were at least at the foundation realm. The two masters of the Dacheng realm who ruled the city, were also not easy to cope with.

Yang Chen was not sure whether they had already found the vein of the First Wood True Essence or if they still had not found it yet, everything needed him to find out himself.

It was not impossible to come here to practice, and he would definitely be seen. However, it was not a good idea to practice the Great Yin and Yang Five Elements Secret Art here. The spiritual power here was controlled by the people. Once it was discovered that Yang Chen was not a monster cultivator, he would definitely not be able to escape in time.

This was not the Pure Yang Palace. If Yang Chen wanted to retreat, he was afraid of someone peeking. This was not his own domain, he of course had to be careful, caution was the parent of safety. It was better to be safer than sorry, that was the unchanging truth.

However, the Yellow Turban Strongman Body Refining Technique was very suitable, Yang Chen could be assured and boldly practice it. The body refining techniques in the cultivator's cultivation system were completely different, the body refining techniques could be stopped at any time without worrying about being disturbed during the practice. If there were unexpected incidents, Yang Chen could easily cope with them.

However, since he had come to a city where monsters cultivated, it was not rare for Yang Chen to see if the cultivation methods of

these monster cultivators had become powerful enough. Anyway, he was now pretending to be a rogue monster cultivator, who came here to cultivate. Buying the cultivation methods was thus, a very normal thing.

Yang Chen's figure soon appeared in the huge square market. This time, Yang Chen was no longer looking around hastily, but began to carefully browse.

He started by strolling from the stalls. These monster cultivators in the stalls would naturally sell goods to those bigger merchants. Those were then bound to crush their customers underneath equally high prices. It was better to take profits directly from the stalls instead.

Of course, since it was a stall, it was impossible to be more expensive than the shops. Otherwise no one would buy here. In short, scattered buyers, through these stalls could still get a cheaper rate.

Yang Chen was looking at them one by one. Although many things were not produced in the Central Plains, he could still make two times the profit, if he brings it there. However, Yang Chen couldn't be too full of himself. Sometimes being rich did exude power but prestige could not even be worth a pint of salt among a group of robbers, only further anguish.

The monster cultivators were still monsters, even if there was a seemingly strict law and organization here, their mentality of the law of the jungle was ingrained their bones and had not changed too much. This point, Yang Chen has seen being made countless times in his previous life.

If Yang Chen now had a cultivation of the Yuanying realm, only then would he never be so cautious. But he was only a cultivator who has just reached the early stage of the Jiedan realm and did not want to ruin the Immortal Beheading Blade which he was tempering himself.

However, even if Yang Chen's performance was so cautious, he was still stared at. The last time he looked around the city, he basically just took a glance at it and did not stop, naturally it would not attract the attention of others. But this time, Yang Chen was planning to score some good things. Thus, he was perusing carefully, and soon people took notice of him.

“Are you new here?”

One of the onlookers was a guy who had idly appeared in front of Yang Chen. The person was a wolf head. His cultivation base was only a little bit higher than Yang Chen's, in the middle Jiedan stage. When he spoke, he had the gaze of someone carefully observing something and the tone of a fat sheep.

Everyone here was very disciplined, no one let loose of their spiritual awareness, unless it was to explore the inside of something. It was also controlled to only explore what was in their hands. Otherwise, no matter which monster cultivator was discovered by spiritual awareness, the act would be regarded as provocation.

In fact, this rule was the same in the human cultivators' markets. At any time, without permission, it was a provocation to explore each other with spiritual awareness. Unless it was in battle, or when his cultivation base was surprisingly high.

Yang Chen didn't open his spiritual awareness, but it didn't mean he didn't know the movements around him. He had the Three Purities Secret Art's formidable Spiritual Awareness threads released a little. However, they did not cover the usual area, but only a hundred square feet, so as not to get perceived by high-ranking monster cultivators. Around, the races were numerous, he had to be careful.

When the other party came close, Yang Chen had already noticed. And there was not only one, there were four around, two in the late stage of the foundation realm, a late Jiedan stage master

and the remaining one turned out to be at the beginning of the Yuanying realm.

Looking at the tone and the expression of the other party, Yang Chen knew that it was definitely the domineering thug in the city, otherwise the surrounding stall owners and buyers would not have shunned this situation.

“I just arrived a few days ago, I came over to broaden my horizons.”

Yang Chen did not conceal the fact that he had just arrived. These monsters were very shrewd, it was impossible to pretend like a regular visitor.

“The newcomers are welcome here, but there are rules.”

The wolf’s mouth made a burst of laughter, and it took two steps closer. It almost collided with Yang Chen. The guy with the wolf head looked at the things on the stall that Yang Chen had just stared at, and suddenly said to the stall owner, “Do you want to tell him about the rules?”

The stall owner was just a chicken head monster cultivator in the late stage of the foundation realm. He did not dare to provoke this guy. With an accompanied laugh, the wolf head was about to talk, that Yang Chen suddenly robbed him of his words.

“Since there are rules, it is still annoying to big brother, let me personally talk to him!”

As he said, Yang Chen seemed to be very close to wolf head. He held his shoulders, as if leaning side by side. The hand on the shoulder of the other side, actually pinched it so hard that it started to swell to the bone.

The opposite stall owner was like a big man, this kind of offending person, if he was forced by the wolf head, he would definitely let Yang Chen hate him. Now that Yang Chen took the initiative to let the wolf introduce it himself, it would not matter

to him. He was also happy to watch the fun.

However, what was strange was that in the market, the wolf leader who had always been a stalwart, seemed to have gotten himself into this unlikely situation.

He didn't know why, but the wolf suddenly changed his face, and sweat appeared on his head. Even if there was thick hair on the wolf, he still sweated.

What was happening? A monster cultivator in the Jiedan realm, would actually be so sweaty? But no one around them saw any problems. Just stared at Yang Chen and the wolf, it seemed strange how this little bully would be so out of place.

The wolf head was secretly complaining now. Yang Chen was very casual and took his hand to his shoulders. It suddenly felt like a mountain had fallen on his body. The huge pressure directly made him unable to say a word, and he could only use all his strength to resist the pressure.

The shoulder blade held by Yang Chen's hand made a burst of sound as if it was about to break, as if the next moment, the entire shoulder blade would be shattered.

He didn't know why, he couldn't employ any of the demon power of his body. It seemed to be locked firmly by something. At this moment, let alone counterattack with demon power, even if it was moving any part of the body would become a burden.

The wolf head had no doubt that if Yang Chen was willing, he would be dead on the spot immediately after the next moment. Even if someone came to his rescue, it was estimated that only his body could be recovered.

Standing in the same place, the cold sweat of the wolf continued to drip down nonstop. The opposite stall owner had been sluggish but now had seen through the situation completely. He became dumbfounded, he understood that it was definitely the wolf head

that was going to be killed by Yang Chen.

“Here, what is the rule?”

Yang Chen seemed to be afraid that the wolf head did not hear him clearly. In this close range, he repeated his own words again.

Fortunately, Yang Chen did not carry out the next move. After his question, the wolf head didn't know how, but the pressure on his body had loosened, and then he found that he had the ability to speak.

“Let him go! Otherwise I will cut your head off!”

There was a sudden shout next to them, the leopard head master of the Yuanying realm had already noticed that something was wrong and rushed over. His only younger brother was in the hands of Yang Chen. He did not dare to act rashly, but threatened Yang Chen.

“Oh?”

Yang Chen was very strange and turned back. He asked in a surprised tone, “can you kill someone here?”

His words were naturally to be explained by the wolf head. After he visited the city for a few days, he thought that it was impossible to kill people here, but the other party actually said that he wanted to cut his head off, which suddenly made Yang Chen somewhat confused. Was the rule here not so strict?

“No! You can't kill people here!”

The wolf head was almost crying. His own life was also in the hands of Yang Chen. If he could kill, isn't he the first one to be finished off?

“Even if you can't kill, it's the same to abolish you!”

The Yuanying realm master immediately realized that his younger brother's life was in the hands of Yang Chen and suddenly changed his tone to threaten again.

“You want to abolish me?”

Yang Chen’s look was fierce and gloomy. On the face of his smile, suddenly there was a frost, “no killing, but abolishing is ok, is it?”

The Yuanying realm master saw Yang Chen’s face mutation and thought that he had become scared. He coldly smiled, “of course, see that guy over there?”

He reached out to the side and again threatened, “If you don’t want to be like him, you will honestly take out all the valuables on your body.”

Along his fingers, Yang Chen saw at the edge of the market stall, a goat was curled up under the corner of the wall. Although the body was huge, it was well maintained.

It was thought that he had not practiced anything like Transformation Secret Art, but now, taking a closer look, Yang Chen suddenly became aware. The goat was simply wasted, and its cultivation base was abolished, although the spiritual wisdom was thrown in, but now it was only at the level of qi refining realm. Being thrown there, it was being used to warn others.

“It turns out like that!”

Yang Chen took a sigh of relief, if he could make people like that, it would become simple.

With a hand raised, the wolf head’s body flew directly towards the Yuanying realm master. The other party saw his younger brother suddenly fly over, his hand stretched out, and the wolf head was caught in his hand.

Yang Chen turned out to be so obedient, the Yuanying realm master’s face showed a sneer, “you know your limit, but my brother is not to be bullied by anyone.”

He had never seen such a stupid guy. He thought that if he let people go, would they let him go?

However, his voice just fell, and he felt a heavy punch on his stomach. This fist, carrying an unrivalled force, went straight through his chest and abdomen.

Bang!

The Yuanying realm master's body was struck to fly. All his internal organs and the six squats trembled under the pain, his stomach felt like a river. The Yuanying realm master had not suffered such pain in his life, even the intestines were so painful to even have convulsions. Don't say anything about the reaction, he couldn't even find time to scream, the cramps of his lungs were extremely painful, his breathing could not continue, let alone the sound.

Everyone in the market stared dumbfounded at Yang Chen who had thrown the wolf head to the side. Then he took a step, jumped and punched the Yuanying stage ancestor. The series of actions were bold and had fallen even before they had reacted. The leopard head had been beaten to fly.

However, this was only the beginning. The Yuanying realm master was still in the air that everyone saw Yang Chen jump high and his whip like legs picking up the whistling wind. Then from top to bottom, they started pummelling the body of the Yuanying realm master.

Bang!

The body of Yuanying realm master, like a shell of a scorpion, directly smashed into the ground. The hard ground was dredged, and a deep pit formed with the contours of the Yuanying realm master.

The people around them had stunned expressions, opened mouths with disbelieving eyes.

The Yuanying realm master who was unreachable in their eyes, at this moment, was like a dead fish. The whiteness of his eyes was

showing, and his body was breathing heavily. There was no other movement from him. Don't talk about counterattacks, standing up was something that couldn't be achieved.

It was still not finished. Yang Chen fell lightly, reached out and took the Yuanying stage master out of the deep pit. Then he held him in his hand. Currently, the Yuanying stage master was on the brink of losing consciousness, his head was soft and hanged on one side, only he was breathing slowly.

“Abolishing people's cultivation base is fine, this is a very good rule!”

Yang Chen was very casual and snorted, his voice was not loud, but the people around him could hear it clearly.

When they heard the words of Yang Chen, everyone was in a bad mood. Looking at Yang Chen, was like watching a demon.

Bang!

Yang Chen threw another punch, landing heavily in the lower abdomen of the Yuanying realm master.

Kacha!

A clear cracking sound came to everyone's ears. As the sound was heard, the body shape of the Yuanying realm master began to change rapidly.

In a twinkling of an eye, the Yuanying realm master with the leopard head became a huge leopard, more than a dozen feet long, it was about the size of the goat on the other side.

The leopard was thrown to the side of the goat, and Yang Chen clapped as if he had to drain the dust from his hand. There was also a dissatisfied voice in his mouth, “I hate others who call themselves king, to dominate.

“Is there anyone who still dares to challenge me?”

Chapter 296: Hang Out With Me

This was heard in the ears of people around him, almost all of them had their foreheads full of black lines. Who dared? Certainly no one dared, he was now the dominating king.

Directly crushed a master of middle Yuanying stage and abolished his cultivation base. Such a strong cultivator, they have never seen before.

Coming with the Yuanying realm Leopard, there was also a cultivator in the late Jiedan realm. He just saw his companion getting punched by Yang Chen and couldn't do anything about it.

When Yang Chen had thrown the leopard aside and finished the sentence, that cultivator wanted to try his hand. He saw Yang Chen didn't have his guard up. He suddenly felt that the opportunity was good. On his fingers ten nails suddenly popped up which were more than a foot long, like sharp daggers. In general, he tried to stab Yang Chen's chest.

Jing!

Yang Chen's body made a sound, and the expected view of Yang Chen's stabbed belly did not happen as he had hoped.

The ten nails stopped at Yang Chen's chest, seemingly as if meeting a steel wall. They stopped on the surface of the skin and could not puncture through.

The Jiedan realm master, the sneak attacker, was grabbed and lifted into the air by his neck with Yang Chen's one hand. His big hand tightened a little bit and the attacker's legs began to kick helplessly around in the air. Both hands back, he kept wanting to vainly grab the big hand holding his neck.

Unfortunately, no matter how hard he tried, Yang Chen's hand was like steel cast, and the silk did not move. The long nails were madly chopping on Yang Chen's naked arms, making clinking

sounds, but they didn't even leave a mark. The guy who was caught by Yang Chen had already had his eyes turned white and could almost not breathe anymore.

"If your feet dare to move again, I will let you experience not having one!"

The wolf, who just had climbed up from the ground still dared to smear the soles of his feet and slip away. Yang Chen seemed to have eyes at his back and coldly said.

The wolf seemed to have affixed his body on the spot, his foot maintained a posture of taking a step. He didn't dare to move. There was rumble in his throat which was made by a big swallow, and his whole body got soaked with sweat.

Very lightly he took off the Qiankun bag that was caught in the hands of this bear person. Yang Chen's hand was loose, and he threw him directly to the wolf monster. In his other hand, there were already two more Qiankun bags from the leopard and the bear.

"You, do you want me to take it myself?"

Yang Chen looked at the wolf monster and berated it.

Where would the wolf monster dare to play stupid, he hurriedly took the initiative to take off his own Qiankun bag. Holding it in both hands, he sent it over. His face was carefully accompanied by a smile, no longer did it carry the kind of arrogance as before.

The bear finally slowed down, but he did not dare to act rashly while standing there. The expression on his face showed how much grievances he had suffered and how wronged he was, how he must now flatter the very person who did it.

"I am new, and there are many rules I don't understand."

Yang Chen took over the Qiankun bag of the wolf and did not care about the surrounding eyes. He directly opened his spiritual awareness and explored what was inside. While opening his

mouth, he said, “so like this rule that says abolishing the cultivation base of Fellow Daoist is fine, it is not a lot to understand. Let’s talk about the rules that I should know but don’t know yet?”

The wolf almost cried out. You must know that Yang Chen was so terrifying, that he did not dare to be loud and yell nonsense! The boss of the early Yuanying stage, said that it was ok to abolish cultivation base, even ten breaths had not passed, and he faced the same thing again. That kind of terrifying fighting power, could he ever hope to provoke it?

“No, there are no more!”

The wolf replied with a sorrowful face, “in the future, do not talk about rules. We have no rules here.”

“On the road!”

Yang Chen looked at the wolf up and down, but his eyes showed a satisfactory look. His big hand took a shot on the other’s shoulder and shouted loudly, “there is a future for you, hang with me later!”

“Yes!”

Although the wolf also had the same level as the early stage of the Jiedan realm, but now he did not dare to show his face in front of Yang Chen. He hurriedly bent his waist a few more inches lower. When Yang Chen took his shoulder, he didn’t raise his head too high and said, “if you have any instructions, this small one will do it right away.”

“You!”

Yang Chen screamed at the bear, who was thrown out not far away, “do you want to be with him, or follow me?”

When he asked him, his hand was pointed out at where the Yuanying realm monster was still unconscious at. He wanted the bear to choose.

Originally, they were swaying around and acted arrogantly in the market. Although their cultivation base was good, it was basically supported by the spirit pills snatched from others. Their fighting power was not strong. That was why they could only bully these foundation realm younger generations and the stalls owners, they really met such a terrifying person like Yang Chen. There was no more arrogance in them.

Yang Chen asked him to choose, the bear did not have to choose. Their principle aligned with whom had the biggest fist. Now Yang Chen almost gave away his life and then gave him a chance. If he didn't know who to choose, he would really be stupid.

Almost instantaneously, the bear left the ram and ran all the way and consciously stood behind Yang Chen, with a loyal and sly look. He could not see that before dozens of breaths, he followed others.

"If you behave well, there would be more benefits for you."

Yang Chen directly threw back their Qiankun bags. The two quickly took over and seemed to be relieved.

"I want to buy good materials, at least ten jin of middle grade spirit stones. Lead the way."

With two younger brothers who saw the wind and rudder, Yang Chen immediately did not have to search for good things again. The two guys knew where the stalls have been in the market for many years, and they were very familiar with them.

The reason why the two people's lives were left to them was that it was not good to kill the monsters here. Secondly, there was an acquaintance who could lead the way. When he first arrived, Yang Chen didn't know how the market was. There were these two guys. Yang Chen thought that he could get a lot of good things at a very cheap price.

It was convenient for the local bullies to do such things, and soon they took Yang Chen to a booth. The bear waited for Yang Chen to

continue, and immediately yelled at the stall owner, “come on, take out your piece of Amethyst Golden Crystal, our boss is watching.”

“Bear master, this is my treasure, you can’t...”

The stall owner cried with a lost face and then began to complain.

“Less nonsense, bring it out quickly!”

The bear facing Yang Chen had an obedient face, facing these stall owners he had a savage look. He murderously shouted at the stall owner.

Under the coercion of the bear, the stall owner finally slowly took out his piece of Amethyst Golden Crystal.

“Name a price!”

Yang Chen’s eyes brightened and said directly to the stall owner.

“Forty..., no, thirty-five jin of middle grade spirit stones.”

When he just said forty, the stall owner suddenly saw that the bear and the wolf had already shot a murderous stare at him and he hurriedly changed his price to thirty-five jin.

“I will buy it!”

Yang Chen was too lazy to bargain. He took a bunch of spirit stones directly from the Leopard’s Qiankun bag, almost 35 jin of middle grade spirit stones. Threw it on the stall, picked up the Amethyst Golden Crystal and stuffed it into his Achievement Ring.

Such a large piece of Amethyst Golden Crystal, was at least three jin or so, was definitely a Metal Attribute refiner’s most precious treasure. If it was placed in the auction of the Central Plains’ cultivators, selling it for three jin of high-grade spirit stones was absolutely no problem. Here, it was only 35 jin of middle grade spirit stones, it was so cheap that it costed almost nothing.

He never thought that he could really get the spirit stones. The

stall owner looked at the pile of spirit stones. A bad dog ate, his hands were wide, and he slammed into his booth, and protected the pile of spirit stones aggressively. For fear that in the next moment the spirit stone would fly away with wings.

“Go! Let’s go look at something else!”

At the bear and the wolf, he made a snap, and Yang Chen said quickly and neatly. The two hurriedly got back their composure, then took Yang Chen to the next target.

With this good beginning, it seemed that people also realized that although the new Yang Chen was tough, he was not the kind of strong person who would buy and bully the seller. At least the price given by the stall owner was a little less than their psychological price. But it was still a little profitable.

However, in the face of the fierceness of the wolf and the bear, no one dared to arbitrarily set a high price, and remained near the actual price. Yang Chen almost never changed. If the things he saw were all clean and to his liking, he would inquire price, throw a bunch of spirit stones towards the stall owner and leave.

With the Qiankun bag of the leopard, Yang Chen added another layer of cover. At least people looked at him in a different light, he was not like a naive rich person with huge money. Everyone knew that he had robbed the Leopard’s Qiankun bag in broad daylight. He must then be feeling generous, squandering these spirit stones of the Leopard leader without a care in the world. That’s how, no one doubted him.

Yang Chen thought that he had to spend a long time to buy the good things here but did not expect that someone would send them straight into his hands. During this purchase, he directly threw out at least a few dozen jin of high-grade spirit stones, but the things that were exchanged, could definitely sell several times higher in the Central Plains.

“Where do they sell the cultivation methods, take me there to

see.”

Yang Chen turned over from the materials area and directly told the two newly-received younger brothers, “I still have a lot of younger brothers who have no decent cultivation methods. Your levels are just really bad. Looking at your good behaviour, I’ll reward you one.”

Hearing that Yang Chen would buy cultivation methods and give them considerations, both monsters’ eyes almost burst out with happiness. They used to follow the leopard to bully everyone in the city, but the great items were all taken up by the leopard. Others eat meat, but they could only drink some soup. They just changed to a new boss and they immediately had such a good reward, how could it not let the two people be surprised and happy.

“Boss, the cultivation methods are all in the book building over there. But...”, the wolf pointed out the direction of the cultivation selling area with some hesitation.

“But what?” asked Yang Chen.

“The book building is not the place we used to go. It is expensive, and the average person can’t afford it.”

The wolf looked up at Yang Chen’s face. Seeing that Yang Chen was not angry because he hesitated, he went on and said, “we never dared to go wild there, so...”

The tone of the wolf revealed that the power of the book building was not something they could provoke. It was no wonder that the place where the Inherited cultivation method building was located, was naturally where the two masters of the Dacheng realm also lived. The monsters who controlled the rules here. Would the ordinary people dare to act unruly there? Not to mention the two in the Jiedan realm. Even if they were replaced by the leopard of the Yuanying realm, borrowing twenty times more of his courage, he would still not dare to offend them easily.

“I have some spirit stones, what are you afraid of?”

Yang Chen was very disdainful of the two men and said, “they open their door to do business, they would love to have our spirit stones. We are going to buy the cultivation method, but not to make trouble, what is there to be afraid of?”

“Yes, yes, boss, pass here!”

Listening to Yang Chen’s words, the wolf suddenly got up straight. If you buy something, you don’t have to worry about it. Even if the background of the book building was terrifying, since they are opening their door to do business, they can’t push the customers out.

This area was obviously different from the place where the other stalls were set up. Most of the stalls there were for the monster cultivators in the foundation realm. The three-monster group of the leopard, the wolf and the bear were quite popular there.

However, the streets here were much wider with more gates. Even many of the gatekeepers were the masters of Jiedan realm, same as the wolf and bear monsters, directly setting off the difference between this side and the stall area.

“Old bear and wolf, here is not a place you can come, hurry back to your site to go bully there.”

The three people had just arrived at this street, that immediately someone shouted at the two behind Yang Chen, “If you want to act unruly, go do it in your domain, don’t plant yourself here.”

There was still a distance from the stalls area. The things happening there have not yet reached here, so no one knew that the old bear and the old wolf had changed leadership. The guards were still on alert, the remainder also gave warning stares to the two.

“We are accompanying the boss to buy some cultivation methods!”

With Yang Chen's teaching, the two seemed to be overconfident. Their waists straight, they replied loudly, "What is wrong? Is it possible that the bookstore won't sell to us?"

"If you have spirit stones of course we will sell to you!"

Hearing that they came to buy cultivation methods and not to mess around, the guards also lowered their vigilance a little. But some people still heard the name of the boss in their mouth and became aware that both were actually behind Yang Chen. There were some doubts about him when he came with them, so he turned out to be their new boss.

However, this had nothing to do with them. They were only responsible for controlling the unpleasant matters happening here. As for the arrival of old bear and the old wolf, it was not something they should care about.

"Shopkeeper, the big sale is coming!"

The book building was very stylish, it was estimated that the palace that existed long ago had been changed. When Yang Chen entered the door, he shouted loudly inside.

"The book floor is heavy, it is forbidden to make noise!"

Yang Chen's voice just fell, and a low voice was heard immediately, and a warning was issued.

"Bring your best cultivation methods, I want to choose a suitable batch for my brothers!"

Yang Chen simply ignored the voice inside, and then shouted again. While shouting, he threw the Leopard's Qiankun bag directly onto the empty table in the bookstore and sat down next to it.

"These are a dozen top grade spirit stones, is there anyone in charge?"

After sitting down, Yang Chen yelled at the empty space and you

could tell the arrogance in his voice.

Chapter 297: Purchasing Cultivation Techniques

“A few jin of top-grade spirit stones?”

The voice hesitated, and then did not say anything. It seemed that the richness of the wealth had a similarly rich and powerful atmosphere, at least to make certain rules less important in an instant.

Although the bear and wolf did not know how much spirit stones the Leopard had, but they knew that there were no such top-grade spirit stones. Listening to Yang Chen’s yell had both sweating in secret. But no one dared to say anything, whether it was Yang Chen or the book building, they could not afford to offend any of them.

An old man with a long beard slowly walked out from behind, holding a cane in his hand like he had been walking with it for a few years. The walking stick should have been made from a tree stalk, it wasn’t even trimmed, and still kept its branches. However, the place where it was held was already smooth, no one knew how long it had been held to become like that.

Seeing this old man, Yang Chen’s gaze fell directly on the walking stick. It seemed to be an ordinary walking stick, but he found it to be a branch of ironwood. It was a good thing for refining wood attributed magic weapons. It was almost equal to Penglai Divine Wood.

The shape of the cane was the natural shape of a branch, but whoever believed that the wood had not been sacrificial refined was a fool. However, unlike the human cultivators, the monster cultivators were more willing to retain the natural form of the iron wood, rather than having them as flying swords after refinement.

“There is a big sale?”

The old man shuddered and sat down. He glanced at Yang Chen in the front pocket and asked him. The sound was not loud nor harsh but very peaceful.

“The younger generation wants to buy the highest level of cultivation method you have.”

Yang Chen was impolite. Among the Monster Race, politeness was meaningless, but they were more straightforward.

“Do you have the recommendation of the city lord?”

The old man’s eyelids did not lift, and he inquired directly.

“No.”

Yang Chen shook his head, “This younger generation junior has just arrived in the city to broaden my horizons.”

This statement was very common, most of the foreign monster cultivators were directed by someone. They came here to seek better development, environment, cultivation methods, artefacts, etc., here is where you could find the best of the monster cultivators.

“Oh!” the old man sighed, nodding his head slightly. He continued, “If you don’t have one, it is a bit expensive to buy a cultivation method.”

“Predecessors, feel free to name the price!”

Yang Chen had thought that with no city lord recommendation, he wouldn’t be able to buy the best method but in reality, it only served to lower the price a little. The problem that could be solved with spirit stones was not a problem for him.

“Are you going to use these?”

The old man raised his head this time and looked at Yang Chen. Even his spiritual awareness rushed out and touched Yang Chen.

“For this younger generation junior, I also want to buy some of it for my younger brothers at home.” Yang Chen did not hide his

appetite, or how to count on as big business.

“The calf, let me think about what is appropriate.”

The old man closed his eyes and began to ponder. After a long time, he looked up and said, “What do you need for your friends?”

“An old tree, a small tree, a python and a sand Scorpion.” Yang Chen regarded the old tree monster Gui Shanyou, She Kui, Xie Sha and Mu Bai, to be drawn in the future. Finally, he added two more, “Also the two behind me.”

The two never dreamed of buying the highest level of cultivation methods in the library. Listening to Yang Chen’s words, their bodies were twitching.

“Them?”

The old man glanced at him and shook his head, “their foundation is too bad. In order to improve their cultivation base, they took a lot of ‘chaos’ items. Too bad, their realm has also consolidated. Just find someone who would be able to kill them. Advanced cultivation methods, they are not suitable.”

The old man’s words were like scoop of cold water, poured directly on their heads. They thought that they were arrogant in the stalls side. In the eyes of the old man, they were simply two wastes, and were not suitable.

“Then find the best foundation laying cultivation methods, if repairing it is a big deal, then they would start from the beginning. What do you say?” Yang Chen said without hesitation. The two were originally doing his dirty work for him, giving them some benefits, in order to let them do their work in a desperate manner, and not to cheat him.

“Just these?”

The old man asked again.

“If there is, it is best to have the spiritual awareness cultivation

methods.” Yang Chen finally added another sentence. Even if it was a Monster Cultivator, it was good to have a strong spiritual awareness. Of course, such a cultivation method was necessary.

“Old trees and small trees can use one kind, but since they are old and small, there are foundations with advanced cultivation methods. Plus, a high-level cultivation method of a python, a high-level cultivation method of a scorpion, two kinds of foundation laying cultivation methods of wolves and bears. Altogether three high-level cultivation methods and three foundation laying cultivation methods.” The old man quickly quoted Yang Chen, “add another spiritual awareness cultivation method, seven cultivation methods, advanced cultivation methods and spiritual awareness cultivation method. That is five jin of top-grade spirit stones, the other three kinds are each one jin, totalling to twenty-three jin of top-grade spirit stones.”

Listening to the old man’s report of this price, the bear and wolf monsters directly became stunned. Such a high price, even if they sweep all the goods in the stall area, it was not necessarily able to afford so many cultivation methods. They couldn’t help but become four eyes turning towards Yang Chen. On the one hand, they were expecting Yang Chen to buy them, but on the other hand, they were worried that Yang Chen could not afford it.

Yang Chen almost never lacked spirit stones. From the last time he was chased by Luo Yuan, Yang Chen almost spent three pieces of top-grade spirit stones. After returning, he added a large number from Shangguan Feng. Not to mention killing so many cultivators, they had the same number of spirit stones. Twenty-three jin of top-grade spiritual stones, although was a big amount, in the eyes of Yang Chen, it was nothing.

Of course, it was not impossible for Yang Chen to pay all the top-grade spirit stones right then and there. Soon, a Qiankun bag filled with various grades of spirit stones would be ‘handed over’ to the old man.

The old man did not think that Yang Chen really came to buy the cultivation methods at such a high price. After taking over the Qiankun bag, even he became stunned. The monster race rarely had such a large amount of wealth. Even if someone had it, he would not be a calf in the Jiedan realm, more of a Yuanying or a higher realm master.

However, no one will ask the origins of these spiritual stones. Since the spirit stones were enough, the old man quickly picked them up and then stood, "Follow me."

The three followed the old man and soon came to the inside of the book building. Not the reception hall for the guests, but this was the real book building. Of course, it was still not the place to store the cultivation methods, but the place for the guests to choose.

A row of Jade slips was neatly placed on the table in the middle of the centre, the old man pointed to the other side, "go and pick what you want, just say which you want, and someone will send it to your hand."

This row of jade slips was the catalogue of all the cultivation methods in the book building. Of course, every kind of cultivation method was accompanied by introductions, classifications, and so on. At least one could see whether it belonged to advanced cultivation methods or foundations laying cultivation methods, and how it worked after cultivating it.

The book building was also the same as the name of each person. In fact, it was still necessary to test the students' own vision. If one was not sure about their own vision, whether a high-level offensive power was needed or not. If one accidentally chose a defensive method, then only spend a lot more to buy another could correct the problem. This was also a way of making money in the book building.

However, these arrangements had basically no effect on Yang

Chen. With Yang Chen's knowledge, after knowing the approximate cultivation methods' effect, he was basically able to judge the merits of the cultivation methods. Such mistakes would basically never be made by him.

Yang Chen began to explore the contents of the jade slips one by one. There was a doubtful look on his face. It seemed that he was too choiceless to decide, but his heart was blooming happily. There were not many opportunities to understand the characteristics of the Monster Race's cultivation methods, and he must grasp them anyway he could.

The old man was already unaltered about this situation. How many monster cultivators were almost ruined while buying a suitable cultivation method. When choosing, they were all as cautious as Yang Chen. Sitting on the side, the old man was not urging, but his eyes were closed slightly, as if he was maintaining mental tranquillity with his eyes closed.

Yang Chen looked very slowly. It was just the foundation of the foundation laying cultivation methods. It took almost a whole hour, and he finally picked out three kinds of methods.

Looking at the cultivation methods chosen by Yang Chen, the old man did not have many reactions. These kinds of foundation laying methods were actually the same for everyone. It was just that when one practices, he would have to hold his breath and be calm as one couldn't surmount the sky with a single step.

Yang Chen had chosen these three exercises. They all belonged to the stable type, and the speed of practice will not be too fast, but it would have a good effect. Absolutely for the two, the bear and the wolf, he didn't know how to improve their Jiedan realm cultivation base by a lot of methods.

The foundation laying cultivation methods here were actually priced a jin of top-grade spiritual stones each, it no wonder that those monster cultivators who were seen by Yang Chen did not

have a solid foundation. Those whose foundation was really good, were not many among them. It was estimated that few could have good cultivation methods, but they had practiced some incomplete cultivation methods from the outside.

Of course, even so, it was much luckier than those who had no cultivation methods. Do not say anything else, even if it was a broken incomplete method, the speed of practice was several times faster than the ordinary monster cultivator. With the cultivation, you could earn more spiritual stones and then buy the better cultivation methods in turn.

As for the those who were crawling outside, they were better than the monster cultivators here. The people outside, like She Kui, Xie Sha and old tree demon were relying on instinctive little practice in all kinds of difficult environments, and the time spent was almost several times faster than here.

A foundation that was not sturdy must not be relied upon. Outside the city, there were different benefits. He just didn't know the principals here. It's so expensive to lay the foundations. It was necessary to cultivate the demon cultivation, or to abolish the layers altogether.

As for Advanced cultivation methods, Yang Chen chose them even more patiently. Almost one word at a time, it seemed that he must look at all the cultivation methods to determine which one he wanted.

This slow and boring process took several hours. The old man had been keeping his eyes closed and then open, he hadn't moved much while sitting there.

Meeting this time, was obviously due to the bear and the wolf not being sufficiently patient. The two began to sit up and down restlessly. It seemed that there was a needle in their buttocks. They jumped up and stared at Yang Chen, then irritatingly walk a few steps. After a while, they sat down again and scratched their ears

for a moment.

Such a heart, even if there was a good cultivation method, it was not necessarily possible to cultivate with good results. Yang Chen certainly knew this. In the same way, the old man sitting there, also clearly saw the performance of the two. For Yang Chen, he was willing to spend two jin of top-grade spiritual stones to purchase two cultivation methods for them, which he really couldn't figure out why.

This were two jin of top-grade spirit stones, enough to rent the most abundant room in the city for a long time. Practice in that kind of room with the effect better than the lowest floor room by how many times, didn't Yang Chen understand this?

Yang Chen naturally did not know the criticism in the old man's heart. He continued carefully reading the jade slips one by one, it took a whole day and night to read all the contents of these dozens of jade slips.

Then Yang Chen sat down, remembering the cultivation methods he had seen in his mind, combined with the characteristics of the old tree demon, She Kui and Xie Sha. Three of the most suitable cultivation methods were selected. In fact, this method had a large class suitable for monster cultivators, if one chose among this category it would not be too bad.

Of course, Yang Chen did not forget to pick the spiritual awareness cultivation method. However, there were very few cultivation methods to cultivate spiritual awareness. They all had similar effectiveness. Yang Chen randomly selected a Spirit Controlling Secret Art.

The old man picked up his eyelids and raised his eyelids. He was surprised and asked, "why did you choose this one?"

"This Spirit Controlling Secret Art is the one this younger generation junior uses." Yang Chen smiled and answered the old man's question.

After the old man looked at Yang Chen's body up and down, he nodded slightly and said, "your Body Refining Technique's cultivation is good." Then he stood up and walked straight to the back, thinking that he would give Yang Chen the method.

The bear and wolf monsters looked at the old man who had disappeared behind them. Almost at the same time, they brushed up to Yang Chen's side. They were anxiously asking Yang Chen what choices he had chosen, but they were yelled upon by Yang Chen, "be calm! These will be given to you because these are for you, it is useless to be so anxious!"

The two didn't dare to talk any more, and they sat next to Yang Chen. Although their body did not dare to twist, but the anxious expectations on their faces could not be concealed regardless.

After a while, the old man took out seven pieces of jade slips, came out and placed them in front of Yang Chen. Yang Chen took them piece by piece. He verified them all. After confirming that everything he got was correct, all of them were stored, and then he thanked the old man.

"There is no need for you to thank me." The old man smiled, "It is good to take care of this business."

"This is already all the savings of the younger generation and a few friends." Yang Chen was not afraid to say a few more words to the old man, "after you have taken care of your business, is there any advice you have for this younger generation junior and his brothers." "Well!"

The old man nodded and said, "Although, most are not so easy, I still will give you some advice. Even if you have good cultivation, don't be too high-spirited, being down-to-earth is the correct way to practice."

Chapter 298: Looking For Odd Places

Even after leaving the book building, Yang Chen had still been pondering over what the old man said. The old man's words were very reasonable, but Yang Chen was not sure if he said those words for him or for himself.

In any case, now he had succeeded in obtaining a cultivation method for the old tree demon, She Kui and Xie Sha and the future monstrous talent Mu Bai. He had also plundered several high-grade materials. Now, seeking for the First Wood True Essence would be the key point.

As for the more advanced materials in the store, Yang Chen needed to go through the goods for a while, otherwise he would spend a lot of spirit stones, which would definitely attract the attention of many people. If he wanted to find the First Wood True Essence, that was not good for himself.

The bear and the wolf monsters got the foundation laying cultivation methods they had dreamed of, but they faced a difficult decision. They were hesitating whether to abolish their current cultivation and restart again.

At this point, Yang Chen did not give any advice. He only needed the two to make this decision on their own. He knew, how they would give him any related news promptly. But he didn't want to control them over how they cultivated.

The two didn't have the kind of enthusiasm of Sun Qingxue, and they were unable to completely ruin their cultivation base.

After hesitating for a long time, they decided to reconstruct their foundation based on their current cultivation base.

This approach was obviously more time consuming than discarding their cultivation base. However, keeping one's cultivation base could still be beneficial, even when it would take

longer to replace consequently.

The room rented by Yang Chen had been thoroughly inspected. In this lowest-level room, although the spiritual power was more than the outside world, there was absolutely no such thing as the First Wood True Essence. The same was true for a room that was more advanced. A jin of high-grade spirit stones could rent a room for a month. Yang Chen did not think that being that much precious.

Well, that was to say, in this standard practice room, it was unlikely that there would be the First Wood True Essence. Yang Chen was still not sure whether there was any First Wood True Essence in the city, but if there was a glimmer of hope, Yang Chen would not give up.

This was the Ten-thousand Trees Forest, the most likely place to have the First Wood True Essence. Other places don't seem to have such a strong First Wood aura, perhaps there may be, but never more than here.

Of course, Yang Chen can't come up and ask the two monsters what was wrong with the city. He must always broach such a subject carefully. Therefore, he took out the spiritual awareness cultivation method of the monster race and pretended to practice his own cultivation.

Relatively speaking, the Monster Race cultivation method was biased towards the monster race. Yang Chen only looked at it for a while and found the problem. It was not that this practice had its drawbacks, but rather that Yang Chen had a more effective cultivation law than this.

The Secret Technique and Beast Controlling Secret Art that the Cyan Ox left behind, both could work at the same time. Enhancing the spiritual awareness more efficiently than this method. This was what Yang Chen did not expect.

Originally, he thought that what the Cyan Ox left, would let him

practice the Beast Controlling Secret Art, but he did not expect that it was for the growth of spiritual awareness. This cultivation method was different from the Three Purities Secret Art, it was just a supplement.

The so-called growth of spiritual awareness for Yang Chen, was the growth of the monster soul. That were the pair of huge Ox Horns in his sea of consciousness. The reason why Yang Chen was thought to be the same by the monsters of the monster race was because of this.

After learning about this, Yang Chen understood something that had been ignored before. The reason why he was easily seen through by the old tree demon and Lan Yan was not the origin of the monster race, but because of his own monster soul was not strong enough, in front of their powerful monster soul, he simply could not hide.

In this city, there are monster race everywhere, and Yang Chen must be careful. He couldn't be seen by others, otherwise there would be big troubles.

Yang Chen hadn't seen the depth of the old man at the bookstore yet, because he dared not use his own spiritual awareness to explore the other side. The sentence left by the other party when he left was still very vivid in his mind. He didn't even know if he had been seen through, but now he had to take steps to mitigate this weakness.

Absorbing the First Wood True Essence was not a small-time matter. Even if it was found, it would take at least a few years before it could be cultivated as a First Wood True Secret Art. Once he got seen through, all would be lost.

Yang Chen had to temporarily keep his calm to continue to practice this Secret Technique and the Beast Controlling Secret Art. Fortunately, practicing these Secret Arts did not require strong spiritual power, but a strengthened monster soul, so Yang

Chen did not care about the level of room to practice in. This room he had been renting for at least a year, just to strengthen his monster soul.

Since Yang Chen practiced the superior Beast Controlling Secret Art, he did not practice these secret techniques again. After only cultivating for two months, he could feel the powerful effects.

In the sea of consciousness, part of the spiritual awareness began to transform into a monster soul and strengthened into one of the huge ox horns. The horns of the ox began to become denser, and many patterns appeared on them like real ox horns.

Although Yang Chen did not use the Beast Controlling Secret Art against other monster cultivators, he had already felt that he could easily establish contact with the monster race and communicate better than before. It was also clearer, the content more detailed.

With this understanding, Yang Chen began to work hard to cultivate the Beast Controlling Secret Art. In a year's time, his monster soul had undergone earth-shaking changes.

The huge ox horns were still the same size, but he could feel the extreme hardness of the ox horns. Compared with when Yang Chen came here, the monster soul was absolutely more than a few times more powerful.

As a bridge connecting the two sides of the blood river, the growth of the ox horns played a stronger role. At least now, Yang Chen's sea of consciousness had once again improved the its level of firmness. Even if there was a master like Luo Yuan to launch a spiritual awareness attack, Yang Chen would not have any problems.

The spiritual awareness which was at the peak of Dacheng realm slowly weakened to the middle of the early Dacheng stage. In exchange for not only the stability of the whole sea of consciousness, but also to make his spiritual awareness even more powerful. Cultivating the Monster Soul to rise so suddenly, was

really a matter of killing two birds with one stone.

After practicing for a whole year, Yang Chen also had a year of retreat here. Coming out of the room, he noticed the aura of the bear and the wolf monsters.

After the two got the cultivation methods that Yang Chen purchased, they followed him to his residence. Speaking of it, both used to be in the market with the leopard, but they did not get much benefit. Their practice place was also the lowest floor room rented by the leopard monster.

However, the leopard was stingy, and each time he rented it for a month, the two did not have a permanent shelter. Following Yang Chen, they finally had one.

Yang Chen practiced inside, and they practiced outside. The two guys didn't think about any guilty feelings, but they noticed that Yang Chen was getting stronger and stronger with a formidable Monster soul.

In addition to being honestly staying outside, waiting for him to come out and instruct them, the two didn't even dare to go to the market. Without the support of the leopard in the Yuanying realm, the two's Jiedan realm could only be abolished by several formidable Foundation realm monsters.

As Yang Chen of the Jiedan realm could abolish leopard's cultivation, the realm level had been termed inconsequential. The real combat strength was fundamental. Didn't they know that there were a few strong foundation realm monsters in the market that could directly overturn them?

“Good, you are obedient.”

Looking at the two, respectfully waiting to be commanded, Yang Chen also nodded slightly, “follow me, I will not treat you badly.”

As he said that, he held two large pieces of top-grade spirit stones in his hands, each of which had five or six jin of weight. He then

threw one to each person. The two caught the spirit stones. The monster's eyes stared widely and could hardly believe that just staying with him while he practiced could hold such advantages.

"I don't have to go to the city to mix in the future, don't look forward to it."

Yang Chen looked at their shocked eyes and laughed in his heart. He then commanded, "now, help me check something."

"What is it? You can ask me!"

The wolf monster had more insight than the bear monster. He hurriedly squatted and asked with a smile.

"You are familiar of the city, help me find out about some of the odd places here."

Yang Chen asked the two clearly without hesitation. He then continued, "any place with a special aura in this ordinary city, the more you find, the more benefits you can get."

Listening to Yang Chen's simple instructions about looking for places with special auras in the city, made both of them overjoyed. They decided to go all out. The two didn't necessarily have the courage and strength, but just looking for a place in the city they were familiar with, was simply gifting them benefits.

Yang Chen only gave them five jin of top-grade spirit stone because they had shown honesty. It was even more than they could have gotten through extortion for a year. If they could really source information about places Yang Chen was looking for, wouldn't that be more rewarding?

"Don't say anything more, we will look for a place in the city, there is no one more familiar than the two of us." The bear looked honest. He almost wanted to pat his chest to ensure that he could find it.

"We know a few now. Do you want to see them?"

The wolf was not far behind, and immediately got to the front to ask.

“Lead the way!”

Yang Chen also simply let the two to lead him.

After practicing the Beast Controlling Secret Art for a whole year, Yang Chen could now ensure that even if he was in front of a monster in the middle of the Dacheng realm, it could not see through his real identity. Even in the city, in the special place, he was no longer afraid.

With two big monsters, Yang Chen came to the first place in their minds that had a special aura.

This was an all-metal construction, not particularly tall, but it had a very pure Metal Attribute aura. In this city of the Ten-thousand Trees Forest, it was indeed very special.

The Metal Attribute aura was not what Yang Chen was looking for. However, it was indeed in line with Yang Chen’s request. After pretending to investigate here, it was soon discovered that this was an artificially arranged array. Its role was to gather the Metal Attribute spirit power to allow some Metal Attribute monster cultivators to practice nearby.

The Monsters also had their own five elements. In this city, there was no such thing as the spiritual power of an attribute. However, it was in line with the requirements of comprehensive care.

“Very good.”

Yang Chen recognized the lead of the two guys, which made the bear and the wolf very happy.

“Is what you are looking for here?”

The wolf asked again while the bear waited on the side-lines.

“Not here, let’s go to another place.”

Yang Chen waved his hand to let the two continue.

Next, Yang Chen followed the two to other places. They found few more places rich with five elements aura; water, fire and earth attributes were all prepared for the monster cultivators of these attributes.

These places were odd, but these were not what Yang Chen wanted to find. He was looking for the place where the First Wood True Essence gathered. These place with these attributes would absolutely not have it.

However, Yang Chen did not skip these areas due to that fact. Every place was personally inspected by him. He wanted to know the extent to which the enchantment level of the Monster Race in this city has come to, which helped him to make more intuitive judgments about the power of the Monster Race.

There was nothing special about the wood attribute spirit power area. As the whole city was in the old banyan tree of the Ten-thousand Trees Forest, a strong wood attributed spiritual power.

These places were not the places that Yang Chen was looking for, so the wolf and bear were very disappointed. They also pondered about other places in the meantime. In just a few days, they took Yang Chen to a few more places to earn more spiritual stones, but there was no place that satisfied Yang Chen. Their worries continued to increase.

“Are there no other odd and strange place in the rest of the city?”

Yang Chen asked again after investigating the land of the earth attribute.

“No!”

The wolf shook his head. The strange aura of the city was also in these places. Other places seemed to be very normal.

“There is still a place.”

The bear was awkward and did not think about it. He said directly, “It is a bit dangerous.”

“There is nowhere!”

The wolf didn't wait for Yang Chen to ask where it was and shouted directly, “nowhere!”

“Where? Why not?”

Yang Chen got interested and asked curiously.

“That is a forbidden place in the city. Someone used to go there. There were no bones left of him, so it had been closed.”

The wolf hurriedly replied, “there is no strange aura there, just a strange water pool.

Chapter 299: Reason Of Deception

Water pool? No aura? Yang Chen currently was also a bit confused. But immediately waved, “let’s have a look!”

“No!”

The bear and the wolf were shocked when they heard this. The wolf immediately responded. Yang Chen was a foreigner. He didn’t know the power there, and he may not survive.

“No! It’s too dangerous!”

The wolf seemed to have changed some thoughts because of the foundation he cultivated this year. He immediately shook his head and stopped him; “you haven’t seen it, you don’t know how dangerous it is. It used to have swallowed three Yuanying realm ancestors, no one dares to be close to a hundred steps of it.”

“I don’t want to go in, just take a look around.”

Yang Chen smiled and said, “even if you look at it from a hundred steps, it could serve as good experience.”

When they heard that Yang Chen wouldn’t go into it but look around. The two guys had a little peace of mind. They took Yang Chen all the way around several big circles before rushing over.

Without any aura, but swallowed three Yuanying realm ancestors? Yang Chen was more curious about this pool. Until the moment he saw the pool, Yang Chen still guessed what it was, which could lead to such a powerful thing.

The wolf and the bear took Yang Chen and boarded a room in a high place. There was no one living there and there was no spiritual power, but from here one could see the scene far below.

The pool was in their field of vision and could be seen from the window of the room. The wolf was walking in front of the window with the dog’s legs. In particular, he stretched out his sleeves and

rubbed the dust. Then he invited Yang Chen and pointed to the pool. “It is there.”

The water pool was not big, only a hundred square feet, the water colour showed a dark green colour. They didn’t know how many years that had not changed. At least three hundred steps away from here, Yang Chen also could not detect a smell.

In other places, there were trees everywhere, but around the pool, there was no tree, it was bare, and very awkward. Not just trees, but no roots as well. It could be considered that it was not a fertile place.

“Don’t use spiritual awareness to explore!”

When Yang Chen’s heart moved, he was about to use his spiritual awareness to explore it. The wolf suddenly said, “two Yuanying realm ancestors, hundreds of Jiedan realm masters, have curiously explored it with their spiritual awareness. The result was that they were pulled into the pool by something, and never got out again.”

Standing at this distance, Yang Chen did not feel any strange aura, it seemed that the two were also telling the truth. However, Yang Chen was still curious, how could it become a slaughter house here?

“Is there anything in the pool?”

Yang Chen turned his face and asked, “is it a sinister beast?”

It seemed that this was the first reaction that anyone perceived of this situation. If there was no beast, how could it be possible?

“I don’t know!”

This time, the bear responded. The continued immediately after, “nobody knows, no one has seen it. When anyone knows about it, they warn that you must not be close, otherwise the consequences will be dire. Many experts have thus, disappeared. No one dares to take this risk.”

“Has anyone seen someone who had not come out?”

Yang Chen asked again. If no one had ever seen it, it was just a legend, and there must be some hidden things.

“Almost every few years. There are guys who don’t believe in this story.”

The wolf stared at the other side and said, “you also know that there are always fellow Daoists who believe that they are the sons of heavens or heaven’s chosen with great fortune. There must be some good things left by a certain predecessor, and they will definitely get it. But they also never come out.”

“How did they get in?” Yang Chen asked again.

“It is so unfathomable to go in. One will disappear while in the water after a while.”

Then the bear interjected, “this pool is very strange. If you walk into the two water lines, you will disappear. It is very calm. No one dares to fish, everyone just looks at it. Anyway, I have seen at least ten little guys go in. They have never come out.”

Even the bear said this, it seemed that this situation was not uncommon. Yang Chen didn’t want to be so shocked, of course, he wouldn’t rush in like others have. He kept on watching it from afar, not talking for a long time.

Yang Chen did not move, the bear and the wolf did not dare to move either and looked at the other side, they did not know what Yang Chen was thinking. But no one dared to disturb him.

“Well, it’s a strange place.”

After a long time, Yang Chen was shocked, he then turned and left. Both the bear and the wolf finally breathed a sigh of relief in their hearts. If they didn’t go in, there was nothing to worry about. It wasn’t easy to come across a guy who was willing to invest in them.

“There are no more places with strange auras.”

After returning to Yang Chen’s rented room, the two men thought about it and decided there was no other place to meet Yang Chen’s request.

“Well, it’s okay, if I can’t find it.”

Yang Chen seemed to have let go of this matter, and then began to tell the two people something else, “you have given a look in the market recently, what good materials are there? Tell me more about them?”

This was the best for the two guys. They were more familiar with the market, especially the stall area. Both guys then complied.

“I want to go to a more advanced place to retreat for a while. Here you live first, I have already paid ten years of rent.”

Yang Chen pointed to the room where he was now, leaving the room to the two.

Just like that a treasure just fell from the sky for the two, this room was equivalent to a reward of many spirit stones. The two guys’ happy mouths couldn’t be closed together. Just taking Yang Chen in the city for a few days, there was such a benefit. What if they took him to buy a batch of advanced materials? They felt excited when they thought about it.

For the higher-spirited room, the two had no hope. While building their foundation again, foundation-based cultivation methods now did not require much spiritual power. Instead, the building of foundation was very slow.

As for Yang Chen, this situation was very normal. What was a foreigner coming here for? Wasn’t it for better cultivation, materials and more spiritual power? Yang Chen had already taken perspective of all these aspects. No one would think that Yang Chen’s performance was suspicious.

After renting a higher-level room with Yang Chen, the two

personally sent him to the room on the second floor of the city, and respectfully bowed. The appearance of Yang Chen, although had given them most profound shock, but also hope. The first thing they did thereafter was to quickly go to the market and let the sellers set up the stalls with good things.

No one knew that Yang Chen was playing with the idea of going to the water pool.

The strange waterhole was absolutely weird. There was no aura from it, but it also illustrated another problem; there must be something that could isolate the aura below the pool.

Unfortunately, the people who went on did not have any results, no one knew what was going on below. It may already be known, but it was controlled by the city's managers and thus, was censored for the general public.

But in Yang Chen's guess, the aquatic pool had no water attribute aura; maybe it had been absorbed by some other. First Wood True Essence was really the most likely.

However, if he wanted to know if there was a First Wood True Essence in the pool, Yang Chen had only one way, and that was to go in and check by himself. However, this required dealing with a lot of risk. The bear and the wolf could not become a part of this. The pool of water that had swallowed a few Yuanying realm ancestors, would pose mortal danger for them.

The First Wood True Essence was very important for Yang Chen. Only this area had been left in the city that could have it. No matter how he must go in and check.

There was such a strange waterhole in the city. If no one paid attention to it, then it was even more suspicious. It was almost impossible to want to explore it with spiritual awareness without others knowing it.

If Yang Chen inverted the sea jasper, he could isolate his spiritual

awareness and explore it, but he could not stop the visual observation of others. And around that pool, there were definitely some people keeping watch day and night.

In this way, entering the water pool had become a conundrum. Yang Chen was sitting in the room, but he was thinking about how to find an excuse that would not be suspected.

Amid these difficulties, Yang Chen's heart suddenly moved. He placed his spiritual awareness threads around the room, and suddenly noticed a few unusual movements, it seemed that someone was close.

After a while, the people came closer, Yang Chen was completely certain that someone had secretly traced him. It was not one person either, but four, and these four people were all Yuanying realm masters.

The four-monster race Yuanying realm masters, had secretly traced him and encircled his room, Yang Chen could not think of the reason. However, since the other side visited his home, he suddenly thought of an excuse to enter the water pool.

There was a strange noise coming from the door. Getting up, he opened the door and strode outside. Looking at the empty surroundings, his face exposed a suspicious and confusing expression.

In the air, he sniffed a few times, as if to smell something. He finally frowned and said nothing. He was about to turn back to the room, but the door behind, suddenly shut by itself.

“Who?”

Yang Chen shouted, the door of the room would not shut itself down, there must be someone who had played a trick.

“This kid is still very alert.”

A voice rang from Yang Chen's head. He seemed to be suddenly scared, he turned back to look at the empty surroundings around.

“Predecessor has come to this younger generation’s dwelling, what does the predecessor want?”

Although Yang Chen seemed to be shocked, but he did not panic, remaining very calm.

“You dare to abolish the cultivation base of our brother and dare to saunter in the city! You really are too carefree!”

Another voice shouted from the left side of Yang Chen, to which he suddenly turned. He could see at the same time in two directions.

“If you had been in the room for a long time, we really can’t do anything.”

There was a strange voice suddenly sounding behind him, “however, you have been sauntering in the city these days, is it because you think we are all furnishings?”

Yang Chen’s body had begun to turn around, the three guys seemed to have surrounded him, but his gaze was scanning another direction.

“The leopard got abolished that time; how do you want to be scrapped today?”

In another direction, another strange voice was heard.

“A leopard? Are you the brother of the waste in the city?”

Rotating, Yang Chen put on a posture of alert, but his mouth continued, “why didn’t the two tell me?”

“Them?”

The guy in front of him sneered a little, “those two wastes don’t even know that we are also a group. A square market is not worthy for five Yuanying realm masters to come out together”

That was quite reasonable. The district had set up a stall area. In fact, if the chief of the wolf and the bear didn’t always appear, they had been able to keep the upper hand. Most of them were the

monster cultivators in the foundation realm, and the two Jiedan realm masters were enough to manage the scene. In addition, making the leopard in the Yuanying realm angry could almost be said to be very unprofitable.

Abolishing the cultivation base of a Yuanying realm ancestor, although it was for his prestige, but it also offended these few Yuanying realm masters. Switching to the general Jiedan realm monster cultivators, this was already a terrifying trouble.

Once the leopard leader was abolished, Yang Chen immediately bought something in the market and went to the bookstore, he then closed to practice in his own room and never came out. These masters had received news that they had missed the opportunity to block Yang Chen outside. The rules in the city stated that no one must hurt the people in their cultivation room. These masters thus, had to wait.

Not to mention the four Yuanying realm ancestors, even if forty Yuanying realm masters were add up, they did not dare to easily challenge the rules of the city. The master of the Dacheng realm sitting in the town and the restrictions of the city itself, could not be broken so easily, even if it was a master of the Dacheng realm.

Yang Chen did not come out after a few days but undertook several retreats for a while. Someone told them the news. Unfortunately, when they arrived, he had already bought and entered room again. They could only provoke him out.

If Yang Chen was not allowed to return to the room, then everything was fine. Except for not killing Yang Chen, they could do whatever they wanted. Now that this plan had been successfully realized, a Yuanying realm ancestor had blocked the door of Yang Chen's room. In their eyes, he could never return, and was destined to be a waste.

"I heard that you were very wealthy, it seemed that we have to thank you in advance."

The master who spoke last, slowly walked forward. Every step further seemed to bring a heavy pressure on Yang Chen. The master in front of him and the other also began to slowly come closer. Four people, from four directions, surrounded Yang Chen in a vague way.

“You want my wealth? How about exchange my life for it?”

Yang Chen to have been forced to the death's door. He suddenly began to burst out with laughter and screamed! It was like a thunderclap in the surroundings, not knowing how many people who were closed around woke up.

Countless spiritual awareness swept over. It seemed that they have not expected Yang Chen to make such a big movement. It startled the four. In the meanwhile, Yang Chen's body suddenly turned into a great crane, rushing toward a gap that the four people inadvertently made due to the shock.

Chapter 300: Investigating The Pool

Yang Chen's direction was the room left for the bear head monster and the wolf head monster. That was the room he rented, and he had the right to enter the door, if he could rush in, his security could be guaranteed. Anyway, he had rented the room for a few years, and these enemies couldn't keep watching him for so many years.

The four Yuanying realm ancestors, who were frightened by Yang Chen's screaming, and even let him flee through their encirclement, were now furious. They didn't think about anything anymore and madly pursued him.

Yang Chen was in front, and the four were behind. However, just after the incident, hundreds of spiritual awareness had swept over them. The masters of the spiritual awareness seemed to have guessed what had happened.

The city was not small, Yang Chen started to run at full speed, but still spent a fragrant time to get there. The four Yuanying realm ancestors behind him could not catch up with him. At most, they could only keep a distance not far from Yang Chen.

They saw that Yang Chen had gone to his other room, when he turned to rush inside, a strange leopard monster blocked the door. The leopard showed a sly smile and looked awkwardly at Yang Chen.

The other party had already considered that Yang Chen would flee to this side, even this step was also considered. However, the Leopard monster was only a master of the late Jiedan realm. Yang Chen bit his teeth, his direction did not change, he continued to rush.

The leopard monster had a relationship with the leopard Yuanying realm master abolished by Yang Chen. Seeing that Yang Chen had come over, he rushed straight up without showing

weakness.

Hu...

Yang Chen while charging had already thrown his fist out with a chilling whistling sound, to the Leopard Jiedan realm master.

The leopard head monster opposite did not want to be outdone. He followed up the same way, but his hand suddenly turned into a leopard claw, a long and sharp tip with nails shining coldly, greeted Yang Chen's fist.

Kahhh!

the fist and the claws collided together and made a clear sound, as if the sound of two metal vessels striking together.

Then, among the surprised eyes of everyone. The sharp claws shattered into several pieces! Yang Chen's fists did not disappear, they pounded directly into the fists of the Leopard monster.

Kacha!

With the sound of broken bones, the leopard's fists shattered directly. Followed by arms, shoulders, and half of his body.

The contact between the two figures only lasted for a flash. Yang Chen had completely rushed past, and the blocking leopard only had half of his body left.

"Little Leopard!"

Behind Yang Chen's body, a sudden heart-breaking cry followed. A huge pressure directly enveloped his head. A master who rushed to the front of Yang Chen had stopped him. He did not strike him in fear that he would not be able to abolish him in one strike and he may escape.

Of course, there was another consideration, the master was afraid that he may strike to kill Yang Chen which would violate the city's rule. He positioned himself behind Yang Chen. Once he would be hit, the force will push him into his arms, this would

spell the end of the battle. In this way, Yang Chen's retreat was stopped, and he was left with only accepting his fate.

Yang Chen, who was blocked from the road to survival, began to work hard.

Boom! Another punch!

He directly punched the one in front. The one rushing was also a leopard monster. With a bang, the two palms and Yang Chen's fists intersected with an explosion.

The encounter felt as two mountains colliding, it was overwhelming. The Leopard monster did not think that Yang Chen would have such great strength. He screamed, even if he had spirit power body protection, he foresaw his palms becoming flesh and blood in an instant. Just like being smashed by a huge hammer.

Kacha! His bones were broken.

Fortunately, he noticed the danger and immediately retreated. He was able to misdirect a sizeable part of the force, and other parts of his body escaped unscathed. But this time, it directly made him have a cold sweat. This calf unexpectedly had such a formidable strength.

However, Yang Chen had only made two attacks, and had already been rushed up by the three Yuanying realm masters chasing after him. If Yang Chen did not leave now, he would fall into the siege of all four of them.

He didn't think much about it and escaped through a gap. Many people had seen this scene, but no one would doubt that Yang Chen had premeditated everything.

The direction of Yang Chen's escape was the strange waterhole direction in the centre of the city. The four Yuanying realm monster cultivators would not let Yang Chen escape under such circumstances, thus, they chased up without a second thought.

There were no illuminating devices in the night in the city, it was

completely dark. Yang Chen was letting go of his spiritual awareness to observe the surrounding environment, and the four Yuanying realm ancestors were obviously better than Yang Chen. They could see everything in the dark with instinct. In some cases, the Monster Race was inherently more dominant than humans.

The city was very big, but Yang Chen let go of his speed and rushed from his side to the pool. It didn't take too long and in less than half an hour, he had already fled to its vicinity.

Of course, in the process of running away, Yang Chen also showed his strength very well. The fastest guy chasing him had already been abolished by one of his hands. The other leopard monster in the early Yuanying stage was also punched, suddenly turning around after Yang Chen's sudden action. He almost got his sternum broken.

Fortunately, the Monster Race paid more attention to the refining of their bodies when they practiced, which only served to strengthen them further. However, there was still no escape from a bloody injury and vomiting blood afterwards.

A golden calf in the early Jiedan realm, under the siege of four Yuanying and a late Jiedan stage masters, abolished a late Jiedan realm master and injured two Yuanying realm ancestors, was a record too shameful to be taken out for his pursuers. Yang Chen who has been running away had instead gained more popularity.

However, the four Yuanying realm masters, this time must take down Yang Chen, otherwise they could not explain to the companion who was abolished. Many people in the city would also doubt their strength. In turn, it will threaten the living environment of the Leopard race clan. In this case, they would always be treated as a joke with their whole clan.

Running all the way, Yang Chen's figure had already rushed to the vicinity of the pool. The urgency made the following few monsters not notice this detail.

Suddenly, Yang Chen's figure made an emergency stop. This time, the four masters who chased after him all had their guards up and readied themselves to make their moves. Everyone had to give a hand, but if the attack of four people was hit at the same time, Yang Chen will definitely lose his ability to act directly.

In the face of the attack, Yang Chen did not evade, turned and rushed directly to one closest to himself.

Ping! Ping!

Almost simultaneously, the attack of all four fell on Yang Chen's body. His face showed a painful look, and the blood in his mouth was sprayed on the opposite master's face.

Under the circumstance, Yang Chen's blood was sprayed, he leopard monster's spirit power on the opposite side shook. Yang Chen then actually hugged him.

He wondered how Yang Chen would be like this, suddenly discovering that Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was wide open and stimulating the surroundings in madness. He was still worried about the surrounding environment; his heart was terror-stricken.

It turned out to be a restricted area for spiritual awareness, and Yang Chen was so crazy to unexpectedly use it here. A huge force pulled Yang Chen away towards the water pool, and his hands held the unlucky leopard monster.

The two hugging men were pulled into the pool. The other three leopards watched them helplessly being pulled.

With a splash, Yang Chen and the leopard head monster's body fell into the water, only a small piece of ripples arose, even the pool did not make any ripples and they disappeared without a trace.

The three companions of the Leopard monster did not dare to use their spiritual awareness to explore the situation of their companion. The Yuanying realm masters swallowed here were not one or two. Everyone understood that if Yang Chen and his

companion fell in, there was no possibility of them coming out.

Although Yang Chen was now dead and seemed that he was only in the early Jiedan stage. He had already abolished the cultivation base of a Yuanying and a late Jiedan stage master, seriously injured an early Yuanying stage master, still lightly injured another Yuanying stage master, now he had also pulled a Yuanying realm master to the same end as him.

Anyway. Yang Chen was indeed worthy of the word monstrously strong. Their battles were not small, and countless people had seen this scene.

Many people were shaking their heads and sighing, such a powerful and promising seedling was ruined by offending these overbearing guys.

And more people were secretly pondering in their hearts about the fate of the leopard clan and how Yang Chen had decimated them. The power of the Leopard Race did not seem to be so powerful like their performance. Some of it seemed that there were other benefits that could be squandered.

When Yang Chen entered the water, he let go of the monster. A leopard monster in the Yuanying realm was not worthy of his desperation. He even did not even open his Golden Bell body protection. These guys could not hurt him. The so-called injury and blood vomiting were simply made up by him.

The key was that there was now an excuse for him entering the waterhole. Although this was a dangerous area in the eyes of many Monster Race cultivators, Yang Chen believed that this place was definitely the most likely to hold the First Wood True Essence.

In this dangerous place, Yang Chen certainly must concentrate on cautious exploration. The Golden Bell had been pushed to the extreme by him. Even for an old tree demon, it was estimated to be impossible to hurt him.

Unexpectedly, the terrifying attack in Yang Chen's expectation did not come. Instead, his body continued sinking. Although his spiritual awareness threads have already searched around but it had not seen the bottom. In the water, the exploration range of the spiritual awareness had shrunk many times.

The huge gravity pulled Yang Chen's body and kept it pulling down. After a while, he discovered that his body was still immersed in that liquid, but it was not water.

The water in the pool was just an illusion of this strange liquid. Now Yang Chen could confirm this. Not far away, the leopard monster's body was still struggling, trying to escape the huge attraction that came from below, but all his struggles were futile.

Yang Chen didn't even think about struggling, so he didn't get any harm on his body. On the contrary, the leopard monster was constantly splashing around, his body was also strangely bleeding. Yang Chen could clearly feel this phenomenon with his spiritual awareness threads.

This liquid was able to isolate spiritual awareness better than pure water. Even Yang Chen could only know about movements in about a dozen feet of himself, distant places could no longer be explored by his spiritual awareness.

This huge amount of attraction from the bottom was entirely aimed at the spiritual awareness. But, the Three Purities Secret Art of Yang Chen's cultivation was too strong. Although the spiritual exploration of the water pool, attracted this force but there was no such sense of restraint for Yang Chen's spiritual awareness threads.

If Yang Chen didn't need this attraction to lead the way, he could break away at any time. The leopard monster was very different. After entering the water, his uncontrollable spiritual awareness was wide open, even the recovery of it was impossible.

Yang Chen silently calculated the depth, in a short period of time

he had sunk hundreds of feet. What surprised him was that, whenever he happened to hit the surrounding walls of this deep underground cavern, he occasionally felt that he was instead surrounded by a vast root system.

The Earth Escape Technique could only result in courting death here, it would be locked firmly by the roots of these strong plants. In the same way, the Wood Escape method would also result in the same predicament. Among the surroundings, there was a placid metal attribute force. Using it here was only seeking his own death.

Five elements escaping techniques couldn't reach this depth at all, the only way seemed to be through the bottom of the pool. However, because people had never come down here before and instead died while saving themselves from it, this pool had become a forbidden place.

So far, Yang Chen hadn't noticed any killings moves. Even some of the unknown attacks caused by the leopard's struggle were limited, far from being a life-threatening issue. The other Yuanying realm master had blood gushing out from an otherwise flesh wound. In normal circumstances it wouldn't pose any difficulty for him.

It may be that the spiritual awareness was too stimulated. The leopard monster was also aware of Yang Chen's situation. Yang Chen did not move, as the gravitational sinking continued. He was completely unharmed and coping with the flow.

The two kept sinking fast for a long time, thousands of feet deep. Suddenly, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness threads found that he had reached the bottom.

However, the bottom was not the ground. Yang Chen and Leopard monster had just touched the bottom that, suddenly, their body was untied of the gravity force. However, both involuntarily fell on in one of the huge spaces.

Ping!

The two were like stones, falling into a lake. Immediately, a pure and unrelenting force of the First Wood attribute madly drilled into their bodies like a beast.